

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO



3 1761 01745087 5



PURCHASED FOR THE
UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY
FROM THE
CANADA COUNCIL SPECIAL GRANT
FOR
HISTORY



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

98

461.

JAPAN'S FIGHT FOR FREEDOM

PRINTED FOR THE PROPRIETORS,
AND PUBLISHED BY B. W. YOUNG, CARMELITE HOUSE,
CARMELITE STREET, LONDON, E.C.



OFF

THE ASSASSINATION OF DUKE SERGIUS, NEAR THE KREMLIN, MOSCOW.

JAPAN'S FIGHT FOR FREEDOM

The Story of the War Between Russia and Japan

BY H. W. WILSON, M.A.

Author of "With the Flag to Pretoria," "Ironclads in Action," &c., &c.

ILLUSTRATED WITH MANY PHOTOGRAPHS TAKEN ON THE FIELD OF BATTLE AND
AUTHENTIC SKETCHES BY FAMOUS ARTISTS

VOL. III.

LONDON
THE AMALGAMATED PRESS, LIMITED

1906



CONTENTS OF VOL. III.

	PAGES
CHAPTER XXXIX.—THE BATTLE OF YUSHULING. The Battle of Yushuling—Japanese Plan—A Terrible Surprise—Defeat of the Russians—Russian Troops Trapped—The Russian Retreat—Towards Liaoyang	870-878
CHAPTER XL.—THE ADVANCE TO LIAOYANG—BEGINNING OF THE BATTLE. Oku's Advance—The Three Armies—Kuropatkin's Army—Fortifying Liaoyang—Trenches and Pits—Liaoyang a Fortress—The City of Liaoyang—Advance Ordered August 23—The Attack Begins—The Guards Advance—The Summit Gained—Before Tanghoyen—Advance by Moonlight—The Russians in Retreat—General Oku's Army—Russians Abandon Anshantien	878-900
CHAPTER XLI.—LIAOYANG—OKU ASSAULTS SHUSHAN. The Key to the Position—Kuroki's Difficulty—A Sharp Artillery Duel—Counter-Attack near Anping—Over the Tangho—Japanese Advance—The Plan of Battle—Japanese Organization—Kuropatkin's Personal Courage—August 30 Dawns—The First Attack on Shushan—The Japanese Mortars—Fighting near Wajagon—Feeling for the Russian Flank—Fierce Fight at Dawa—To Attack Shushan—Russian Advance—Assault on Martole—Advance Against Brush Hill—The Japanese Charge—Failure of the Assault—Crossing the Taitze	902-923
CHAPTER XLII.—LIAOYANG—STORMING OF SHUSHAN—KUROKI'S FLANK MOVEMENT. Shushan to be Carried—Brush Hill Seized—Stackelberg Holds His Own—Cutting the Wire Entanglements—A Terrific Encounter—Retreat and Assault Again—The Brave 34th—Mowing Down the Japanese—Oyama's Resolve—Kuropatkin Orders a Retreat—The Signal at Shushan—A Hill—Advancing to Yentai—Firing on Manyama—The Attack on Manyama—A Hand-to-Hand Encounter—The Russian Assault—The Struggle for No. 131 Hill—The Russians Fall Back	923-953
CHAPTER XLIII.—RETREAT OF THE RUSSIAN ARMY—CAPTURE OF LIAOYANG. Advance on Liaoyang—Abandoning Liaoyang—Japanese Waiting to Advance—Firing on the Railway Station—Firing on No. 131 Hill—Oku's Catastrophe—Yentai Mines Captured—Desperate Assaults—The Great Russian Redoubt—Kuroki's Moves—Yamaguchi's Advance—Liaoyang Mines—Hand-to-Hand Fighting—Russians Abandon Liaoyang—Nodzu Enters Liaoyang—North of Liaoyang—Kuropatkin at Mukden—Losses in the Battle—Results of the Battle	953-975
CHAPTER XLIV.—THE FIRST ASSAULT UPON PORT ARTHUR. Firing on Non-combatants—Nogi's Equipment—The Guns of Port Arthur—The Forts and Works—The Japanese Plan—The Coming Battle—The Siege Begins—Nogi's Task—August 19—Attack on Panlung Forts—Destroying the Entanglements—Nogi's Address—A Terrible Advance—Advance Against Kikwan—Advance of 1st Division—Under the East Fort—The Searchlights—A Gallant Fifty—A Soldier's Death—Fall of the East and West Forts—Night of August 23—A Private's Story—The Emperor's Message—Japanese Losses—Russian Losses—The "Sevastopol" Damaged	976-1010
CHAPTER XLV.—THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR—THE SEPTEMBER ATTACKS. The Howitzers—An Instant Fire—A Thirty-Minute Trench—A Splendid Incident—Sapping the Forts—Nomaokayama Hill—The Attack Opens—Japanese Naval Guns—The Assault—At the First Trench—A Fight in the Dark—A Terrible Incident—Capturing the Japanese Trenches—The Swishing Attack—Fort Kuropatkin—Port Arthur's Waterworks—Towards 203 Metre Hill—The Attack Fails	1011-1038
CHAPTER XLVI.—THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO—I. General's Wanderings—The Yentai Incident—Skirmish at Taling Pass—Kuropatkin's Position—Japanese Increase their Army—Kuropatkin's Mistake—The Russian Advance—The Plans—Russian Skirmishing—Oyama's Precautions—The Japanese Plan—Fight Round Pichon—Fighting Possible—Fighting by the Yentai Mines—By the Taling Pass—On Conical Hill—Wall Mountain—Fighting at Pichon—Outflanking the Russians—Near Sankiatze—Defeat of the Russians	1039-1064
CHAPTER XLVII.—BATTLE OF THE SHAHO—II. At Pichon—Unsatisfactory Russian Troops—On Conical Hill—Death of Colonel Pechuta—The Russians Surprised—The Japanese Advance—On Conical Hill—Guns Captured—Conical Hill Attacked—Fighting in a Storm—A Strange Duel—A Combat of Heroes—Russians in Retreat—At Linshipu—The Dead—Fight at Linshipu—Putiloff Hill—Japanese Loss—Waitoushan Hills—At the Shaho	1064-1091
CHAPTER XLVIII.—DEPARTURE OF THE BALTIC FLEET—THE NORTH SEA OUTRAGE. The Fleet Waits—The Russian Ships—Defects in the Ships—The Cruisers—Rojdestvensky—Misleading the Japanese—Obliging the Japanese and French Men-of-war—The Czar Visits the Fleet—The Admiral Interviewed—The Admiral Hoists His Flag—The Japanese—Sailing the Fleet—The "Lena"—October 19, 1904—The Czar's Address—Officers and Men—"Fire on any Vessel"—The Capture of the Russian Government—Terror of the Russians—The Outrage on the Fishermen—A Mythical Torpedo-Boat—The Firing Begins—The Admiral's Movements—The Fishermen—"Commence Fire"—Klado's Evidence—The Admiral Steers Off—A False Report	1091-1109

Contents.

PAGES

CHAPTER XLIX.—THE NORTH SEA CRISIS—BRITISH GOVERNMENT'S DEMANDS.

The Fishermen's Story—Strange Lights Appear—Captain of the "Magpie's" Story—Captain Smith's Son's Story—No Warning Given—The Mysterious Torpedo-Boats—A Misleading Statement—The News in England—Action of the Government—Baltic Fleet Proceeds—The Navy Unready—The Navy Active—British Demands—Russian Delay—Russian Excuses—A Threat of War—Baltic Fleet at Vigo—The Admiral's Statement—The British Position—A Fatal Delay 1109-1125

CHAPTER L.—THE NORTH SEA COMMISSION AND ITS VERDICT.

Russian Perfidy—The Convention—The International Court—The Inquest at Hull—The Government's Weakness—North Sea Commission—Conclusions from the Evidence—No Justification for Firing—Assistance Should Have Been Given—Verdict—Effects of the Verdict 1126-1137

CHAPTER LI.—THE VOYAGE OF THE BALTIC FLEET TO MADAGASCAR.

Naval Activity—A Dangerous Moment—Neutrality Abused—Russians' Slow Progress—Coaling at Port Said—The Russian Personnel—A Crisis for Japan—Russian Swindlers—Baltic Fleet's Progress—Junction of the Two Fleets—120 Miles a Day—The Fall of Port Arthur—A Further Fleet Suggested—Nebogatoff's Fleet 1137-1150

CHAPTER LII.—THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR—JAPAN'S DARKEST HOURS.

Port Arthur, September, 1904—The 11-in. Howitzers—Firing on the Battleships—Instructions to the Russian Fleet—Miles of Trenches—Dynamite Bombs—Wire Entanglements—Hand-to-Hand Fights—Attack on Hashimakayama—The Mountain Won—Sapping near Kikwan—A Tunnelling Duel—The Kikwan Defences—The Caponniere Attack on the Eastern Forts—A Terrific Attack—Ready for the Great Assault 1150-1165

CHAPTER LIII.—THE SECOND ASSAULT UPON PORT ARTHUR.

Japanese Difficulties—October 30, 1904—Assault on the Caponniere Gallery—Terrible Russian Forts—A Most Fearful Fire—A Bullet-Swept Zone—A Two-Mile Front—P Fort—Erlung and Sungshushan Forts—Second Assault Fails—Cost of the Fire—A Wall of Sand-Bags—Fighting in the Gallery—Blasting the Gallery—Japanese Heroism—A Terrible Death—Erlung Fort—Sungshushan Fort—East Kikwan Trench 1166-1183

CHAPTER LIV.—THE NOVEMBER ASSAULT UPON PORT ARTHUR—STORMING OF 203 METRE HILL.

November 1, 1904—A Fresh Attack—At North Kikwan Fort—At Q Fort—At Sungshushan Fort—East Kikwan—Fort Stoessel—A Terrible Assault—203 Metre Hill—Japanese Parallels—Metre Hill Attacked—The Struggle on Akasakayama—A Third Attempt—Death of Nogi's Son—Firing on 203 Metre Hill—December 2-4, 1904—December 5, 1904—203 Metre Hill Won—Losses 1183-1202

CHAPTER LV.—THE FALL OF PORT ARTHUR.

A Suspension—Port Arthur's Fleet—Bombarding the Russian Fleet—The "Bayan"—The "Sevastopol" Destroyed—Mining the Forts—Storming the Forts—In North Kikwan Fort—Mining Erlung Fort—Terror at Port Arthur—Nearing Port Arthur—Wangtai Fort—Stoessel's Letter—Stoessel Advises Surrender—Nogi's Reply to Stoessel—The Convention Signed—Escape of Russian Vessels—Stoessel and Nogi Meet—Laying Down Arms—Japanese Occupy Port Arthur—The State Entry—In Honour of the Dead—The Loss of Life—End of the Siege 1202-1224

CHAPTER LVI.—THE BATTLE OF HEIKOUTAI, OR SANDIPU.

Scene of the Fight—Japanese Plans—A Great Snowstorm—Battle Begins, January 25, 1905—General Gripenberg in Command—Skirmishes in the Snow—Suffering of the Troops—The Snowstorm Ends—25,000 Troops Engaged—Japanese Reticence—Russian Generals Quarrel—Destroying a Railway Bridge 1224-1248

CHAPTER LVII.—EFFECT OF THE FALL OF PORT ARTHUR ON RUSSIA—BLOODY SUNDAY AT ST. PETERSBURG.

Effect of Port Arthur's Fall—Feeling in St. Petersburg—Father Gapon—Scenes in St. Petersburg—The Putiloff Workers—At the Winter Palace—Fighting in the Suburbs—Death of the Grand Duke 1248-1255

CHAPTER LVIII.—THE VANISHED JAPANESE ARMY—AND THE VAIN SEARCH FOR IT.

Nogi Disappears—Mistchenko's Raid—The Raid Fails—Failure of the Cossacks—Mistchenko's Conduct—Russian Arrogance—Disposition of the Russian Army—The Railway System 1255-1263

CHAPTER LIX.—THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN—I.

The Japanese Armies—The Rival Army—Kuropatkin Misinformed—The Japanese Scheme—The Attack Begins—The Taling Pass—A Japanese Ruse—Kuroki in Action—Japanese Tenacity—Firing on Putiloff Hill—Nogi's Advance—Grekoff's Retreat—Russian Lack of Foresight—March 1, 1905—Kuroki at a Standstill—An 80-Mile Front—Confidence in Nodzu—Sinminting Seized 1263-1267

Contents.

	PAGES
CHAPTER IX.—THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN—II.	
Driving in the Russians—The Chetuling Pass—A Terrible Valley—46 Russian Guns—The Lichiaowopeng Line—Oku's Men—Mukden in Flames—A Vigorous Attack—The Stampede of Shahopu—The Final Armageddon—Russian Defeat at Changyitien—Fighting the Russian Flight—Oku North of the Hunho—Two Critical Days—The Centre of the Battle—Nogi North-West of Mukden—Dugged Russians—Japanese Heroism—Nogi's Position	1287-1302
CHAPTER LXI.—THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN—III.—ROUT OF THE RUSSIAN ARMY.	
March 7, 1905—Struggle at Likwanpu—Nogi's Force—Russian Retreat Expected—Retreating on Mukden Station—Russians Retreat North—Kurak's Energy—Mukden Occupied—The Russian Rout—Capture of the Russians—Kawamura's Army—The Russian Losses—The Japanese Losses—Japanese Strategy—Lessons of the Battle	1302 1329
CHAPTER LXII.—LAST DAYS OF THE BALTIC FLEET—BATTLE OF THE JAPAN SEA—I.	
Voyage of the Baltic Fleet—The Japanese Plan—Japanese Tactics—Russian Fleet Passes Singapore—Conduct of the French—Togo's Rendezvous—The Russian Alternatives—Russian Fleet in the Straits of Korea—The Japanese Spirit—Rojdestvensky's Carelessness—Japanese Vigilance—The Russians Sighted—"The Enemy in 203"—The First Shots—The Russian Formation—Togo's Signal—A Critical Moment—The 30 Minutes Battle	1329 1364
CHAPTER LXIII.—BATTLE OF THE JAPAN SEA—II.—ANNIHILATION OF THE RUSSIAN FLEET.	
May 27, 1905—Sinking of the "Osablia"—The Torpedo Flotillas—The "Suvaroff" Disabled—The "Ural" Sunk—The Cruisers' Duel—Kuroki's Timely Aid—Flight of the Russian Cruisers—Japanese Torpedoes at Work—Daybreak, May 28—Nebogatoff's Surrender—Rojdestvensky Captured—Russia's Armada Annihilated—A Discreditable Defeat—Losses—Causes of the Defeat—Victory of the Cause—Secret of Japan's Victory—The Vladivostock Cruisers—Togo	1364 1398
CHAPTER LXIV.—CONCLUSION OF THE WAR IN MANCHURIA—CONQUEST OF SAKHALIN.	
After Mukden—Kurapatkin Superseded—Imievitch—Russian Lack of Discipline—Japanese Fifty-Eight Miles North of Mukden—Russian First Plans—Fresh Troops—The Amur—Sakhalin—The Struggle for Sakhalin—Japanese Plans for Sakhalin—Korsakoff Occupied—Solodka's Career—Russian Surrenders—Advance in Manchuria	1398-1418
CHAPTER LXV.—THE PEACE NEGOTIATIONS AND THE TREATY OF PORTS-MOUTH.	
President Roosevelt's Action—The Japanese Demands—The Indemnity—Danger of a Break-Up—Text of Treaty—Notes on the Treaty—The Indemnity Abandoned—Net Results of the Treaty—Evacuation of Manchuria—Text of the Anglo-Japanese Alliance—Significance of the Treaty	1418-1436
CHAPTER LXVI.—LOSSES AND LESSONS OF THE WAR.	
Japan's Losses—Russia's Losses—Japan's Navy—Cost of the War—Japan's Lost Opportunities—Port Arthur's Mistakes—Japan's Original Position—The Future of the Far East—Japan's Self-Sacrifice—The Morality of History—Significance of Japan's Triumph—An Excursion to England	1436 1444





LIVING JAPANESE SENTRIES REPLACE THE DEAD.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE BATTLE OF YUSHULING.

THE Battle of Yushuling resulted in an even greater Japanese success than that of Towan. Late in the night of July 30-31 the Japanese began to move forward on the Yushuling Pass, as they had learnt from

**Battle of
Yushuling.**

their scouts that the Russians were meditating an attack from that direction, and the Japanese plan was always to take the initiative. Two thousand Russian Cossacks and infantry under General Rennenkampf were encountered and speedily driven back by the superior forces of the 12th Division. The Russians showed no great energy or determination, and the loss in this preliminary skirmish with them was small. The Japanese then continued their advance, and a little before daybreak came into touch with the main



[Copyright by "Collier's Weekly."
A CRIPPLED RUSSIAN SOLDIER.

Russian position in front of the Yushuling Pass. This stretched for some distance to the north and south of the Hsiho river, which hereabouts is deep and broad. To the north of this stream the Russians were encamped in a deep valley, covered with millet, just under the slopes of a lofty hill known to the Japanese as Makurayama. To the south of the river their front curved towards the banks of the Lanho, and was strongly entrenched. Four batteries with 32 quick-firing field-guns were in position, three in the

front line sweeping with their fire the road from Hsiho-yen to An-



[Copyright by "Collier's Weekly."
A PARALYSED RUSSIAN SOLDIER.

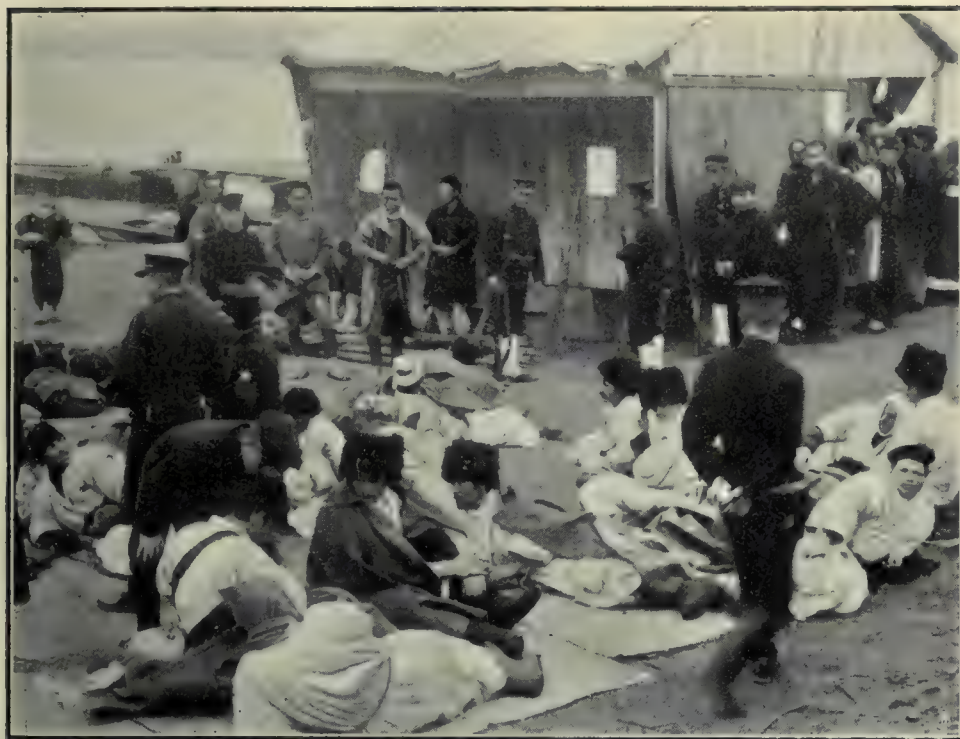


[Copyright by "Collier's Weekly."
CRIPPLED RUSSIAN SEAMEN.

ping, which ran through the position, and also the crest of Makurayama. A little to the rear was another gun-position held by one battery. Some distance from the main force, in its right front, two Russian regiments were posted near the little Chinese village of Pienling, with instructions to retire, if heavily attacked, by Chobaidai, a mountain pass near Tishukou, towards Anping.

The Japanese plan of action was as follows: The greater part of the 12th Division under General Inouye was to advance against the Yushuling position, and, should it prove assailable, to attack it. A portion of the 12th Brigade of the 12th Division under General Sasaki was to move from Hsiho-yen upon Pienling and deliver a flanking attack upon

**Japanese
Plan.**



RUSSIAN CAPTIVES AT TAKAHAMA.

the Russian main force. Yet a third detachment from the 15th Brigade of the 2nd Division under General Okasaki was simultaneously to advance from Hsiamatang and cover the 12th Brigade in this attack. The detachment of the 2nd Division which had orders to co-operate numbered three battalions, and linked the Japanese troops before Yushuling with those 15 miles away fighting the Battle of Towan. To prevent disaster, the movements of these disconnected columns, each many miles apart from

the others and scattered over a maze of mountains and deep valleys, had to be perfectly timed; but the Japanese had carried staff work to a pitch of science never before equalled in any campaign, and they felt no uneasiness. Events proved how brilliantly they not only laid but also worked out and executed their plans.

At Yushuling the Japanese opened a desultory attack with the advent of daylight. A little before dawn their force on the north bank of the Hsiho neared the commanding height of Makurayama, and, seeing its importance, at once determined to seize it. The Russians had not occupied it; there was not even a picket on the summit. Silently and cautiously, in the grey twilight, a battalion crept up the eastward slope without making a sound. They

reached the topmost peak, and saw before them in the morning light the Russian camp with tents pitched in the valley beneath, and thousands of men sleeping calmly far below. Upon this unsuspecting force they opened a terrific fire. In a moment the camp burst into life. Half-clad officers and men ran to and fro, ignorant whence their foes were firing. Two battalions formed up in a field of millet, under a hail of bullets, and at last discovering the Japanese upon the crest, with great courage advanced to dislodge them. With officers and men falling fast the Russians charged up the hill, covered by the thick undergrowth which clothed its slope. They came within 300 yards of the Japanese marksmen, but their charge died away, and the storm of lead became too fierce to be faced. Parties of Russians, however, made bold attempts to crawl forward through



LANDING RUSSIAN PRISONERS AT TAKAHAMA.



A MANCHURIAN WEDDING ON STILTS.
The bride being escorted through a village.

the bush, but were beaten back with heavy loss. For some thirty minutes the Russians held their ground on Makurayama, and then, as their punishment was greater than they could endure, turned and fled down the hill in panic flight, throwing away rifles and clothing and accoutrements, and abandoning their camp and all the vehicles within it in the valley. They scattered and retired in all directions, some towards Liaoyang, and others towards Anping, leaving 300 dead and wounded behind them.



GENERAL KUROPATKIN AT LIAOYANG STATION.

[Photo by Victor Bulla.]

Their retreat was covered by the Russian artillery, which had now opened a rapid fire upon the crest, and, when the Japanese infantry appeared upon the ridge, shelled them heavily, preventing them from advancing or gaining ground. The fight came to a standstill; but about 10 a.m. the Russians were ordered to make a fresh attempt to dislodge the Japanese, and again came forward, this time advancing from the northwest, so as to threaten the flank

of the force on the hill. The Russian movement, however, was immediately countered by the Japanese. A thousand infantry were brought up from the reserves, and, fording the river Hsiho, came into contact with the Russian force. There was a short but sharp skirmish, as the result of which the Russians fell back, and Makurayama thenceforth remained in the unchallenged possession of the Japanese till the late afternoon.

In the centre the Japanese forced the Russian outposts back upon the main positions early in the day, but were unable to gain further ground. The Russians held a lofty ridge, precipitous on the side



A COSSACK IN FULL RETREAT.

fronting the Japanese, with a level plain in its front. There was nothing to be done, and all that the men of the 12th Division could do was to wait until the forward movement of the flanking forces compelled the Russians to relax their hold.

To the south the Japanese achieved the greatest success of the day—a success which decided the issue of the uncertain conflict for the Yushuling. General Sasaki with the 12th Brigade had marched early upon Pienling, and on nearing that place found the Russians in strong force, entrenching themselves, and



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."]

RUSSIAN NURSES AT MUKDEN.

rear, and the Russians were endeavouring to meet this new and deadly attack. At once the Japanese of the 12th Brigade seized their opportunity. With hoarse shouts of "Banzai!" they pressed forward, and carried the hill, driving the Russians before them in confusion.

The Russian line of retreat lay along a deep valley enclosed by precipitous mountains, through the gloomy pass of Chobaidai. No precautions had been taken to secure



RUSSIAN FIELD GUNS UNDER WALL OF LIAOYANG.



JAPANESE TROOPS MARCHING TO LIAOYANG ALONG THE RAILROAD.

holding a long ridge, under which ran the road to Anping and the rear of the

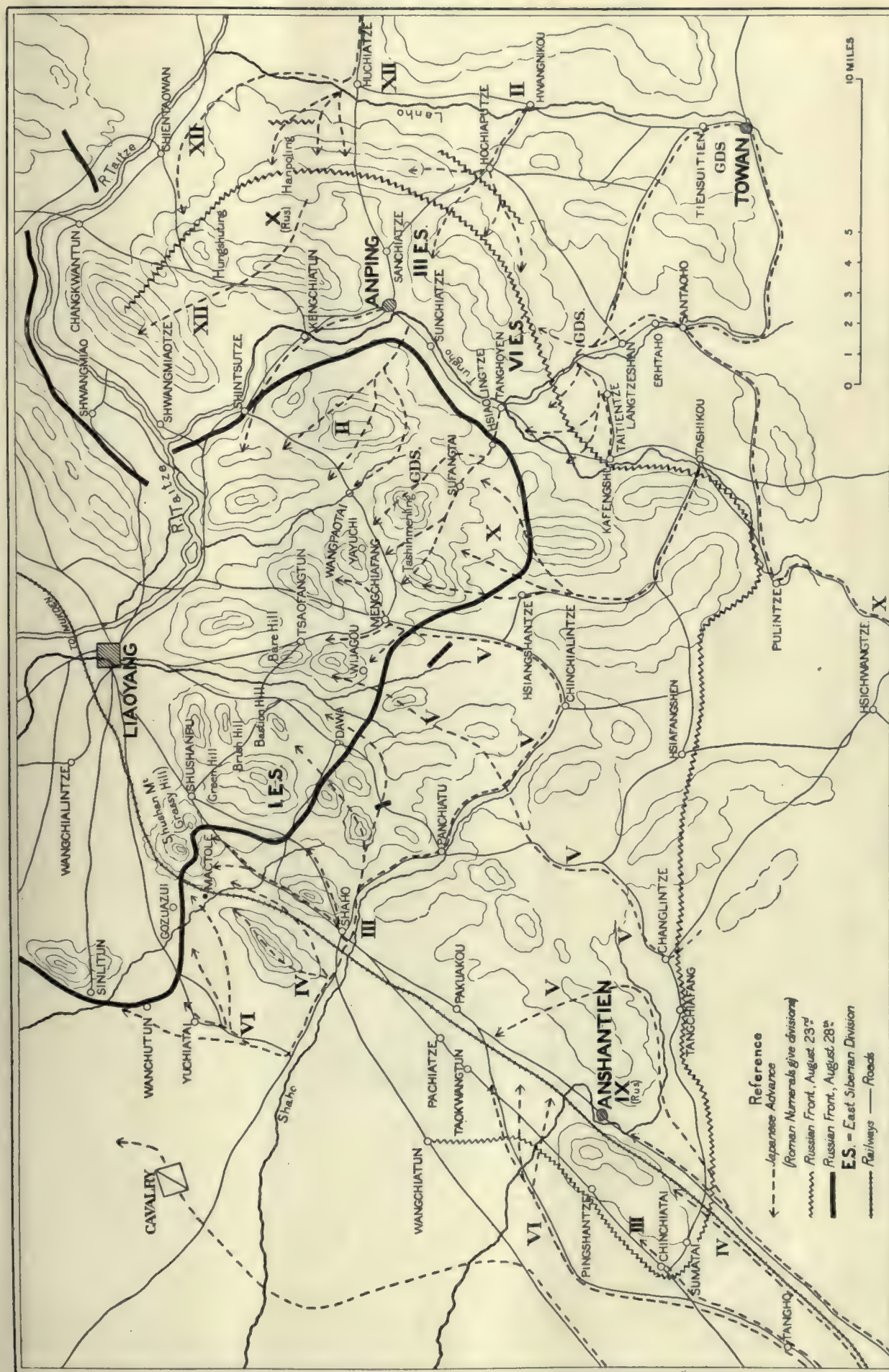
Defeat of the Russians. Russian army. The

Russians had no artillery, whereas the Japanese had mountain-guns. These at once opened fire, and the infantry deployed and advanced to the attack across a slope covered with bush and isolated trees. The advance made slow progress, and the Russians were gradually retiring, when, suddenly, General Sasaki saw a remarkable movement in the Russian lines, and on his ear broke the roll of quick rifle-firing. The troops of the 2nd Division, marching by a different road, had come up on the Russian flank and

these heights; they were not occupied with a rear-

Russian guard, and Troops if in the Trapped. hands of

the Japanese, the men below would be absolutely helpless. Observing this the troops of the 2nd Division, instead of attacking the Russians in their rear, had moved towards the heights,



MAP SHOWING THE JAPANESE ADVANCE ON LIAOYANG.

hoping to cut off the Russian retreat and thus inflict upon their enemy a great disaster. A Japanese officer, somewhat in advance of his men, was the first to reach the summit of the ridge overlooking the pass, and as he reached it saw that a Russian detachment was racing up to occupy it. He signalled back to his troops, and they came on the double. In better training, accustomed to hill fighting, and far less heavily laden than the slow-moving peasants of the Russian army, they won in the race. A battalion crowned the height, while to check the Russians General Okasaki deployed one of his battalions and opened fire upon them, delaying their advance. The Japanese rapidly lined the ridge looking down on the pass, and gained a position whence in perfect security themselves they could direct a murderous fire

upon troops moving along the rough mountain track far below.

The Russian troops were thus trapped. Behind them were the men of the 12th Division under General Sasaki. In front of them were the troops of the 2nd Division under General Okasaki. There was no exit from their position except by the fatal defile. The Russians hesitated for some instants as to what course to follow, but the pressure of the Japanese behind them was such that they had no long time for consideration. They may for a moment have thought of surrender, but if they did they promptly rejected that unmanly course. Then, in a wild stream of disordered fugitives, they fled to the road through the fatal defile. Arms and coats they flung away. The Japanese fired down upon them with loud shouts of "Banzai!" The defile was piled with dead,



THE CHRISTENING OF THE CZAREVITCH IN THE CHURCH OF THE PETERHOF PALACE, ON AUGUST 24, 1904.

The Czarvitch was born on August 12, 1904, and it was hoped that his birth would bring about a happier state of things in Russia.

the stream along its bottom ran red with blood, and had the Japanese been able to bring up their artillery scarcely a man would have escaped. But, finally, the Russians issued from the defile, leaving behind them one-fourth of their number—1,200—dead and wounded. Twice the ambulances halted and collected the prostrate figures, and each time that they stopped for this purpose the Japanese chivalrously suspended their fire, though no white flag was raised. The Japanese loss was about a dozen men, among them, however, Lieutenant Nishii, the officer who had first reached the ridge and realised its importance.

The Japanese deplored having to shoot down these gallant antagonists, but it was one of the cruel necessities of war that they should inflict the utmost possible punishment upon their foe, so that they could

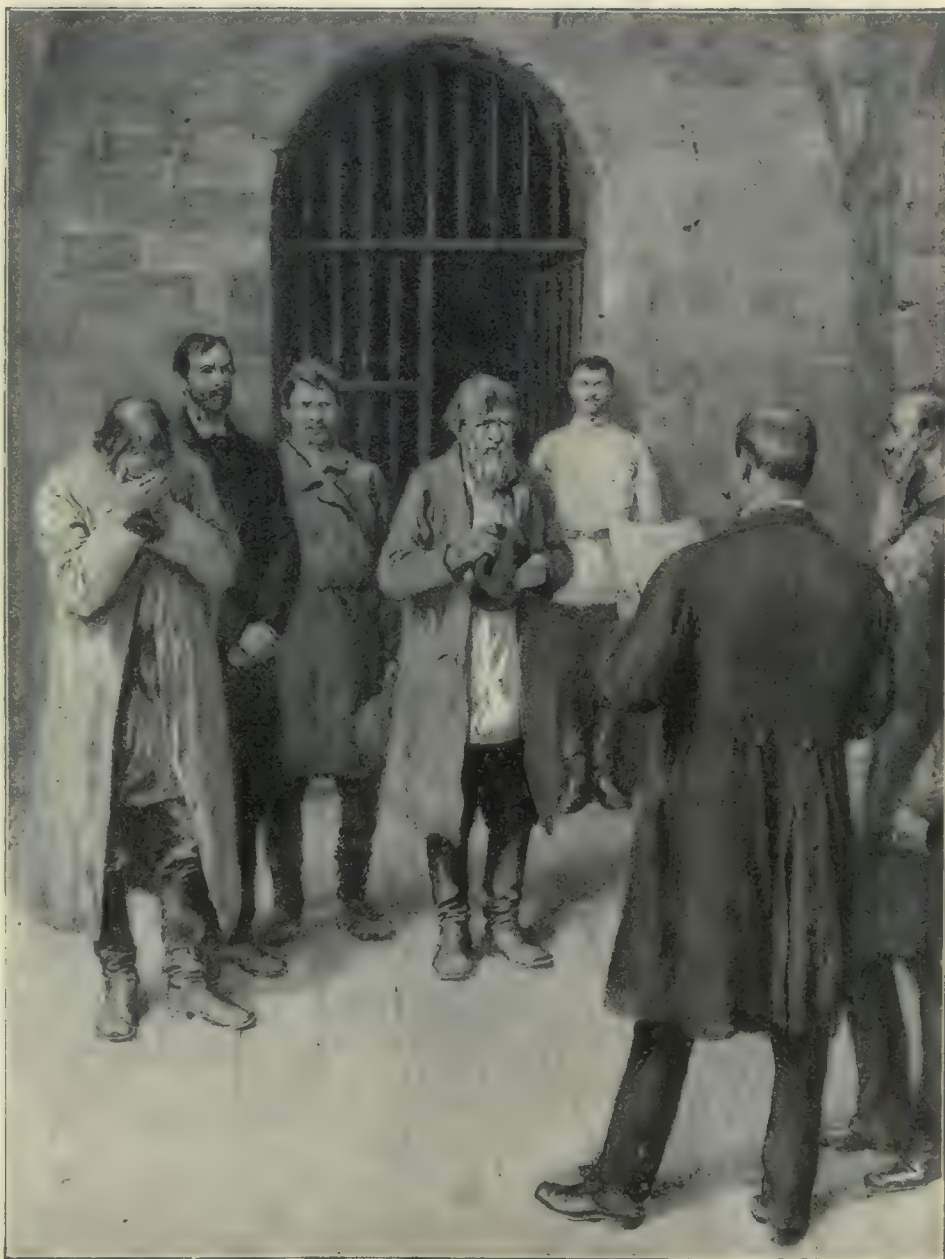
not spare the flying Russians. They continued their advance towards Yushuling, and rapidly moved upon the Russian right flank, threatening their enemy with envelopment, and with even greater disaster. Meantime no progress had been made by the Japanese right and centre before Yushuling, though as evening approached a third Russian attempt to storm Makurayama had been repulsed. The Japanese troops were instructed to assault the Russian position in their front as soon as day should dawn. The Russian artillery had already retired, and there were signs that the infantry holding the Russian entrenchments were being weakened. With daybreak of August 1st the Russians were in full retreat, abandoning their position to the Japanese.

The Russian Retreat.

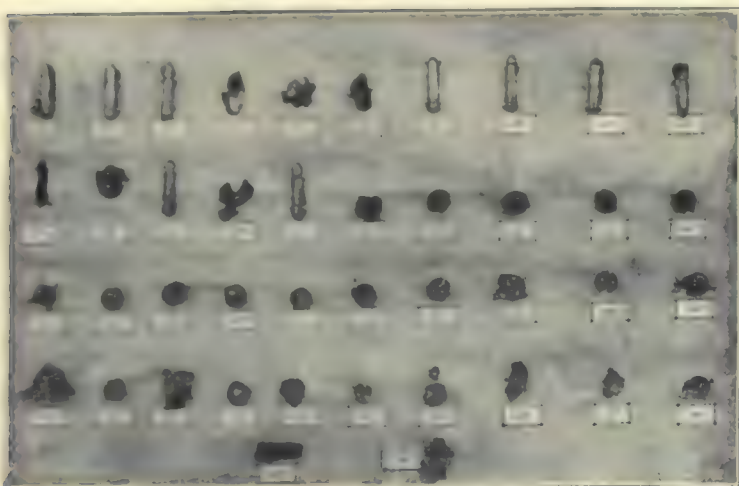
The Russian loss in this encounter was estimated at 2,000 by the Japanese. Six hundred dead were buried on the field, and in addition it is believed that the Russian ambulances removed the bodies of many officers. The prisoners numbered 200, among them being a Russian surgeon-colonel. As trophies of the fight the Japanese recovered on the field 800 rifles, a large quantity of rifle ammunition, trenching tools, over 1,000 tents, and an immense amount of camp equipage and clothing. The Japanese casualties in the fight numbered only 416, including two officers killed and 14 wounded.

After the battle the Guards Division encamped at Towan, the 2nd at Tiensuitien, and the 12th at Yushuling, and another long pause followed, during which preparations were completed for the final move against Liaoyang.

and the 12th at Yushuling, and another long pause followed, during which preparations were completed for the final move against Liaoyang, and in the interval the 2nd Japanese Army under General Oku pushed forward to Haicheng. During the long wait the Japanese of the 1st Army could hear the Russians blasting at Anping to construct fresh positions, and saw new works arising daily as the engineers of General Kuropatkin's army completed the fortifications of a position which had been carefully selected some months before for the final stand in front of Liaoyang. The delay was in part caused by the hope that the Port Arthur army would succeed in storming that great fortress, and be able to co-operate in the great combined attack upon the Russian army.



RELEASING RUSSIAN PRISONERS FROM GAOL TO COMMEMORATE THE BIRTH OF THE CZAREVITCH.



A RECORD OF WOUNDS. A COLLECTION OF BULLETS AT HARBIN.
In the Hospital No. 1 at Harbin is to be seen this collection of bullets, shrapnel, and other missiles. Each is duly catalogued, with the record and result of the case. The photograph was given by General Densin, the Press Censor of Harbin, to Mr. Julius Price, a Special Artist with the Russian forces.

With that force a knockout blow might be dealt; without it the Japanese could hope for nothing more than to dislodge the Russians from their works and drive them back another stage on their long journey to the north.

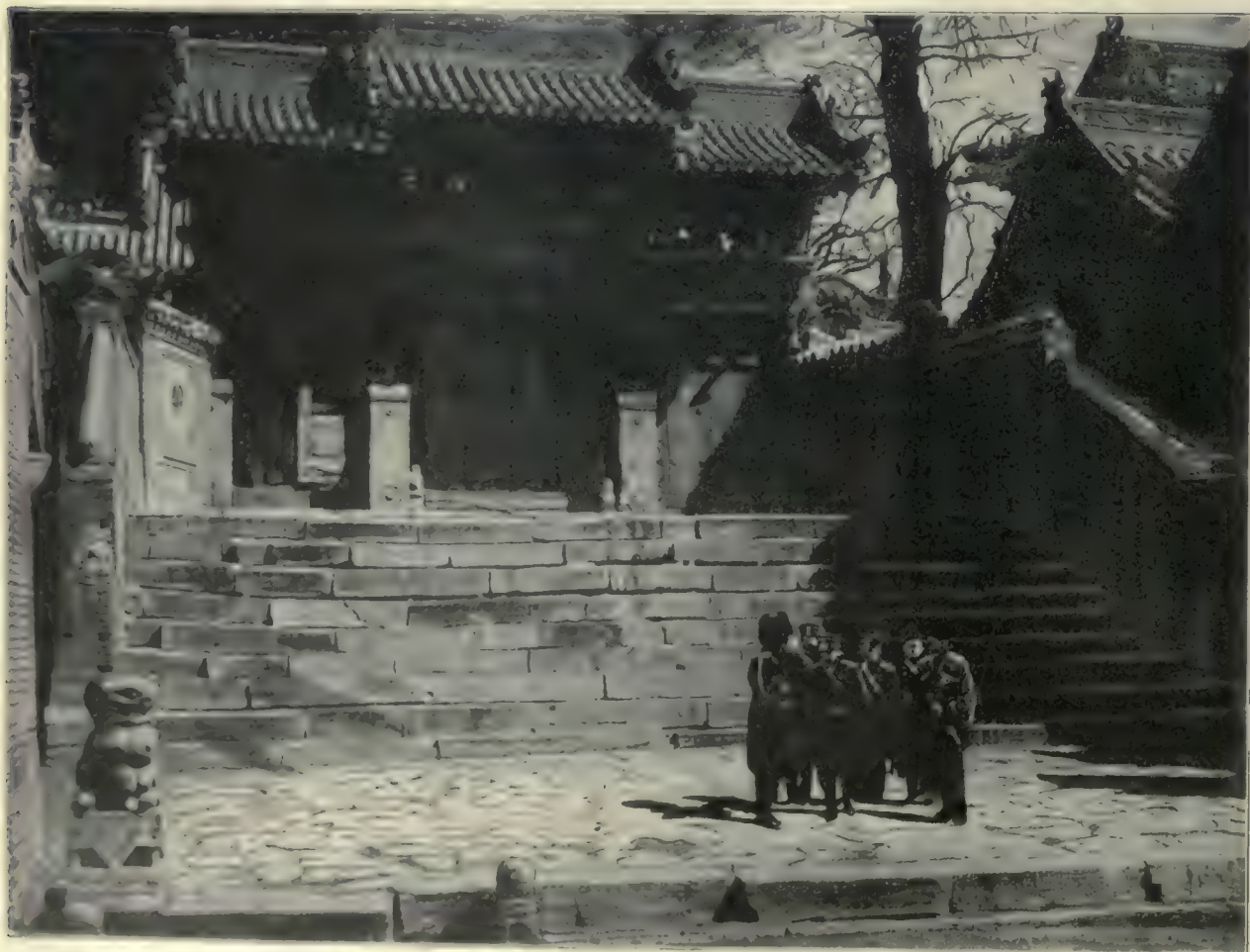
CHAPTER XL.

THE ADVANCE TO LIAOYANG— BEGINNING OF THE BATTLE.

IN the Japanese forward movements, all the armies co-operating against General Kuropatkin always attacked simultaneously, and thus while General Kuroki was pushing forward on the right

and occupying the Yantzuling and Yushuling Passes, on the extreme left General Oku advanced his army northwards in the most intense heat, varied by tropical rains, towards Haicheng, where the Russians had loudly proclaimed their intention of making a determined stand, and where they were understood to have raised formidable fortifications. The Japanese columns moved out from Tashihchao on August 1, and found themselves opposed by nothing more serious than a Russian rearguard, which fell back as soon as the Japanese deployed, and would not fight a pitched battle.

Oku's Advance.



GENERAL KUROPATKIN AND HIS STAFF AT LIAOYANG.



THE CZAREVITCH IN A GILDED COACH EN ROUTE TO ITS CHRISTENING IN THE PALACE CHAPEL.



GENERAL KUROPATKIN'S HEADQUARTERS AT LIAOYANG. [Photo, Nouvelles.]

On the following day the Japanese advance continued with even greater ease, as General Kuropatkin, alarmed by the development of General Kuroki's attack and by the loss of the important passes near Liaoyang, had now come to the conclusion that it was better not to fight at Haicheng, but to evacuate that place without serious resistance. On August 3, General Oku's army took possession of Haicheng and the

old town of Newchwang, which lies far inland from the port of that name. The Russians retired in perfect order, and no trophies of any importance were taken by the Japanese.

After this advance a long pause followed, during which the arrangements for the final movement upon Liaoyang were being completed. The task before the Japanese was now an extremely formidable one. Late in August it was known that the great assault upon Port Arthur, after coming within an ace of success, had failed disastrously, with enormous loss to the Japanese. Hence there would be no superiority of numbers on the part of Marshal Oyama's armies. They could count upon placing only eight divisions, totalling between 170,000 and 180,000 men, against a Russian force, which is now known to have numbered a little over 180,000 men, and which received some reinforcements during the battle. Three of the Japanese divisions were at Port Arthur with the 3rd Army, and two more were held in reserve in Japan for the work of attacking Vladivostock, and do not appear to have fought at all in the earlier part of the Manchurian campaign. The eight divisions which were to take part in the prolonged and terrible struggle before Liaoyang had been heavily reinforced and brought up to a strength of rather over 20,000 men apiece. The Japanese do not seem to have known the full strength of the Russians, but to have supposed that General Kuropatkin would be inferior in force.

The three Japanese armies were thus composed: On the right was the 1st Army under General Kuroki, with the 12th Division on its right, the 2nd Division in its centre, and the Guards on its left. Its headquarters on the eve of the advance to Liaoyang

were at
The Three
Armies. Tientsuientien.

In the centre was the 4th Army under General Nodzu, with the 10th Division on its right and the 5th Division on its left. Its headquarters were at Simucheng. On the left was the 2nd Army under General Oku, with its headquarters at Haicheng, and with the 3rd Division on its right, the



RUSSIAN SOLDIERS BUYING ONIONS AND APPLES FROM CHINESE PEDLARS AT LIAOYANG.

4th in its centre, and the 6th on its extreme left. The Japanese cavalry covered the left of the army in the plain, and held itself ready to move up the valley of the Liao when the hour for the general advance should come. Continual skirmishing took place between this force and the Cossacks, in which on the whole the Russians had rather the best of matters, until the Japanese cavalry abandoned shock tactics and fell back on the revolver, allowing the Russians to approach within the closest range, and then suddenly opening fire.

The Japanese artillery was still inferior to the Russian in calibre, range, and shell-power. The eight divisions brought into the field some 350 field and mountain guns and field-howitzers, besides which a certain number of heavy guns captured from the Russians at Nanshan were attached to the 2nd Army. The mountainous nature of the country through which the 1st and 4th Armies had to fight their way



BUILDING A BOMB-PROOF SHELTER WITHIN THE RUSSIAN LINES SOUTH-EAST OF LIAOYANG.

[Photo, Bulla.

rendered it impossible for them to bring up ponderous ordnance. The total number of Japanese guns available did not exceed 400, if it reached that number.

General Kuropatkin's army, assembled at Liaoyang and the neighbourhood, consisted of the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 5th, 6th, and 9th East Siberian Divisions, troops of fine fighting quality, but greatly shaken by repeated defeats sustained in action with the Japanese. Besides these divisions there were two Siberian army corps which had been newly formed—the 4th and 5th. A Russian division is nominally 20,000 strong, a Russian corps more than 40,000 strong; but actually the strength was far less than the paper figure. From Europe had come the 10th Army Corps, which had taken part in the battles with General Kuroki; while during August the 17th Army Corps also

**Kuropatkin's
Army.**



JAPANESE BUYING HORSES FOR THE ARMY
AT HAICHENG.

Liaoyang, intending to make it the centre of Russian power in Southern Manchuria, and during the war the fortifications had been completed. They were of enormous strength and extent. Far to the south

of Liaoyang a position had been carefully prepared for defence—
Fortifying Liaoyang. at Anshantien, where the sea of troubled mountains which heaves over the wide space between the Korean frontier and the valley of the Liao merges into the plain, and where the railway and the roads northwards are dominated by easily defensible heights. A second position had been prepared along the banks of the Shaho—not the river which some months later became so famous in military annals, but a smaller and less important

arrived, and towards the close of the month some portion of the 1st Army Corps. Thus General Kuropatkin disposed of four complete army corps during the later stages of the battle, as well as six independent divisions. He had fourteen divisions to the Japanese eight, though the Japanese division was actually much stronger than the Russian.

His artillery was composed of about 450 guns, many of them quick-firers of the latest pattern, capable of firing fifteen aimed shots a minute, and shooting much harder and further than the Japanese guns. About Liaoyang were mounted a large number of heavy guns of antiquated pattern, brought from Russia during the war. Even before the war the Russians had begun to fortify



THE WEST GATE OF HAICHENG.



JAPANESE OFFICER EXAMINING RUSSIAN PRISONER
AT HAICHENG.

stream. A short distance to the north of the Shaho was yet a third position, six miles from Liaoyang, fortified with prodigious care, and extending along a ridge of hills from Shushan Mountain eastwards. Finally, on the approach from the south-west, there was yet a fourth chain of strong works and forts protecting Liaoyang itself and the railway-station.

South-east there were the same defensive precautions. A strong advanced position had been made ready to the east of the Tangho River, stretching in a crescent southwards from the banks of the Taitze, and



JAPANESE FIELD-TELEGRAPH POLES NEAR HAICHENG.

enough for any assaulting army.

No fault could be found with the Russian works—to the west, at all events. Their trenches were cut

deep, with
Trenches good head-
and Pits. cover, and

turfed in front, so that at a distance they were invisible. Bomb-proofs, to give shelter to the men during the artillery preparation, were not omitted. In front of the main lines of trenches row upon row of pits were dug, each pit with a sharp stake at the bottom to impale living men who might fall into it. Between the pits was only a narrow and precarious passage, and even that was impeded by barbed wire and by contact mines, which were laid in profusion. Behind the pits were almost impassable tangles of barbed wire, firmly planted with excellent support, and in places wires charged with a powerful current of electricity, which instantly killed in the most fearful

from this position the Russians hoped to strike a deadly blow at General Kuroki's army. To make assurance doubly sure, a second and even stronger position was prepared to the rear of the first, to the west of the Tangho, while the works in the immediate neighbourhood of Liaoyang and to the north of the river Taitze would protect the retreat of a defeated force and impede the advance of the victor. To the south of Liaoyang, in the rough, hilly country which stretched interminably to Simucheng, Siuyen, and the Yellow Sea, were other defences, but of less elaborate pattern and less formidable trace, though formidable



MISSING! JAPANESE DEAD AND WOUNDED LOST IN A FIELD OF HIGH MILLET.



YINKOU STATION UNDER THE RUSSIANS.

Of these works one had been christened by the Russians "Little Port Arthur," from its enormous strength and reputed impregnability; and those who saw the great forts at Port Arthur were afterwards compelled to admit that its name was not undeserved by this Liaoyang fastness.

Thus the Japanese had not only to assail an army of superior strength with slightly superior artillery, but they had also to assail a fortress of the first class on which that army rested.

Liaoyang a Fortress.

The lines at Colenso were as nothing compared with the prodigious fortifications, bristling with artillery, upon which they must fling themselves to achieve success. And even if line after line of entrenchments was carried, there yet remained the swift and

manner the man who unwarily laid hand upon them. The works immediately protecting Liaoyang were of even greater strength, as they had, in addition to the honeycomb of pits with sharp stakes and the tangle of barbed wire and live wires, deep moats or ditches, with sides so steep that they could not be climbed, swept by the fire of machine-guns mounted in caponnières or small works actually situated in the ditches, and only capable of being entered from the fort behind.



EXAMINING RUSSIAN PRISONERS AT HAICHENG.



JAPANESE ARMY CANTEEN.

wide Taitze river to be bridged or forded before the Russians could be pursued and victory driven home. Over the Taitze the Russians had constructed five bridges, so that they had easy and rapid communication between the two banks of the stream. There were in addition certain fords which were used by the Cossacks and cavalry.

The City of Liaoyang itself is of the usual Chinese type, a huge walled

The City of Liaoyang. maze of narrow

streets, containing a population of over 60,000. Far off a great pagoda showed, rising high above the walls and dominating the

whole vast plain that stretched about the city. West of the city was the railway-station and a series of immense store-sheds, while about the station had grown up a Russian quarter of solidly built brick and stone houses. Near Liaoyang the plain began, the granary of Eastern Asia, and in mid-August all the valleys and the flat alluvial land were green with the millet or kaoliang, which grows to a height of ten feet, and in which even cavalry are screened from view. Dotted here and there upon the fruitful plain were Chinese villages, all densely populated.

General Kuropatkin had determined to inflict a great defeat upon the Japanese at Liaoyang. It was afterwards said, indeed, that he had intended from the first to evacuate the town; but the story is not true. He meant to evacuate Liaoyang in the event of the Japanese marching upon it in May or June, but at the close of July he began to feel certain of himself and of his army. He knew that he had the superiority in force and the advantage in position; he had also a large number of troops from Europe, the flower of the Russian army. His intention was to fling himself with the great bulk of his army upon General Kuroki, so soon as that general approached within easy reach, at the same time holding off the other two Japanese armies by the strength of the fortifications to the south of Liaoyang. He had the



A RUSSIAN PRIEST BLESSING GENERAL KUROPATKIN AND HIS OFFICERS BEFORE BATTLE.

interior lines and the means of readily moving ammunition and stores which a light narrow-gauge railway laid to the works at Liaoyang gave him, while his numerous bridges would enable him to concentrate an imposing force at will on either bank of the Taitze. Only one factor was not in his favour. The Russian works had been planned and erected before the kaoliang shot up, and the effect of the sudden and rapid growth of this crop in the hot Manchurian sun and torrential rain was, as it were, to raise the level of the whole country by some ten or twelve feet.

The heavy rains, which marked the early days of August, may have delayed the Japanese advance,



RUSSIAN ARTILLERY AT THE BATTLE IN FRONT OF ANPING.

though the main reason for delay on the Japanese part was, as has been pointed out, the hope that Port Arthur might be carried by assault, and General Nogi's army be added to the three now closing in upon General Kuropatkin. On August 23 orders were issued by General Kuroki for an advance of his army against the Russians holding the positions in front of Anping. The Japanese staff had learnt that strong reinforcements were about to join the Russians, and that General Kuropatkin was intending to attack, and so decided to strike without further delay.

**Advance Order:
August 23.**

The Russian force fronting General Kuroki consisted of the 10th Army Corps, stationed in front of Anping, and the 3rd and 6th Siberian Rifle Divisions, which had fought at the Yalu, stationed in front of Sanchiatze and Tanghoyen. In addition to these complete units were several detachments from other Russian corps or divisions, so that the total Russian force for fighting purposes was placed by the Japanese at four divisions, or 75,000 men. The line which they held, however, was of enormous length; it stretched for nearly twenty miles through mountainous country, with mountains behind it. The result was that it was a matter of extreme difficulty to transfer troops from one part of the line to the other, and the Russians were everywhere weak and unable to concentrate to meet the Japanese attack. The Japanese plan was of primitive simplicity, and was

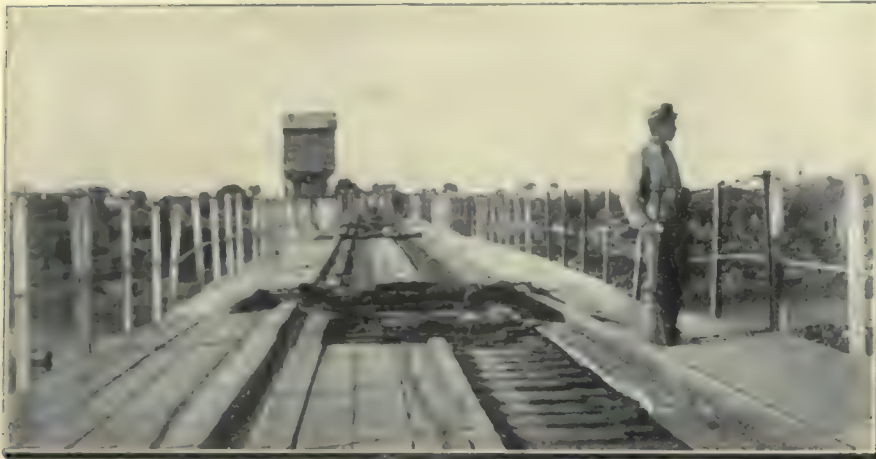


GROUP OF RUSSIAN MILITARY PRIESTS AND CHOIR.

(Bolak photo.)



JAPANESE ATTACKING RUSSIAN REARGUARD IN THEIR RETREAT TOWARDS LIAOYANG FROM ANPING.



BRIDGE DESTROYED BY RUSSIANS NEAR ANSHANTIEN.

and marching among the thirteen divisions that went to war at the Emperor's order.

On the afternoon of the 23rd the Guards Division, reinforced by a number of batteries from the 2nd Division, and by the weapons captured from the Russians at the Yalu, pushed rapidly up the highroad towards Tanghoyen, driving in the Russian outposts. When night fell they were near Tatientze, on the extreme Russian right. Next day they began a vigorous attack upon Tatientze and Tashikou, whither the Russians speedily forwarded reinforcements,



A SMALL COMPANY OF JAPANESE INFANTRY AT ANSHANTIEN. (S. Smith photo.)



A MANCHURIAN VILLAGE DAMAGED BY SHELLS.

based on the Russian dispositions. It was to make a feint in strong force against the Russian right near Tanghoyen, and then, when the enemy had hurried his reserves to that part of the field, to assault the centre near Anping, and endeavour to break through. The work of breaking through the hostile line was entrusted to the 2nd Division, which had the highest reputation for fighting

thus denuding the rest of their line. The large Russian force massed in this quarter of the field gradually brought the attack of the Guards to a standstill, but demonstrations were made which concealed the real purpose of the Japanese from the Russians, and led the latter to imagine that General Kuroki's main object was to force a way through to Tanghoyen.

Meanwhile the 12th Division was pushing its advance to the north-west and marching through the hills in long columns upon Hanpoling, on the Russian left, to get into position for the general attack, which was timed for the morning of the 26th. Last of all the 2nd Division moved on the 25th to deliver its great assault upon the Russian centre. The ground over which it had to march was so mountainous and difficult that it took with it no field artillery; the only guns it was to bring into action were a battery of mountain weapons, lent by the 12th Division. Early in the evening the division assembled at Huangnikou, where it halted in a deep valley, and waited for the blackness of night to cover its arduous and daring attack on the Russian line. Its outposts were thrown forward, and in the moonlight drove in the Russian detachments and pickets watching the line of approach from the east. In so doing it necessarily alarmed the Russians, who manned their lines and waited for the now inevitable onrush of the Japanese.

As soon as the moon had set, which was about 2.30, the Japanese formed in line, fixed bayonets, and advanced. To distinguish the men of the 2nd Division from the Russians in the dark, each soldier wore a white bandage round his arm. The combat which ensued was desperate and bloody; as if by common consent each side used the cold steel only, and, as the Russians had been greatly weakened by detachments sent to the right to withstand the Japanese Guards' attack, they were forced back after half an hour of the severest fighting. The whole Japanese division was

thrown into the assault with characteristic daring; there were no reserves in case the affair had miscarried, and no troops to meet a Russian counter-attack. But once more General Nishii, who commanded the Japanese, calculated upon the immobility and want of initiative of the Russian commanders, and once more he calculated correctly. When day broke the Russian position was in the hands of the Japanese, and the Russians had fallen back upon a second line of trenches, between Hochiaputze and Sanchiatze. The victorious Japanese infantry pressed on their heels and succeeded in effecting a lodgment upon either flank of this second line of heights, so that the Russians were now



FIELD-MARSHAL OYAMA, COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE JAPANESE LAND FORCES, AND GENERAL KODAMA, THE GREAT TACTICIAN.



BRINGING IN WOUNDED JAPANESE AT ANSHANTIEN.

only in possession of the centre. From the points of the long ridge which they had gained the men of the 2nd Division continually delivered attacks upon the Russians, who could be seen huddled together in the centre.

**The Guards
Advance.**

The central part of the ridge rose steeply from the green valley bottom, now covered with ripening millet. Upon it was line after line of trenches, held by riflemen, from which poured a terrific fire whenever the Japanese made an effort to advance across the low ground of the valley or to support the attacks which were being delivered by the parties on the ridge. Far away to north and south the thunder of artillery filled the clear air, as the 12th and



HUNGCHUTZU PARADING BEFORE RUSSIANS AT TIEHLING, NEAR MUKDEN.

Guards divisions simultaneously flung themselves upon the Russian lines, aiding the 2nd Division in its gallant effort. Upon the eminence captured in the night attack the Japanese staff stationed the mountain battery, which shelled the Russian trenches and threw

projectiles right over the mountain ridge in the direction of Anping. Its activity speedily attracted the attention of the Russian gunners in the strong batteries which had been constructed near Anping. Fifteen or twenty Russian guns of superior weight turned their fire upon it; a perfect hailstorm of shells descended about it, and the Japanese gunners wisely gave up the contest, and withdrew the weapons to avoid annihilation. Yet they did not retire from the battle. The battery commander noted some distance below in the valley a millet-field, just out of range of the Russian rifles. Thither he moved two of his guns, and there, secure from the Russian heavy field-guns, he reopened fire upon the enemy's positions.

At short range, where every projectile told, these two weapons shelled the Russian trenches.

**The Summit
Gained.**

Clouds of smoke on the brown mountain side showed where shrapnel and common shell were bursting. The effect upon the Russian sharpshooters was noticeable. Hitherto they had been

reinforcing the trenches from the rear; now a sharp movement of men towards the rear was apparent. The Russian trenches at this point were not cut deep, and gave insufficient shelter. As the guns searched the trenches, observers saw the long Japanese lines advance. Parties of khaki-clad soldiers worked forward, getting into position for the final rush. The head of each party carried a white flag with red centre, to signal back to the artillerymen the progress of the advance.



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.
MAJOR-GENERAL AKIYAMA, COMMANDER IMPERIAL
GUARDS BRIGADE, 1ST ARMY.



WHAT THE FOREIGN ATTACHES AND CORRESPONDENTS SAW OF THE BATTLE BEFORE ANSHANTHEN.



RUSSIAN POSITION NEAR ANSHANTIEN—FROM OBSERVATION HILL NEAR HAICHENG.
THE RUSSIAN FORTS AND TRENCHES EXTENDED FAR WEST INTO THE PLAIN, AND THEIR WHOLE FRONT STRETCHED ALONG THE LOWER SLOPES OF THE HILLS IN THE DISTANCE.

The Japanese infantry did not fire; they went forward in perfect silence through the hail of lead,

leaving behind them a trail of wounded and of dead.

The guns redoubled their fire for the final effort; "planting shell in couples, in trench after trench, working along the front of the defence as a sower advances along a field."

The Russians could be seen retreating to the sky-line; far-away shouts of "Banzai!" came to the spectators' ears, and with a surge the Japanese line broke into an upward run and swept to the summit of the ridge, while the Russians on the crest rose from their cover and poured into the mass of charging men a terrific fire. But they could not daunt the vehemence of that onset. The Japanese did not flinch under their punishment; in a moment their line had gained the summit; weapons glinted in the sun; groups of men scuffling could be seen along the ridge, and then the Japanese standard floated in the breeze. The crest was won; the Russians were in flight; and the victorious infantry of the 2nd Division were pouring upon their routed enemy a deadly fire.

There was no pursuit except by rifle-bullets, as the instant that the Japanese had crowned the ridge the Russian gunners opened upon it a devastating hail of



Residman Johnston photo.
GENERAL OCHIAI, CHIEF OF STAFF 2ND JAPANESE ARMY.



... SMOKING THE GUNNERS. A JAPANESE DEVICE TO HINDER ARTILLERY FIRE.

A Russian battery baulked by the smoke of a village purposely set on fire by the Japanese.



KUROPATKIN AND HIS STAFF AT LUNCHEON IN THE GENERAL'S MAGNIFICENT CORRIDOR-TRAIN.

Mr. Julian Price, the artist, says this special train was a most magnificent arrangement of corridor-carriages, fitted up with every comfort and luxury.

shells, forcing the advance to halt. The Japanese mountain-guns took up the task of beating down the Russian artillery fire, but almost at once the duel was stopped by the interposition of Nature. A furious thunderstorm which had been gathering all the morning broke over the mountains, drenching the slopes with torrents of rain and blotting out the landscape. The battle was over for the day, with a loss to the

Japanese of 600 men, and at least as heavy a butcher's bill for the Russians.

Meanwhile, on the Japanese left, the Guards with one brigade had attacked the Russians in position before Tanghoyen. Before Tanghoyen. the other

brigade forming the reserve of the 2nd Army. Though the Guards brought 60 guns into action they could make no decided impression on the Russian line, which had been heavily reinforced during the night of the 25-6th. They did, indeed, pierce the line in the centre; but, having pierced it, the Russians were reinforced, and at once delivered a counter-attack, which not only brought the Japanese advance to a complete standstill, but also threatened the Guards



A CONTRAST—ONE OF THE HEADQUARTERS OF THE JAPANESE SECOND ARMY.

with defeat. At this juncture, however, the other Guards brigade arrived, and enabled the division to hold the ground which it had won. Further operations were prevented by the storm. On the Japanese right the 12th Division captured the advanced Russian position at Hanpoling, and also gained some ground in the direction of Hungshuling, but was unable to storm the main Russian position. Thus the day closed with no decided success. Only in the centre had the Japanese effected their purpose and driven in the Russian line.

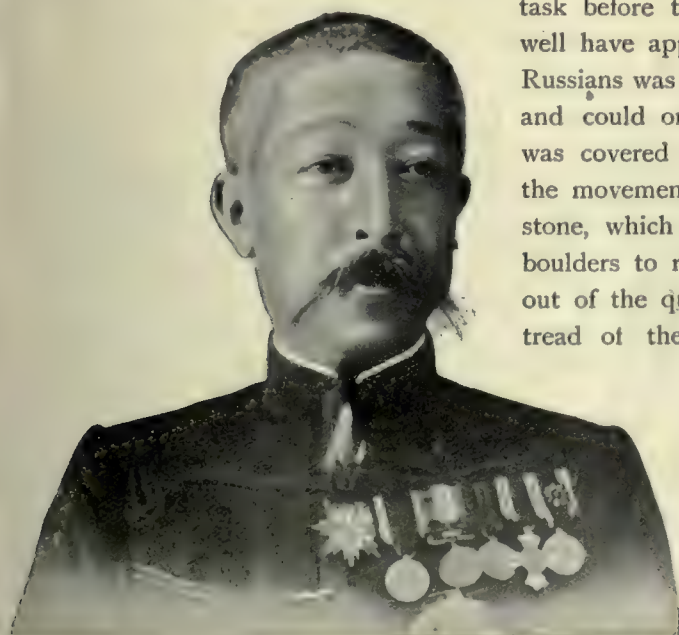
Failure, however, is unknown to a Japanese army. "Reinforce, and assault again!" was the word of the day. The 12th Division was ordered to



[From a photograph by H. C. White & Co., N. Bennington, U.S.A.]

MARSHAL OYAMA, THE JAPANESE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, IN FIGHTING KIT.

throw itself in the darkness upon the heights which overlook Hungshuling, and which could not be turned, but could only be carried by a frontal assault. In the night the Russian artillery, which had proved itself altogether superior to the weak Japanese mountain-guns, would be powerless. But the task before the men of the 12th Division was one that might well have appalled the stoutest heart. The ridge held by the Russians was steep and precipitous; its upper portion was bare, and could only be climbed with difficulty; its lower portion was covered with thick thorny undergrowth, which hampered the movements of the men. Near the summit were screes of stone, which gave the enemy on the top an ample supply of boulders to roll down upon an assaulting force. Surprise was out of the question, as the rocks rattled and gave beneath the tread of the assaulting troops.

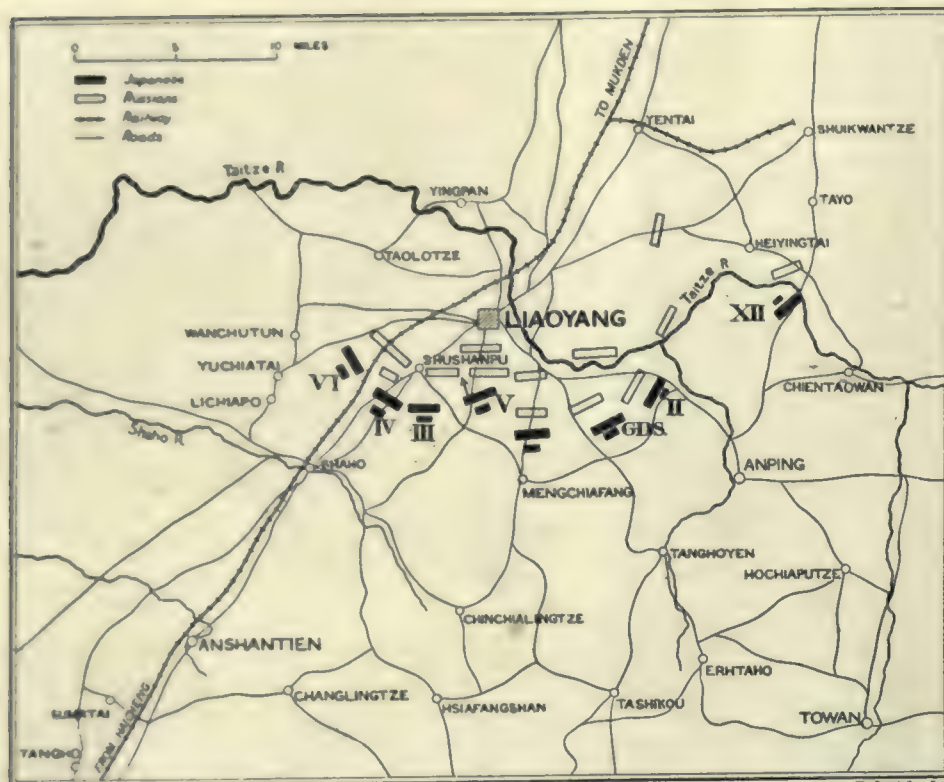


H.I.H. FUSHIMI,
Commander of the 1st Japanese Division.

In the moonlight the Japanese advanced to the foot of this forbidding mountain. As the

Advance
by Moonlight.

moon set, long lines of men began the stealthy ascent in absolute darkness, and pushed quickly through the thorns to where the real business began. The Russians had heard them coming, and greeted them with volleys of boulders rolled down from the heights, which



MAP TO ILLUSTRATE THE BEGINNING OF KUROKI'S FLANK MOVEMENT BEFORE LIAOYANG—MIDNIGHT, AUGUST 30-31.

force gained the crest, and, breathless after its effort, sadly thinned in numbers, fixed bayonets, and dashed upon the Russians. A desperate fight surged to and fro along the ridge, the men closing with each other and fighting to kill. But steadily the Japanese supports poured up; the force upon the crest ever grew; the new arrivals dashed into the combat and slashed and stabbed till bayonets were broken, rifles shattered, and swords serrated. The fury and determination of the attack bore down the stubbornness of the defence, and after an hour's mêlée on the summit the Russians were driven down the further side. It was now the turn of the Japanese to take their revenge for their cruel losses. They rolled huge rocks down upon their flying adversaries, or swept the slopes below with rifle-fire, inflicting severe punishment upon the Russians.

Seven Russian guns were captured on the ridge, as the gunners had been unable to limber up and remove them in the darkness. But the enemy were not disposed to abandon their position to the Japanese without a further struggle. The beaten force was heavily reinforced, and told that it must retake the ridge at all cost. It came forward in the darkness, but the errand was hopeless from the first, as the Russians had not the spirit, energy, or initiative of the Japanese. They climbed the lower slopes, and then were overwhelmed by a torrent of

dashed upon the lines below. "Sometimes," says Mr. Fraser, the "Times" correspondent, in his stirring narrative of this encounter, "a great stone would smash on a rock, and the broken pieces, like a discharge of shrapnel, would sweep the Japanese ranks, killing and maiming. Yet they continued to climb, uttering no sound, nor firing any shot. There was no sound save the crashing and crunching of hurtling rock and the occasional horrid thud of stone upon yielding flesh."

Undismayed, the first line of the assaulting



COSSACKS GOING INTO ACTION BEFORE LIAOYANG.



[Copyright, 1904, by "Collier's Weekly."]

KUROKI'S HEADQUARTERS—RECEIVING MESSAGES FROM THE FIGHTING FRONT.

boulders and a storm of rifle-bullets, and recoiled in complete confusion. A second time they were reinforced and sent forward after daylight to a second and yet more complete defeat. The 12th Division held the ground it had so gallantly won, from which its guns dominated Anping and seriously threatened General Kuropatkin's left before Liaoyang.

The morning of the 27th was thick with mist, so that no further movement could be attempted till the day had cleared and the heavy steam

The Russians in Retreat.

ceased to ascend from the hot valley bottoms. The morning was spent by the Japanese in the sad work of cremating the dead and gathering in the wounded, while the fighting line deployed and waited for the battle to begin. Soon after noon the mountain tops emerged from the sea of mist; then, as the afternoon wore on, a gentle breeze began to scatter the fog in the valleys, and about 3 p.m. suddenly the curtain lifted as if by magic, and showed the Russian army in full retreat from Anping westwards. Columns of troops and huge trains of artillery and waggons were streaming out of the town along the sodden roads, and far away glimmered the Taitze, flowing through the hills to Liaoyang, the goal of the Japanese armies.

The Japanese artillery forthwith opened on the retiring Russians and shelled the town of Anping, while the 12th Division pressed in upon the enemy, in an endeavour to cut off his retreat. The Russians could be seen fording the River Tangho, now swollen by the rains into a



[Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.]

SOME JAPANESE OFFICERS.

The central figure is Major-General K. Tsukamoto, commanding 21st Infantry Brigade. The others, reading from left to right, are Colonel T. Harada, commanding 24th Infantry Regiment; Lieutenant-Colonel Uhi, and Major J. Kenta, on General Staff. The two younger men are Adjutants to Major-General K. Tsukamoto.



RUSSIAN GUN EMPLACEMENT SCREENED FROM OBSERVATION BY PINE BOUGHS, SOUTH-WEST OF LIAOYANG. [Photo by Bulla.]

formidable torrent, but the Japanese artillery were slow in pushing after them and taking up positions from which they could fire with effect, owing to the miserable character of the gun-teams, and the opportunity of inflicting severe punishment was lost. Night fell with the Japanese in possession of all the country up to the line of the Tangho, and with the Russians safely ensconced behind that stream, prepared for another stand in their second position. The 1st Japanese Army must repeat its efforts of the last two days before it could come within sight of Liaoyang, or carry out the turning movement which the General Staff had planned as the crowning act of the drama.

The Japanese losses in these operations were returned at 2,000 killed and wounded evenly distributed among the three divisions. The Russian loss must have been about the same, or slightly greater, while seven guns were captured by the Japanese.

Meantime, on the west, General Oku's army, which was accompanied by Marshal Oyama and the General Staff of the Japanese Headquarters, had performed its preliminary task and beaten the Russians back from their seemingly impregnable position at Anshantien. On August 24 the Japanese drove in the Russian outposts, and pushed northwards with the 6th and 3rd Divisions to the west of the railway; the 4th division, acting as the reserve on the railway, and the 5th Division, temporarily detached from



[Copyright by "Collier's Weekly" in U.S.A.]
A WOUNDED RUSSIAN MARINE.

General Nodzu's army, to the east of the line. The 10th Division was also marching northwards to fill the enormous gap which yawned between the 2nd and 1st Japanese armies, and to give support to General Kuroki in his attack upon the Russian left. On the 25th and 26th the 2nd Army deployed in front of Anshantien in preparation for a determined assault which had been planned for the night of the 26th. The Russian defences were found to be somewhat weakly held by only two divisions of Russian troops with a single battery, under General Routkovsky, but they were of such great natural strength that a daylight assault upon them was deemed inadvisable. From Sumatai the Russians opened a heavy fire on the heads of the Japanese columns, to which no reply was made, the troops instantly taking cover in the deep kaoliang.



GENERAL KUROKI—ONE OF THE LEADERS OF THE ATTACK ON LIAOYANG.

Late in the night the Japanese advanced, when they discovered that the Russians had evacuated Sumatai and fallen back on Anshantien. The heavy rains greatly impeded the Japanese movements, turning the roads into morasses, in which guns and waggons sank up to the axles, and the feeble teams were only able to progress with great difficulty. Most of all the men of the 10th Division suffered, who were marching all the night and early morning of the 26-27th through the mountains to gain touch with General Kuroki and co-operate with him in the attack upon the Tangho position. The misery of the troops



CHINESE UNLOADING FODDER FOR THE RUSSIANS.

[Bulla photo.]

was indescribable, as they were compelled to trudge weary and soaked to the skin along difficult and slippery tracks. On the night of the 27th it was discovered that the Russians had evacuated Anshantien, without offering more than a show of resistance, the explanation of this sudden and unexpected retreat being probably that General Kuropatkin had been alarmed by the progress of General Kuroki's army, and was in fear that his communications would be cut by its steady advance.

Routkovsky, after abandoning



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

RUSSIAN TRENCH AT THE TOP OF SHUSANPO.

Anshantien and burning all the stores, found him-

Russians self brought
Abandon up by the
Anshantien. atrocious

state of the roads some miles to the rear of Anshantien. The guns of his single battery could not be moved, and stuck firmly in the mud, though 24 horses were harnessed to each gun. Some 50 or 60 of his waggons were embogged at the same time. While his troops

were labouring to extricate them they were suddenly and most vehemently assailed by the Japanese 5th and 6th Divisions, which by a long night march had succeeded in working to the Russian rear. A brief but savage combat occurred, in which the Russians lost heavily, and had all the eight guns and 60 waggons captured, but the bulk of their force succeeded in breaking away through the Japanese. General Routkovsky set a noble example in this affair; when the Japanese charged his battery with the bayonet he took his place by the gunners' side, and lost his life in the fierce mêlée which followed. After this combat, which cost the Russians 300 men and the Japanese about half that number, General Oku found himself face to face with the main Russian positions before Liaoyang.

So far neither Russians nor Japanese had effected their purpose. The Russian aim had been to crush General Kuroki before General Oku's army came into play. The Japanese aim had been for General Kuroki to break through the Russian line of positions on the Tangho, cross the Taitze, and cut General Kuropatkin's communications with the north. But if General Kuroki had not been crushed he had not been able to gain any decided success, and, as we shall shortly see, he was in a most critical position for the next few days of the battle. Only the magnificent quality of his troops, and their passionate determination not to admit defeat, saved his army from a great catastrophe. Had the Japanese soldier been of the same quality as the Russian, the next week would have witnessed the destruction of General Kuroki's army and the complete failure of the great movement against Liaoyang. Already on the 25th a message from the 1st Army had reached Marshal Oyama, to the effect that the Russians in Kuroki's front were steadily growing stronger, and that the task before that army was greater than it could achieve. For that reason the 10th Division had been hurried into the hills to its help, but it remained possible that this precious reinforcement might come too late. All day and all night its gallant little infantrymen were tramping through the kaoliang and threading the mountain tracks, hurrying towards the roar of the guns—to save Kuroki's army.



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

JAPANESE BOMBARDING WITH GUNS CAPTURED FROM THE RUSSIANS.



RUSSIAN SUFFERINGS ON THE MANCHURIAN BATTLEFIELDS.

CHAPTER XLI.

LIAOYANG—OKU ASSAULTS SHUSHAN.

"IN modern war there is no bringing up men again and again to the attack as in the days of Napoleon," wrote one of the ablest British soldiers, Colonel Henderson, fresh from experiences in South Africa. The events of the 28th-31st of August on the Japanese front before Liaoyang would have undeceived him, had he lived to witness the Manchurian war.

On, August 28 the Guards, 2nd and 12th Divisions, notwithstanding the desperate work which they had

The Key to the Position.

accomplished in the three previous days, again went forward to the attack. In front of them flowed the deep and turbulent stream of the Tangho, that must be crossed before they could assail the Russian position, stretching along the left or west bank of that stream, upon a ridge of hills which dropped precipitously into the green valley below. The ridge was scarred with line upon line of trenches. At Sunchiatze the Russian line of



(Copyright by "Collier's Weekly" in U.S.A.)
WOUNDED RUSSIAN OFFICERS RETURNING HOME.

defences bent sharply from the river course and turned westwards, leaving Tanghoyen in the hands of the Japanese. Far away towards the west rose the lofty eminence of Shushan, the key to the whole Liaoyang position, on the summit of which incessantly blinked and winked a heliograph, flashing General Kuropatkin's orders to his immense line. The Japanese used telegraphs and telephones, and thus did not need the help of the sun to send their signals.

The Russians had apparently received orders to fall back, and, though they could, be made out

Kuroki's Difficulty.

in great strength about Sunchiatze and the hills behind Anping, they fought no great battle. Only on their right, fronting the Guards, did they show great activity, and here they caused General Kuroki the most serious concern, as they endeavoured to thrust a wedge in between his force and the 4th Army under General Nodzu, and delivered determined counter-attacks upon the Guards in the neighbourhood of Tanghoyen. There were moments when it seemed as though the Guards must be forced back; they held their ground with the extremest difficulty. But as the morning advanced the rifles of the 10th Division could be heard crackling to the west, and long columns of weary Japanese came into action from that direction. The appearance of this fresh division upon the scene seems to have disconcerted the Russians, and led them to abandon their plan for the moment. About 10 a.m. the Japanese began to force the Russians back from



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]
REGIMENTAL BANNER OF THE FIRST JAPANESE REGIMENT.

their positions about Sufangtai and Hsiangshantze, and to gain ground perceptibly. The first crisis for General Kuroki's army was over.

On his right the 12th Division went forward through the difficult hill country between the Tangho and the Taitze, with orders to expel the small Russian detachments from the Chinese villages south of the Taitze, and to mass itself along the banks of that stream preparatory to crossing. The Taitze was in flood, and though the Japanese had intended to throw detachments across the stream forthwith, this proved impracticable. The Russians had destroyed all the bridges, and General Inouye found the water too deep for fording. He had to wait for the arrival of the pontoons and the subsidence of the flood, holding a line from Shwangmiaotze to Chien-taowan.

In the centre the 2nd Division was once more successful. Fighting opened early in the morning near

A Sharp Artillery Duel. Anping, a Russian

battery suddenly shelling the baggage-train. The Japanese gunners instantly replied with three batteries near Anping and a fourth facing Sunchiatze, so cleverly concealed that they were never even hit by the Russians. A sharp artillery duel followed, in which the Russians, notwithstanding the superior range and weight of their guns, were speedily compelled to withdraw them. Then the Japanese artillery began a systematic bombardment of the Russian trenches low down towards the Tangho valley. As the first shells and shrapnel



(Drawing (facsimile) by a Japanese native artist.)
A JAPANESE BIVOUAC IN A TREE.

During the heavy rains Marshal Oyama's troops found camping on the ground unbearable. Accordingly all who could bivouacked in the trees, which afforded a more comfortable resting-place.

burst in and over the lowest trench, a company of Russian infantry holding it broke from it backwards up the slope of the ridge, and was quickly followed by three other companies. The white linen coats of the Russians were a magnificent mark for the Japanese guns against the green hill sides, and a terrific fire was poured upon them. Slowly they climbed the steep slopes, always with the white clouds of shrapnel overhead; men went down by the dozen; and, abandoning all formation, they scattered in open order to



[Photo, Ruddiman Johnston.]

JAPANESE PREPARING FOR A CHARGE. THROWING DOWN THEIR OVERCOATS BEFORE LIAOYANG.

escape the hail of lead. "Just when they thought that they had passed out of range a burst of blue smoke, with scattering fragments, hurried them on like the crack of a slave-driver's whip. It was a man-chase, nothing more or less, with the gunners standing as easily to their guns as spectators to their glasses."

During this artillery action the Japanese infantry were working rapidly to the banks of the Tangho, hidden in the kaoliang, and, as they saw the Russians running uphill, they, too, opened rifle-fire on the fugitives. But at this juncture the Russian batteries were reinforced, and, having now been able to locate

the Japanese guns, intervened once more in the action, and speedily made it so hot for the gunners of the 2nd Division that these had to cease their fire and retire to cover, leaving the Russian infantry to regain safety. The mountain-side was abandoned to the dying and the dead; the Russian stretcher-bearers and doctors could be seen busily at work, and the Japanese, with the instinct of brave men, scrupulously refrained from molesting them with rifle-fire.

Just at this point the Russians must have received orders to deliver a counter-

attack near Anping. A

Counter-attack near Anping. force of Russian in-

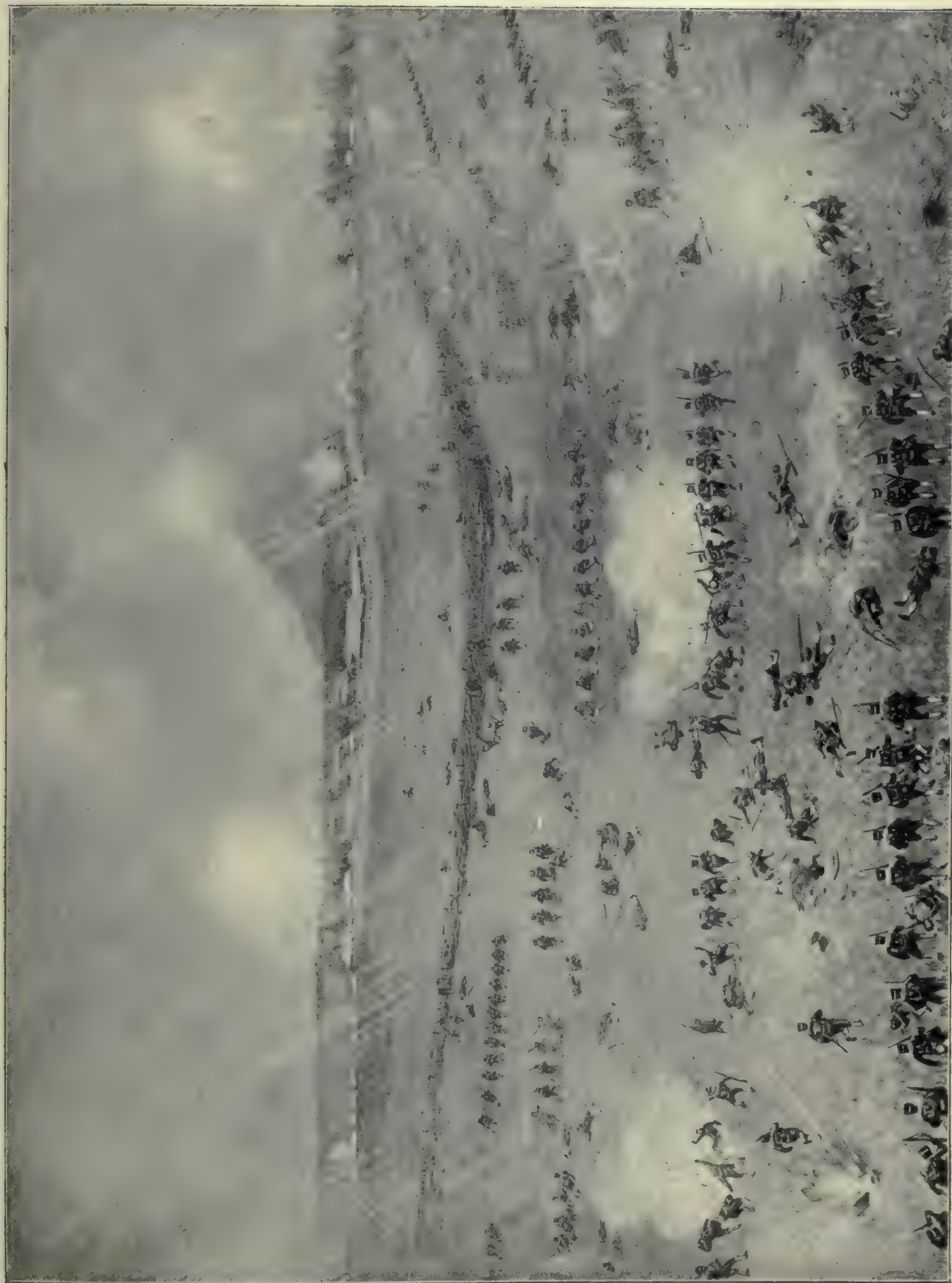
fantry suddenly began

to march down the side of the hill towards the Japanese, headed by a white-coated officer, with the apparent intention of fording the Tangho and assailing the Japanese infantry lurking in the valley bottom. But if the attempt was serious it was almost instantly repulsed. The Japanese guns near Anping, the moment their gunners saw the mass of advancing men, opened a heavy shrapnel-



Field Marshal the Marquis Oyama.
President of the General Staff, Tokio.

[Sketched from life by Melton Prior.]
FIELD-MARSHAL THE MARQUIS OYAMA, PRESIDENT OF THE
GENERAL STAFF.



ATTACK ON A FORTIFIED VILLAGE NEAR LIAOYANG, IN WHICH THE JAPANESE LOST HEAVILY.



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
EXAMINING THE WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS AROUND LIAOYANG.

fire from the summit of the heights, where the Russians still held their ground.

As the small khaki-clad figures plunged into the stream many were swept away by the force of the current, but most of these were rescued by comrades or carried to the bank of the river lower down. Others

vanished, never to reappear, beneath the Russian bullets which incessantly splashed hissing into the cool water. But the Japanese never halted; they swept steadily forward, crossed the stretch of level ground, and began their difficult climb up the ridge, driving before them a small detachment of Cossacks, who, as they rode off, came under the fire of the Japanese guns. The Cossacks showed greater courage than the Russian infantry; when a man went down his comrades would turn and carry him off, mounted behind a fellow-cavalryman. The village of Sunchiatze was rushed late in the afternoon, and as the evening came down the Japanese were in possession of the line of heights from Anping to Sufangtai, connecting there with the right wing of the Guards. The Russians fell back slowly in the direction of Liaoyang. There was no pursuit of them, as the Japanese infantry were worn and exhausted by their incredible exertions, and the artillery had not yet been able to cross the Tangho and join them on the further bank.

August 28 passed without event on the right wing of

fire, and in less than 90 seconds drove it back in hurried retreat, with the officer racing at its head. The flight of this column was followed by the hasty retreat of the Russians lining the trenches at Anping, who were heavily shelled as they climbed the mountain-side. The retreat was panic-stricken and ignominious, and the Japanese prepared to follow it up by crossing the stream. First, however, with their usual care and method, their guns searched the whole front. Then about noon four columns moved into the kaoliang, extended, and, pushing to the stream, forded it in open order under a sharp



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
JAPANESE TROOPS WAITING THEIR TURN IN THE BATTLE BEFORE LIAOYANG.



RUSSIAN SOLDIERS CHANTING THE EVENING HYMN FOR THE CZAR.

Many of the men have splendid voices, and the effect is thrilling.

Marshal Oyama's great army, as it was imperative to give the 1st Army sleep and rest after its continuous marching and fighting of the past five days. Since August 24 the great bulk of General Kuroki's troops had been almost without interruption engaged with the Russians, and, though the men showed wonderful grit and tenacity, they were yet human beings, with a limit to their endurance. The day was therefore

spent in pushing slowly forward a few miles through the hills and securing the ground won, without any serious fighting. By the evening the 2nd Division had thrown forward its outposts to the neighbourhood of Wangpaotai and Shihtsutze, while the Guards and the 10th Division were near Tashihmenling and Menchiafang. The 2nd Army on the 29th moved forward to the line of the Shaho, occupied it without anything more serious than a skirmish, though it had been excellently fortified, and reconnoitred the immense Russian system of works about Shushan Mountain. The 4th Army simultaneously drove the Russian outposts out of Chinchialintze and moved forward the 5th Division, which had a splendid reputation for fighting worth, towards Dawa and Wijagou, where it connected with the 10th Division, and completed the Japanese line. The Japanese front had thus been greatly contracted as the result of the successes on the Tangho and at Anshantien from a width of nearly 60 miles on August 24



[Copyright by "Collier's Weekly" in U.S.A. Bulla photo.]
RETURNED WOUNDED RUSSIAN SOLDIER.



[Copyright, 1904, by "Collier's Weekly."
THE TERRORS OF THE TRENCHES BEFORE LIAOYANG.

to one of barely 30 miles on August 29. The plan to be followed in the great battle which was to open on the 30th was as follows: On the Japanese right, the 12th Division was to march east, concentrate close to the Taitze, and cross that river at Changkwantun for the great turning movement. The 2nd Division, after clearing the ground in its front, was to edge up towards the 12th Division and close the gap which its movement must leave in the Japanese front. In the same way the Guards and 10th Division were also to edge eastwards. In the centre, the 5th Division was to assault the Russian works in its immediate front, while the 3rd Division, with the 4th in reserve, was to fling itself upon the great works near Shushan. Simultaneously, the 6th Division was to execute a turning movement against these works from the west, and to work up towards Liaoyang over the plain beyond the railway, its flank covered by the Japanese cavalry. As the Japanese forces worked eastwards, the 2nd and

Guards Divisions were to cross the Taitze to the support of the 12th, thus flinging General Kuroki's whole army on the Russian left. The three Japanese divisions were then to move rapidly upon Yentai, where they would be upon the Russian line of retreat. It was a plan of immense daring, to end the war by a single blow, and had the Japanese been opposed by a Bazaine, it must have resulted in the complete destruction of the Russian army. But it involved terrific risk to the Japanese, and if General Kuropatkin had been a bolder or more alert antagonist, it gave him the very opportunity for which he had been seeking—of crushing one of the three Japanese armies with the great bulk of his force, while his garrison troops held the defences of Liaoyang and kept back the other two Japanese armies. It was, however, the peculiar merit of the Japanese that they formed a correct estimate of General Kuropatkin's leadership and of the fighting capacity of their own troops.

For the great movement over many miles of tangled and difficult country no precaution was omitted by the Japanese. A maze of telegraphs and telephones connected the various detachments and brigades with the generals commanding each division, while these again were linked up with the general commanding that one of the three armies to which they belonged. Finally, another series of wires connected the three generals, Oku, Nodzu, and Kuroki, with Marshal Oyama's headquarters, so that it was possible for one brain to direct the fighting along that vast front. Organisation had been reduced to a science, and, to keep cool and collected the brain that put the 170,000 men in motion, the great headquarters were stationed well to the rear, outside the zone of fire and free from the influence which the sights and sound of battle exercise upon even the stoutest nerves. There, like a chess-player, sat or squatted Marshal Oyama and his chief of the staff, General Kodama, moving the pieces upon the great board as calmly as though it were a mere game in which they

The Plan of Battle.



[Photo, Riddiman Johnston.
DEAD OF BOTH SIDES IN A RUSSIAN ARTILLERY TRENCH AT THE TOP OF SHUSHAN HILL.



ALL THAT WAS LEFT OF A CONVOY CAUGHT BY THE JAPANESE SHELL-FIRE.

had engaged, and as if the stake had not been mutilation or death for thousands and tens of thousands of men, and life or death to Japan.

On the Russian side there was no such skill of organisation. General Kuropatkin followed the traditions of the time when battles were fought on a front of two or three miles, and when the fate of empires was decided in a few hours of actual encounter. He was to be found wherever shells and bullets fell thickest, displaying brilliant personal courage, but nothing more, and failing in the great essential of leadership. Instead of thinking of the battle as a whole, he thought only of the point where he was present; and, having at his service no such excellent system of field-telegraphs and field-telephones as the Japanese, he was unable to exercise a firm grip upon events. It was a general of the nineteenth century pitted against a general of the twentieth century; and as the muzzle-loader must yield before the magazine-rifle, so his obsolete methods foredoomed him to failure, notwithstanding the many advantages which he did undoubtedly possess—superiority in force, superiority in artillery, superiority in position, and the immense strength of a series of carefully constructed works.

The morning of the 30th dawned, the day that was to see the opening of the

greatest and fiercest battle since the hosts of Central Europe joined in combat with Napoleon at Leipzig. Allowing for all losses, 340,000 men were to meet in encounter, while all that day from 600 to 700 cannon were to shake the earth with their thunder. The battle began on the west with a general Japanese advance upon Shushan, which rose dominating the fields of millet that swayed under the sun on either side of the railway. The hill of Shushan is high, steep, and rugged, and on its summit, some 400 feet above the

[Photo, Ruddiman Johnston.]
JAPANESE GUNS AT SHUSHAN AFTER THE CONFLICT.



JAPANESE INFANTRY CROSSING A RIVER.

[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

level of the railway, was an old Chinese watch-tower, used as a signalling-station by the Russians. From it extended eastwards a chain of lower hills, the eminences of which were christened Grassy Hill, Green Hill, Brush Hill, Bastion Hill, and Bare Hill, from west to east. The first three lay along the front of the 2nd Army; the last two were before the 5th Division. Shushan was the key of the line, and

could it be carried by assault the whole Russian line would be turned. It was not the original Japanese intention to attack this formidable fastness in real earnest; the aim of the 2nd Army was to demonstrate in great force against the Russian right, and thus prevent General Kuropatkin from interfering with the turning movement on his left. Circumstances, however, compelled the Japanese to depart from their purpose and to fling their gallant infantry upon the almost impregnable height in a desperate effort to achieve the impossible.

In the hours of darkness the first attack was delivered by General Oku's valiant army upon the mass of works crowning Shushan. General Okubo, of the 6th Division, called for volunteers from the 11th Brigade to undertake the perilous and difficult work of cutting a way through the Russian wire entanglements. He only needed 150 men, but whole battalions offered their services. From them a forlorn hope of men prepared to die was selected, and the spirit of the Japanese troops can be understood when it is stated that those who were not chosen looked with envy on the lot of those who went to certain death. The little party advanced through the maize in open order; dawn was just tinging the sky with light when they emerged from the thick growth which had sheltered them so far into an open patch of ground where the Russians had burnt the crops. They were seen in an instant, and with a terrific crash rifles and guns opened upon them a fire which continued from that moment for the whole weary day. The storm of fire caught the advancing volunteers and seemed to rend them with its merciless blast. They went down in threes and fours, but the unwounded still advanced. The 150 had fallen to 20 before the entanglements were gained, yet that party of twenty perished almost to a man in their grapple with the barbed wire. By desperate efforts in the teeth of a storm of bullets they cleared a narrow path, and though they died, they did not die in vain. To cover the retreat of the wounded of this party

The First Attack on Shushan.



THE WALL OF A MANCHURIAN TOWN.

[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

General Oku's and General Nodzu's batteries came into action, and, as night gave place to day, thundered against Shushan. For the most part the Japanese guns were hidden in the millet-fields, which effectually concealed their flash and the gunners working them. Only as their fire continued a small cloud of dust rose above each piece, so that to the Russians a great way off it looked as though the millet was on fire.

Further to the east four of the heavy Russian guns captured at Nanshan had come into action at extreme range, cannonading the heights and pitching

The shells right over them upon the troops in reserve to the rear of the Russian entrenchments. They were placed in the open, as they were well beyond the reach of any of the weapons which the Russians brought into play. Another weapon used by the Japanese with great effect was a small mortar capable of being carried by hand, 40 of which were placed in the millet as near as possible to the Russian lines. These little guns flung small bombs continually into the Russian trenches, and helped to keep down their fire.

In the centre the 5th and 10th Divisions were

Fighting now entering battle near Wijagou.

near Wijagou and to the south of Yayuchi, where the army of General Nodzu joined hands with that of General Kuroki. The splendid soldiers of the 5th Division were soon



(Drawn by Julius M. Price.)
GENERAL GILINSKY AND HIS STAFF AT HEADQUARTERS, HARBIN, DISCUSSING THE POSITION.

furiously engaged near Wijagou with a large Russian force, but as the morning advanced they fought their way into the village and pushed the Russians back. It was only for a moment, however. General Kuropatkin was watching their advance, and hurried reinforcements towards the threatened point. As these came into battle the fight surged to and fro over the heights and valleys, and neither side could claim a great success or make decided headway. On the left General Oku's men were deploying in long lines with open formation, though closer than that adopted by the British Army after its experience of



GENERAL KUROPATKIN AND HIS STAFF WATCHING THE PROGRESS OF A BATTLE.

the South African War, and were making ready to close upon Shushan soon after dawn. The 6th Division moved beyond the railway upon the entrenched villages; the 4th and 3rd Divisions flung themselves upon the most advanced trenches south of Shushan.

At Lichiapu there was a fierce combat between the Russians, fighting behind loopholed walls and sand-bagged Chinese houses, and the Japanese infantry, who burst into the place with impetuous élan and swept it, though not without heavy loss, at the point of the bayonet. Incessantly the 6th Division felt for the Russian flank, but felt as yet in vain. It worked steadily to the north-west, fighting its way through the villages, at each of which a combat took place resembling that of Lichiapu; but the Russian line stretched far to the north-west, and its termination could not be discovered. In this quarter the Japanese cavalry, fighting on foot and opposed by Cossacks in ground highly unfavourable to cavalry, were working northwards and also attempting to turn the Russian lines, but were brought to a standstill by the Russian horse artillery.

**Feeling for the
Russian Flank.**



GENERAL OKU, THE PRINCE NASHIMOTO, AND STAFF OF THE 2ND ARMY FOLLOWING THE PROGRESS OF THE ATTACK ON SHUSHANPU.

The fiercest fight of the morning took place near Dawa. That village, which

Fierce Fight at Dawa.

was of great size and strongly fortified by the Russians, was

assaulted by the 3rd Division, the men of Nagoya, who had fought so brilliantly at Nanshan. Soon after 6.30 in the morning it was rushed in the teeth of a terrific fire from the Russian rifles. Its importance was very great; and General Kuropatkin, seeing what happened, gave orders for his artillery to turn their fire upon it and his infantry to retake it at all cost. The shrapnel came in waves of cloud and sheets of lead upon it; the white-coated Russian infantry with glistening bayonets charged upon it in



MULE SHOEING IN MANCHURIA—TWO SHOES AT ONCE.

overwhelming masses, and fought their way through the fire of Japanese shrapnel and shell until they regained its outlying houses. The terrified Chinese, unwilling spectators of the tremendous conflict raging over their hearths and homes, fled from it to the hills, while up and down the streets surged to and fro an indecisive encounter between determined men. Neither side would give ground; each incessantly poured in reinforcements. Three times the Japanese were forced back to the southern confines of the village; twice they in turn forced the Russians north, until the streets were littered with dead and the houses blazing. And still, amidst dead and wounded, and fire and conflagration and the mist of bursting shell and shrapnel, the two armies wrestled in combat. Towards 10 o'clock, however, by a supreme effort the Japanese for the fourth time forced the Russians back, and, charging them after a hand-to-hand fight, hurled them finally from the village. The roar of battle moved northwards towards Shushan and the long line of heights, on which from time to time Russian officers could be seen emerging from their concealment, and on which Russian batteries, skilfully masked, flashed incessantly.

The heavy fighting of the early morning about Dawa and Wijagou paved the way for an attack on Shushan. Soon after 9 a.m. the leading lines of the 3rd Division emerged from the millet to the north of Dawa, and four companies of Japanese infantry were ordered to push forward and seize a small grassy

knoll which lay just under Bastion Hill. As they

To Attack Shushan.

broke from cover a flame of fire ran along the whole Russian line of trenches, and a roar louder than any that had yet shaken earth and heaven deafened the ear and deadened the sense of man. The artillery-fire rose in a terrific crescendo in unison with the heavy beat of 50,000 magazine rifles firing at their fastest, and through



RUSSIAN PRISONERS PLAYING CARDS.



AN ABANDONED RUSSIAN AMMUNITION WAGGON.

all this infernal turmoil moved quietly and impassively the small groups of Japanese. Without heavy loss they made their way to the knoll; in an instant they were seen at work entrenching; then two companies came doubling back. The colonel found that 500 men were enough to hold the eminence, and he wanted no more of his troops to be exposed to that murderous cannonade. There all the morning, afternoon, and night the stubborn Japanese clung to the crest, always

the target of the enemy's guns and rifles, suffering heavy losses, but constantly deepening their trenches, and refusing to yield a foot of ground. There they were in close touch with the men of the 5th Division, who were striving to drive a wedge into the Russian line, and who had secured a lodgment for their batteries under the very slopes of Bare Hill, further to the east.

Just at this point of the battle there rose from behind Brush Hill the form of the Russian war-balloon. Oval-shaped, it carried up with it a signaller, who sent down to the Russian staff below the position of the Japanese troops and of their batteries. Japanese guns and rifles concentrated against it a heavy fire, but the range was too great for them to act with effect. The heavy guns from Nanshan, however, were turned upon it, and succeeded in bursting shell near it. It was moved away till it was safe from their attack, and continued to hover in the air for two hours. Then it vanished, and only reappeared twice for short intervals.

Russian War-Balloon.

The observations of the balloon led to the concentration of a terrific fire from the Russian guns upon the Japanese artillery near Shushan. Such a storm of shrapnel burst over the Japanese gunners, that about noon they were driven from their guns and forced to take shelter, if only for a time, until the rest of the Japanese artillery, which had not been located, got the Russian fire under. But this proved to be a difficult task. Though the heights were carefully sown with Japanese shell and shrapnel, the Russian guns or gunners were speedily replaced from the enormous reserves at General Stackelberg's disposal as they were put out of action.

About 2.30 p.m. the troops of the 6th Division, having gained ground steadily beyond the railway, made a brave attempt to carry by assault Mactole, the little village under Shushan. One brigade of the division advanced in skirmishing order to the attack, only to be received by a fearful

Assault on Mactole.

fire from the Russian entrenchments encircling the place. The Japanese moved by groups of twelve men each, each group making a short, sharp dash, and then lying down and firing. But the attack was precipitate, and the artillery preparation incomplete. Machine-guns played mercilessly upon the lines of infantry, and swept them down in swathes of death. In a short quarter of an hour nearly a thousand Japanese lay prostrate on the ground. The assault had been disastrously repulsed.



TRAVELLING KITCHEN ABANDONED BY THE RUSSIANS.



RUSSIAN PRIESTS BLESSING THE TROOPS BEFORE A BATTLE.

As this premature attack opened General Oku massed his troops for the assault on Shushan, which he had been called upon to make in real earnest, to take the strain off General Nodzu's army; for the two Japanese divisions of the centre were now hard pressed by the Russians, who were striving to force the Japanese wings apart and to penetrate between them. The fight to the north of Dawa and Wijagou was becoming desperate, as more and more Russian troops were thrown into it, and as General Kuropatkin fed his fighting line. Orders were sent to General Oshima to advance with the whole 3rd Division against Brush Hill. As the Japanese moved

**Advance Against
Brush Hill.**



THE CAMARADERIE OF THE WOUNDED.

forward to the attack heavy rain began to fall. But the 3rd Division could not gain ground; it was met with a fierce counter-attack upon the right, which brought it to a complete standstill, and the Japanese troops were compelled to remain prostrate upon the ground under a terrific artillery fire. Their demeanour under these trying conditions was admirable. They smoked and they chatted and they jested, while the heaps of dead grew steadily and a long stream of wounded men trickled to the rear. The Russian fire died down and moderated, but the deep thunder of battle never ceased for a moment.



GENERAL KUROPATKIN AND STAFF AMONG THE HILLS, BEFORE THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG.

(Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"
G



A COSSACK COLONEL CAPTURED BY JAPANESE INFANTRY.

[Drawn by a Japanese Artist.]

The afternoon was advancing, and still the two armies held each other in check. Kuroki had made no way; Nodzu did not gain ground; except to the west of the railway, Oku was stationary. The losses were heavy in all directions. About the Japanese batteries the earth was wet with blood; dismembered bodies lay here and there, but the awful sights and spectacles of that stricken field never shook the stout nerves of the Japanese. They still worked coolly, and took their punishment as part of the great game which they were playing for the fate of their country and of Asia. Late in the afternoon the order came from the headquarters to assault again and at any cost carry the Russian lines. The lull in the storm ended, and 200 guns concentrated their most rapid fire upon the Russian position. Shushan and Brush Hill smoked like mighty furnaces, and glowed with bursting shell. The noise resembled the running at terrific speed of some Cyclopean loom, beating with heavy pulsations the human shuttles to and fro through the warp of destiny.

The effect of the Japanese artillery fire upon Shushan was terrible. It was death to raise the head above the parapets. The Russian gunners suffered fearfully, according to Lord Brooke, a British

correspondent, present with General Stackelberg.

"The Japanese had the exact range of nearly every battery, and their shrapnel rained death on the devoted Siberians. Where they fell they lay, and instantly new men stepped into their places. The blood of the dead bespattered the guns, their bodies jammed against the wheels. But what was



JAPANESE ENGINEERS CONSTRUCTING A BRIDGE. [T. Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

the worth of a dead soldier? Other hands must feed the gun, send another shell whirring towards the enemy. Never must the battery be silenced. And so hour after hour they worked on. To move was to court danger; and from out of a field or village, apparently deserted, would come a sudden gust of bullets, whistling around one in a most unpleasant manner."

The Russian guns answered vehemently from their places of concealment. Then the fire slackened, and simultaneously the Japanese formed up in single lines,

The eight or
Japanese ten in
Charge. number,

one behind the other, rose, and swept forward one at a time towards the Russian trenches. The light in the sky was fading, and the shades of night were falling when this great charge came. Awe-stricken spectators saw the dauntless infantry cross the zone of death, and heard the Russian rifle-volleys rise into one continued crash, long sustained, with no intermittence or fall. The trenches glowed red; a lurid light from shells and burning villages barely disclosed the horror of the scene. Then faint cheers of "Banzai!" floated back above the roll of musketry, and the Japanese pioneers could be seen at work upon the Russian entanglements in the very van of the charging lines. But the fire was such as could be faced by no troops on earth. The Japanese melted away, and, though



JAPANESE AMBULANCE CORPS AT THE BATTLE OF SHUSHAN.

they clung obstinately to the ground which they had won, could not force a path through the entanglements or reach the Russian trenches. Small parties of men remained prostrate in front of the Russians and fired constantly at them; but at last the assailants were called back. Those that survived retired some hundred yards, officers last, coolly, and maintaining iron discipline. At least 2,000 men had gone down in that swift, fierce onset, without the slightest result, except to encourage the Russians.



THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG.—OPENING OF THE FLANK MOVEMENT.—12TH DIVISION NORTH OF THE TAITZE AND IN GREAT DANGER.—GAP IN THE JAPANESE FRONT.

troops. It was impossible to say, however, whether they were Russians or Japanese."

With the failure of the great assault delivered by the 3rd Division the Japanese reinforced their lines, pushed forward fresh batteries, and made yet a fresh attempt, with no greater success, in the early hours of night. Then the troops, foiled, but not beaten, were drawn in to the south and reorganised for the work of the next day. Trenches were dug or deepened, batteries carefully posted, supports pushed forward to the men in the front line, and reinforcements which had come up from the rear distributed among the toilworn troops. The night was one of misery and extreme suffering for wounded and unwounded alike. It poured incessantly, and the weary soldiers had to lie in mud, drenched to the skin, with little or nothing to eat. In front of the line lay thousands of wounded men, hung up on the Russian barbed wire, impaled alive in the horrible pits which the Russian engineers had dug, or helpless and bleeding in the long millet. To them the Red Cross men and ambulance division gave what help they could, and both armies respected them at their chivalrous work. Close under the Russian trenches in the dead ground were parties of unwounded Japanese, who could neither advance nor retire, and who could do nothing but lie still and fire when a Russian showed himself.

On General Kuroki's front all this day the 12th Division was marching east, away from the battle, to cross the Taitze and

From the Russian lines the spectacle was a strange one. "One seemed to be in a gigantic ant-heap where invisible ants were struggling and moving." The Japanese could not be clearly seen, and the only indications of battle were the uproar and the steady stream of wounded Russians moving to the rear. "Every now and then you could distinguish in a village, or a portion of the plain where there was no millet, little figures like Noah's Ark men, which one knew to be



GRAVES OF RUSSIAN PRISONERS WHO DIED IN CAPTIVITY AT MATSUYAMA.



BARON KODAMA, THE KITCHENER OF THE JAPANESE ARMY.



ORDERLY REPORTING TO GENERAL HASEGAWA, COMMANDER OF THE GUARDS. ["Collier's Weekly."]

open the great flank movement which, it was hoped, might crown the Japanese success with the complete destruction of the Russian army, if Kuropatkin proved unwary. While it marched the 2nd and Guards division edged up to fill its place in the long line, and continually felt the Russian strength in their front, making incessant demonstrations of attack to prevent the Russian army thrusting itself into the gap between the separate parts of the

gigantic machine which Marshal Oyama directed. But the Russians, with their eyes riveted upon Oku's and Nodzu's fierce assaults against their centre and right, never discovered that the ground between Anping and Shwangmiaotze was now denuded of Japanese troops. A thin screen of Japanese cavalry held off all assailants, when a single resolute blow must have pierced the Japanese front, and issued in a Japanese reverse. About midnight the van of the 12th Division began to cross the Taitze, and all the small hours of the morning the files of infantry were pushing north across that turbulent stream.

There was no opposition from the Russians, who expected the crossing to be made further to the west, and were taken completely by surprise. General Kuropatkin, indeed, has since explained that he wished to get a part of the Japanese army north of the Taitze, and then to fall upon it with the 10th and 17th European Corps; but the explanation appears to have been invented to cover the remissness of his



GENERAL COUNT NODZU, COMMANDER OF THE JAPANESE FOURTH ARMY.

The aged lady is his mother, and his wife is on her right.

subordinates. Behind the 12th Division the 2nd Division, as night fell, began to march swiftly towards the fords, while the Guards and 10th Division also worked towards the north. The pioneers and pontoon train of the army set to work to build a bridge by which the artillery could be taken across, and as the night advanced the head of the 12th Division entrenched itself strongly to the north of Changkwantun, on the heights north of the river. The die was cast; Marshal Oyama had risked everything upon a hazardous throw.

CHAPTER XLII.

LIAOYANG—STORMING OF SHUSHAN—KUROKI'S FLANK MOVEMENT.

All through the night of August 30-31 the troops



CHINESE FUGITIVES LEAVING LIAOYANG FOR MUKDEN DURING THE BATTLE.

rifle-fire, which blazed incessantly from the Russian lines, sweeping the whole front with a curtain of lead, gallantry was in vain. The Japanese battalions were shattered by a decimating fire, met with fierce counter-attacks, and driven back, and only a few hundred yards of ground was gained to the south of Shushan, where one outlying trench was carried.

of the 2nd and 4th armies had been making ready for the supreme encounter of the dawn. Once more the order was passed along the lines that Shushan was to be carried at all cost; for the third time the heroic, indomitable infantry of the Japanese armies were to be led to the assault upon the Russian works. **Shushan to be Carried.**

Two hours before day-break the great attack began, to meet the same fate as those which had preceded it. For two long hours the Japanese strove to force their way into the Russian works through the barbed wire and through the stake-pits; but in the blast of



[Sketched from life by Melton Prior.
GENERAL FUKUSHIMA IN HIS OFFICE AT THE GENERAL STAFF
HEADQUARTERS.

not reported to the division headquarters, and when day came the artillery of the 5th and 3rd Divisions opened upon the newly-cut trench, which at once attracted the gunners' attention, a devastating fire. At the same moment the Russian batteries also opened, and the gallant soldiers of the 5th Division found themselves taken between two terrible fires from front and rear. Nothing could stand against the hail of Russian shrapnel and Japanese common shell delivered from some hundred guns, and the little party of brave men were driven from their trench and forced back down the hill to points where they could find some precarious shelter. Too late the Japanese artillery discovered its terrible mistake; the mischief was done, and all the ground so painfully won was lost. The fire of the Japanese batteries, however, was now turned upon the hill; the 5th and 3rd Divisions continuously bombarded it, while the 21st Brigade, of which the 21st Regiment formed a part, made ready to deliver yet another assault when the moment should come.

To the west of the railway the 6th Division advanced rapidly. Attacking the

**Stackelberg Holds
His Own.**

Russian positions at
one in the morning, it
pushed back the

Russians to the railway near Shushanpu, and gained a considerable amount of ground, but was finally brought to a standstill about daybreak by the fire from Shushan. A very heavy fire was

Further to the east, however, the troops of the 5th Division achieved a gleam of success. The 21st, or Hamada Regiment,

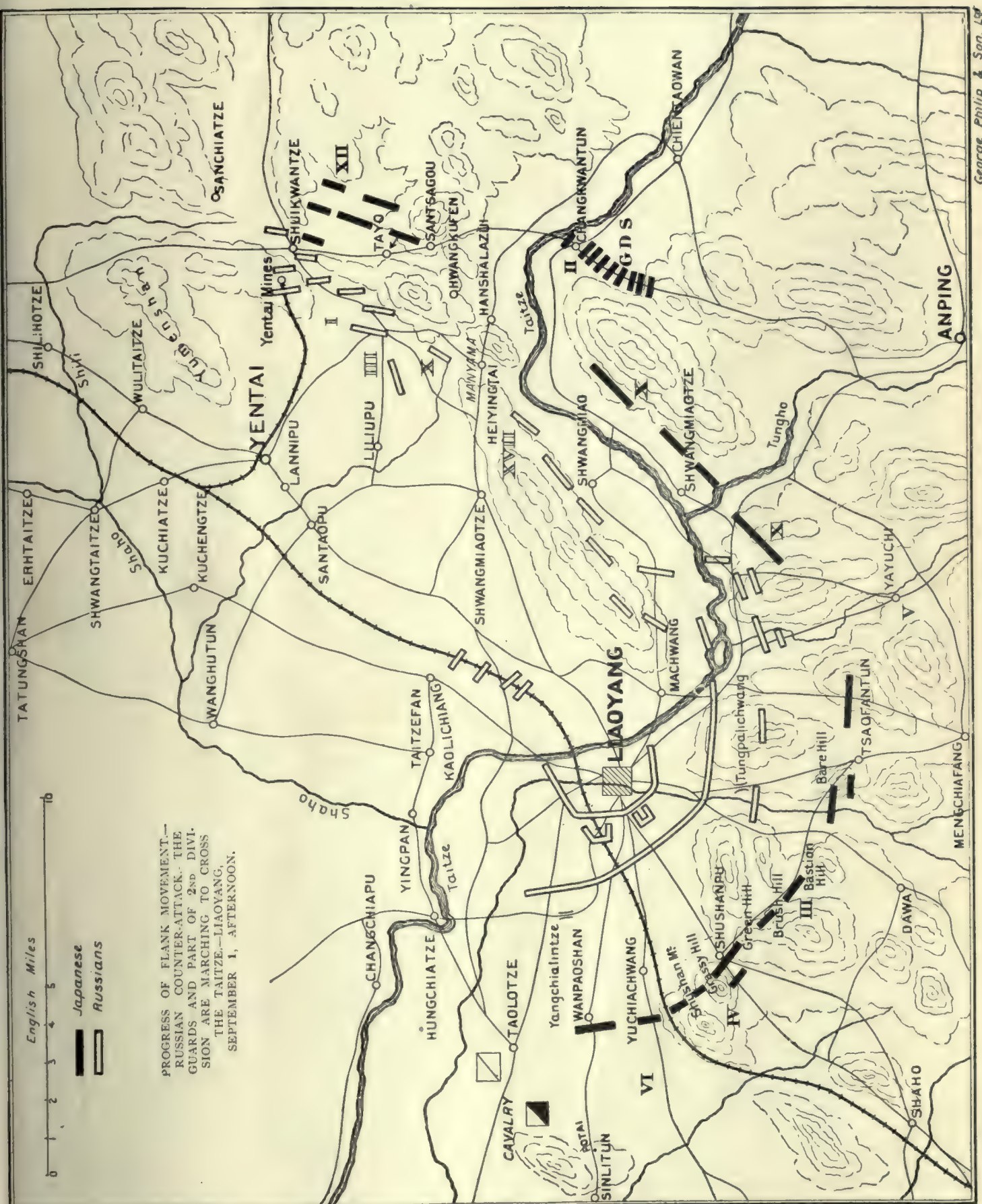
**Brush Hill
Seized.**

famous for its valour
in the Japanese army,
found an opening in

the wire in front of Brush Hill, which was held by the 3rd Siberian Army Corps under General Ivanoff. Through the opening 100 Japanese infantrymen instantly pushed, and, climbing a dry watercourse, emerged upon the crest of the hill unseen, and unexpectedly fell upon the flank of a Russian trench. There was a fierce tussle in the darkness, but the Japanese bayonets did their work, and cleared the trench of foemen. Reinforcements came up, and the victors set to work with desperate energy to entrench themselves in the captured position, knowing that the moment day came the Russian artillery would concentrate its fire upon them. A rough trench was rapidly carried transversely across Brush Hill. But through some mistake the success of the troops was



[Photo, Ruddiman Johnston.
JAPANESE STAFF OFFICERS VIEWING THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG
FROM THE TOP OF SHUSHAN HILL.





(Photograph by a Japanese officer.

AN OLD CHINESE CAUGHT CUTTING TELEGRAPH WIRES BY THE JAPANESE.

The man here shown crouching on the ground was seventy-five years of age. Bribed by the Russians with 50 yen, he cut away some 350 ft. of the Japanese military telegraph wire. This is a capital offence, and the old man was tried and executed.

Hills. The Russians on the hills saw them coming, and showed masses of men; the trenches blazed with flame, the crash of continued magazine fire filled the air; and then the pioneers of the 21st Brigade broke from cover, rushing forward to tear down the entanglements which prevented approach to the trenches. Over the stake-pits, amidst exploding mines, with superb daring and dauntless resolution, the pioneers made their way, falling by scores. A small handful reached the entanglements, and could be seen from afar at their work in face of the blizzard of lead. The number of men hewing and tearing down the barbed wire decreased fast; now there were 20, and now only 10. But they did their work, faithful to the last; and if they died in doing it they left an opening by which their comrades, fired by their heroic example, could pass to victory.

Towards the opening swarmed the infantry in the midst of an infernal uproar, while the Japanese artillery smothered the Russian trenches with shell. Company after company went through. The Russian trenches below the crest of Brush Hill were carried in determined rushes; but on the crest the Russians still held their ground, and beat back every attempt to advance. General Kuropatkin is said to have been present in person at this point, and to have done his

concentrated by the Japanese guns upon the Russian batteries near Sinlitun, though the difficulty of bringing up ammunition over the muddy roads was extreme, and hampered the Japanese gunners to no small degree. But, generally speaking, General Stackelberg, who was in charge of the western section of the field, held his own, and the Japanese could not beat in the Russian front or force their enemy back. Further to the east the roar of heavy firing told that General Kuropatkin was pressing hard upon General Nodzu, and still persisting in his tactics of driving in a wedge between the Japanese armies.

All the morning the preparation for a fresh assault upon the Shushan ridge continued, and about

Cutting the Wire Entanglements. 11.30 the 5th Division formed up for the

attack. Extending rapidly and skilfully, five battalions of the 21st Brigade discarded their knapsacks, fixed bayonets, and swept forward in groups of 12 through the millet towards Brush and Bastion



STAFF OF GENERAL BARON MEYENDORF.

(Bolak photo.



(Drawn by Georges Scott.

A JOYOUS JAPANESE FUNERAL: SOLDIERS DRESSED AS SAMURAI AT THE REJOICINGS IN HONOUR OF THE FALLEN.

This procession, celebrated after one of the victories in Manchuria, reproduces the costumes of the Samurai, the famous two-handed swordsmen of Japan. It must not be supposed that the Japanese troops embellished their baggage with ancient armour for this macquerade. The most businesslike War Office in the world would not have permitted that; but the soldiers improvised them from any material they could find, and thus assumed the semblance of their ancestral champions. The celebrations were joyful, for the lot of the fallen hero is accounted most enviable.



(Copyright, Victor Bulla.

A RUSSIAN PRIEST PREACHING TO THE TROOPS AT MUKDEN.

utmost to encourage his men. The nerves of the Russians were failing, however, under the incessant shell-fire and the persistent, inexorable advance of the undaunted Japanese. Some of the Russian supports behind Brush Hill broke and fled towards Liaoyang, under the fire of the Japanese troops under Bare Hill, and were only rallied when General Stackelberg himself went down among them, reminding them of their duty and exhorting them to stand firm. Further to the east the 9th or Hiroshima Brigade began to gain ground, and to work to the north-east of Bare Hill, threatening the Russian positions about Shushan. The brigade instantly set to work to dig itself under cover, realising that the Russians would make every effort to force it back. The Russians in this quarter of the field had fallen back upon their second position, a little to the south of Liaoyang.

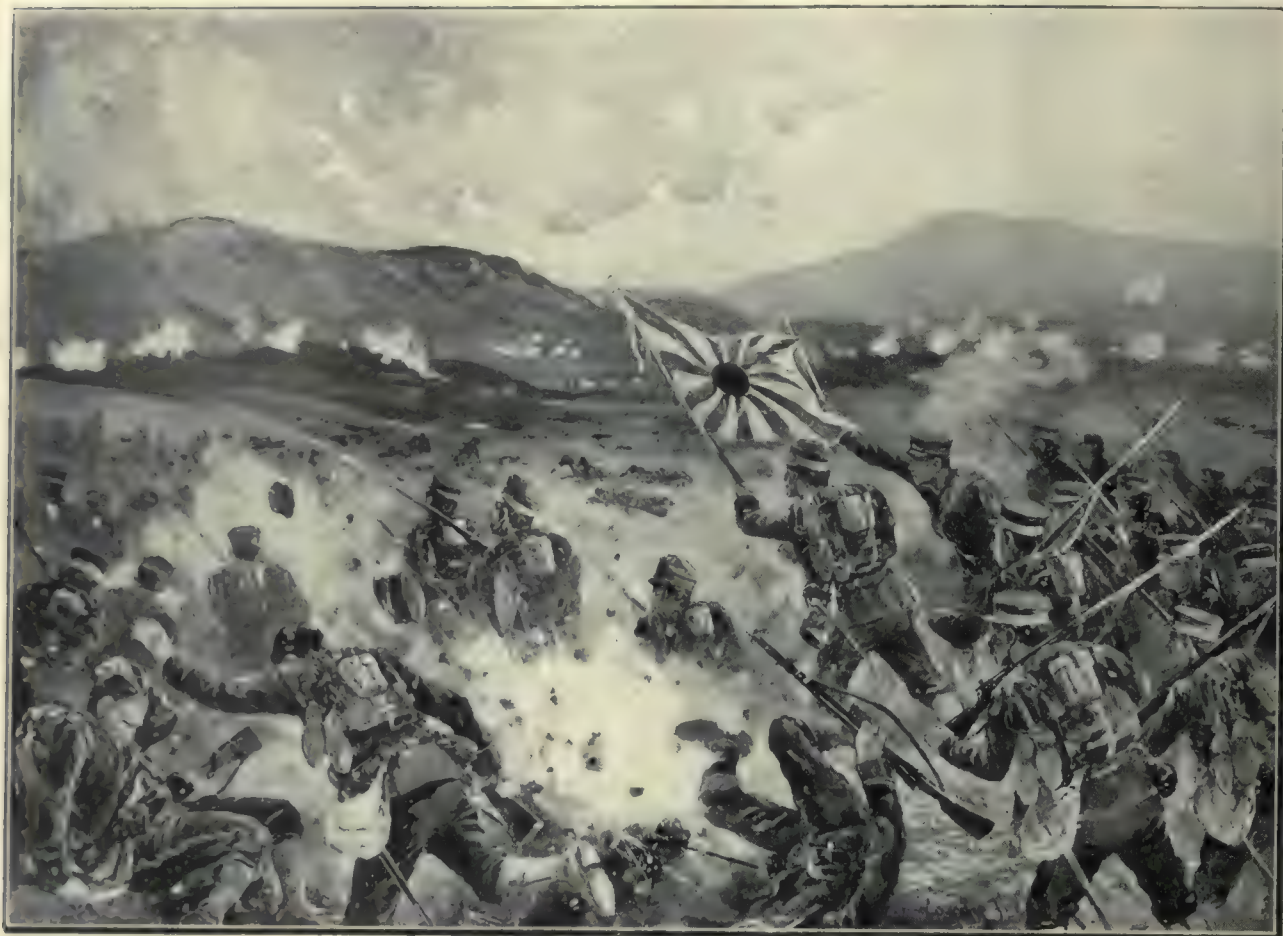


TALES TOLD IN THE JAPANESE CAMP.

Mr. Frederic Whiting, the artist, says: "One evening I came across a group of soldiers listening with rapt attention to a Japanese war correspondent who was telling martial tales of the days of old Japan."



JAPANESE BOMBARDING SHUSHAN.



JAPANESE LEFT ARMY STORMING SHUSHAN.

To the west the 6th Division had once more advanced about noon, and approached closely to Sinlitun, but had yet again been brought to a standstill by the Russian artillery. As the afternoon advanced a

considerable Russian force appeared near Potai, to the east of Sinlitun, moving southward. Since it was important to prevent this body of men

from reinforcing the Russians at Shushan, it was vigorously attacked by the 6th Division,

and held to the west of the railway. While the fight was raging on the extreme left of the Japanese army, Oku had once again thrown his 3rd and 4th Divisions upon Shushan, in a fresh attempt to take the trenches and to divert the Russian attention from Kuroki's army. A terrific encounter surged to and fro under the precipices of the mountain; fierce charges and counter-charges took place; and when ammunition was exhausted the combatants fell back upon bayonets and stones. The roar of the cannonade had risen in step with the savagery of the infantry combat. But the two armies still held each other in check, like equally matched teams in the "tug of war," and the Russians would not retreat, while the Japanese could not advance.



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

GENERAL BARON IACHIMI, COMMANDER 8TH JAPANESE DIVISION.



BAND OF A RUSSIAN INFANTRY REGIMENT PLAYING A COLUMN THROUGH LIAOYANG.

Only a heavy fall of rain late in the day ended the conflict for the moment, and under cover of it the Japanese reorganised their shattered regiments, while the Russians hurried up ammunition to their batteries. Shells were running short, and the Russian troops in the advanced trenches were showing signs of wavering; the Russian artillery was suffering terribly. Already dense columns of smoke were rising from Liaoyang, proclaiming the fact that the Russians were burning their stores and making ready to retreat.

Night fell upon that terrible field, but neither darkness nor enormous

"Reinforce, and Assault Again!"

losses made any impression upon the inflexible determination of the Japanese. "Reinforce, and assault again!" passed down the lines once more. The ammunition-waggons were refilled, the artillery moved forward to better positions, and about 7 p.m. in the dusk opened with renewed vigour upon the enemy's trenches. The men were



ENTRAINING RUSSIAN PRISONERS FOR MATSUYAMA. EVERYTHING WAS DONE FOR THEIR COMFORT.

tired and hungry, worn with the exhaustion of days of constant unsuccessful assaults upon works which seemed impregnable. Yet they formed up in the millet cheerfully, and waited for the order which was to let them go. Before them was a grandiose but terrible spectacle. In all directions the flashes of shells and shrapnel lighted up the night, and white tongues of flame from the Russian batteries proclaimed the fact that the enemy was replying. Each side had taken the ranges in the evening, and the shells went home. "Overhead the whole arc of sky crackled with the Russian shrapnel, and the tall millet swayed to the lead-laden blast."

Suddenly the Japanese artillery ceased, and with loud cheers the 6th, 4th, and 3rd Divisions hurled themselves upon Shushan and the works about it, while simultaneously the Russian infantry lined their trenches, which sparkled with the fire of magazine-rifles. The 21st Brigade of the 5th Division began to push westwards, aiding the troops of the 2nd Army. But for the third time on that day all the efforts of the Japanese proved unavailing. Once more, with fearful slaughter, the Japanese were beaten back, and



WOUNDED RETURNED FROM MANCHURIA AT MOSCOW STATION.

spectators wondered that any men were left to kill or to be killed. One hour from the opening of the attack, all was over, and silence once more fell upon the field.

In this assault upon Shushan the 34th Regiment of the 3rd Division specially distinguished itself. Led by Colonel Sekiya and Major Tashibana, it flung itself upon the Russian lines and carried the most advanced trenches, forcing its way through all obstacles. Major Tashibana was killed

The Brave 34th. at its head, receiving seven bullet wounds and a sword cut, and dying with a cheer for the Crown Prince, on whose staff he had served. Colonel Sekiya was killed. But about dawn the regiment had made its way to the last Russian trench, immediately under the frowning eminence of Shushan. Here it encountered the Russian reserves, and with spirit undiminished by its terrible losses attacked them in a hand-to-hand combat. Just then the day broke and revealed a mass of men struggling about the trench to the Japanese artillery, which, taking them for Russians in the dim light, and supposing they were about to deliver a counter-attack, directed upon the combatants a storm of shrapnel, ploughing the hill from base to summit with bullets. The 34th Regiment was caught in the fire and driven back with fearful loss,

leaving all its battalion flags in the hands of the enemy, but saving its regimental colours. Out of some 3,000 men who delivered the attack scarcely a tenth came back, and most of these were wounded. A few handfuls of unwounded men, however, took cover where they could find it near the Russian works, and so long as their ammunition lasted fought on, aiding their batteries with a well-aimed rifle-fire. There were no prisoners taken by the Russians; the 34th Regiment died, but it did not surrender. Fearful casualties were also recorded by the 4th Division, which had its general commanding, Ogawa, wounded.

The Russians watched with unsuppressed admiration the long succession of Japanese assaults delivered with such absolute contempt of death.

Mowing Down the Japanese. "A Cossack told me," says Mr.

Baring, a correspondent with the Russian army, "that the sight was beyond words terrible; that line after line of Japanese came smiling up to the trenches to be mown down with bullets, until the trenches

were full of bodies, and then more came on over the bodies of the dead. An officer went mad from the sheer horror of the thing. Some of the gunners went mad also. . . . And then I thought that war is perhaps to man what motherhood is to woman—a burden, a source of untold suffering, and yet a glory."



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]
LIEUTENANT-GENERAL OKUBO, COMMANDER 12TH
DIVISION 1ST ARMY.



EXPERIMENTING IN TOKIO WITH CARRIER PIGEONS FOR WARFARE, TO SEE IF HAWKS WOULD BE OF ANY
USE IN CATCHING CARRIER PIGEONS.



TYPES OF JAPANESE TRENCHES BEFORE LIAOYANG.

But the fury of the Japanese attacks and the steady advance of the 9th Brigade, in combination with menacing news that came in from the east, had produced the calculated impression upon the Russians. The

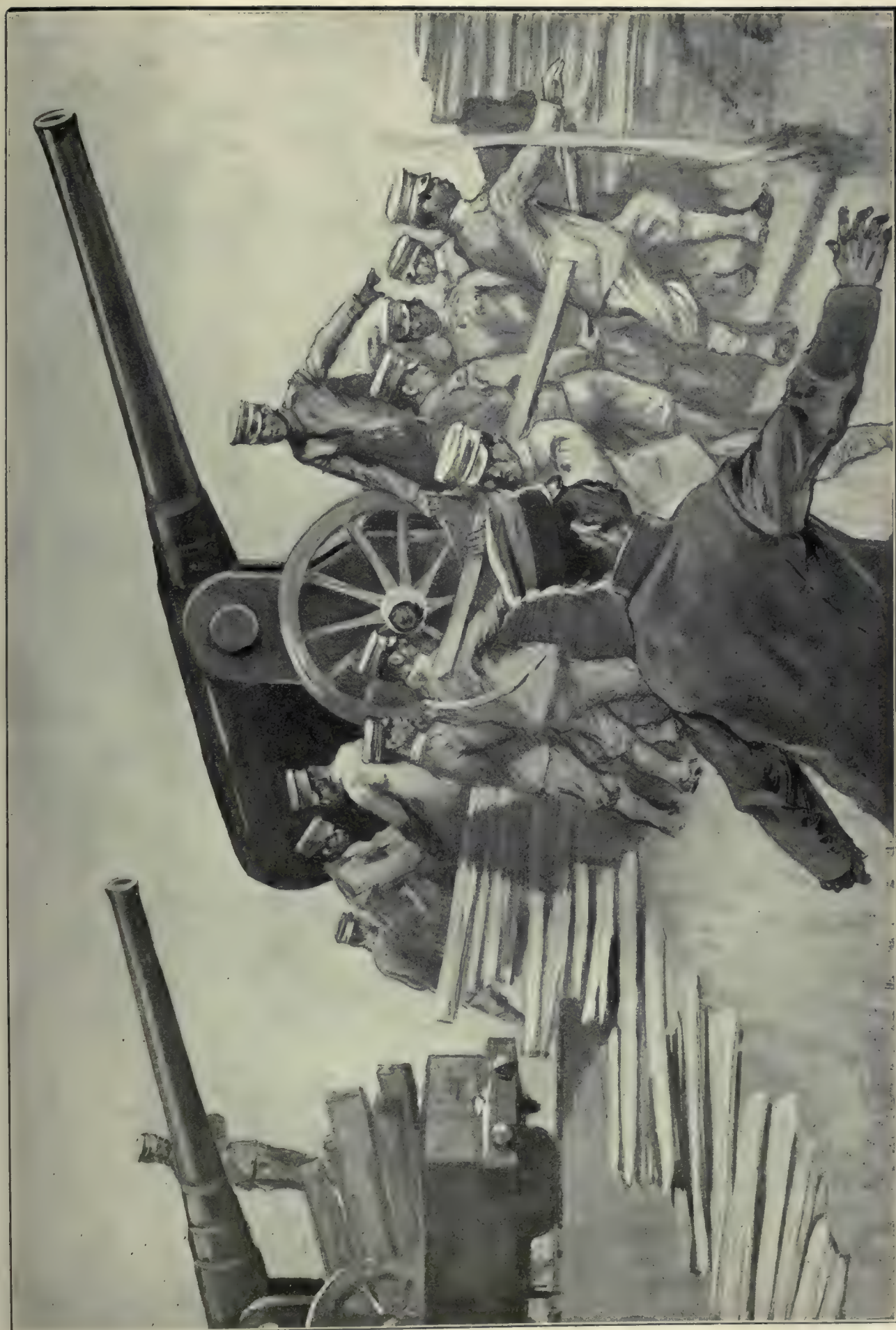
Oyama's Resolve. Japanese staff did not as yet know it; about Marshal Oyama there was debate as to whether it would not be necessary at once to retreat and to break off the battle. Late in the night the question was anxiously discussed; ammunition was beginning to run low; no perceptible success had been achieved; Shushan seemed too strong to be carried by any human effort. But no sooner was retreat mentioned than its impossibility became evident. It would expose General Kuroki to utter disaster; it would exert a deplorable effect upon the whole world; it would depress Japan, and encourage the Czar to fresh exertions. As the night advanced in this momentous council, Marshal Oyama, strongly supported by his Chief-of-the-Staff, General Kodama, and by General Nodzu, most pertinacious

of fighting men, reached a fateful decision. He would not retreat, but would deliver one more desperate assault, into which all the strength of the army was to be thrown. It was one of the decisive moments in the war when he took upon his shoulders the immense responsibility of this resolve. His courage and insight were amply justified, and were crowned at last with success.

The last reserves were placed in line, the troops formed up for the last time before Shushan, and were warned of the necessity for supreme effort. An hour before daylight they advanced, but this time no storm of fire



[Photo, Ruddiman Johnston.]
GENERAL OKU AND HIS STAFF WATCHING THE RUSSIAN SHELL-FIRE FROM
THE TOP OF SHUSHAN HILL.



JAPANESE BOMBARDING SHUSHAN WITH GUNS CAPTURED FROM THE RUSSIANS.



Master Fox I. Mrs. Fox. Mr. Fox. Miss Fox. Master Fox II. [Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"

GODS OF A MANCHURIAN TEMPLE STRIPPED OF THEIR GORGEOUS RAIMENT DURING THE FIGHTING.

The view shows what is in all probability the ruin of the Fox God's temple. The fox deity is second only to the God of War, which is almost omnipotent. Gamblers, robbers, tradesmen, and high officials all pay the fox deity homage in order to render themselves clever and cunning. The single idea of the fox ancestor has become elaborated into a dual fox deity, both male and female, with their two sons and one daughter. The dog, visible on the roof in the left-hand corner are to guard off evil spirits. In the opposite corner can be seen a stairway leading to the top of the city wall.

greeted them. Rapidly and almost unopposed they went forward, occupied line after line of trenches, and when day broke found themselves in possession of Shushan, victors in the colossal conflict which had swayed about it for three complete nights and two entire days. At 10 p.m. of the 31st General Kuropatkin had begun to withdraw his men; at 2 a.m. of September 1 the evacuation was complete, most of the



RUSSIAN PRISONERS' ARRIVAL AT MATSUYAMA. [Kuddiman Johnston photo.

Russian troops falling back upon the works near the railway-station and town of Liaoyang, or crossing the Taitze to beat back General Kuroki's advance on the railway.

About 9 p.m., just after a message from General

Kuropatkin Kuropatkin
Orders a had been
Retreat. received by

the 1st Siberian Army Corps, to the effect that the "Japanese had been crushed," his officers noticed that General Stackelberg's face wore a



THE CARNAGE AT SHUSHAN HILL.
One of the most badly-contested positions before Liaoyang.

look of pain. He had asked for reinforcements, and had been told that there were none; on the contrary, the 1st Siberian Corps must abandon Shushan, retire, and cross the Taitze. Its place in the line would be filled by portions of the 2nd, 3rd, and 4th Siberian Corps. The news caused consternation, as it had been determined at a Russian Council of War on the eve of the battle to fight the contest out to the bitter end. The reason for the sudden order to retreat was the determination with which General Kuroki's men were assaulting the Russian flank. General Kurōpatkin had believed that there were only two Japanese divisions to the north of the Taitze, which, as we know, was the actual fact. But the reports from his generals on that flank insisted that there were at least four Japanese divisions. He believed these reiterated reports, the more so as his intelligence officers accepted them, and, fearing that the Russian troops in General Kuroki's front would not be able to hold so large a force off the railway and the Russian communications, decided to withdraw as many men as he could spare from the south side of the river and to fling them upon General Kuroki, in a final effort to beat him back, or at least prevent the



(Ruddiman Johnston photo.)
GENERAL FUJIE, CHIEF OF STAFF, THIRD ARMY.



MARKIS OYAMA, THE JAPANESE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF, AND WIFE.
[Copyright, H. C. White Co.]

Russian line of retreat from being severed.

One great misfortune befell the Russians in their retreat. A body of about 1,000 infantry missed their way in the dark and marched into the very midst of the 5th Division, which received it with a murderous fire and destroyed it. At once the 5th Division pushed forward, and succeeded in making itself master of the second Russian line of defence in front of Liaoyang in the early morning. The works here were found to have been abandoned; the Russians had carried off their artillery and reserve ammunition, and left no trophies for the victors but a few hundred dead.

About Shushan the sights were terrible. The place was a shambles. "Friend and foe, Russian and Japanese, were piled one on the other in

tiers of dead. The trenches with the layers of dead, the blood-stained wreckage, and the belongings and equipment left by the living who had fled and the dead who were lying stark in a pile of corpses, were ghastly sights." The staked pits in the Russian front were filled with Japanese dead, but the

August 31, 1904.

TERRORS OF SHUSHAN.

939

cries of those who had fallen into these horrible traps had merely nerved the assaulting troops to fiercer energy and determination. The slopes of Shushan were covered with shattered rifles and bent or broken bayonets. So thick lay the Japanese dead that the rule of cremating all the slain had to be abandoned, and only the fallen officers were consumed on the pyres, which smoked incessantly. The



THE ANNIHILATION OF THE ORLOFF REGIMENT.

This regiment in retreat lost its way at night in the high millet, which grows to the height of ten feet. It marched right into the Japanese infantry as the day was breaking, and was annihilated.



[From a photo by T. Gordon Smith.]

THE MORNING AFTER THE CAPTURE OF THE SHUSHAN HILLS.

hospitals were busy with the thousands of wounded, who bore their sufferings with stoical fortitude, and under the surgeon's knife never uttered a cry.

On Brush Hill a small party of Russians had been isolated in one of the outlying trenches, stormed by the Japanese on the previous day, and had retired to a subterranean gallery, and there resisted to the last. They refused for hours to surrender, and caused the Japanese, who approached with the object of warning them of the futility of further resistance, some loss. The Japanese then closed the opening to the gallery with sandbags, which prevented the Russians from firing, and compelled them to choose between suffocation or surrender. At last, after a parley, they agreed to come forth, on condition that their lives

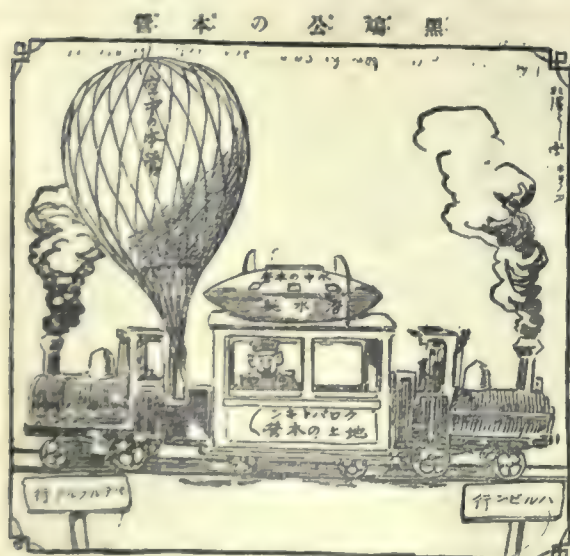
should be spared, and one by one they crept blinking into the light of day, and were at once given food and water.

The capture of Shushan was followed by a lull in the battle on the Japanese left. The troops of General

A Lull.

Oku's army were too much exhausted by their incredible efforts to follow up the great success which they had gained, and for the rest of the day there was only skirmishing in front of the Russian positions before Liaoyang. Preparations were made, however, to deliver an assault upon the enemy's works, and the artillery was pushed forward to points from which it could open a fire upon Liaoyang itself.

In the centre the 5th Division attempted to effect a further advance from the second line of Russian works upon the valley of the Taitze, but here it was held in check by the fire from Russian batteries placed to the north of that stream. The 10th Division, which was linking up General Nodzu's army with General Kuroki's



RUSSIAN MEANS OF ESCAPE.

Konopatin, according to the Japanese wit, says that the train is Amur's invention, but that the submarine and balloon are his own, so that when danger comes he can soar into the air or dive into the sea.

army on the Japanese right, could make no progress, and it became evident that the Russians had left strong rearguards to hold off the Japanese south of Liaoyang.

Meantime on the Japanese right a bloody and protracted conflict was raging to the north of the river Taitze. We left the 12th Division across that stream early in the morning of the 31st. Had the Russians

**Advancing to
Yentai.**

instantly attacked it they must either have destroyed it or have forced it back. But the whole of the day passed without any serious effort on the part of the Russian troops. All day the Japanese were reconnoitring the ground north of the river, between the river and Yentai, feverishly preparing artillery positions and pushing up reinforcements. The 2nd Division, marching fast towards Changkwantung, reached the river in the night of the 31st, and the head of its troops began to cross towards morning, much impeded by the depth of water in the stream, which was greater than had been expected, after the heavy rains of the previous week. At any moment a



LANDING OF RUSSIAN PRISONERS FROM MOTIENLING AT TAKAHAMA.

thunderstorm might have cut off the 12th Division by rendering the river absolutely unfordable and delaying the arrival of supports. But the Japanese took the risk, and were right in taking it, as events were to prove. The furious attacks upon Shushan had attracted all General Kuropatkin's attention for the moment, and he had no energy left for the vital point near Heiyingtai. He massed troops there, weakening his line elsewhere, but he did not strike vigorously at the Japanese.

But if the Russians did not adopt an aggressive attitude it was necessary for General Kuroki to attack with all possible force, if only to delude the Russians into the belief that the Japanese to the north of the Taitze were in great strength, and thus to prevent a determined counter-attack, which would have been fatal to the 12th Division. The Russians opposed to this single division numbered between four and five divisions of the 10th and 17th European Army Corps on September 1, and though each Russian division was weaker than each Japanese, the Russians had two or three men to the Japanese one.

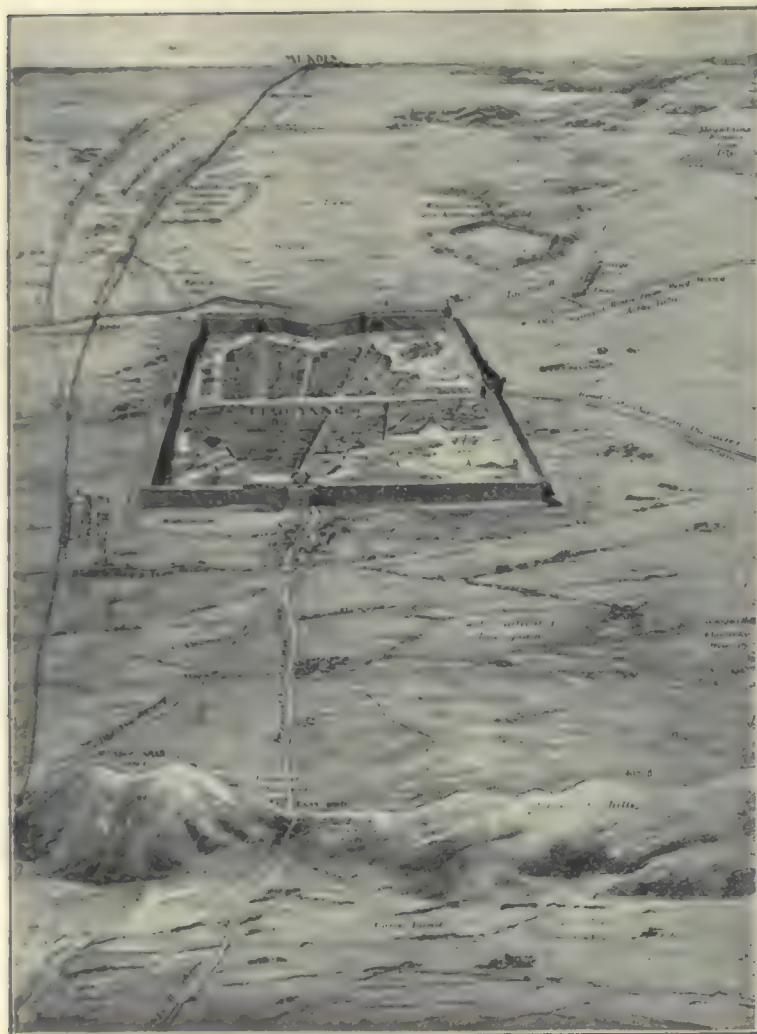
Two hillocks in the neighbourhood of Heiyingtai played an important part in the conflict which began on the 1st. The first was a bare, flat-topped hill, rising just above Heiyingtai to a height of 150 feet, and



RUSSIAN WOUNDED AND INVALIDS ON THE WAY HOME.

This picture brings home in a most vivid way some of the horrors of war as affecting not only the immediate combatants but the civilian population in whose country they are fighting. Boatloads of wounded Russian refugees of various kinds are still being sent to Russia. Only the other week it was reported that a shipload of lunatics had been brought to Japan from the fortress. This picture, which Mr. Matania has constructed from a series of photographs, shows almost every type of wounded man and refugee.

(Drawn by F. Matania.)



THE CITY OF LIAOYANG LOOKING NORTH-EAST.

In the rush of bullets the Japanese line melted fast away; it wavered, with numbers sadly reduced, and then fell back, only to be caught in its retreat by the second line which charged instantly behind it, and which swept it forward once more. Line followed line, as this process was repeated, till the heaps of killed and wounded in the millet grew high, till the Russian rifles grew hot, and the Russian infantry wearied of killing. And still through the sheets of bullets the indomitable little yellow men pressed forward smiling to mutilation or to death.

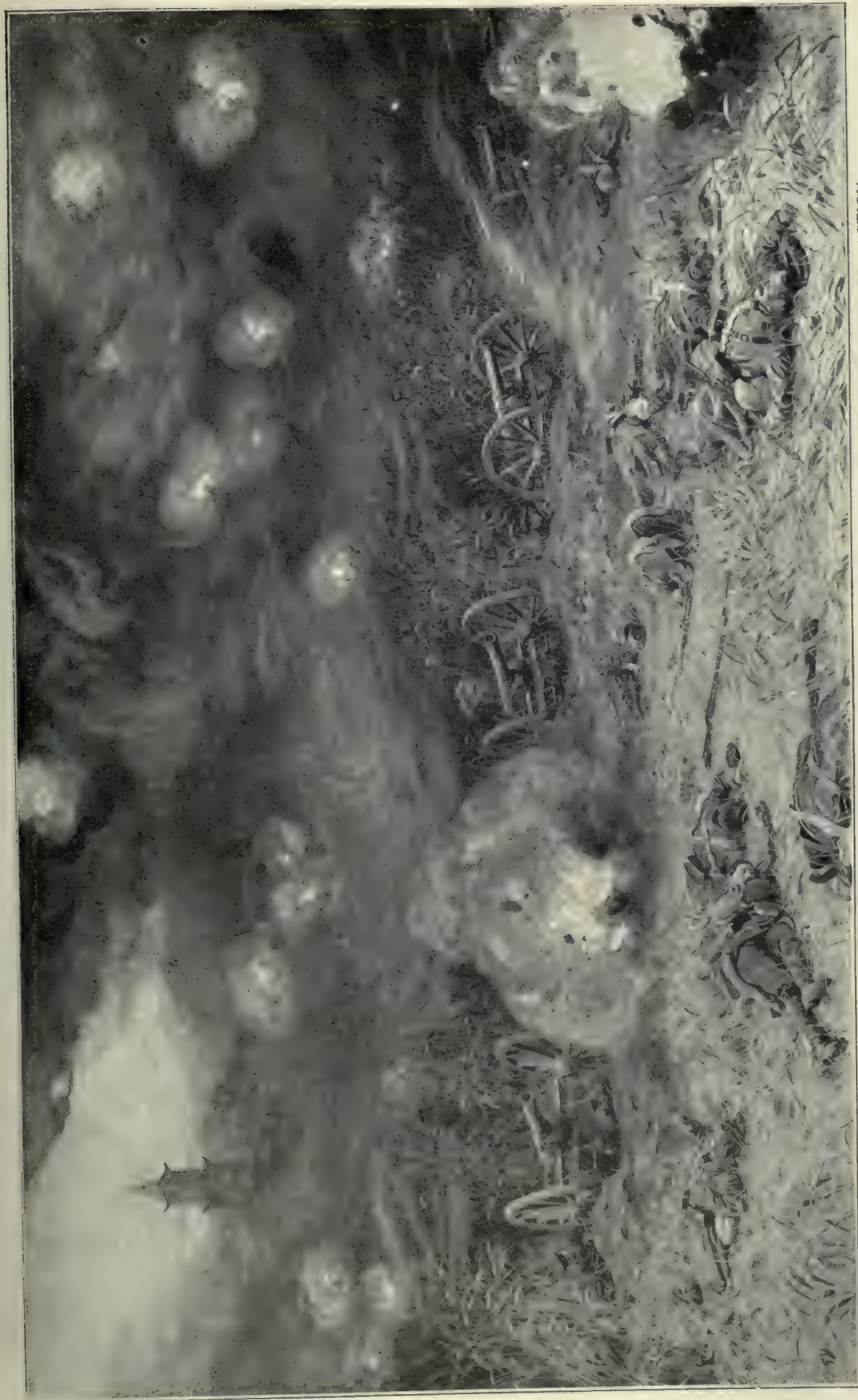
The main attack failed

bolted from these trenches, and sought shelter on the further side of the hill. Noting this the Japanese took to firing first one or two shots, and then eight or ten when the Russians had started to run. One group of five men was caught by a Japanese shell, which burst and left four of the five motionless on the hill. The fifth painfully lifted himself, and an unwounded Russian ran to his help. Barely had this happened when a fresh shell came and swept them both away in common destruction. A fearful fire was concentrated upon the hill till late in the afternoon, when the Japanese infantry charged.

Suddenly, as the guns ceased their bombardment and silence fell upon the field, the Japanese lines rose from their shelter and formed up one behind the other. Bayonets were fixed, and the first line started forward. Its onset was met with a concentrated rifle-fire as it emerged from the shelter of the tall millet and entered a prepared patch just under the hill, where the stiff stalks had been broken off some two feet above the ground and then bent one over the other into a rough but effective type of abattis.



JAPANESE SCOUTS RECONNOITRING THE ENEMY'S MOVEMENTS.



A GALLANT RUSSIAN BATTERY THAT WOULD NOT BE BEATEN AT LIAOYANG.—THE REARGUARD ACTION.



[S. Smith photo.]

A RUSSIAN BEERHOUSE AT THE FOOT OF THE PAGODA AT LIAOYANG.

four or even six divisions instead of barely two. Vague reports as to two mysterious divisions working from the north-east against the Russian lines of communication may have misled General Bilderling, who was in command in this part of the field, and prevented him from adopting a bolder plan of action. A determined attack by his troops would have instantly driven in the Japanese line and precipitated a great catastrophe. It was what the Japanese feared from hour to hour, but the bold attack never came. Instead the Russians remained in their positions, waiting for the Japanese to come on and grapple with them.

At nightfall orders were issued for an attack on Manyama, as soon as the moon had set. Every man in the Japanese line was to be employed in this assault; no one was left in reserve. All was staked upon a single throw. About 2 a.m. the Japanese advanced stealthily in a closely-formed line against the Russian trenches on the hill. The night was very dark, and great confusion occurred among the assailants, who were broken up into small parties, and lost touch of the officers in command. The Russians opened a random fire into the night, hearing the approach of

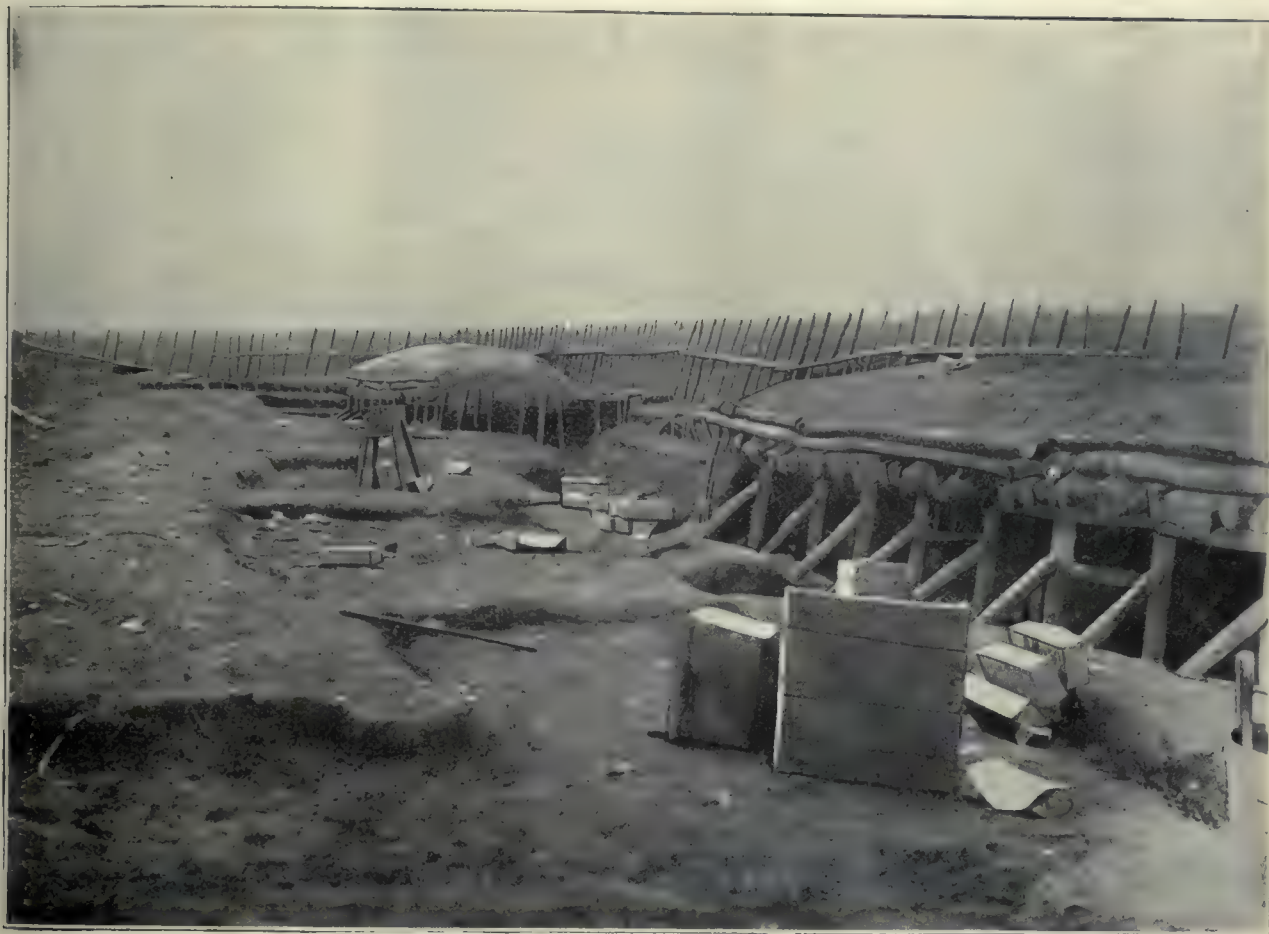
A Hand-to-Hand Encounter.

signally, with appalling loss to the Japanese. But as evening came on small groups of men belonging to the 2nd Division managed to work their way close to Manyama, and entrenched themselves under its slope in readiness for a fresh attack. To prevent the Russians reinforcing the threatened point, for some five or six miles all along the line the troops of the 2nd and 12th Divisions had vigorously pressed the Russians, with such vigour and pertinacity indeed that the Russians were completely misled as to the Japanese force, and imagined that their enemy had



[R. Johnston photo.]

BURNING OF LIAOYANG RAILWAY STATION, SHOWING HAKUSAN TOWER AND A MOUND OF BURNT STORES



AN ABANDONED RUSSIAN STRONGHOLD NEAR LIAOYANG.



(Gottschalk.

HOTEL AT VLADIVOSTOCK.

Opposite the railway station is the Grand Hotel
Chouine.

thousands of men. The Japanese replied, and in the turmoil fired into each other. It was vital to restore order, and to avert the loss which an undisciplined attack would inevitably cause to the Japanese. Above the rattle of the rifles, and the shrieks and cries of men engaged in mortal combat, the Japanese bugles sounded the "Cease fire!" Few armies would have obeyed that signal in such a moment as did the Japanese. Their rifle-fire immediately ceased, their formation was restored, their bugles called once more; but this time it was "Resume fire!" followed instantly by "Charge!" The Japanese line raced up the hill and entered the Russian entrenchments, where there was one of the most prolonged and terrible hand-to-hand encounters of the war.

For nearly an hour the infantry of the two armies fought with sword and bayonet in the dark, and neither side would yield. At last, however, the discipline and the spirit of the Japanese began to tell over even superior numbers. With fearful loss the Russians were forced back from the trenches, which were now heaped high with corpses, and were driven off the hill. When sword and bayonet had done the work the Japanese infantry busily began to dig, burrowing shelter-trenches and bomb-proofs in which to support the shell-fire that with daylight the Russians were certain to concentrate upon the hill. The Japanese artillery pushed forward to support the infantry in the duel that would open with day, and to shell the Russians retreating near the railway and the line to the coal-mines. Meanwhile



THE MODEL FORT OF GIBRALTAR NEAR LIAOYANG, WHICH THE JAPANESE DID NOT DISCOVER WITH THEIR HIGH-ANGLE FIRE.

[S. Smith photo.]

better dug, and the Japanese leadership altogether superior. The Russian attacks were met and crushed by a whirlwind of shell, shrapnel, and rifle-fire before they could even develop. The fire of 60 Russian guns was concentrated upon Manyama, inflicting heavy loss upon the Japanese, but it could not quell their spirit of resolution. A feeling of invincibility had grown up in the Japanese army, and its soldiers, in the fierce heat of the summer sun, with little water and food, clung obstinately to their positions, certain that if they were hard pressed help would come in the nick of time. While the battle raged and thundered, General Nishi, who commanded the 2nd Division, calmly slept. His work was done; it remained for his fighting men to show their mettle and endurance. Generalship was no longer of avail in that encounter; all depended on the common soldier.

All day the Guards were marching to the Taitze behind the 3rd or reserve brigade of the 2nd Division and two battalions of that division which had been detached some days before to aid the centre army. Towards noon these fresh troops began to arrive, and were at once thrown into the fight. Their coming was most seasonable, and led the Japanese to resume their forward movement. Soon after noon they carried a height to the north-west of Heiyingtai, and pressed the Russians back in the neighbourhood of Tayo, occupying the heights to the west of the latter place. As evening approached the Japanese delivered another of their furious attacks upon No. 131 Hill. The Guards were moved towards it along the Taitze, and from very weariness after their marching and fighting fell asleep by the thousand under a heavy shrapnel-fire. Then the men of the 2nd Division charged the hill from the north-east. The Russians stood up boldly in the trenches against the

the Russians brought up enormous reinforcements. Late in the night of the 1st-2nd part of the 1st East Siberian Corps, which had been fighting to the south of the Taitze, joined the Russian troops near Heiyingtai.

Early on the 2nd the Russian guns opened on Manyama,

The Russian Assault. while the Russians

played the part which had fallen to the Japanese on the previous day. Again and again they advanced to the assault, but the Japanese artillery was better served than the Russian guns had been, the Japanese trenches



SOME OF THE RUSSIAN WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS.



GENERAL KONDRATOVITCH'S INFANTRY RECAPTURING THEIR GUNS FROM GENERAL KUROKI'S ARMY AT LIAOYANG.



(Ruderman Johnston photo.)
A MOUND OF PROVISIONS BURNED BY THE RUSSIANS BEFORE
THEIR RETREAT FROM LIAOYANG.

a safe retreat, and his army for its very existence. The Russian troops were urged to do their utmost, and gallantly they responded to the appeal. When night came down they formed up for a desperate assault upon Manyama. The Russian commanders had once more taken a leaf from the Japanese book of tactics. Simultaneously the Japanese on their side formed up and prepared to rush upon No. 131 Hill.

In the hours of darkness the twofold struggle for the possession of these two

The Struggle for hills began, the
No. 131 Hill. Russians assaulting
Manyama, and the

Japanese No. 131 Hill. At Manyama the fighting was of the most furious description. Two regiments, one Siberian and the other fresh from Russia, were sent in to assail Manyama. They came on without any attempt at concealment, with drums beating, and with the rage of infuriated giants. "The Japanese, driven

back on their reserve, reformed. Heiyingtai was a debris-strewn, shell-torn arena for men and rifles, particularly for the bayonets on the ends of the rifles. Creeping upwards like cats, the little men put their



(Ruderman Johnston photo.)
THE SCENE OF DESTRUCTION AT LIAOYANG RAILWAY STATION.

steel into the big men, and swamped the Russian advance before its reserves could be brought into action." The Russians were hurled back off the hill; when day broke the gallant Japanese still held it in the teeth of an incessant cannonade.

On No. 131 Hill scenes as bloody and terrible were enacted. The Japanese troops as they advanced encountered wire entanglements, some of which were charged with electric current, which struck terror by the horrible death that they inflicted. It is on record that a Japanese sapper who was wounded gnawed through four of these wires with his teeth and escaped death. The Japanese fought their way through all obstructions and reached the Russian



(London Press Agency.)
PART OF RAILWAY TO LIAOYANG.
Along the northern part of which Kuropatkin retreated to Yentai.



(Drawn by Melton Prior from a sketch in the field made by Grant Wallace.)

THE ASSAULT ON THE KEY TO THE RUSSIAN CENTRE AT LIAOYANG. THE CHARGE OF THE 3rd AND 5th DIVISIONS.

1. One of the strongest defenses of Liaoyang: Russian redoubt.—2. Russian infantry in flight.—3. Scene of most terrific modern bombardment.—4. "Round Top," where Russians were frequently repulsed and trench was filled with dead.—5. Buddhist Temple of Kuan Yin and the Nine Golden Gods.—6, 6, 6. Japanese charging Russian redoubt in open order.—7, 7. Where Oku's 33rd Regiment hugged the ground in Chinese graves all day and lost 30 per cent. of their numbers under assault.—8. Wire entanglements which Captain Inouye's 22 men failed to cut: 21 perished.—9. Openings cut in entanglements by Inouye's men and 60 other Engineers with chippers and folding saws.—10. Japanese battery firing at 400 yards.—11. Where all gunners killed.—12. Junction of Oku's 3rd Division and Kodzu's 5th Division: Oku's 6th Regiment charging.—13. Portion of 21st Regiment (Iakushan Army).—14. In Carlisle's position with the 1st Regiment.—15. Part of 42nd Regiment, of which the men were blown into the air by scores.—16. Buddhist Temple used as a hospital: the altar was the operating-table. The artist slept on it.—17. Red Cross Hospital, sheltered by bank of creek, but open to fire from 4.—18. Field-Hospital, sheltered by bank of creek, but open to fire from 4.—19. Sorghum (cane) fields, through which the 1st Division charged.—20. Japanese guns hidden here.—21. Where some companies of 10th Division lost 85 to 90 per cent. of their numbers, and one lost every officer.—22. Kuraki's battle-ground, extending three or four miles along hills.—23. Seven subterranean mines, fired by electricity as Japanese crossed: only 50 killed.—24, 24. Five rows of seven-foot pits, with stakes and barbed-wire entanglements.—25. Entanglements protecting "Little Round Top."—26. Cane-covered plain through which Japanese advanced on a four-mile front, charging every Russian position at once.—27. Bomb-proof shelter, where seven Cossticks were entrapped for 14 hours by the Japanese, who sealed them up with sandbags.—28. "Little Round Top," occupied by a part of the 33rd Japanese Regiment under cross-fire.



A RUSSIAN SHELTER-TRENCH AT LIAOYANG.

(George Lynch photo.)

love that was faithful unto death, and of the spirit which counted self as nothing in face of the call to duty. The light showed the bare summits and slopes of the two hills strewn with the mangled fragments of the dead and the mutilated bodies of the living, and once more the roar of artillery echoed among the mountains, and the tempest of shrapnel descended from the Russian guns on Manyama and from the Japanese guns on No. 131 Hill. But further serious fighting there was none in the early part of this day. Both armies were exhausted with their prodigious efforts; the Russians were well content that they had checked the turning movement; the Japanese now knew that envelopment of General Kuropatkin's huge army was out of the question. Late in the afternoon, however, the Russians, heavily reinforced, renewed their assaults upon Manyama, again without success, and late in the night they delivered a determined attack, which was once more repulsed with terrible loss. Thus for three

trenches, but could not carry them. The Russians employed the hand-grenades which had been used at Port Arthur, and which were to play so fearful a part in the future battles of the war. As the Japanese crept forward grenades were flung by hand down the hill from the Russian positions amongst them. These burst with a fearful noise, blowing scores of the assailants literally in pieces, till the whole slope was covered with shattered fragments of humanity and the hill reeked of flesh and blood like a slaughter-house. So close and fierce was the fighting that a whole battalion of Japanese was absolutely annihilated. Every man was killed or wounded, and not one returned or was afterwards discovered unhurt. On neither side were there surrenders; officers and men fought to the very last, and died sooner than acknowledge defeat.

Day dawned upon this stupendous and terrible scene, magnificent in its manifestation of human heroism and devotion, in its revelation of the

**The Russians
Fall Back.**

of human
heroism and



GOODS WAGGONS AT LIAOYANG STATION DESTROYED BY THE RUSSIANS.

long days of continued battle and assault the Japanese stood their ground at Manyama, and finally their resolution and endurance carried the day. On the 4th the Russians could be seen falling back, and about 10 a.m. they evacuated No. 131 Hill, which was almost immediately seized and entrenched by the Japanese. In the afternoon a brigade of the 12th Division once more drove back the Russians to the east of Yentai coal mine and prepared to attack the heights of Yumenshan overlooking the railway and completely dominating the line of retreat from Liaoyang. Now, at last, the Japanese were virtually astride of the railway, but their success came three days too late. Liaoyang had already been abandoned, and there was no harvest for the gallant soldiers of the Mikado's armies to reap.

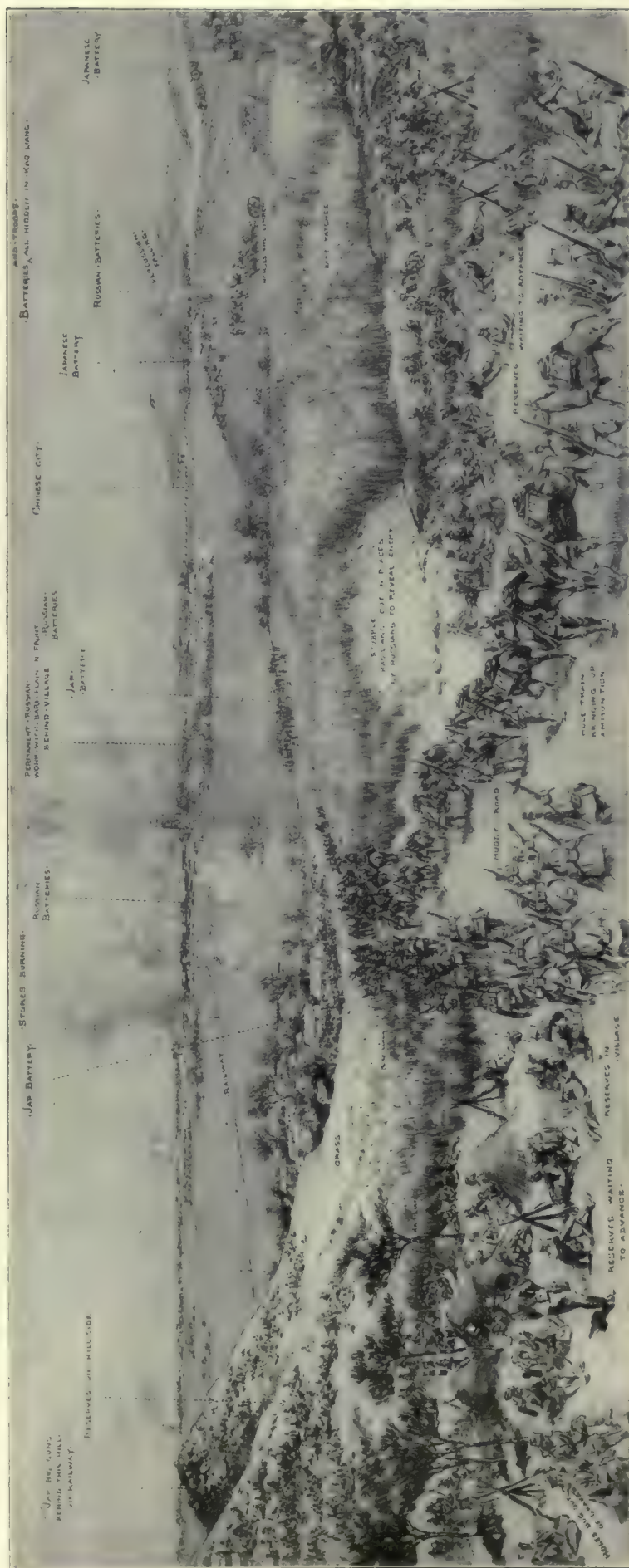
CHAPTER XLIII.

RETREAT OF THE RUSSIAN ARMY—CAPTURE OF LIAOYANG.

AFTER the lull in the fighting on General Oku's front which followed the capture of Shushan orders were issued for a fresh advance towards Liaoyang on September 2. It was impossible to move forward at once, as ammunition had

**Advance on
Liaoyang.**

the infantry of cartridges; and many hours were spent in bringing up fresh supplies from the rear. The consumption of ammunition in this terrific battle had exceeded all anticipations, and made enormous inroads upon even the large reserves provided by the Japanese General Staff. Nor was it only the great essential of battle that was lacking; General Oku's men for three days had subsisted on the small quantity of food which each soldier carried on his



Facsimile of sketch by Frederic Whiting.

THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG--JAPANESE PREPARING FOR THE FINAL ASSAULT.

person. The rations with which the men had opened the battle had been consumed, and further supplies had to be obtained and issued.

All the 1st the Russians were retiring from Liaoyang, leaving, however, south of the city a powerful rearguard of excellent troops, holding positions of enormous strength. The Japanese shells fell intermittently into the city and accelerated the retreat. Waggon by the hundred were defiling north, followed by immense columns of infantry, tattered and torn, with gaping boots, but still full of fight and little depressed by the continued retirements of the past week. The Russian army generally imagined that it had done well, and that it had inflicted annihilating losses upon an incredible number of Japanese. The railway was blocked with trains steaming slowly north; a great host of non-combatants followed the Russians in terror of the coming of the Japanese. To the south, from the hills between Liaoyang and Shushan, rose incessantly the roar of battle; and from the east,

Abandoning Liaoyang.



THE RUSSIAN REDOUBT SOUTH OF LIAOYANG.

This redoubt was one of 11 similar earthworks forming the inner line of defence. General Stackelberg's rearguard held it until 11.30 p.m. on Saturday, September 3. This is the spot where many companies of Oku's 3rd Division were nearly annihilated, and 1,000 Japanese fell in the night attack on this one position. Mr. Grant Wallace's sketch was verified by two of the military attachés.

where General Kuroki was in action, came the same nerve-shaking din. The artillery on each side was still firing, though about Liaoyang there was nothing resembling the fearful cannonade which had attended the impetuous attacks upon Shushan. From the Russian storehouses dense columns of black smoke swept upwards to the sky, and a heavy pall of cloud from burning food and forage and bursting shells and cremating bodies overhung the whole landscape. The smell of death, sour and sweet, was never out of the nostrils; a vast host of fallen soldiers lay rotting in the strong Manchurian sun upon the land for which they had so gallantly given their lives.

The Russians had fallen back to a line of strong trenches which stretched from the high ground north of the Taitze near Machwang in a vast semi-circle to a point north of the railway-station. Behind this line was yet another, with, in its centre, the great fort known to the Russians as Little Port Arthur. On the morning of September 2, rested and refreshed, the Japanese of the left and centre armies once

more advanced, hoping this time to enter Liaoyang without encountering any serious resistance. But it

**Japanese Waiting
to Advance.**

speedily became clear that the Russians had as yet no intention of falling back. Their artillery opened a very heavy fire upon the Japanese troops, and burst shrapnel incessantly over Shushan. The Japanese worked their way into the millet, and slowly edged forward. At times it appeared as though they were meditating another of their great assaults. But the order to assault did not come, and most of the day passed with only artillery-fire and infantry skirmishing. On the 5th Division the Russians directed their heaviest fire, and that division, as in the earlier part of the battle, was foremost in the attack. Great masses of Russian troops could be seen north of the river, and were the target of the shells of the 5th and 10th Divisions, which must have inflicted upon them heavy loss. The Japanese heavy guns concentrated their projectiles upon the station and the

huge railway-bridge over the Taitze in an effort to destroy it. In this aim they did not succeed, but they caused the Russians some loss and damage, and delayed the constant procession of trains northwards from Liaoyang.

All the morning of the 2nd the battle raged to the west of the railway, where the Russians were now in great strength, having seemingly withdrawn a large part of their force to the country north and north-west of the station. They had numerous batteries in position near Yuchiachwang and Yangchialintze, the



JAPANESE SOLDIERS AMONG THE RUSSIAN BUILDINGS AT LIAOYANG.
(Copyright, "Collier's Weekly")



JAPANESE WAR CORRESPONDENT AND A CHINESE SERVANT WATCHING THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG FROM A HILL AT ANSHANTIEN. THE POST BEHIND THEM MARKS THE TOMB OF A JAPANESE KILLED IN THE FIGHTING.

**Firing on infantry
the Railway could de-
liver no**

assault upon the Russian lines. Night fell with the two armies facing each other to the west of the railway, in much the same position as at the opening of the day's fighting. Towards evening the Japanese batteries accelerated their fire, and poured in a perfect storm of shell upon the Russian guns. "Flashes were constant. They were more plainly seen in the fading light. The rain of shells



GATHERING TIMBER AND STORES FOR THE CONSTRUCTION OF THE FIELD RAILWAY.

The Russians have made a somewhat extensive use of light railways during the campaign. At Mukden in particular a complicated system of light railway was laid down.

was enormous. Our batteries," writes a correspondent with General Oku's headquarters, "fired both shrapnel and common shell, and as night fell the scene was grand and awful. Never in the history of modern war, so said an old-time artillery officer to me as we watched from the hill, had there been a more severe duel between field-guns. But the fire did not silence the Russian guns," and finally it died down, and silence fell upon the field.

In the afternoon there were some indications that the Russians purposed a counter-attack against the Japanese left. A strong Russian column showed itself and began to push south, but it was received with so hot a fire that it was compelled to recoil. Officers and men were seen falling under the rain of shrapnel and rifle-bullets which the Japanese poured in upon their enemy, as the Russians moved in comparatively close formation. The slaughter must have been terrible, and the punishment inflicted was some equivalent for the heavy losses which the Japanese had sustained in their innumerable desperate assaults upon the Russian works.

While the Russian artillery furiously cannonaded Manyama the Japanese guns were not inactive.



JAPANESE OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPHER RECORDING THE PROCESSION OF WOUNDED AFTER THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG.

The Japanese batteries were massed, and poured in a terrific fire upon No.

Firing on No. 131 Hill, which was

held by two Russian battalions. One of these battalions was on rocky ground, where the construction of entrenchments, with the tools which the Russian infantry possessed, was out of the question. It was Spion Kop over again. The Japanese guns obtained the range perfectly, and burst their shrapnel in quick succession over the exposed battalion, until flesh and blood could no longer endure the slaughter. The battalion gave way, and retired under the Japanese fire. The Japanese batteries accelerated the rapidity



THE RUSSIAN RETREAT AFTER THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG.

of their discharges; a perfect storm of shrapnel burst over the heads of the retreating troops and mowed them down in sheaves for the grave, as the sharp teeth of the mower brings down the standing corn.

Further to the north, in the neighbourhood of Yentai Mines, the Russians made repeated desperate efforts to outflank the Japanese and force them back, but all their assaults were shattered by the steady



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
GENERAL NODZU ENTERING THE EAST GATE OF LIAOYANG.



[Copyright, 1904, by "Collier's Weekly."
A BREACH IN THE WALLS OF LIAOYANG, MADE BY THE RUSSIANS.

valour and endurance of the indomitable 12th Division, which fought as well as it marched, and rose to every demand made upon its bravery. Portions of the 1st Siberian Army Corps, General Stackelberg's command, which had fought so well at Shushan, as they arrived upon the field after a hard and tiring forced march, were flung upon the Japanese, who were incessantly attacked by the Russian 17th Army Corps. The 1st Siberian Corps came into action about 3 p.m., and was so unfortunate as to march into a trap carefully laid for it by the Japanese. Its men found themselves the centre of a terrific fire from the Japanese artillery, and were thrown into great confusion.

The reserve of the corps was formed by a division of the 5th Siberian Army Corps under the command of Major-General Orloff. Instead of holding his troops well to the rear and obeying his orders, Major-General Orloff took it into his head to march to the assistance of the 17th Corps, which was hard pressed and calling for aid. The impulse was a soldierly one, but its results were most unfortunate. General Orloff's men were for the most part reservists, badly trained, old, and with no stomach for the

fight. The sights and sounds of that terrible field had produced a dire impression upon their nerves, even before they had been really engaged. Moving off, the various battalions of the division lost their way in the tall kaoliang, and as they entered the zone of battle bullets came upon them from, as it seemed to them, every possible direction. The men could not see the enemy clearly, nor recognise the units of their own division, and in the deep crops they fired on one another with murderous effect. Two regiments were engaged in this suicidal encounter, and when they were broken and shattered, but not before, the Japanese, who had been watching the series of misadventures from the hills, delivered a fierce and vehement assault upon them which practically annihilated the division. All order was lost; a stream of panic-stricken fugitives sought madly for safety from the rain of bullets, and when General Stackelberg called upon his reserve, he found that it had ceased to exist. Orloff ascribed this great catastrophe to the badness of the maps supplied to him, which failed to show the roads, and misled him completely.

As the day advanced the Japanese 12th Division captured Yentai Mines, and

**Yentai Mines
Captured.**

pushed its advance
very near to Yentai
station on the railway;

but owing to the continuous arrival of Russian reinforcements upon the scene, it was unable to hold all that it had won, and it did not succeed in carrying out the mission entrusted to it—of cutting the railway to General Kuropatkin's rear. But if it failed, the mismanagement of the battle on the other side was dismal. General Bilderling would not assume the responsibility that belonged to him, nor would the other Russian corps commanders accept his orders. General

Kuropatkin in no way made his presence felt, and failed to give his subordinates the precise and clear directions which would,

[Copyright, 1904,
"Collier's Weekly,"
JAPANESE ENTRY
INTO LIAOYANG.
CHINESE HANG
OUT JAPANESE
FLAGS.



perhaps, have gained for the Russian army victory.

Towards evening the Russians increased their artillery fire upon Manyama, in a final effort to dislodge the Japanese from that eminence. The guns playing upon it had risen from 60 to 200, and directed upon the Japanese troops a bombardment under which it seemed that nothing could live. The whole Japanese position was shrouded in a canopy of white smoke from bursting shrapnel. The Japanese batteries were silenced and the gunners compelled to



THE MINES OF YENTAL.

abandon them. "The Russian guns," says Lord Brooke, a correspondent with the Russian army, "were ranged in a long line and fired sometimes together, sometimes in sequence. Three massed batteries fired a salvo, and as the shells rushed through the riven air, with the sound of a great screw being turned, the next in the line of threes thundered forth, and all down the line the other batteries took up

the tale." And this bombardment continued till Manyama's outline was lost in the darkness of night. But still the Japanese clung to the hill in the teeth of the Russian fire, and as their trenches filled with dead the corpses were flung out of them in front, and fresh troops were continually pushed forward into them to fill the growing gaps in the fighting line.

The night of Sept. 2 was marked by a Russian attack on the 5th Division, defeated with heavy loss. Towards dawn, at Marshal Oyama's order, the whole centre and left resumed the offensive, advancing



THE RAILWAY NEAR THE MINES OF YENTAL.



AFTER LIAOYANG. RUSSIAN ARTILLERY CROSSING THE TAITZE.



[Copyright, 1904, by "Collier's Weekly."
JAPANESE DESTROYING RUSSIAN REDOUBTS AT LIAOYANG.

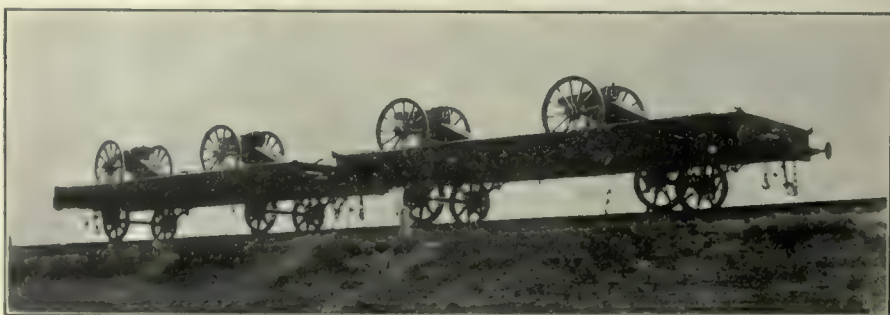
upon the works, to the south and west of Liaoyang. On the Japanese right the 5th Division worked from near Tungpalichwang to the valley of the Taitze, where it encountered strong bodies of Russians holding the Chinese villages there, with the adjacent groves and plantations. A long and tedious series of combats took place here, and finally the division was brought to a complete standstill in a somewhat critical position. It was under the fire of the powerful Russian batteries to the north of the river, which enfiladed its line and inflicted considerable loss upon it, while in its front were the trenches

held by the Russian infantry, who showed no signs of retreating, but held their ground boldly, and from time to time threatened counter-attacks.

The 3rd Division, which had lost terribly in its assaults on Shushan, incurred a fresh and serious casualty list in its attempt to storm the Russian trenches in its front, and though it made a slight advance was unable to take the works. Its men sheltered themselves as best they could in the millet or dug hasty trenches only a few hundred yards away from the Russians. Advancing along the railway the 4th Division was not more successful; with the 6th Division it delivered a desperate assault, with little result, upon the Russian works at Yuchiachwang late in the night of the 2nd-3rd.

The Japanese scouts and Chinese spies had reported that a great Russian redoubt in this quarter of the field, while looking formidable, was really weak. The information seems to have been given in perfect faith, but it was hopelessly incorrect. A regiment was sent in to the assault by General Okubo, commanding the 6th Division. Advancing in small groups the Japanese were received with a terrific fire. The ground in front had been cleared; approach was impeded by the staked pits in which the Russian engineers rejoiced, and by a thick network of barbed wire. Though the night was dark and moonless, it was clear enough to permit the Russians to see the Japanese, and

the gallant attack was repulsed with grievous loss. Many of the Japanese infantry fell into the pits and were impaled upon the stakes, but the cries of the men who had thus suffered only increased the savage ardour of the survivors. Others were caught on the barbed wire and swept into

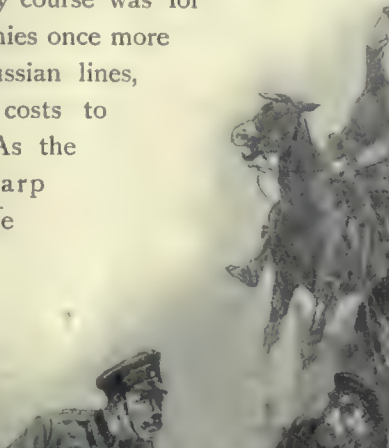


[Ruddiman Johnston photo.
RUSSIAN GUNS CAPTURED AT LIAOYANG.


eternity by the storm of bullets. Of the regiment barely half came back unwounded, and the sole gain achieved was an advance of a few hundred yards closer to the Russian lines.

With daylight of the 3rd the artillery bombardment of the Russian positions was resumed. No one in

Kuroki's Moves. the Japanese army knew what the day would bring forth, but one thing was certain—General Kuroki's flank movement to cut the Russian communications had failed, and the men of the 1st army were themselves hard pressed. The only course was for the 2nd and 4th armies once more to attack the Russian lines, and strive at all costs to achieve success. As the day advanced sharp fighting began to the west of the railway, where the 6th Division slowly gained some

An illustration depicting a battle scene. In the upper right, a soldier on a dark horse is shown in profile, facing left. Below him, another soldier on a horse is visible. In the lower left, a soldier in a military uniform with a peaked cap is shown from the chest up, looking towards the right. The background is a light, hazy grey, suggesting a battlefield environment.

ground, pressing the Russians back. Fearing for his flank, General Kuropatkin must have detached strong reinforcements to that quarter of the field.



FRANK JELLEN

DRAGGING A RUSSIAN GUN THROUGH THE MUD WITH THE AID OF INFANTRY AFTER THE BATTLE OF LIAOYANG.

The Japanese guns were now pushing in closer than ever, in a supreme effort to beat down the Russian fire. But about 10.15 a.m. a Russian force of some 10,000 men began to march southwards from the neighbourhood of the railway-station, with the evident object of assailing the Japanese in flank. The Russians moved in dense formation, and, as on the preceding day, were swiftly brought to a complete standstill. The Japanese artillery turned its shells upon them; the Japanese rifles roared as sheets of lead were poured upon the serried array. The Russian officers on horseback were caught by the blast and swept away; the men recoiled in confusion, and the whole division streamed back in complete rout towards Liaoyang.



MONUMENT ERECTED
BY THE WORKMEN
OF THE TOKIO
ARSENAL IN THE
AVENUE LEADING
TO SHOKONSHA
SHRINE.

It represents a shell. The
base is covered with foliage.
The Chinese ideographs,
which can be illuminated,
mean "contribution."

In the centre the Russians were still aggressive, and directed a heavy fire upon the 5th Division in its dangerous position close to the river Taitze. This division was in such imminent danger of being crushed that its withdrawal at each moment seemed imperative. One thing was certain, it must either advance or retreat. Ammunition was failing, and to linger behind indifferent trenches under the fire of some 60 long-range Russian guns was to court destruction. General Yamaguchi, its commander, made his choice. He ordered a fresh assault on the Russian lines in his front, but though the men rushed gallantly upon the Russian works they encountered such a fire

that they were repulsed, after closing to within a few yards of the enemy. The 20th Brigade of the 10th Division, which was near at hand, and in much the same predicament, was, however, more fortunate, owing to the extraordinary daring displayed by the 20th Regiment. That regiment had already lost all its officers above the rank



AVENUE LEADING TO THE SHOKONSHA SHRINE.



[Facsimile of Sketch by Melton Prior.]

JAPANESE STORMING THE RUSSIAN POSITION IN FRONT OF ANSHANTIEN.

of major. It charged a Russian redoubt, and was received with a murderous fire; its foremost line wavered, when the reserves swept it forward, and, led by Captain Egami, who assumed the command, all his senior officers having now been killed or wounded, it penetrated the Russian works, and about nightfall scored the one substantial success of the day. Its losses were fearful. All the officers or one battalion were left on the field, and a private took the command of a company. One company was

reduced from 200 to 15 men. In all 1,300 men were killed or wounded out of 3,000 who had marched into battle.

Dense clouds of smoke from the burning stores in Liaoyang, where the fires were perceptibly

gaining ground, shrouded the scene at the approach of night. Once more the Japanese guns opened an accelerated fire, to prepare a general assault; 250 weapons thundered incessantly against the western end of the defences at Liaoyang, many of them firing five shots a minute. "The civilised world had never seen anything to compare with the final preparation for the advance of the Japanese infantry," wrote the



RUSSIANS MAKING THE ROAD TO LIAOTISHAN, TO THE WEST OF PORT ARTHUR.



JAPANESE HOWITZER BATTERY BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

"Times" correspondent with General Oku's army. "The massed and scattered batteries took the line of Russian resistance in sections. The 250 guns opened first on the Russian settlement. Great columns of dust and smoke rose up from amidst the grey stone buildings. Then suddenly out of this whirlwind of bursting shell shot up great tongues of lurid flame. . . . The Japanese gunners redoubled the service of their pieces. The very rocks of Shushan quivered with the blasts of ever-recurrent discharges. The air shrieked with the rush of high-velocity projectiles." It was the culminating day of the week of battles.

Hand-to-Hand Fighting.

Under this storm of steel and lead the resistance of the Russian guns was pulverised. The Russian batteries were annihilated. Twilight fell, and with it came a sudden cessation of the cannonade. All who saw and heard knew what this meant.

In a ten-mile-long line the Japanese infantry once more advanced to carry the trenches at the point of



RUSSIAN GUN CAPTURED AT PORT ARTHUR BY THE JAPANESE.

the bayonet. On the left the men of Kumamoto, of the 6th Division, raced out towards the railway-station. They were met with a fierce rifle-fire, which told that under all the trial of the bombardment the Russian infantry had held its ground. But the Japanese were not to be denied. They fought their way into the Russian

trenches, where a prolonged and bloody *méleë* took place—bayonet to bayonet, muzzle to muzzle—with incredible losses to either side. Each army flung in reinforcements, but about midnight the Japanese prevailed. The place was a shambles, but it was captured.

Less fortunate were the 4th and 3rd Divisions, which had to assault the work known as Little Port Arthur. The position was impregnable, if it were held, and the assault speedily showed that it was held. Upon its deep ditches all the bravery that carried the Japanese over the staked pits and through the wire fencing was wasted and in vain. The troops, notwithstanding an appalling machine-gun fire, fought their way into the ditch, and were there mowed down by the Russians in the *caponnieres*; into the fort proper they could not penetrate. But to the right other portions of the 3rd Division, supported by a brigade of the 5th, carried the outlying trenches connected with this work, and captured them one by one. It was about 1 a.m. of the 4th before the trenches were taken. When they were in the hands of the Japanese Little Port Arthur had lost its value.

Ten minutes later, soon after 1 a.m., there were signs of a general Russian retreat from the Liaoyang



JAPANESE OUTPOST NEAR ONE OF THE FORTS AT PORT ARTHUR.

works. The Japanese once more burst forward, and this time swept into the whole line of trenches as the Russian rearguard, which had so long held off Generals Oku and Nodzu, marched off through the Chinese city and hurried north of the Taitze, burning all the bridges as it passed. The city seemed to be in flames; the uproar and confusion were unspeakable. But on the part of the Russian troops there was no panic and little sign of demoralisation. It was not till the last regiments and sotnias had defiled through the north gate that stragglers and deserters came forth and the looting of Liaoyang began in real earnest.

General Nodzu's troops were the first to set foot within Liaoyang. About 11 p.m. of the 3rd the 10th Division had closed up to the city walls, and finally, with the help of the 5th Division, succeeded in capturing the south gate, but could not advance further, as the Russians disputed each inch of the ground. But when the enemy's rearguard was withdrawn the 5th Division instantly discovered that its opportunity



[From stereograph taken by James Ricalton. Copyright, 1905, by Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
JAPANESE INFANTRY IN LINE OF FORMATION BEHIND THE FIRING LINE.

had come. It followed on the heels of the Russians, pressing them through the town to the bridges over the river, which were at once destroyed by the Russians, and about 3 a.m. it was at last in complete possession of the place. Little quarter was given in the street-fighting which preceded the capture. The blood of Marshal Oyama's men was up, and they shot all the looters whom they saw. But there was no indiscriminate massacre, as has been alleged by calumniators of the Japanese, and the unfortunate wounding of a British missionary who

**Nodzu Enters
Liaoyang.**



ENTRANCE TO JAPANESE DUGOUT NEAR PORT ARTHUR. [R. Johnston photo.]

gallantly remained in the city was almost the only untoward incident. The Japanese discipline was too strong and too vigorously enforced for the troops to give way to disorder, and never has a victorious army shown greater self-restraint in a town captured by assault after fearful losses. What damage was done was done by Russian stragglers, who behaved infamously. For their misdeeds, however, the Russian army cannot fairly be held accountable. Only the worst characters in an army desert the colours at such a moment; so long as the Russian military police exercised control in Liaoyang there was little looting or disorder.

To the north of Liaoyang, in the neighbourhood of Yentai, fighting continued all the 4th and 5th between General Kuroki's army and the Russian



JAPANESE AERONAUTS AT PORT ARTHUR.

The great searchlights mark the position of the Liaotishan forts. The narrow extremity of the same peninsula is the Tiger's Tail. Opposite to it, across the fairway, where sunken ships are lying, are Golden Hill and Electric Hill. The foreshore on the nearer side of the East Basin is the Bund, upon which the first Japanese shell fell, wrecking the Russian Imperial Bank.



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

JAPANESE CAMP ON THE WAY TO PORT ARTHUR.

500 killed and wounded, by the admission of General Kuropatkin. The Japanese troops then pushed forward to Lannipu. Simultaneously the 12th Division captured the important heights of Yumenshan, from which its guns were able to fire with effect upon the Russians retiring along the railway. The Russians at once retreated, offering only a slight resistance to the Japanese advance. On the 7th General Kuropatkin was able to report to the Czar the arrival of his main army, practically intact, with all its guns, except a few which had been disabled in the battle of Liaoyang, at Mukden. A Russian cavalry screen was left holding the country from Changtan on the Hunho to the Shaho and Shili rivers.

Deeply impressed by his defeat, General Kuropatkin was at first of opinion that it would be necessary to fall back without delay on Tiehling, evacuating Mukden without

offering battle there. All the preparations for such a retreat were made; but when it was seen that the Japanese did not advance in force, the Russian commander-in-chief regained heart, and began to wonder if, after all, he had not inflicted such losses upon the Japanese that, as was asserted by optimists in the Russian army, they were unable to do more fighting.

Meanwhile the Japanese at Liaoyang were busy reorganising their army and bringing up food and ammunition. An immediate advance was out of the question, owing to the enormous consumption of ammunition in the battle.

rearguard covering the retreat. The advance of the 12th Division to the neighbourhood of Yumenshan has already been mentioned; it menaced the retreat of the Russian rearguard, which was still on the night of the 4th holding a line from Lilienkou to Taliengkou, in front of the Japanese 2nd Division. Here a fierce combat opened late on the 4th, and continued far into the night; but in the small hours of the morning of the 5th the Japanese stormed the Russian position, inflicting on the 1st Siberian Army Corps opposed to them a loss of at least



JAPANESE WITH RUSSIAN GUNS CAPTURED NEAR PORT ARTHUR.





AN INSPECTION OF FORT ITZESHAN AT PORT ARTHUR.

while the destruction of rifles in the hand-to-hand fighting was another very serious matter which the General Staff had to face. It was the want of ammunition and small arms, and the exhaustion of the troops after their prolonged efforts, that prevented the Japanese from following up their success. But in addition to these facts they were aware that Mukden would be difficult to hold without Tiehling, and it was certain that the Japanese armies could not advance as far north as Tiehling before the severe weather came. It was therefore decided only to move as far north as the Shaho, and no attempt was made to reach Mukden. The capture of that city was reluctantly postponed to the following campaign.



JAPANESE SIEGE-GUN AT PORT ARTHUR. [Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

The loss of the Japanese in the battle was officially returned at 17,539 killed and wounded; but this was probably an understatement, as observers with the Japanese army placed its casualties at nearly 30,000. According to the official report the loss was thus distributed:

1st Army (Kuroki)	4,866
4th Army (Nodzu)	4,992
2nd Army (Oku)	7,681

Total 17,539

The official figures can be reconciled with the estimates of correspondents with the Japanese army if we suppose that they



TOWARDS PORT ARTHUR—AFTER AN ASSAULT—LOOKING FOR THE WOUNDED AT NIGHT.



HOW THE RUSSIAN SEARCHLIGHTS BLINDED THE JAPANESE.

and 3, so that this battle was extraordinary in its duration. Up to the date of Liaoyang no modern battle had lasted more than three days, and only one, the colossal encounter at Leipzig, so long. Yet though by its duration Liaoyang dwarfed all previous battles, the loss in it was less than in the terrible one-day battle of Borodino, or than in the three days' battle of Leipzig.

Each side had hoped for a decisive victory, and each side had been disappointed, though the Japanese must have known from the hour

Results of the Battle.

when the great assault at Port Arthur failed that complete victory was beyond their grasp. As it was, they succeeded in forcing the Russian army out of the town, but nothing more. No large captures of guns or stores were made. The Russians removed their artillery, but were compelled to burn commissariat stores for a fortnight. One hundred and thirty ammunition-waggon were left behind for want of teams, and a moderate quantity of rifle and gun ammunition, with a large number of entrenching tools, fell into the hands of the Japanese; but this was all the spoil. There were no prisoners and no real trophies to show for this the greatest battle that had been

do not include slightly wounded men. The officers killed (included in the above figures) numbered 136, and wounded 464. On the Russian side General Kuropatkin reported his loss at 17,000, of whom 4,000 were killed. In the opinion of correspondents with his army this was also an underestimate. It is probably not far from the truth to put the number of killed and wounded on both sides at Liaoyang at from 40,000 to 50,000, the Japanese losses being slightly greater on account of the fact that the Japanese troops during most of the battle were attacking entrenched positions.

The battle lasted from August 25 to the morning of September 4, though if the fighting which occurred in the attempts of General Kuroki's army to cut off the Russian retreat be included, it lasted till the 6th. Thus for the best part of a fortnight the two armies were locked in deadly embrace, and, though there were lulls in the intensity of the conflict, on every day of the long period some part of the Japanese army was engaged. The fiercest fighting was prolonged through August 30 and 31, and September 1, 2,



[Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
MAJOR YAMAOKA, WHO CARRIED THE SUMMONS OF SURRENDER TO GENERAL STOESEL.

fought up to that date in the war. But if the Japanese obtained only a moderate measure of success, the Russians failed signally in attaining their object. They had not crushed General Kuroki's army, as they had intended, and they had themselves been driven out of a strongly fortified town by a numerically inferior force. This trial of arms was decisive in one sense only. It proved that,



[Stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

203 METRE HILL, AND SOME OF THE JAPANESE TRENCHES BEFORE IT.

given approximately equal numbers on either side, the Japanese would win, and as under no conceivable circumstance could Russia transport a greater number of men to Manchuria than Japan, it indicated the certainty of Russia's defeat in the war. It was not the Asiatic troops of Russia that were beaten in this battle. The men of the 17th and 10th Corps from Europe were even less successful than their Siberian comrades.



A CHINESE FARM NEAR THE JAPANESE LINES BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

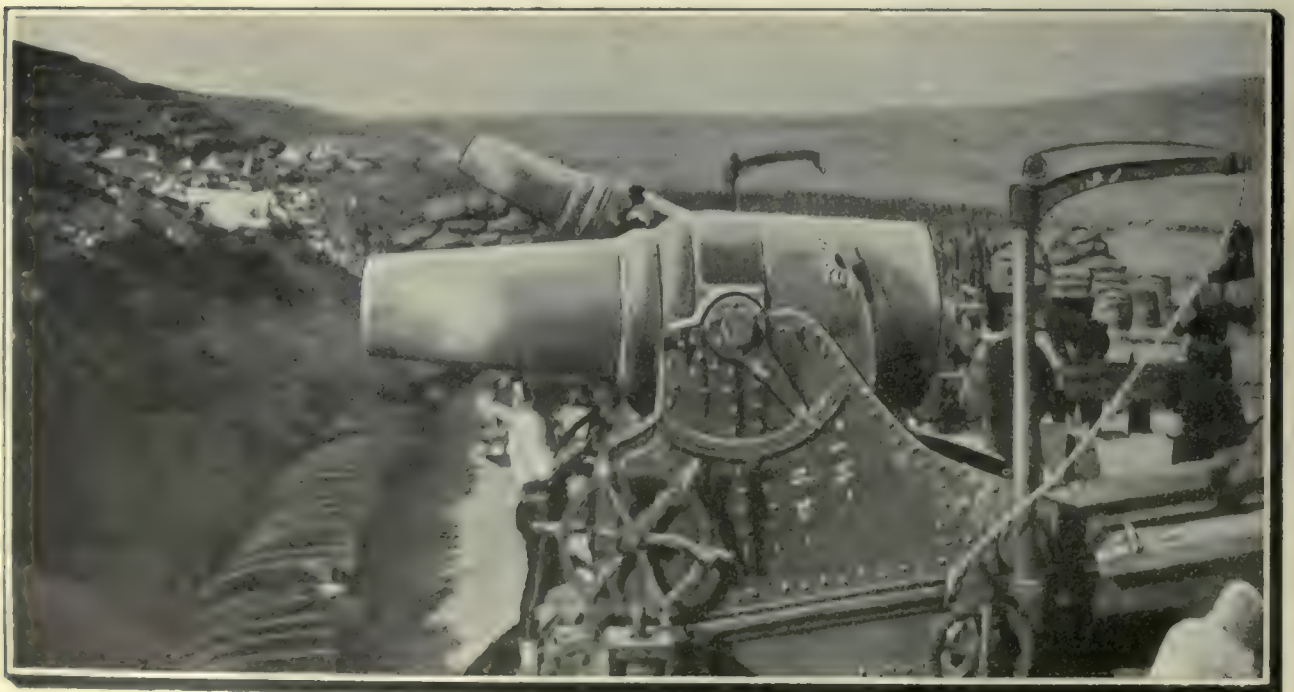
CHAPTER XLIV.

THE FIRST ASSAULT UPON PORT ARTHUR.

ON the night of August 10 the remnant of the defeated Port Arthur fleet returned to the shelter of the harbour, which it was never again to leave as a united force. Next day General Nogi, commanding the Japanese army before the fortress, received instructions to offer a safe-conduct to all the non-combatants in Port Arthur, to escort them to Dalny, and there permit them to embark for neutral ports. He was also ordered to offer the Russian commander, General Stoessel, terms of capitulation, in order to avert, if possible, the carnage of a general assault. The Russian garrison would be permitted to march out with all the honours of war and proceed north, but the ships of the fleet were to be surrendered to the Japanese. This message was not communicated to General Stoessel till August 16, and the intervening days were spent in bombarding the fortress and securing advantageous positions for the now imminent assault.

**Offer to
Non-combatants.**

For an attack upon a great fortress the Japanese army was ill-prepared. An immense quantity of

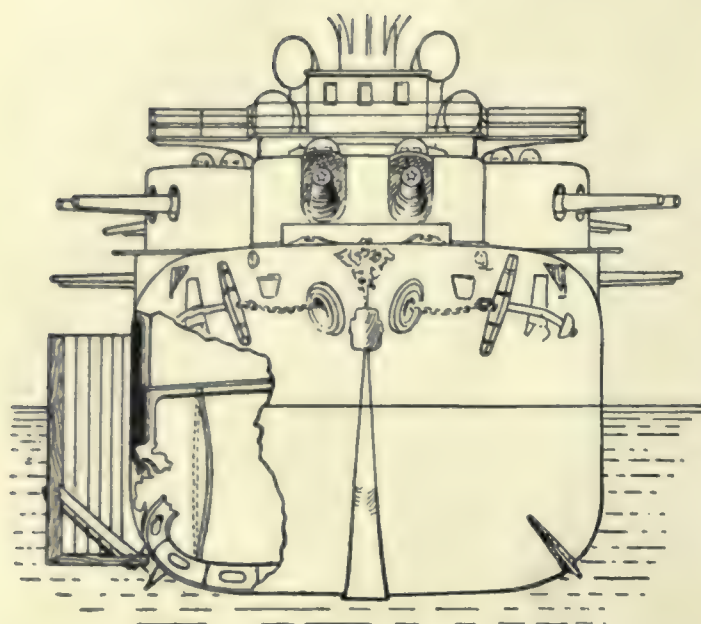


BATTERY OF JAPANESE 11-INCH GUNS.



THE MANTLET AND THE SHEARS: A JAPANESE METHOD OF DESTROYING BARBED-WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS.

The large oblong mantlet with eyeholes, which was common in the warfare of the Middle Ages, was reintroduced by the Japanese in order to give their men some protection from musketry during the hazardous operation of cutting wire entanglements. The shields were extemporised from boiler-plates, and were fitted with straps which enabled them to be carried on the breast, leaving the hands free to work the wire-clippers. A narrow slit near the top served as a sight-hole. A wide oblong notch at the base gave the operator a chance of using his hands when the shield was actually resting on the ground.

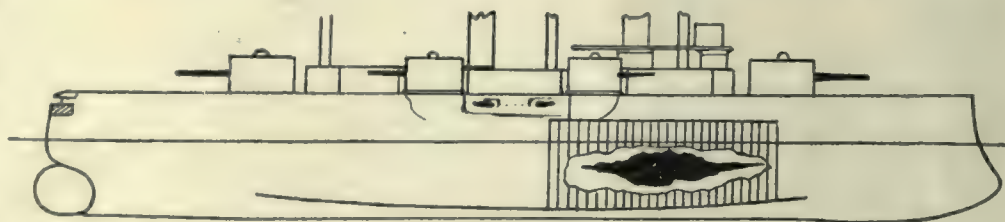


[From "The Scientific American."]

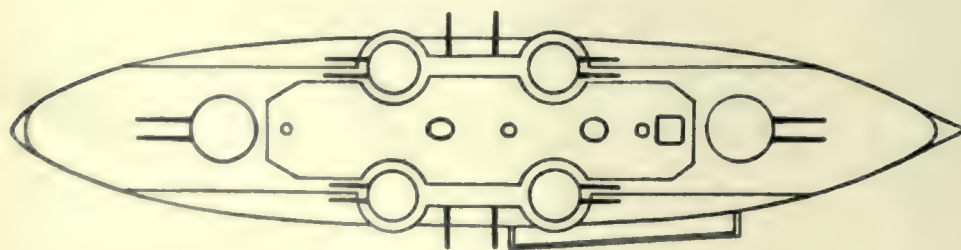
Sectional view showing the watertight caisson, 35ft. wide, 35ft. deep, 75ft. long, by which the injured "Sevastopol" and other battleships were laid clear of water while the wrecked structure was removed and new frames and plating were built in place.

Russian artillery in the forts facing landwards was not very much stronger. While the seaward forts were of enormous strength and very heavily armed, the Russians seem never to have apprehended an attack from the land side, and when Nanshan was stormed most of the works in this direction were still quite incomplete, and many of the guns for them had not arrived from Europe. The heavy guns available were 120 to 200 pieces of from 4 to 6-in.

calibre, some of them taken from the ships of the fleet; others were modern Chinese guns captured in 1900. These were supplemented, however, by a very large number of small quick-firing weapons and machine-guns, for the most part taken from the fleet, which proved of immense value in repelling the Japanese assaults. Of ammunition there was no very large supply; medical comforts were lacking, and the Red Cross service was inefficient by reason of the lack of a sufficient number of doctors and nurses. No proper hospitals had been constructed outside the town in places which would not be exposed to the shells fired by bombarding batteries. In fact, it may be said that most precautions had been neglected by the Russian authorities. But for the energy and skill of General Kondrachenko, who worked strenuously at the completion of the works and constructed miles of barbed wire fencing in the month of delay that followed Nanshan, the Japanese might well have carried the town in their first assault.



Outboard profile of "Sevastopol" showing the coffer-dam, and in black the area of hull affected by the mine explosion.



Deck plan of "Sevastopol" showing the coffer-dam.

siege-material had been lost on board the transports sunk by the Vladivostock ships in their June sortie. Included in this material were heavy guns, trenching and mining tools, ladders, and steel shields, the want of which was cruelly felt in the August assault. The weapons that General Nogi had at his disposal for the bombardment of the Port Arthur forts were small and weak. He had 50 howitzers of somewhat old-fashioned pattern and 4.7-in. and 6-in. calibre; 20 naval 4.7-in. guns, and a few 6-in. guns supplied by the same service. No heavy guns of 8, 9, or 10-in. calibre, such as were found in the Russian forts facing the sea, were available; there had been a number on board the HITACHI MARU, but they had gone to the bottom with that unfortunate ship.

But if the Japanese artillery was weak, the

There were two main series of forts and works defending Port Arthur against a land attack. The main eastern forts, 19 in number, curved in a great semi-circle round the town and dockyard,

along a lofty ridge which fronted Takushan and Shahkushan, from Golden Hill to Kuropatkin Fort. Their names will be found upon the map of Port Arthur. The strongest of the forts were Kikwan, North and South, Erhlungshan, and Sungshushan, all of which had immense ditches, 30 to 40 feet deep, in which were placed caponnières, or small covered works, so planned as to be inaccessible from the ditch and to sweep it with their fire. The forts had earth and concrete walls with bomb-proofs for the garrisons; they were connected by roads and tramways with the town of Port Arthur. To the west of Port Arthur was another series of forts, the most formidable of which were upon Metre Range and its spurs. Here there were two main forts, Antzeshan and Itzeshan, with deep ditches and unscalable walls, besides several less formidable forts on 203 Metre Hill, on Namaokayama, on 174 Metre Hill, and near Taiyangkou, while two detached works commanded Pigeon

The Forts and Works.



[From stereograph taken by James Ricalton. Copyright, 1905, by Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
LIEUTENANT-GENERAL OSHIMI, COMMANDER OF THE 9TH DIVISION OF THE 3RD ARMY, AND HIS STAFF AT HEADQUARTERS.

Bay and prevented the Japanese fleet from bombarding Port Arthur from that point, as it had done earlier in the war before these forts were built and armed. To the south-west of Port Arthur works had been constructed on the spurs of Laotishan to prevent the Japanese from seizing that lofty mountain.

For the assault upon Port Arthur General Nogi had three divisions available, besides a considerable number of reserve troops. The divisions were the 1st, stationed on the Japanese right; 9th, in the Japanese centre; and 11th, on the Japanese left. The general plan of operations pursued was for the 1st Division with the reserve troops to demonstrate against Metre Range and the forts upon it, while the 9th and 11th Divisions assailed the north-eastern forts. The Japanese siege-batteries were established in a semi-circle from Kantashan through Wolf Hill to the neighbourhood of Lungtoa. Before them opened a "scene of bewildering beauty," in the

The Japanese Plan.

words of Mr. Villiers, the well-known war correspondent with General Nogi, "seemingly the fairest and gentlest of landscapes, composed of verdant hills and golden valleys, rich with ripening corn and millet. Hamlets nestle in the folds of the yellow fields, stately willows dapple the silver streams with purple shadows; and between the gaps in the hills peeps the cobalt blue of the ocean. But for the dull grey battleships of Togo's blockading squadron, lying in grim, rigid lines on the horizon, the scene suggests peace and plenty, rather than the pinch of cruel war. . . . Behind the city, piled up



MOVING A 28-CENTIMETRE
GUN IN THE DIRECTION
OF 203 METRE HILL



JAPANESE BOMBARDING RUSSIAN SHIPS IN PORT ARTHUR HARBOUR WITH
28-CENTIMETRE GUNS.

in a confusion of grey and purple rocky peaks, stands out the mountainous promontory of Laotishan, and beyond that again the ocean."

Upon these smiling fields and picturesque mountains

The Coming Horrors. the storm of war was

about to burst in all its fury; the streamlets were to run red with blood; the hill slopes and valley bottoms to be littered with the corpses of 30,000 men; the whole atmosphere to be tainted with the odour of death; and horrors to be enacted at the mere mention of which the world shuddered. For four months and a half the tide of war was to surge incessantly around the menacing outlines of the Russian forts upon the broken sky-line of the hill crests and about that harbour of death and desolation, till in the fifth month Japan should enter



A JAPANESE FIELD BATTERY IN ACTION ON THE RUGGED HEIGHTS ENCIRCLING PORT ARTHUR.

upon her own, and her legions regain by force of arms the prize which had been wrested from her by guile.

On August 12 the Japanese siege-guns opened upon the Russian fleet, inflicting many hits upon three of the battleships in the western harbour, though not apparently doing any very serious damage. They

The Siege Begins. continued their fire on the 13th. On the 14th the 1st Division was ordered to attack and capture certain outlying Russian positions in front of Metre Range. Five redoubts had been constructed by the garrison on the crest of a ridge which runs westwards from Kantashan to the neighbourhood of 174 Metre Hill. The Japanese reached the crest of the ridge without any great difficulty and without suffering heavy loss, but on the crest they encountered the most strenuous resistance on the part of the Russians, and became the target of the shrapnel from all the Russian guns in the forts

behind the ridge. Finally they were driven back with considerable loss some distance down the northern slope, where they held on and entrenched themselves, while their artillery heavily bombarded the ridge. On the following morning, after a prolonged bombardment of the Russian works, the ridge was once more assaulted, this time with success, and the redoubts to the south of Nienpankou occupied.

This was the preliminary move to the general assault, for which all was now ready. On the 16th Major Yamaoka was sent into the Russian lines with the Japanese proposals for the surrender of the place, an answer to which was demanded by the following morning. General Stoessel's reply was to bid the Japanese to do



[Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
JAPANESE 3RD ARMY IN THE VALLEY NORTH OF LUCHUPO, FOUR MILES NORTH
OF PORT ARTHUR.

their worst, and to inform them that he had not the slightest intention of surrendering. Not only this, but he declined to send out the non-combatants, for reasons best known to himself. General Nogi therefore gave the necessary orders for a general assault upon the 19th.

The task he had undertaken was one of stupendous magnitude, and he himself was well aware of the innumerable difficulties which would confront his troops. It is said, indeed, and with every probability of truth, that he protested against a premature assault, and that he

Nogi's Task. received the command to take the place at all cost from Tokio. At the Japanese headquarters the strength of Port Arthur seems to have been greatly undervalued. It was remembered that in 1894, as the result of a single day of fighting, General Nogi had stormed Port Arthur with the most moderate loss; but the great difference between the fighting quality of the Russian and the Chinaman was,



GENERAL ICHINOHE.
A Hero of Port Arthur.

desire at Tokio. And the Russian fleet must be destroyed at all cost before the Baltic fleet reached the Far East. To gain that end Japan was willing to sacrifice 20,000 men.

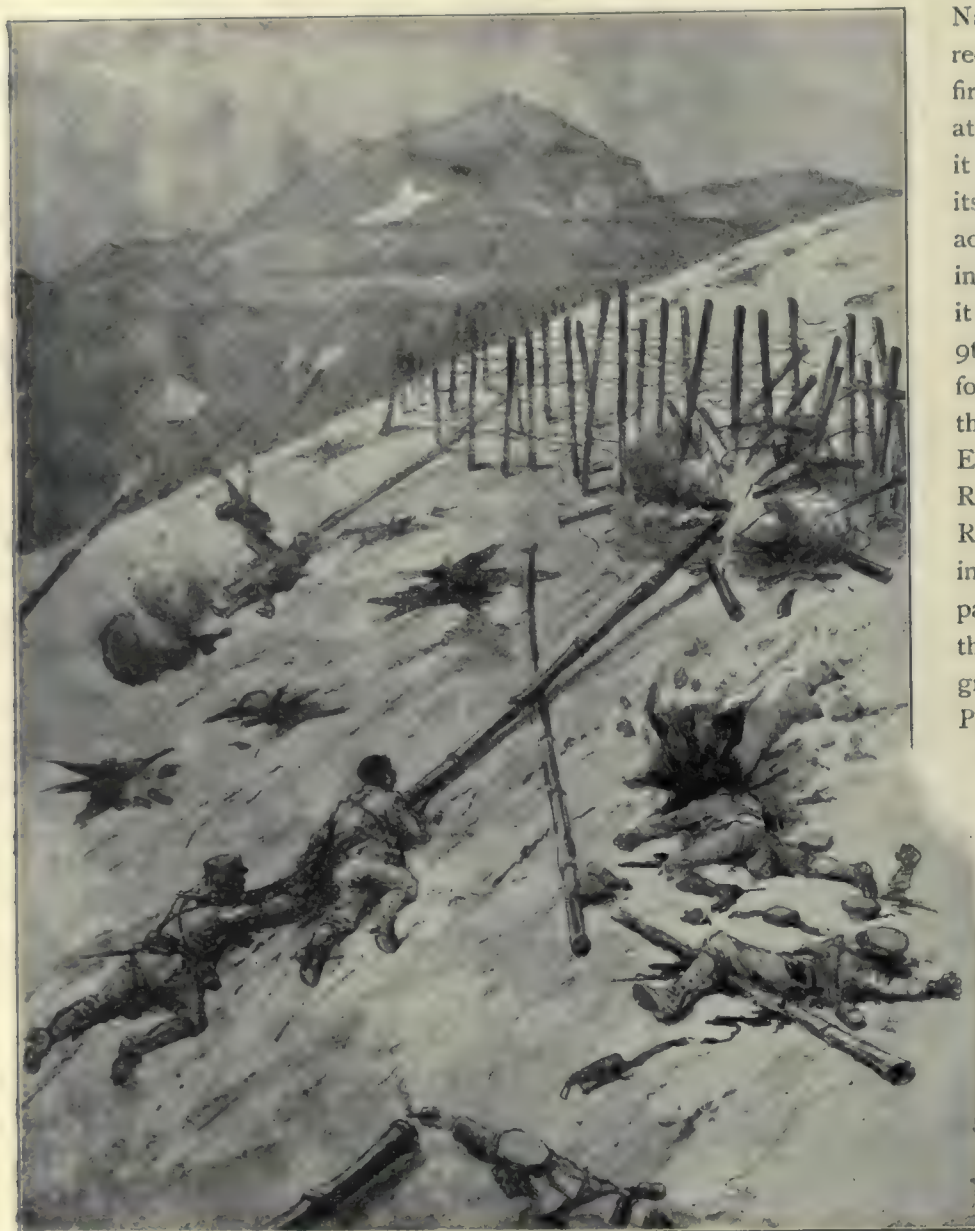
Early in the morning of the 19th the Japanese guns opened upon 174 Metre Hill

August 19. and the forts from Erhlung to Kikwan. The roads leading to the front from the Japanese headquarters, which were at Shwan-taikou, some miles to the rear, were covered with carts carrying up stores and ammunition to the batteries, which thundered incessantly, while all the Chinese villages behind Fenghwangshan and Wolf Hills were crowded with Japanese reserves. After a short bombardment the 1st Division advanced to the attack of 174 Metre Hill, and carried it at the point of the bayonet, following up its success by pushing southwards, so as to gain a lodgment on

not taken into account. Moreover, in 1895 the works were fewer and less formidable than they were in 1904, and there was then no powerful fleet within the harbour to aid the garrison with its fire. The attack upon a great fortress held by European troops, without preliminary siege-works, without the preparation of a prolonged bombardment, and covered by a weak and insufficient artillery, was an unprecedented piece of audacity, for which Japan paid a bitter price in the blood of her gallant sons. Yet so high did the fighting reputation of the Japanese troops stand, that the feat did not seem altogether impossible even to European critics. The works at Nanshan were almost as formidable as those at Port Arthur, and they had been carried in the teeth of the same force which would now confront General Nogi, while the importance of obtaining speedy success could not be overestimated. To set General Nogi's army free for the great battle in the north was the overmastering



RUSSIAN OFFICERS' CONVIVIALITY INTERRUPTED AT PORT ARTHUR.



AN INGENIOUS JAPANESE DEVICE FOR DESTROYING THE DEADLY RUSSIAN WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

Mr. Villiers, the artist, writes: "Before the assault on Banduzan (or the Eternal Dragon Hill), which I witnessed, the Japanese officers were much puzzled how to destroy the wire entanglements, which were understood to be highly charged with electricity. At length they hit upon the idea of placing a charge of gun-cotton at the end of a stout bamboo, 20 feet long, with a fuse running down the centre. Two soldiers then pushed the bamboo up to the entanglement, placed the charge against the supports, and fired the fuse from their end. The men suffered terribly from shell-fire from the opposite fort before the 11th Division attacked it. After many lives had been lost in the attempt to destroy the entanglement, it was discovered that the wires were only weakly charged with electricity, and accordingly they were cut with shears fitted with non-conducting handles."

caused was insignificant, though to observers at a distance it seemed as though nothing could live under such a cannonade, and that the Russian weapons must have been silenced. As the sun set the Japanese brigades deployed for the main assault; in the ruddy light the men stood to arms with set faces, waiting for the order to advance, and watching the smoke and stones flying up from the Russian forts under the shell-fire of the siege-guns. The night was intensely dark; in the obscurity the pioneers of the 9th and 11th Divisions crawled forward with explosive charges on the end of long bamboo poles, and set to work to destroy the entanglements in front of Kikwan and Panlung Forts. These were of a deadly type, with wires charged with high-tension

Namaokayama. Here it was received with a tremendous fire, and two furious counter-attacks were delivered upon it by the Russians. It held its ground, but could not advance further, and was left in a critical position. While it was fighting for its life the 9th and 11th Divisions moved forward into the trenches in the deep valley between the Erhlung and Takushan Ranges, so as to compel the Russians to man their works in this direction. So the 19th passed, and towards evening the 1st Division gained some ground in the direction of Pigeon Bay.

On the 20th the bombardment was resumed

with even greater fury, and

an enormous number of Japanese shells were fired in the forts. The two Panlung Forts were pounded out of shape, but the Russian guns remained ominously silent. As a matter of fact, the damage actually



MAJOR YAMAOKA,

Who was sent to demand the surrender of Port Arthur.



JAPANESE THROWING BOMBS INTO THE RUSSIAN TRENCHES BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.



RUSSIAN SIEGE-GUN SMASHED BY SHELL-FIRE.

electric current in front, and with behind them a dense net-work of barbed wire. But the Russians detected the approach of the pioneers, and discharged star-shells, which lighted up the scene and located the advancing parties. They were then brought under the sweep of the searchlights mounted in the forts, and made the target of a terrific rifle and machine-gun fire. They were killed almost to a man without being able to achieve success; the entanglements still remained, preventing approach to the forts. On



GUN CAPTURED AT PORT ARTHUR BY THE JAPANESE.

the Japanese right the 1st Division made some progress in the direction of Metre Range without suffering very heavily.

In the destruction of the entanglements many devices

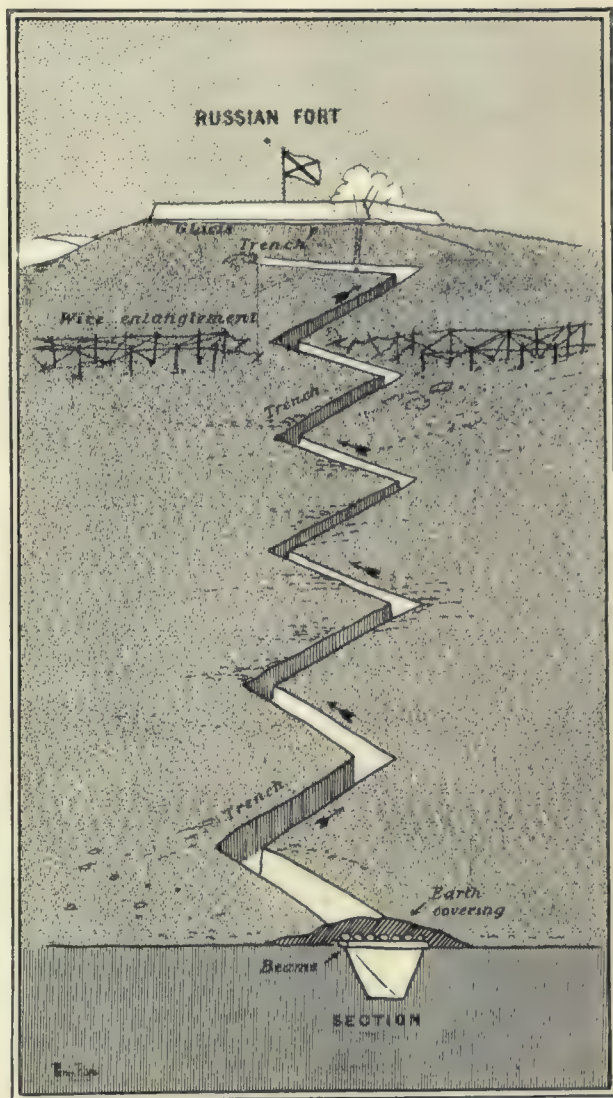
were tried
Destroying the by the
Entanglements. Japanese.

A large number of wire-cutters had been taken into the field by the army, but on trial in the preliminary fighting these proved too weak for the work, and would not cut through the wire. Then the Japanese tried cutting through the

poles which carried the wire with saws and axes, but this process was so slow that the men engaged in it were almost invariably killed before they had achieved success. The next expedient was to fasten hooked-ropes to the wire, and then to haul at the ropes in the nearest trench, which was effective till the Russians observed it, when they took steps to brace the wire and the poles carrying it. Finally the Japanese used long bamboo poles, at the tops of which charges of powder or guncotton were fixed, and then, crawling forward, they placed these poles against the wire, exploded the charges, and so destroyed the wire entanglements piecemeal. Later in the siege steel shields which one man could carry arrived, and these were brought into play for cutting the wire. A man would advance carrying a shield, but it was found that, though the bullets did not perforate it, they dealt blows like those of a sledge-hammer, and rendered progress very slow and precarious.

As the Japanese troops formed up for the assault upon the Panlung Forts, General Nogi rode along their line and delivered to them

Nogi's Address. this brief address, instinct with the fighting spirit of Japan: "Soldiers, the task that you are about to undertake is of exceeding importance. On the issue of this assault I may truly say that the safety of Japan and the honour of our army depend. Bear this constantly in mind; overcome all difficulties, and in your persons pay the debt which every true soldier owes to his country.



METHOD EMPLOYED BY THE JAPANESE TO ATTACK THE RUSSIAN FORTS.

Owing to the converging fire which neighbouring forts were able to send upon the advancing troops, the Japanese army had to resort to the practice of sapping and mining, which for some years past had been scarcely used at all in modern warfare. The view shows in diagrammatic form the zigzag angular trenches which have been cut towards the glacis or slope which surrounds the fort. Sometimes the trench is protected by an earth covering.

The enemy will fight to the last. If your commanding officers fall, let their juniors replace them. If these all fall, let the non-commissioned officers be their substitutes. If the non-commissioned officers fall, then let privates take their place. Whatever resistance or obstacles you may encounter, fight to the very last breath which is in your bodies." How gloriously the Japanese army obeyed this exhortation is to be seen in the thrilling story of the assault.

Early in the morning of the 21st, before the dawn was in the sky, the columns of the 9th Division advanced to the assault of the two Panlung Forts. All the Russian works on the east front at once opened a terrific fire, sweeping

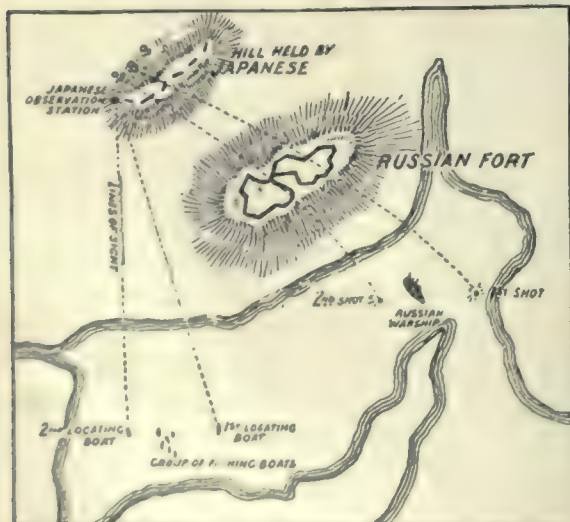


RUSSIAN WAGGONS DESTROYED ON THE RAILWAY.

the steep slopes which led from the deep valley below

up to the
A Terrible Advance. forts, and

which were bare of trees and cover. Star-shells lighted up the darkness, and showed line on line of khaki-clad Japanese stealing forward like ants through the maize at the bottom of the valley, which was torn incessantly by the Russian shrapnel-bullets. From the maize-fields the Japanese moved out into the open, and began the ascent as day was breaking. On the steep slope they found some shelter in the ravines and in the pits excavated by the shells of the siege-guns. But through each foot of their painful progress they were followed by the fire of the Russian artillery and machine-guns; the stream of bullets from the maxims played about them as hoses play about an advancing flame. The lines of their movement were marked out in the faint grey light by



PERILS OF RED CROSS WORK BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

Mr. Villiers, the artist, says: "One night I noticed a mysterious movement amongst the wounded and dead on the glacis. I found afterwards that as it was impossible to move the injured during the day, and very difficult during the night, the Red Cross workers had to crawl up the slope and feign death whenever the searchlight was upon them. After it had passed on, the wounded were taken by the legs and gently dragged or pushed down the slope to the Japanese trenches, where first aid was administered to the sufferers."

little heaps of dead and wounded, but many of them worked their way to a point just below the entanglements, about which lay thick the bodies of the dead pioneers.

JAPANESE FIRING AT RUSSIAN FLEET.

Before the capture of 203 Metre Hill the Japanese could not see the Russian fleet in Port Arthur, which lay behind lofty hills. Chinese spies went fishing at a spot where they could see the fall of Japanese shells and signal the result to a distant Japanese observation station. If a shot fell to the right of the ship one boat would move to the right, if to the left another boat would move to the left. The Russians discovering this forbade all fishing at Port Arthur.

Fresh parties of volunteers set to work upon the entanglements. They crept forward with the long poles, pushed them against the mass of barbed wire, and



A RUSSIAN SOLDIER SUCCOURING A JAPANESE OFFICER BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

Mr. Villiers, the artist, writes: "During the attack on the Cockscomb Forts, at which I was present, on August 22 and 23, the Japanese had to retire from an untenable trench to a lower one. A captain was shot in the head, and, falling from the glacis back into the trench, lay unconscious the whole night. In the morning he regained his senses, and, lying in great pain, unable to move, he noticed a Russian soldier enter the earthwork and closely examine the dead. Fearing foul play, the officer succeeded in drawing his revolver, and waited events. The soldier, he discovered, was unarmed and was bleeding freely, for his left ear had been severed. Presently, with a reassuring smile he approached the officer, examined his wounds, took him in his arms, and carried him to the trench, where both were joyfully welcomed."

then, if the bullets spared them, exploded the charges at the end of the poles. Again and again they were shot down just as they neared the cruel fence; but as one man perished another made his way to the pole, and gradually an opening was cleared in the entanglement; behind the pioneers a body of men collecting in the shelter of a ravine, which was slightly less exposed than the rest of the face of the hill to the Russian projectiles. Suddenly the regimental flag of the assaulting battalion was seen, and then the flashing of an officer's sword. Colonel Ouchi, in command of the assaulting force, had asked

for reinforcements, but being told that there were none to send, and that at all cost he must take the fort, had given the signal to advance.

The Japanese infantry followed their colonel to death. As they broke from cover the hail of machine-gun bullets spread a thin veil of dust over the face of the hill, and men fell right and left. Ouchi went down, waving his sword to the last; Captain Takabata, who had seized the battalion flag, went down with 20 bullet wounds; others snatched the flag from his dying hands and ran resolutely forward. They passed the wire entanglement, and just above it the flag vanished. Next spectators afar off gazing upon the tremendous scene saw a few handfuls of men force their way into the advanced Russian trench under East Panlung, and then progress towards the moat surrounding the fort. But so few were there that their plight seemed hopeless.



Stereograph, copyright, 1904. Underwood & Underwood, N.Y.
JAPANESE BALLOON MAKING A RECONNAISSANCE FOR GENERAL NOGI, THREE
MILES NORTH OF PORT ARTHUR.

To support them was imperative. General Ichinobe, commanding the 6th Brigade, at once moved a fresh regiment forward to the fight, while one battalion of the 18th Brigade worked southwards towards the Panlung Forts. These fresh detachments passed undaunted through the zone of shrapnel-fire and entered that of machine-gun bullets. With terrific losses they began the ascent, and slowly as they advanced the lines of living men melted away. Like ants they came on; like insects crushed beneath the foot of Fate they were massacred by the merciless hail of bullets, and only a few small handfuls reached



THE DEFENCE OF 203 METRE HILL. THE SIBERIAN RESERVE TAKING UP POSITIONS WITH THE 6-IN. GUNS

the crest or neared the fort, where they took shelter in the shell-holes. The sun was now high in the sky; the heat intense; the whole slope shimmered with dancing heat-mist; water had failed the assaulting force, yet still the men crawled forward, heeding not the awful scenes of that stricken field—the dis-

membered bodies of the dead or the moans of the wounded who still lived to suffer torture.

While this great attack was in progress against the Panlung Forts the 11th Division had advanced against North Kikwan, with similar success and with as dreadful loss. By daybreak of the 21st its assaulting column had reached an advanced work in front of Kikwan, and distant about 200 yards from the North Fort. But here it could not hold its ground. It entered the advanced work indeed, but found itself the target of a murderous fire from

Advance Against Kikwan.

the machine-guns in the North and South Kikwan Forts, which swept its files away and inflicted such heavy losses that about 9 a.m. the remnants of the forlorn hope were compelled to retire. The retreat was effected under a fearful fire, and added to the already ghastly tale of losses. All the Russian guns were firing incessantly at the slopes under the forts, sweeping them with a curtain of shrapnel, and to pass across these slopes meant almost certain mutilation or death. It was decided to wait till nightfall, and then once more reinforce and assault, concentrating the attack upon the Panlung Forts. On these two the Japanese guns fired incessantly, and as the Russians were lining the trenches inflicted heavy loss upon the defenders.

Anticipating a night attack the Russians made their preparations. The searchlights in Erhlung Fort were got ready, fresh machine-guns were brought up, and reinforcements poured into Erhlung, Panlung, and

Kikwan Forts. Meantime, to the west of Port Arthur, the 1st Division was advancing, working always

Advance of 1st Division.

to the south-east, so as to get round Metre Range, the guns on which thundered incessantly. It fought its way with heavy loss to the neighbourhood of Tapingkou, and captured some of the outlying works to the south of 203 Metre Hill. The main object of its advance would seem to have been the wish to prevent the Russians from concentrating all their force to repel the attack on the eastern forts.

With darkness the Japanese troops under Panlung East made a furious attempt to fight their way into the fort. The Russian work glowed with rifle-fire; the searchlights from Erhlung played on the glacis, on the slope of the hill, and on the valley below, lighting up the



[Rusdman Johnston photo.]

JAPANESE HEADQUARTERS NEAR PORT ARTHUR DECORATED TO CELEBRATE A VICTORY.



CAPTURED 23-CENTIMETRE GUN AT ANTZESHAN, PORT ARTHUR.

scene as though it had been day, with this advantage, that the Japanese were dazzled and confused, while the Russian infantry and gunners could see clearly how to aim. The valley became in literal truth the Valley of the Shadow of Death. But through the glare the Japanese went forward with determination unshaken, and small groups of men succeeded in reaching the slope immediately under Panlung Forts. High in the air burst the star-shells, adding to the weirdness of the scene. "The deep purple of the mountain against the nocturnal blue, the pale lemon of the moon, the warm incandescent glow of the star-bombs, the whitish rays of the searchlights, the reddish spurts from the cannons' mouths, and the yellow flash from exploding shells, make this scene the most weird and unique I have looked on during all the many wars I have witnessed," writes Mr. Villiers. Above all the tumult of rifle, of machine-gun, and of heavier artillery, from time to time a few faint "Banzais!" could be heard from the Japanese who had gained the ditch under the East Fort.

The searchlights were terrible enemies of the Japanese. "They utterly blinded and confused the



RUSSIAN PRISONERS CAPTURED AT TELISSE LANDING AT MITSUYAHAMA

assailants," writes Mr. Norregaard, the "Daily Mail" correspondent with General Nogi's army. "At one moment the powerful light was glaring full in their faces; at the next it was suddenly turned off, leaving them in complete and baffling darkness. They could see nothing, and had only the crack of their enemies' rifles to guide them in their fire. The light blinded them, while when they were exposed to its rays the Russian bullets fell fast and furious. They had no means of retaliating against their enemies, who were hidden by a screen of light, so they had to take cover during the whole time of their advance in declivities of the soil, or behind small mounds or hillocks, where the implacable rays could not reach them. It was remorseless, and though we ourselves stood far away on a hill, it blinded us if we looked at it, like sunshine, and made every stone, every straw, every feature of our faces, stand out as clearly as in broad daylight—at a distance of over six miles!"

A Japanese machine-gun attempted to co-operate with the infantry, after hundreds of them had been



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

JAPANESE TUNNELLING TO UNDERMINE A FORT
AT PORT ARTHUR.

mown down under the searchlights, to cover the retreat of the remnant. A star-shell gave its whereabouts, when a searchlight turned its monstrous and terrible eye upon the gun; a Russian pom-pom was laid upon the crew, and began its heavy rhythmic beating, like some infernal drum sounding the devil's tattoo. The machine-gun was dismounted at once, and all its crew killed. As for the troops, they were completely bewildered. They could see and do nothing, lost all sense of direction, and could only beat a hasty retreat from the rays of the searchlights.

The night assault was repulsed and the day of the 22nd dawned, showing the slope of Panlungshan

covered with Japanese dead. It was thought that no one had been left alive on that forbidding eminence, when suddenly signs of confusion were observed in the eastern Russian work, and a loud explosion was heard. The remnant of the regiment, so gallantly led by Colonel Ouchi in the attack of the day before, had gathered in the ditch under the fort, some 50 men in all. Here, in water four or five deep, just under the walls of the fort, they watched and waited all the 21st and all the night of the 21st-22nd, standing up to their shoulders in the water, searching the dead for biscuit and for rice, and drinking the bloody water of the ditch. For them there was no hope of retreat. To recross the slope up which they had advanced under the Russian fire meant certain

death. To remain where they were meant starvation. There was one hope of safety, and only one—to go forward and attack the fort. Yet for a party of 50 men to fall upon a huge entrenched work, mounting modern artillery and numerous machine-guns, and garrisoned by a strong force of well-armed men, seemed a hopeless undertaking. The proposal was made by Captain Sugiyama to Captain Kabayama, the two senior officers who remained with the little band, and it was adopted. The 50 men set to work to plan a feat of arms that was to astonish the world.

A quantity of explosives, carried for the purpose of destroying the Russian entanglements and obstructions, was collected from the bodies

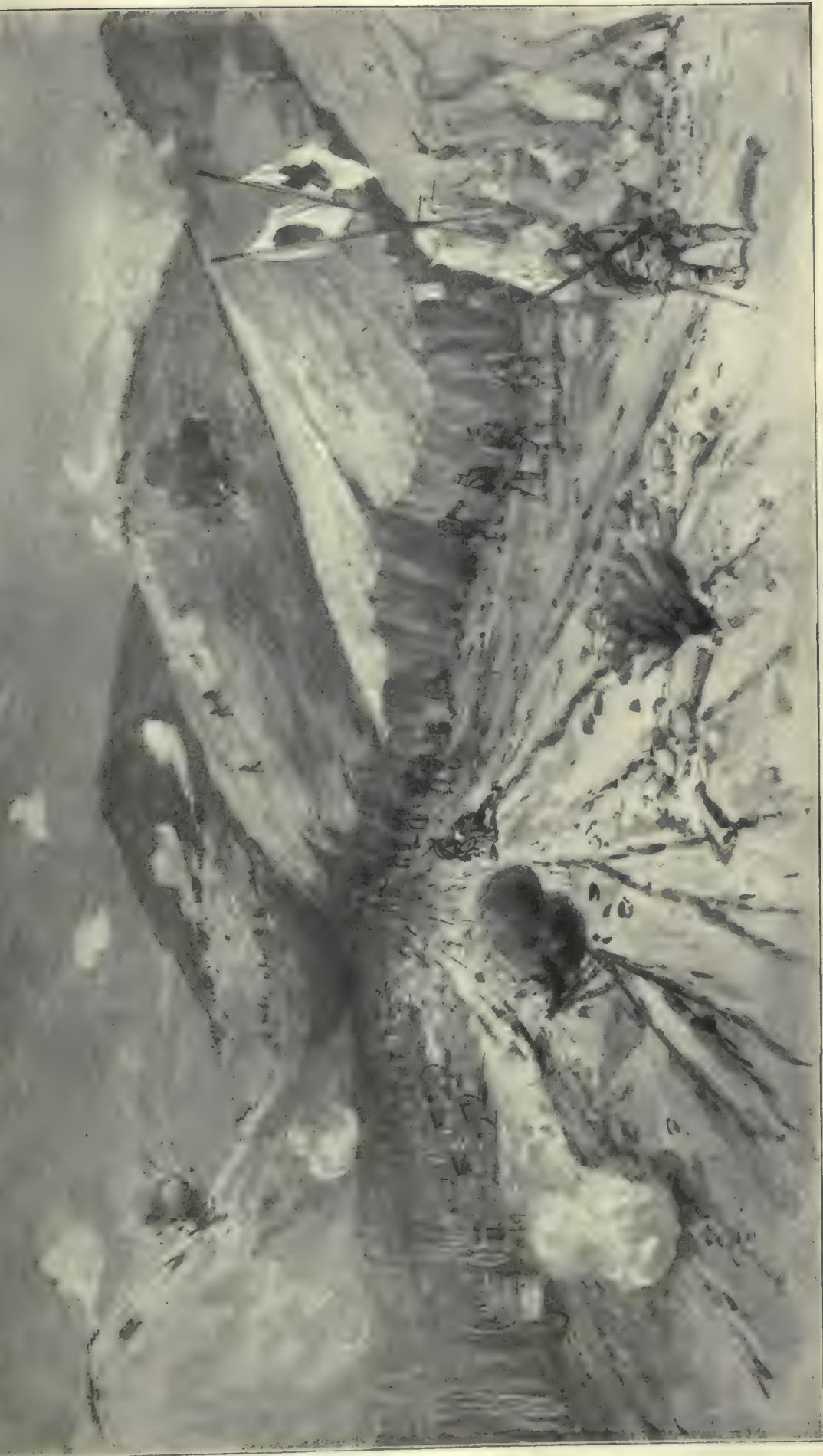


[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

JAPANESE ARTILLERY POSITION NEAR PORT ARTHUR.

the valley of the Shadow of Death

At the capture of Namsakayama on the 20th of Sept. Owing to the mountainous lay of the country the Japanese batteries were close together, so close that the valley behind our position was alive with bursting shells all day as the Russians tried to silence our guns. Through this terrible fire the wounded were carried to the first aid station in the cleft in the rock on the right but even in this haven of refuge shortly before my arrival a segment of shell had passed through one of the dressing tents.



AN AMBULANCE IMPERILLED: A JAPANESE FIRST-AID STATION UNDER FIRE.

Mr. Villiers writes: "At the capture of Namsakayama on September 20, owing to the mountainous configuration of the country, the Japanese batteries were huddled close together, so close that the hill behind our position was alive with bursting shells all day as the Russians tried to silence our guns. Through this terrible fire the wounded were carried to the first-aid station in the cleft of a rock on the right; but even in this haven of refuge, shortly before my arrival, a segment of shell had passed through one of the dressing-tents."

of the dead and from the living. Hand-grenades of the rudest pattern were hastily manufactured, and with these a sergeant, Himeno, whose name deserves to go down to history, and two privates crawled forward towards the port-hole of the caponniere in the ditch of the East Panlung Fort. The sergeant left the two men a little distance from the port-hole; then he himself began slowly to work his way towards it, with infinite care, lying always upon his back, so that if seen he might be taken for a dead man. When within a few feet of the port-hole he dropped all concealment, lighted the fuse, rose, and, running forward, flung the terrible projectile into the caponniere, and then dashed back to the nearest cover. The explosion which followed was violent, and did great damage to the caponniere, destroying one of the Russian machine-guns. More men then crept forward, some with grenades in their hands, others with them fixed on the ends of long bamboos, and threw or thrust them into the port-holes. The explosion of five of these grenades destroyed a great part of the roof of the caponniere. A sixth did not explode, and a daring private,



A JAPANESE CONSULTATION IN A DUG-OUT BEFORE PORT ARTHUR. [From a photo by Ruddiman Johnston.]

Nakajima by name, crawled forward, took it down (it had been placed on the top of the work), struck a match, lighted the fuse, and threw himself on the ground, waiting the explosion. With a crash it came, but Nakajima was wounded by it or by a bullet from a Russian rifle, for as he rose to run back and rejoin his comrades he stumbled and fell.

The series of violent explosions threw the Russians in the fort into great confusion. They could not see the Japanese below them in the ditch, while the caponniere, which swept the ditch with its fire, was destroyed, and the men in it dead. At this moment, led by Captain Sugiyama, 50 unwounded Japanese, and about 20 of the less seriously wounded, rushed up the face of the earthwork and fell upon the garrison with loud shouts of "Banzai!" The Russians little knew how few were their assailants, and permitted

With the 1st Division - The Capture of Namakavama - The Japanese assaulting the position I saw never seen a man fall at fight then they killed. After making good their foothold on the summit of the 4th of Sept. working up the position they carried the fight on the following morning. One position in this fight was the throwing of bombs by the advance companies of Japanese as they slipped into the trenches to fight of which killed a few making shrapnel and shell as the smoke of night fell made the scene most weird and dramatic.

23-24-1904



HAND-GRENADES IN MODERN WARFARE: THE CAPTURE OF FORT NAMAOKAVAMA, AND THE APPROACH TO THE 203-METRE FORT.

Of the assaults of September 10 and the following days the correspondents of the "Daily Telegraph" and the "Daily Mail" write as follows: "Throwing grenades backward and forward, the Japanese drove the Russians into the trenches, destroyed the machine-gun shelters, captured four machine-guns, and then followed the Russians through the trenches and captured three other guns. During the night of the 10th the Japanese sappers cut away over 600 feet of timber from the trench, and then followed the Russians through the trenches and captured three other guns. The side of the fort on the 203-Metre Hill, 100 by 500 yards in extent, was covered by a double line of centimetre steel plates covered with earth on timber. The corners of the trenches were strengthened by rails. It mounted two heavy guns, three field-guns, and three machine-guns. Single wire entanglements protected the outer trench. The saps were carried to the foot of 203-Metre Hill from the south-west. On the 10th one regiment made an assault from the saps, but was unable to reach the breastwork owing to the furious fire. Two bodies of men, each numbering about 60, tried to cross about 300 yards of open space by spreading out and running at top speed. The shrapnel from 203-Metre Hill killed every man."

No. XLII.



PORT ARTHUR MILITIA COMING OFF GUARD AT THE FORTS.

themselves to be forced back by this handful of men. But inside the fort they rallied and offered a determined resistance, and at this moment ammunition began to fail the Japanese. The hearts of even that band of heroes sank, and some of the men made as though they would retreat. Sugiyama, however, drew his revolver, and declared that no one should go back alive; as he

uttered this threat he was killed by a Russian shell. But the conduct of the detachment had been observed from afar, and reinforcements were hurrying to the spot. Up the hill raced supports through a withering fire, followed by two maxims, and some part of them reached the fort and joined in the conflict. The ground to the rear of the fort was deluged with shrapnel from the Japanese guns, to prevent the Russians from bringing up men to the aid of the garrison, and a fierce and protracted hand-to-hand encounter began, and continued most of the morning. More and more Japanese arrived, and with them General Ichinobe in person, determined to share the fate of his heroic troops, and for once to stand like a Samurai in front of the fighting line. As the reinforcements came up, two companies under Captain Hamaguchi observed that the Russians in the West Panlung Fort were showing signs of weakening. A storm of shells broke continually over the work, driving all in it to cover. Hamaguchi made a short speech to his men, telling them that he meant to rush the fort, and urging them to fight to the very last. Then he dashed forward through the hail of machine-gun bullets and carried the fort, but not without heavy loss.

The fall of the West Fort was speedily followed by the capture of the East Fort, though here the Russian resistance was sterner, and the last traverse was not taken until nightfall, after the most desperate fighting. Thus two of the works in the great chain of eastern forts were in the hands of the Japanese at the close of the day. The explanation of their capture was to be found in the unprecedented heroism and determination of the assailants, and in the fact that the forts had not been thoroughly completed before the attack began. From the hour of their capture, all through the night, the Russian troops in the neighbouring forts delivered attack after attack, and concentrated on the captured forts a terrific fire from the guns of the ships and from all the weapons in the land-works that would bear. The Japanese, however,

THE LATE GENERAL TSERPINSKY.
Killed at Port Arthur.



[By courtesy of "The Sphere."]

HOW THE JAPANESE APPROACHED THE DEADLY FORTRESSES AROUND PORT ARTHUR.

M. Salvadori has attempted to visualise here the appearance of one of the later attacks on Port Arthur by means of sapping trenches. The drawing has been made with the assistance of photographic and telegraphic material, and shows Japanese troops marching forward to the deadly fighting angle of the trench, beyond which is the Russian fort. Hand-grenades of a very explosive character have been extensively used, and in fact the capture of some of the forts has been effected by their use, as these cans of high explosives have succeeded in tearing to pieces the earthwork defences of the Russians.



[Photo supplied by A. Javrantieff.]

WITHIN PORT ARTHUR. ONE OF THE GUNS.

East Panlung Fort numbered only 20 unwounded men and one officer after the affair; while the strength of a second battalion fell from 1,000 to 64 effectives. Five times the regimental standard-bearer was shot down, and the colours were lost for a time, but were finally discovered lying under a great heap of dead, soaked with the blood of those who had died gloriously to save them.

On the night of the 23rd the 9th and 11th Divisions delivered an assault on the Russian works behind the Panlung Forts and on North Kikwan and Wangtai Forts. In this attack they were altogether unsuccessful. Under the searchlights and star-shells they were assailed by a murderous fire from guns and machine-guns, and the masses of living men were literally mown down and torn into heaps of flesh. Finally they were forced back to shelter, leaving at least 2,000 dead or dying on the heights. The assault was renewed the following day, in response to orders from the General Staff, with no better fortune or success; Wangtai and North Kikwan were too strong to be rushed, and though parties of

held firm under the rain of shells. When day came the Japanese flag still floated over the smoking ruins of the captured forts.

The Japanese loss in this great feat of arms was appalling. One Japanese regiment which entered the fight 3,000 strong closed the assault with 120 effectives; the battalion which actually effected the capture of the



A BIG GUN IN PORT ARTHUR.

Japanese reached the ditches surrounding the Russian works, it was only to die miserably in them. The Russians gave no quarter, and the wounded were left to perish, as only a small number were within reach of the Japanese Red Cross service. It was hoped that the Russians would attend to the wounded Japanese near their lines, but that hope was not fulfilled.

Private Tsutsui, who played a gallant part in the second assault, has given us a modest and thrilling account of his experiences. "No battle," he says, "is so terrible as an assault on a fort. As the machine-



DURING THE ATTACK ON PORT ARTHUR THE REMNANT OF THE JAPANESE 20TH REGIMENT CHARGED THROUGH BARBED-WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS, LED BY A PRIVATE, ALL THE OFFICERS HAVING BEEN KILLED.

guns in the forts all around fired on us without intermission, half of our men perished before the object of our attack was reached. But we were determined to carry the fort at all costs, and after severe fighting

A Private's Story. we finally succeeded in storming it. We had barely occupied it when the Russian forts on the right and left and in our front fired their machine-guns with increased energy.

Our soldiers fell in quick succession, and our force was reduced to a mere handful. The Russians assailed us with overwhelming numbers, and we were at last compelled to abandon the work which had been captured after such arduous efforts. In the retreat I was wounded, and fell beside the wire entanglement."



A "THIRTY-MINUTE" TRENCH.

[Copyright photo by J. Rosenthall of Urbanota.]

Men of the 9th Division ready to relieve their companions.

There, he continues, he lay wounded, and finally crawled to a shell-hole, in which he took cover close by a heap of dead Russians. Consumed with thirst, and having emptied his water-bottle, he searched for water, and in the dusk—it was now growing dark—discovered a pool of some liquid below the dead Russians. Of this he drank freely, when to his horror he found it was blood. Some fragments of food were found on the Russian dead, but this was all that he had to support life.

There was no chance of help reaching him; his one hope was to lie quiet and wait till the pain and



SOME CAPTURED RUSSIAN GUNS.

stiffness caused by his wounds had passed or diminished, and then crawl down from the accursed hill. Many hours he lay there, and saw the Russians systematically butchering and robbing the Japanese wounded. A Russian soldier bent over him and robbed him of his belongings, and then, as he stirred, struck him on the head and chest with his rifle-butt. Despite the agony of his wounds, Tsutsui had sufficient self-restraint to suppress a cry of pain, and simulated death. The Russian left him lying there, and for five days without food this wounded private lay among the heaps of corrupting dead, and on the sixth

Japanese fire holding
Russians in check.

Russian Fort
Niruzan.

Bayonet work
in trenches.

Russian
Position.



BAYONET-WORK AND SHELL-FIRE BEFORE PORT ARTHUR. THE ATTACK ON THE TURBAN REDOUBT. Mr. Villiers, the artist, writes: "I have here sketched West Panduzan, held by the Japanese when they sapped up to the donga separating it from the Turban Redoubt, which they are rushing forward to assault. I never saw a more terribly overwhelming shell-fire than the redoubt was subjected to before the assault, or a quicker bayonet-charge or pluckier bit of work between Japanese and Russians than during the attack on Hashimaki, as the Japanese call it."



[From stereograph. copyright, Underwood & Underwood.]
DEAD AND WOUNDED JAPANESE BORNE INTO CAMP UNDER THE RED CROSS FLAG AFTER AN ACTION BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

was still alive, when a heroic Japanese officer reached him and promised him help. Help was sent in the night, and he was brought down, and lived to tell his tale.

The Russians were not always such savages, though, as we have said, they seldom spared the Japanese wounded. In this same attack a party of six wounded Japanese were left in the zone of fire of the two armies, side by side with eight wounded Russians. The Russians were less injured than the Japanese, and they attempted to give the Japanese water. Two of the wounded men were killed in

making this noble effort to succour their foes by the shells and bullets which came incessantly from every direction. The Russians then constructed a covering with their rifles and overcoats to shelter one of the wounded Japanese from the heat of the sun, and at nightfall helped him past the obstacles and entanglements, so that he might reach his friends. There were, it is clear, many brave, humane, and kindly men among the garrison of Port Arthur.



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]
A BURIED RUSSIAN GUN AT FORT NANTUSHAN, PORT ARTHUR.



BEFORE PORT ARTHUR: THE JAPANESE ARTILLERY ATTACK FIVE MINUTES BEFORE THE INFANTRY ASSAULT ON THE TURBAN REDOUBT.

Mr. Villiers writes: On the right is the Russian fort Niruzan, on which the Japanese guns are also demonstrating, holding the Russians in check while the assault on the Turban is made. The columns of smoke are careful studies, and give the world an idea of the terrible engines now being used at Port Arthur. Enormous shells are bursting on the crest of the Turban. Each one of these makes a hole as large as a two-roomed cottage. The shower of projectiles from the bursting shells has put the Russians under one hour of this hellish fire, and still showed a good front; but the Japanese gained the trenches, and the fight was soon over. The Japanese, who should be pitied, thousands on such a position a month ago, are now sapping up to each redoubt until they have only a few yards to rush to the attack on open ground. Hashi-maki, the Japanese name for the Turban Redoubt, is the thin end of the Japanese wedge in the centre of the Russian position. There has been nothing in the annals of war so heroic as the attack and defence of both sides.



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.
JAPANESE LUNCH-TIME NEAR PORT ARTHUR.

on Panlungshan. On the 27th a heavy thunderstorm broke over Port Arthur in the afternoon, and under cover of this the Russians advanced in great force to the attack of West Panlung Fort. The fighting about this work was furious in the extreme; the Russians, after suffering enormous loss, fought their way into it, but were then brought up by the Japanese reinforcements, and late in the evening expelled. The whole place was covered with dead. With this attempt to recapture the main Panlung Fort the fighting in the great assault may be said to have terminated, leaving the Japanese army in too exhausted a condition to renew the attack.

The losses of the Japanese had been fearful,

though no
Japanese Losses. precise

figures were published. They were placed at from 10,000 to 20,000 men by correspondents with the Japanese army, though the last figure is probably an exaggerated one. As the assaulting force did not number more than 70,000 or 80,000 men, this was a gigantic casualty roll. Nothing could exceed the bravery and determination of the assailants, but the truth was that they were

On the 24th the Emperor of Japan sent a message to his gallant army, in which he declared,
The Emperor's Message. "We are deeply concerned at the great hardships endured by you in the hottest season of the year. We sincerely rely upon the bravery and discipline of your officers and men. We enjoin upon officers and men so to conduct this final attack as to secure a complete consummation of the success which you have so nearly achieved." To this message General Nogi replied in terms of gratitude, but stated that the Japanese had so far only been able to carry two of the numerous forts in the Russian chain of works.

Through the 25th and 26th there was little fighting, though the batteries continued to bombard the Russian forts, and the Russians to concentrate their fire



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.
LANDING PLACE OF JAPANESE TROOPS FOR PORT ARTHUR.



BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF PORT ARTHUR AND ITS FORTIFICATIONS AS SEEN FROM THE NORTH.



A TORPEDO, FIRED BY THE RUSSIANS AT PORT ARTHUR, LEAVING THE TUBE.

attempting the impossible, and that the attack was desperate from the first. It has since been learnt from Russian sources of information that there were moments on August 22 and 23 when the Japanese were very near success, and when even the best Russian officers were in fear of the fall of the fortress. But the Japanese army had made its supreme effort, and failed, nor did it know till long months had passed how near it had been to victory. It is probable that the help of the heavy guns lost in the HITACHI MARU would have turned the scale, so that the effect of the raid of the Vladivostock cruisers upon the war was profound. For the failure at Port Arthur in August involved the failure to surround



[From stereograph, copyright, 1904, by Underwood & Underwood, New York.]
JAPANESE WOUNDED AT DALNY.

This picture, which was taken between the dates of September 13 and October 8 by James Ricalton, shows some Japanese survivors of a hot skirmish plodding through the outskirts of Dalny after its abandonment by the Russians.

Golden Hill.

The Tiger's Tail



Engineers building gun-pits for high-angle fire.

NEARING THE GOAL: JAPANESE CONSTRUCTING SIEGE-WORKS UNDER FIRE BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

(From a sketch made by Captain Lionel James from materials supplied by a wounded Japanese officer.)

and capture the Russian army at Liaoyang and the prolongation of the war for another year of suffering and bloodshed.

The Russian loss in the assault and the counter-attack which followed it was heavy, but not so heavy as the Japanese. About 7,000 or 8,000 men were killed or wounded, and as 7,000 men in General Stoessel's army had been killed or wounded in the preliminary fighting before Port Arthur, its numbers were now greatly reduced. There had also been an enormous expenditure of ammunition, and some fear was already at this early date beginning to be felt as to the exhaustion of the supplies.

During the great assault on August 23 the Russian battleship *Sevastopol*, which was the only large ship in the harbour in condition to go out, left the harbour and shelled the Japanese lines near Takushan and Panlung. On observing her action, the Japanese armoured cruisers *NISSHIN* and *KASUGA* closed in and opened fire upon her and upon the Laolutze Forts. She at once steamed back towards the harbour,



HEADQUARTERS OF ENGLISH NEWSPAPER CORRESPONDENTS WITH NOGI'S FORCES BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

but when entering it struck a mechanical mine, which exploded under her, doing great damage, and almost completely submerging her bows. On the following day, as the Russian destroyers and tugs were carrying out counter-mining work at the entrance to the harbour, two destroyers struck mines. One, a two-funnelled vessel, sank at once; the other managed to steam back into the port. A few days later a similar disaster befell the Russians, as one of their

The "Sevastopol" Damaged. mine-clearing vessels was blown up by a mine, and sunk with a part of her crew. All through August the blockade of Port Arthur was strongly maintained by the Japanese navy, and on August 28 and 29 an enormous flotilla of Chinese junks, which had been hired by Russian agents and assembled at Weihaiwei, with every kind of supply for the besieged force, including food, ammunition, high explosives, and clothing, was captured by the Japanese cruisers and torpedo flotilla off Round Island. The prizes were sent to Dalny, where their cargo was condemned as contraband and seized by the Japanese authorities, but the crews were released.

CHAPTER XLV.

THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR—
THE SEPTEMBER ATTACKS.

AFTER the great failure of August the Japanese army before Port Arthur was heavily reinforced and supplied with all the necessities for sap and siege work. As more powerful guns were urgently needed to

reduce the Port Arthur forts, the Japanese authorities decided to ship a large number of 11-in. howitzers of old pattern which had been mounted in the coast defences at the Japanese ports. These weapons fired a shell of about 500-lb., and had

a range of over six miles. They were by far the most formidable guns that had ever been employed in the attack upon a fortress. But their transport from Japan to the front, and the completion of the preparations for mounting them, occupied many days. They did not begin to arrive before Port Arthur till the middle of September, and the last was not in position before the end of that month. In all 18 of these guns were brought into action, and proved exceedingly effective when they got to work.

During the closing days of August, while the Japanese were busy working at their saps and improving the approaches to their positions nearest to the enemy's lines, the Russians displayed considerable energy. They were actively improving a new work which had been constructed to the rear of the captured Panlung Forts, known to the Japanese as New Panlung Fort. They also threw up fresh works near

Wangtai Fort, and strengthened the inner

line of de-
An Incessant fences. To
Fire. the west of

Port Arthur they added various redoubts to the series of works on Metre Range, and everywhere deepened the trenches and ditches, added to the entanglements, and increased the strength of the bomb-proofs. Of the Japanese they saw little, though there was constant fighting. The most marvellous feature of the attack was the stealth with which it was conducted. The Japanese saps and trenches were almost invisible from the Russian front; not a trace could be observed of the Japanese heavy batteries, which were all skilfully



MAKING TEMPORARY FORTIFICATIONS AT PORT ARTHUR.



ON HOOZAN HILL, THREE MILES NORTH OF PORT ARTHUR. 750 FEET ABOVE THE TOWN.

The tents and horses in the valley are those of the 3rd Army Division.



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

JAPANESE 28-CENTIMETRE MORTAR-GUN AT PORT ARTHUR.

concealed behind hills or woods ; the Japanese troops never showed themselves in the open, except when assaulting. Yet from this empty landscape and from the seemingly deserted hills in the Russian front poured an incessant fire.

Day after day there was savage fighting upon the Panlung heights, where the two armies were in the closest touch, and where Russian attacks upon the Japanese were continuous.

Here was a trench held by the Japanese, only a few yards away from the Russian line, from which the garrison was withdrawn every half hour, so terrible was the work of holding it, and so severe the strain on the nerves. To show the head above this trench meant instant death ; in front of it, and between it and the Russian lines, the festering bodies of dead Japanese and

A Thirty-Minute Trench.

Russians who had fallen in the constant attacks and counter-attacks were heaped in a ghastly breastwork of corrupting flesh, and the Russians refused to permit a truce for their burial. The whole atmosphere in this accursed place was heavy with the taint of death ; large red flies devoured the living men, and caused agony by their poisonous bite. An incessant hail of bullets sputtered into the earth and sand ; the soldiers holding the trench crouched, and only fired with extreme caution through the loop-holes ; each minute of the night the sentries and the garrison waited in anxious expectation for the soft tread of Russian volunteers, followed by the terrific detonation of the hand-grenades, which were almost nightly flung over the breastwork, killing and maiming all near the point where they exploded. From this terrible trench filtered a steady stream of wounded men all day down the steep slope to the Japanese hospitals far below. The work was connected by sap and covered ways with the base, and below it, in the bomb-proofs on the side of the hill and the less exposed trenches, powerful supports were kept in readiness night and day to rush forward and meet any attack. Perpetual strain, perpetual vigilance, were the lot of those who held the Panlung Forts.

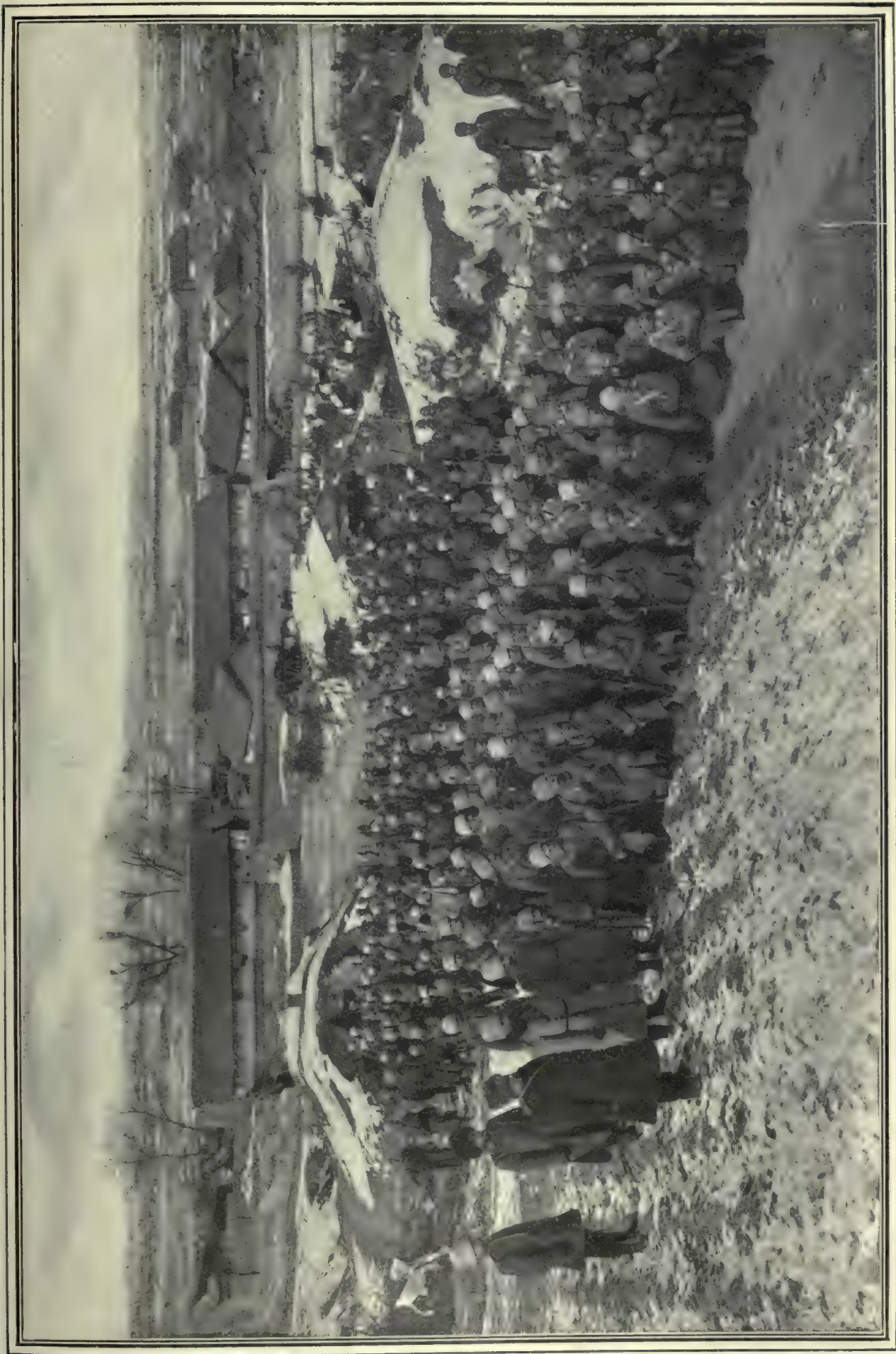
All September 3 and 4 Panlung Forts were steadily shelled by



[Photo by Richard Barry.]

THE JAPANESE PARALLEL TRENCH BY THE ETERNAL DRAGON FORT.

Mr. Barry writes : " Down the plain at the base of Banjusan, the Eternal Dragon Fort, 500 yards from the Russian line, this garrison company has lived for two months in a space hardly large enough to turn round in."



the Russians, while the Japanese guns fired on the town of Port Arthur and the barracks. Considerable damage was done, and several fires were seen. On the 3rd a touching incident happened. A Japanese detachment, led by a young officer, attempted to rush a Russian trench near Panlung Forts. The Japanese troops were repulsed with considerable loss, and driven down the slope into one of their shelter-trenches, leaving their officer behind, badly wounded. Suddenly the Japanese saw a Russian soldier come towards the officer, stoop over him and lift him, and then start down the hill with him towards the Japanese trench.

A Splendid Incident.



BACK FROM THE BATTLEFIELD. SCENE IN ST. PETERSBURG. WOUNDED SOLDIERS RETURNING FROM THE FAR EAST. (Photo by Victor Bulla.)

Both armies held their fire during the episode. The Russian placed his burden in the hands of the Japanese troops, and declined to return to the work which he had left. He was placed on parole, and allowed to go where he wished. During the 6th, 7th, and 8th the Russians delivered several attacks on the Japanese advanced positions, small parties of volunteers stealing to the Japanese trenches with hand-grenades, which were flung inside, when the Russians charged and attacked those in the trenches hand-to-hand with the bayonet. These attacks caused great annoyance and considerable loss, but the Japanese retaliated in kind, playing much the same game.

The Japanese saps were rapidly advancing in all directions. An attack was purposed upon



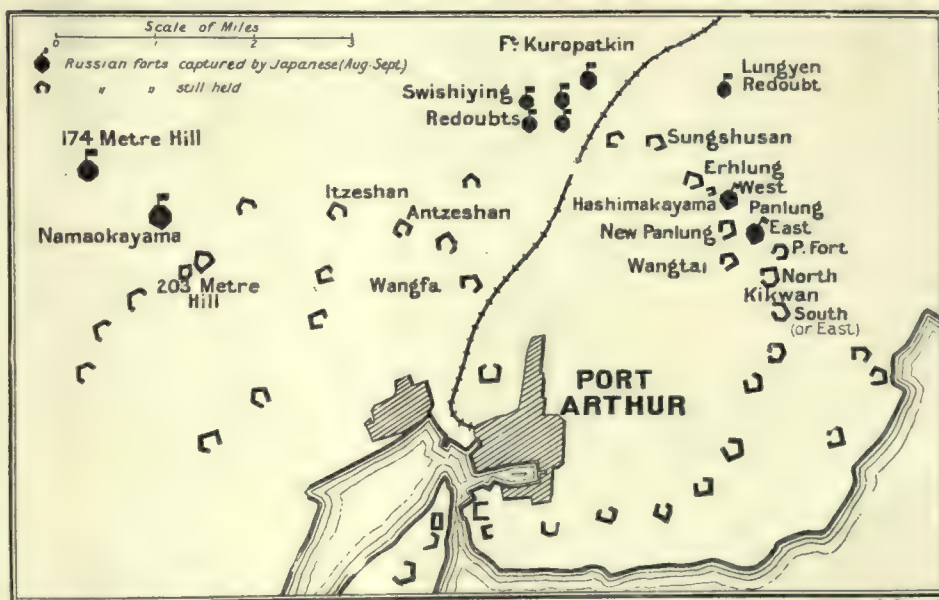
GENERAL KODAMA, CHIEF OF THE JAPANESE FORCES, IN CAMP IN MANCHURIA.

Kuropatkin Fort, a strong work erected to the north of Port Arthur, in the Swishiyung valley, and towards it, in preparation for an assault upon it, an underground tunnel was driven, which on September 9 was only 50 yards away from the bank of the fort. Other tunnels were carried towards

Sapping the Forts.

both of the Kikwan Forts. The Russians replied by driving a similar approach from Kikwan North to East Panlung Fort, which required careful watching. Fighting about the siege-works went on till September 19, when the Japanese staff determined to deliver a great attack upon Metre Range, and particularly upon Namaokayama, a height which rose a little in front of 203 Metre Hill, so as to enable the siege-works

to approach 203 Metre Hill itself. Its capture was required for the purpose of directing the Japanese artillery. Namaokayama was also known by the name of 180 Metre Hill from its height. It was a long, narrow ridge, crowned with a large Russian earthwork, in which were mounted two heavy guns and several smaller weapons. The 1st Division was to attack in this quarter, while simultaneously the 9th Division was to assail



PLAN SHOWING PORT ARTHUR FORTS CAPTURED BY THE JAPANESE UP TO SEPTEMBER, 1904.

Kuropatkin Fort and a redoubt near Lungyen protecting the Russian waterworks, and the 11th Division to demonstrate against the Eastern Forts. Thus the September attack was delivered mainly on the west and north fronts, whereas the August attack had been directed against the east front.

The nearest positions to Namaokayama in the hands of the Japanese were 174 Metre Hill, captured in August, and a slight eminence to the north of Namaokayama, taken about the same time, and very strongly entrenched. Here was stationed a battalion of the 1st Regiment, which was supported by 14 other battalions of the 1st Division, massed in the neighbourhood, belonging to the 1st Brigade under Major-General Yamamoto, and the Kobe Reserve Brigade under Major-General Takenouchi, the whole being under the orders of General Matsumara. The Russian work to be attacked was in part cut into the hill, and well below it; on the steep slope by which



[Drawn, from a photograph by J. H. Hare, by Paul Thiriat.
JAPANESE SCOUTS WORKING ROUND A RUSSIAN POSITION.

This picture had to be drawn as the photograph showed the figures about the size and in the attitude of ants crawling round the base of the great hill. It gives a splendid idea of how the Japanese understand the art of taking cover.

it would have to be approached was an advanced trench, with below that again a barbed-wire entanglement. The ground below the entanglement was stony, the slope so steep as only to be climbed with difficulty; towards the foot of the hill there was short, bare grass, giving no sort of cover to assailants. The whole hill and all its approaches were exposed to the fire of the guns on 203 Metre Hill and in the great forts on Antzeshan and Itzeshan which towered up to the east. The summit could also be reached by the heavy guns on board the Russian warships in the harbour and in certain of the forts overlooking the sea. It was clear from the first that immense difficulty would be experienced, not only in capturing the height, but also in holding it when captured.

About 2 p.m. on the 19th the Japanese batteries opened a terrific fire on Namaokayama, though the 11-in. howitzers were not as yet ready to participate in the attack. Some 60 guns were engaged (naval 15-pounders, 4.7-in. and 6-in. guns, and 4.7-in. siege-howitzers), directed by the chief artillery officer,

who, with a hyposcope, an instrument for looking over parapets, watched the bombardment from an advanced trench, with telephone operators and telephones at his side to send orders to his artillerymen. The

The Attack Opens. bombardment was magnificently managed. Every shell burst in or over the Russian work; the precision of the Japanese fire and the accuracy of their time-fuses were marvellous to eye-witnesses. On 203 Metre Hill a similar storm of projectiles was poured to keep down its fire and disable its guns, and meantime neither of the Russian forts replied. But from the ships in the harbour and from the Russian forts seawards came heavy shells screeching through the air, and if the Japanese batteries had not been perfectly concealed would have caused them heavy loss. As it was, most of the Russian shells simply tore up the ground and excavated huge pits, which gave excellent shelter to the Japanese infantry.

The Japanese first swept the trenches below the crests of 203 Metre Hill and 180 Metre Hill; then they turned their fire on the summits. At this the Russians began to reply with one heavy gun on Namaokayama. It stood out plainly against the sky-line, and small figures could be seen about it. It burnt smoky powder, and each time that it fired a dense cloud of white smoke



A RUSSIAN WOMAN SOLDIER.



JAPANESE OFFICERS RECEIVING ORDERS.



FIRING AT 203-METRE HILL FROM A POINT NEARLY THREE MILES AWAY.

[W. H. Bailey photo.]

spurred from its great muzzle. About it fell incessantly the Japanese shells, till the crest of Namaokayama "smoked like a volcano," in the expressive phrase of an eye-witness. "The smoke of the bursting shells and the earth thrown up after each explosion enveloped the trenches and completely

hid them from view, and the hill might have been deserted, for not a man was visible, and even the big gun had ceased to fire."

As the bombardment proceeded the guns in

the more
Japanese Naval Guns. distant
 Russian

forts made excellent practice at one of the Japanese naval batteries. This was manned by bluejackets, who ran to cover every time they saw or heard a Russian shell approaching, returning to work their guns



LANDING OF RUSSIAN PRISONERS, CAPTURED AT MOTIENLING, AT TAKAHAMA.

the moment the shell had exploded. Ten Russian shells were burst in front of one of the battery guns, the seamen on each occasion timing their departure correctly; but the eleventh came on them just as they were quitting cover, and killed or wounded three men. All the time a Japanese officer walked unconcernedly up and down behind the guns, disdaining to take any notice of the enemy's shells, and, though fragments flew all about him, he received no injury. Finally the Russian fire became so hot that the battery ceased firing, and the men were withdrawn. Hardly had this step been taken when a Russian shell landed directly upon one of the guns and sent it flying off its mounting.

Under the hail of shells from the Japanese guns the Russian parapets crumbled slowly and lost their



THE STORMING OF 203-METRE FORT.



ASSAULT ON THE COCKSCORN FORTS, PORT ARTHUR.

[Facsimile of sketch by Mr. F. Villiers.]

regular form. Evening was approaching when the Japanese infantry began to advance to the assault on Namaokayama. The 1st Regiment was the assaulting force. For a fortnight it had remained in the trenches facing Namaokayama, its colonel with it sharing the sufferings and privations of his men. He was a veteran of the Chinese war and of the Satsuma rebellion, and had fought in every Japanese campaign for forty years. Now he had come back to the colours of his country

The Assault.

with the Samurai's wish to die in arms for the Emperor. The infantry moved in the lightest order; they carried no knapsacks or overcoats, though the day was bitterly cold, with a keen wind prelude the advent of winter. Each soldier had with him 200 rounds of ammunition, a water-bottle filled, a slab of biscuit, and a piece of dried fish—three days' rations for a Japanese fighting man. With the van of the assaulting force went a man bearing a large flag, which was used to show their progress to the Japanese artillery. As they broke from cover the Japanese batteries concentrated all their fire on the Russian works, overwhelming them with shrapnel, to prevent the Russian gunners from using their guns or the Russian infantry from aiming their rifles.

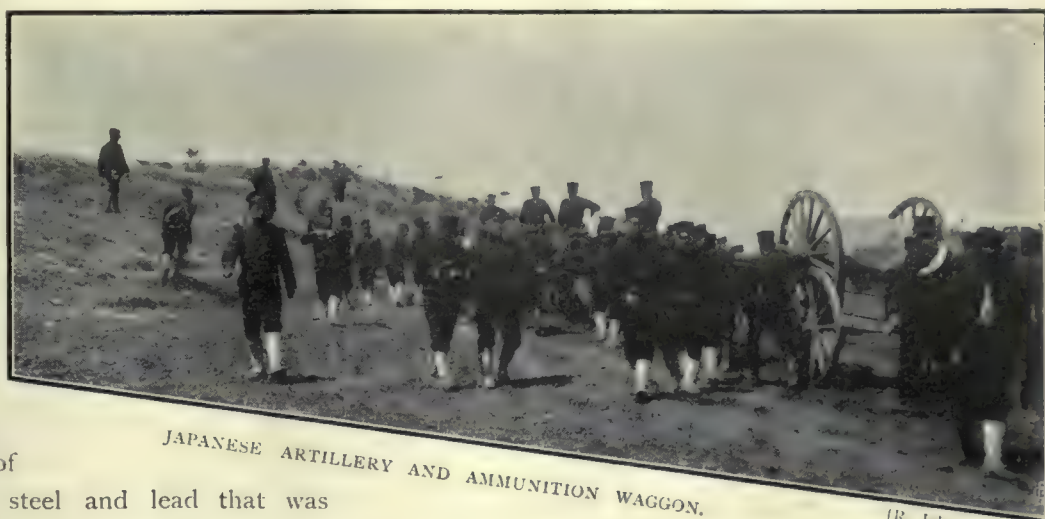


THE NEW RANGE-FINDER.

Method of discovering the distance of an enemy, as practised by the Japanese and Russians. The two officers are endeavouring to get the range of the summit of the distant hill from the bluff above the river. By measuring the angles at the ends of the baseline they will be able to calculate what would otherwise be a very difficult range to estimate.

Up the precipices and the steep slopes of the hill went the stormers slowly, while the

curtain of shrapnel veiled them from the Russian fire. The trenches on Namaokayama were roughly constructed and without proper bomb-proofs, so that there was little shelter for the Russians from the terrible hail of



JAPANESE ARTILLERY AND AMMUNITION WAGGON.

[R. Johnston photo.]

At the First Trench.

steel and lead that was now descending upon them, and their losses were exceedingly heavy. The Japanese were nearing the lower

Russian trench upon the hill before the Russian rifle-fire fairly opened, but then the Russian troops gallantly stood up and took their chance of death. The assault, however, had been so cleverly timed, that just at this point darkness began to fall, and the Russians could no longer see clearly where to fire. About 2,000 Japanese infantry rapidly collected at a point in the dead angle of the hill close under the Russian trench, where there was excellent cover, and where they could not be reached by any of the Russian searchlights in the other forts, which now began to turn their giant eyes upon 180 Metre Hill, throwing their dazzling white rays through the gloom. In the darkness the Japanese guns continued their bombardment of the crest, having carefully taken the ranges before night fell. But the assault was long delayed; the Japanese troops waiting the signal had to lie three or four hours on the face of the mountain in an icy blast, while over their heads burst the star-shells, which the Russians sent up incessantly. Gradually the firing died away, and, save for a few shots exchanged between the skirmishers on either side, there was silence, till at 11 p.m. the roar of heavy firing and the blaze of rifles was seen upon the hill.

The assault had begun in real earnest, but the pitchy darkness veiled its incidents from the eyes of onlookers. Only the sense of hearing showed that the fighting was moving up the slope, and about

11.30 p.m., after severe hand-to-hand encounters,

the 1st

A Flight in the Dark. Regiment

carried the

Russian advanced trench.

This was the programme

for the night, and, having

carried it, the Japanese

troops had been in-

structed to dig them-

selves in and wait till

day to repeat the assault

upon the frowning

summit of the mountain

above their heads.

During the night three

additional trenches were

cut below the captured



JAPANESE FIELD POST-OFFICE.

one, and as the force upon the slope of the hill was found to be too large, about 1,000 men were sent down to the foot, where there was shelter. Near the summit the two armies were only 80 yards apart, and through the small hours of the morning sniping proceeded continuously.

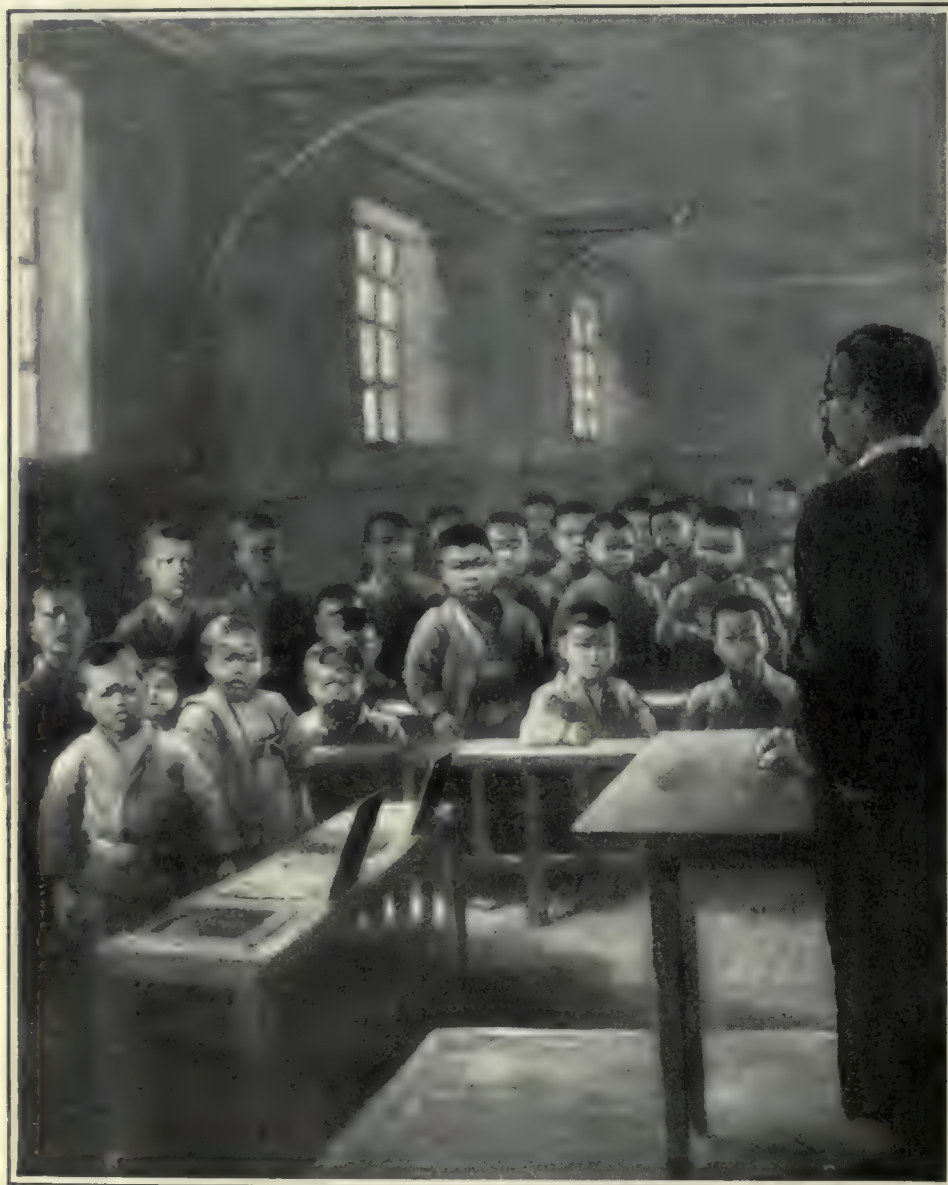
At daybreak the Japanese batteries reopened on the crest of the hill, directing their shrapnel with exquisite precision just beyond the large flags which the assaulting force displayed and waved prominently. The cold was bitter, but the troops on the hill, despite their light clothing, seemed to have lost none of their fighting spirit, and they constantly attempted to gain ground, though they did not assault in force,

waiting a fresh signal before so doing. About 10 a.m. part of the 15th Regiment was ordered to move in to the attack of Namaokayama on its south-west face. These troops had to advance from the neighbourhood of 174 Metre Hill down an open slope, where there was no cover, for a distance of 300 yards to a ravine under Namaokayama, and in their rush they would have to trust to luck and the protection afforded by the Japanese shrapnel fire.

The advance was opened by 50 men ex-

tending
A Terrible Incident. with wide
intervals

and bolting like rabbits down the slope; but as they started from cover the Russian shrapnel came whirring and shrieking among them, bringing them down by twos and threes. One group neared the mouth of the ravine, where safety was almost within their reach, their officers gallantly at



HOW THE WAR TOLD ON JAPAN.

School-children who were suffering hunger by reason of the campaign. It is reported that at a school near Kobe a master told the pupils who had had no breakfast to stand up. Sixty per cent. responded, the explanation being that their fathers and mothers were saving for the war fund. Yet the people of Japan bore ungrudgingly the great pressure of the war forced upon them by Russia.

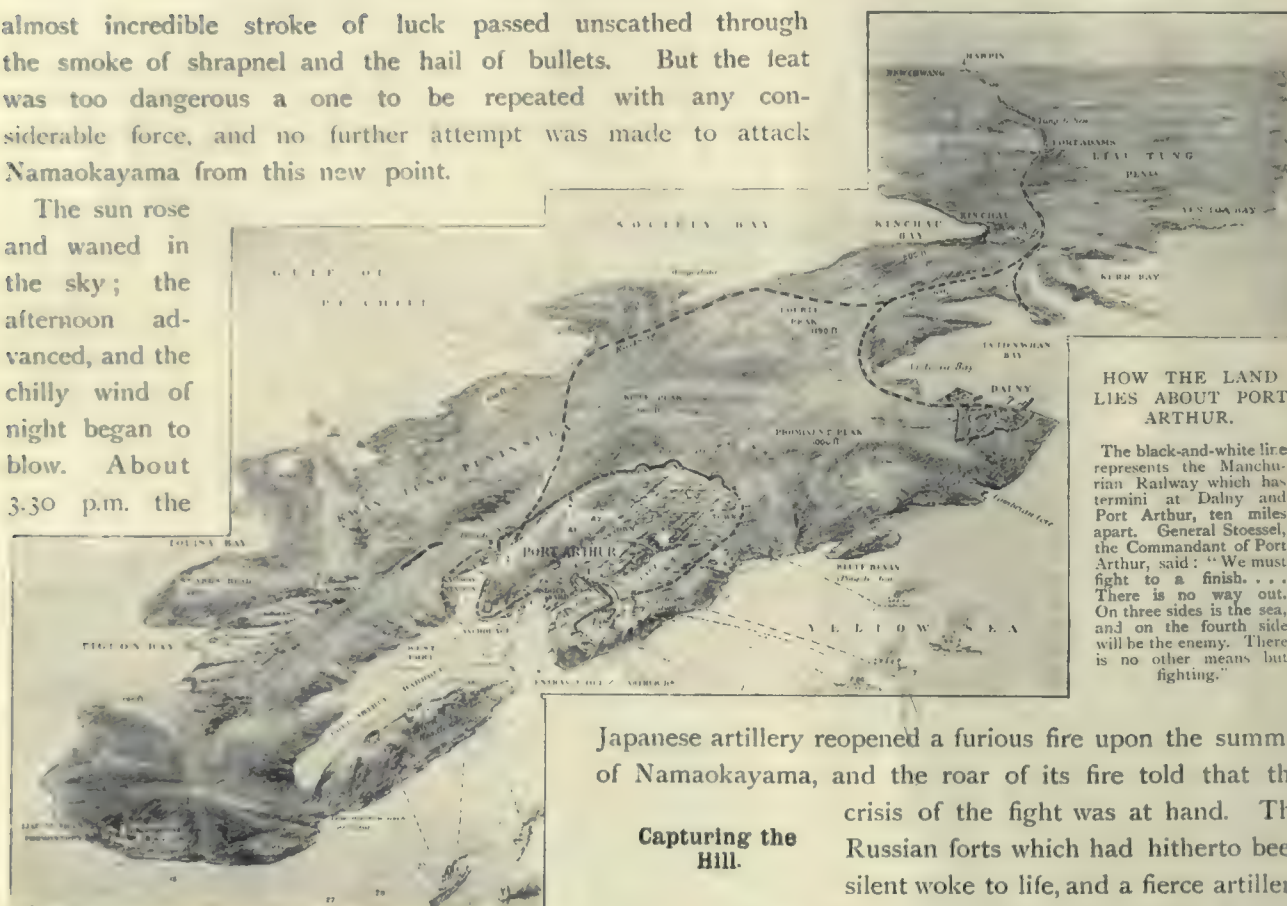
their head, when there came a heavy crash, and a shrapnel from one of the Russian monster guns burst right upon them, tearing the whole group in pieces, and killing almost every man in it. An officer in front, with a single man behind him, seemed alone to have escaped; they were but a foot from the ravine when another shrapnel cut them down. The officer staggered to his feet and tottered forward, reeling like a drunken man, then spun round and dropped dead. In a minute the whole affair was over; every Japanese who had joined in the rush was dead or grievously wounded. The bodies lay out in the open, a terrible sight. Yet notwithstanding this failure two Japanese officers started over the space, and by some



(Drawn, from photographic material, by Paul Thiriat.
THE RETURN OF WOUNDED SOLDIERS FROM THE FRONT. A SCENE IN ST. PETERSBURG.

almost incredible stroke of luck passed unscathed through the smoke of shrapnel and the hail of bullets. But the feat was too dangerous a one to be repeated with any considerable force, and no further attempt was made to attack Namaokayama from this new point.

The sun rose and waned in the sky; the afternoon advanced, and the chilly wind of night began to blow. About 3.30 p.m. the



HOW THE LAND LIES ABOUT PORT ARTHUR.

The black-and-white line represents the Manchurian Railway which has termini at Daini and Port Arthur, ten miles apart. General Stoessel, the Commandant of Port Arthur, said: "We must fight to a finish. . . . There is no way out. On three sides is the sea, and on the fourth side will be the enemy. There is no other means but fighting."

Japanese artillery reopened a furious fire upon the summit of Namaokayama, and the roar of its fire told that the crisis of the fight was at hand. The Russian forts which had hitherto been silent woke to life, and a fierce artillery action continued for about 90 minutes. At 5 p.m.

Capturing the Hill.

observers saw signs of movement among the Japanese troops massed upon the slope under cover. The men were forming up; the officers were shaking hands and bidding each other farewell, a strange and pathetic spectacle to those who watched in safety. The colonel stood conspicuous and apart, gazing up at the crest that was to be his tomb. Then the officers saluted and scattered to their places at the head of their men, the regimental colours were unfurled, and simultaneously the company colours, carried to mark the progress of the assault, were taken from their cases, and the mass of armed men with gleaming bayonets stood at attention in the setting sun, while the Japanese artillery concluded its preparation for the assault. The crest of the hill blazed with flame and reeked with smoke; the roar of the guns echoed among the valleys. Suddenly the guns ceased their fire—the signal for the attack. At once the 3,000 troops went forward in one gleaming mass, with close formation, as in the brave days of old. The Japanese artillery resumed its fire, placing its shells always just in front of the infantry. Slowly, as it seemed to the on-lookers of this tremendous spectacle, the bayonets neared the summit; the big Russian gun fired into their very midst, cutting a lane through them, but did not stop them; they halted for a second on the crest, and as they halted each man in the front ranks flung a hand-grenade among the Russians, following it with another, and then another. At this instant "the whole scene was more like a popular representation



[T. Ruddiman's Johnston photo.]
JAPANESE SIEGE GUN AT PORT ARTHUR.

of hell than anything else. Namaokayama presented the appearance of a huge cauldron, from the centre of which clouds of yellow smoke were slowly ascending, caused by the explosion of countless bombs. In the midst of this shells were bursting from both Japanese and Russian guns, while on the edges of the cauldron the Japanese soldiers, their figures showing up black against the yellow smoke, were dancing about, some using the bayonet, some shooting at the Russians as they ran down the reverse side."

The crest of the hill was taken with

comparatively small loss, though in the assault Major-General Yamamoto, one of the best and bravest soldiers in the Japanese army, was struck on the head by a bullet and killed on the spot.

Japanese Trenches.

Flushed with success, the men of the 1st Regiment began to move in the darkness along the ridge which connected Namaokayama to 203 Metre Hill, in the hope of carrying that height also. They reached the point where the slope falls away, dropping down some distance before it again ascends to the summit of 203 Metre Hill. But here they were checked by a terrific shrapnel and rifle-fire, which caused them heavy loss, and compelled them at once to dig themselves into the ground for safety and dear life.

While the 1st Division was assailing with its main force Namaokayama, one of its regiments (the 3rd) was attacking four strong redoubts near Swishiyung, and the 18th Brigade of the 9th Division the work



A TURF-COVERED REDOUBT BUILT BY THE RUSSIANS. [Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"]



JAPANESE LOOK-OUT AND BATTERY NEAR PORT ARTHUR.



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
RED-CROSS WORK AFTER A SKIRMISH NEAR PORT ARTHUR.

known as Fort Kuropatkin and the redoubt near Lungyen. The four redoubts south of Swishiyang commanded the main road into Port Arthur and protected the flank of Sungshushan against assault, at the same time securing the Russian hold upon the waterworks, which were situated near Kuropatkin Fort. The latter fort had been constructed early in the year to close a gap, the existence of which General Kuropatkin had pointed out, and to prevent the Japanese from penetrating between the two main chains of forts, east and west, into the town by the valley of the Swishi River. The Japanese parallels had been

carried exceedingly close to all these works, though not close enough to prevent heavy loss being incurred in the assault. But the Japanese troops chafed against work in the trenches, which they disliked and despised; they preferred to fight in the open, being in this not very unlike the British soldier; their officers were sanguine, and gravely underestimated the Russian power of resistance, and though General Nogi did not share their error, he probably thought it necessary to let them



JAPANESE ARTILLERY ON THE MARCH.

have their way, if only to teach them the bitter truth. The attack on the Swishiying works, which were well constructed, with a deep moat round them, was opened by a furious bombardment on the 19th.

**The Swishiying
Attack.**

The heavy Japanese guns concentrated their fire on the works, and the explosion of their shells cut down the earthwork, and to some extent filled the moat with debris, rendering its passage possible for infantry without ladders. The Russian loss from the bombardment was not heavy; the garrison of the works took shelter in the bombproofs, which were covered with timber, with several feet of earth above. Some of the shells from the Japanese 4.7-in. howitzers, however, penetrated through the covering, and in one bombproof 30 Russians were killed by a single projectile which passed into the interior and burst, killing or burying alive the inmates.

Early on the 20th the 3rd Japanese Regiment, led by Colonel Usijima, advanced to the assault of the redoubts, and carried the first without any great difficulty. But when once inside the stormers found that



RUSSIAN PRISONERS EMBARKING AT MITSUYAHAMA.

They were removed from Matsuyama to Nagoya.

they were exposed to a murderous fire from two of the four redoubts which were placed to the rear of the first two, forming the four angles of a square, and could not penetrate into the bombproofs, which were desperately held by the Russians. Observing the plight of the Japanese the Russians brought up reinforcements, and delivered a vigorous counter-attack, with the result that they forced the Japanese back after a fierce mêlée, and regained possession of the work. Their success was shortlived. The Japanese artillery once more poured into it a murderous hail of shells, which caused heavy loss, for now the two combatants were only a few yards apart, and the Russians had to keep their trenches manned. About 10 a.m. the Japanese again came on, throwing the terrible hand-grenades, and carried the work at the point of the bayonet, following up their victory by rushing the redoubt to the west.

Both the advanced angles of the square were now in their hands, and they were preparing to advance upon the rearward redoubt, when the Russians, demoralised by the Japanese artillery fire and disheartened by their failure to hold the two advanced redoubts, abandoned the position and fell back on Port Arthur.



MAJOR INAGAKI, OF THE JAPANESE CAVALRY,
WHO CAME TO ENGLAND ON A SECRET
MISSION IN JANUARY, 1905.

with mines placed at intervals, not of
the contact type, but fired by electricity,



(Rendelman Johnston photo.)
GENERAL BARON OSEKO,
Commander of the Japanese Division.

They left the bombproofs filled with their belongings, illustrating the panic-stricken nature of their retirement—coats, food, rifles, and ammunition were strewn about the interior in the wildest disorder, while the dirt was unspeakable. In the works two torpedo-tubes were found, which must have been taken from the ships, and which had been used to fire the heads of Whiteheads at the Japanese. The torpedoes do not appear to have exploded, and the Russians must have been disappointed with their new weapon, as they do not seem to have tried the experiment of using it again. In front of the Swishiyng works were also found six naval contact mines buried in the earth; these again did no harm whatever to the Japanese, though wild tales appeared in the Russian press of whole regiments having been blown into eternity by them.

Meantime the 18th Brigade had accomplished its task—the storming of Fort Kuropatkin, which was, on the whole, a stronger work than the Swishiyng Redoubts. It had in front of it the usual tangle of barbed wire,



(Stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.)
GENERAL TESHIMA,

Commander of the Japanese Siege-Artillery round Port Arthur.

and far more dangerous. Immediately in front of the fort was a moat, but of no great depth or difficulty to surmount. The Japanese saps had been carried close up to the moat, while parties of volunteers had crawled forward with shields and cut gaps in the wire fences. Other parties had searched the ground for mines, and one daring

Japanese had detected the junction-box for the cables firing the whole system of mines, and, cautiously removing it, had replaced it, after breaking all the connections, so cleverly that the Russians never discovered that their appliances had been tampered with. On the morning of the 19th the Japanese troops four battalions strong, of the 19th and 36th Regiments, formed up to the rear of the sap and waited for the order to assault.

The siege-artillery all the morning bombarded slowly, the Russians replying with shrapnel directed at



AN INCIDENT IN THE BATTLE OF YENTAI MINES.

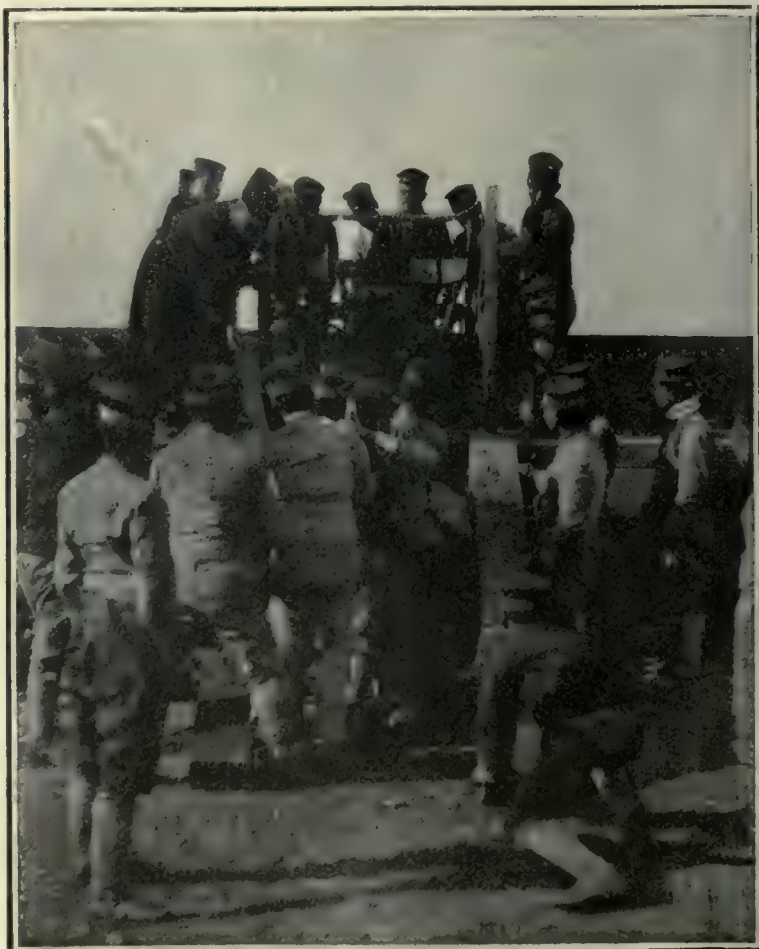
Commanding General: "How is it you are not with your regiment?" Wounded Officer: "General, this is my regiment." The rest had been killed.



[Copyright, 1904, by "Collier's Weekly,"
PUTTING UP A TELEGRAPH WIRE AT
LIAOYANG.

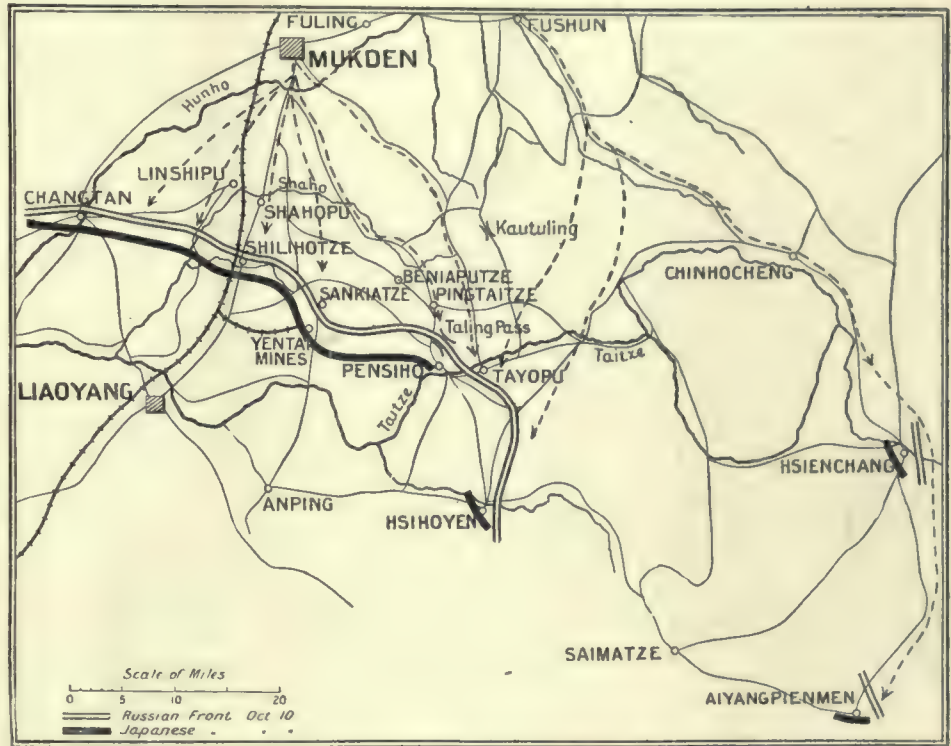
At daybreak the Japanese again advanced to the assault of the trench, and this time the Russians found themselves short of hand-grenades, and were easily dislodged from their position. The fort could now be occupied, but the artillery in the Russian forts and ships had still to be reckoned with. As the Japanese

the Japanese troops in the saps, which inflicted considerable loss upon the men of the 18th Brigade. Early in the afternoon the Japanese fire upon the fort was accelerated, and about 4 p.m., after the infantry had moved forward to the head of the sap, the rate of fire was again increased, so that three or four shells a minute fell within the fort, knocking down its parapet, flinging earth and sand into the moat, and piercing the bombproofs which were not impervious to the Japanese shells. Under the rain of shells the Russian infantry could not hold the work, but fell back from it some little distance, and took shelter in trenches to the rear of the work, under the guns of the great fort of Songshushan. Observing their retreat the Japanese assaulted, carried the work, and, passing through it, attacked the Russians in their trench with hand-grenades. The Russians replied with the same weapon, and for half an hour a fearful combat went on, the two masses of men struggling amid the lurid flame and dense yellow smoke caused by the bombs. Then at last the Russians gave way, and the Japanese poured men into the trench. The Russians, on their part, were immediately reinforced, and returned to the attack, when the Japanese were driven back with grievous loss, leaving behind them one-half their number killed or wounded, and most of the company colours. At nightfall the Japanese held Fort Kuropatkin, but not the ground behind it, and without this the fort was of little value to them, as its interior was swept by fire from the rear.



[Copyright by "Collier's Weekly" in U.S.A.
A GUN-CARRIAGE BEING UNLOADED AT LIAOYANG.

were entrenching, the big guns in Port Arthur opened on the work a terrific fire, before which nothing could stand. Several 10-in. projectiles in quick succession swept the work, wrecking the whole interior, demolishing the earthworks as though they had been children's sand-castles smitten by the oncoming tide, and killed or wounded almost all the men holding the place. Efforts to throw up fresh earthworks under this fire were futile and suicidal; the whole Japanese army would have perished in the attempt



THE SHAOH COUNTRY BEFORE THE BATTLE.

George Philip & Son, Ltd.



THE BOYS OF PORT ARTHUR WERE CALLED ON FOR THE DEFENCE OF THE TOWN AND PLACED IN THE FIRING-LINE.



[S. Smith photo.]

LIAOYANG—THE MOST INTACT PORTION AFTER EVACUATION BY THE RUSSIANS.

without achieving success. Finally the men were withdrawn from the fort, but the trenches immediately in front of it and behind it, being less conspicuous, could be retained, and in these the Japanese infantry crouched, while the guns in Erhlung and Song-shushan Forts fired their mighty shells and shrapnel overhead. The fort was a complete ruin.

Still the Japanese had gained their end; if they

could not
Port Arthur's Waterworks.

Kuropatkin, access to it was impossible for the Russians. The Japanese 19th Infantry Regiment,

during the fighting about Fort Kuropatkin, moved eastwards and seized the important work known as the Lungyen Redoubt, which lay to the east. The waterworks of Port Arthur were now in the possession of the Japanese, who dug for the pipes which ran from them into the fortress, thus cutting off the supply. But the Russians had provided against this danger by boring artesian wells and by installing condensing plant, so that they suffered no immediate hardship. The condensing plant, however, consumed much of the coal provided by the fleet, and this may have prevented the Russian admirals from attempting to break through the blockading squadron before Port Arthur and making for Vladivostock.

On the night of the 20th the troops who had carried Namaokayama made a further advance towards 203 Metre Hill. The regiments engaged were the 15th and 16th

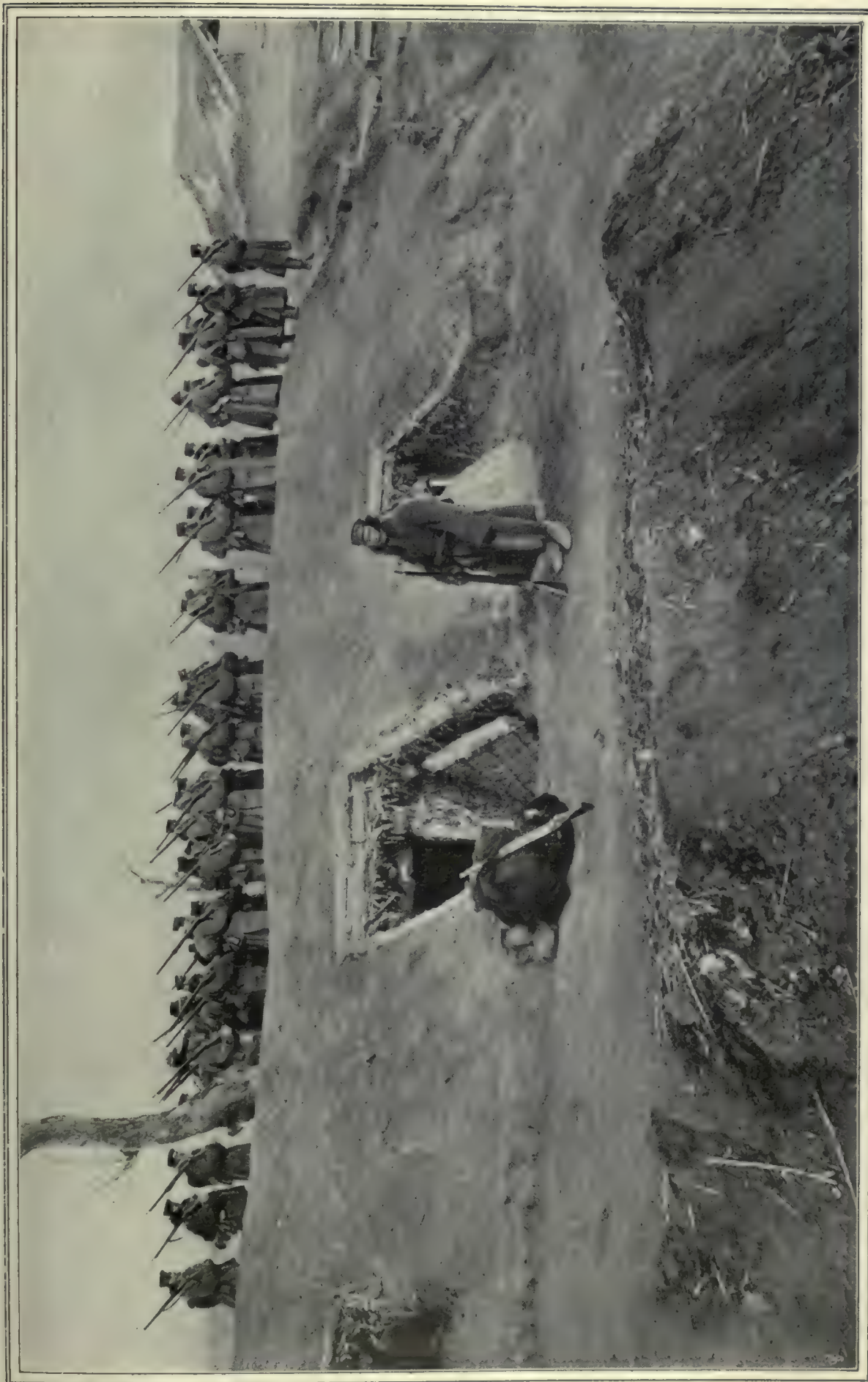
of the 1st
Towards
203 Metre Hill! Division.

About 9 p.m. they attacked the two eminences of the hill, one to the west and the other to the east. The possession of both was necessary if Namaokayama was to be securely held, for so long as 203 Metre Hill was in Russian hands guns and rifles upon it could fire down into the Japanese trenches on Namaokayama. The Japanese fought their way into the works on both summits, carrying the western fort after a desperate struggle with the garrison, in which most of the Russians were



[Photo by Victor Bulla.]

LIAOYANG STATION, AFTER THE BATTLE, IN JAPANESE POSSESSION.



HOW THE JAPANESE KEPT THEMSELVES WARM IN WINTER.

They made dug-outs with all the comforts of home.



BIG RUSSIAN GUNS BEING USED BY THE JAPANESE.

[A sketch by Frederic Whiting.]

These three guns were captured by the Japanese at Nanshan, and were brought up to the front by the railway. They were carried on trucks, which were pushed along the line by Chinese coolies.

killed or wounded. They also carried a part of the eastern fort, but here the Russians retired to the bombproofs, and could not be dislodged. All night the fight continued in the eastern fort; at daybreak the Russians still held a portion of it. The same tactics were adopted by the Russian artillery



GENERAL KUROKI WATCHING THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO THROUGH A STEREO-SCOPIC BINOCULAR TELESCOPE. HIS COMPANION IS GENERAL SIR IAN HAMILTON

as in the case of Fort Kuropatkin. The fire of every heavy Russian gun that would bear was directed upon the works; a storm of 10-in. and 6-in. shells and shrapnel swept the forts, tearing down the trenches and killing or wounding the Japanese detachments on the hill. All day this fearful fire continued without respite, while the Japanese loss swelled to enormous proportions, reaching 3,000 killed and wounded, or fully half the force engaged. * Late in the night of the 21st General

[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"



RUSSIAN WINTER QUARTERS AT THE FRONT: ZEMBANKAS OR DUG-OUTS.



JAPANESE AT THE SHAHO BRIDGING A STREAM.

Matsumara came to the conclusion that the retention of 203 Metre Hill was impossible, and if attempted would involve the destruction of the 1st Division piecemeal. He therefore withdrew his men as the night was verging into day, and 203 Metre Hill was left to the dying and the dead, its crest covered with corpses and with mangled human remains, a sight so dreadful that it moved some of the Russian officers to tears.

The failure of the attack on 203 Metre Hill involved the abandonment for the time being of the attack on the west front, for though the Japanese managed to retain Namaokayama in the teeth of continuous shelling, the hill was useless to them. It

The Attack Falls.

had been taken only as the stepping-stone to 203 Metre Hill, which was the dominating point on this side of Port Arthur. General Nogi now determined to concentrate his efforts upon the eastern forts and the approach from the north. Fresh reinforcements were forwarded to him to fill up the gaps caused by his loss of 6,000 men in this series of attacks. And, as a matter of fact, the loss incurred at



THE FIGHT ON THE SHAHO. FOREIGN ATTACHES WATCHING THE FIGHT FROM AFAR.
The fight was on the plain.

[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"



(Copyright, Victor Ballo.)

Kuropatkin.

GENERAL KUROPATKIN AND HIS STAFF WATCHING THE JAPANESE LINES AT THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.



SOME OF THE OWNERS OF THE BATTLEGROUND AT YENTAI.
[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"
The Chinese and the Japanese were enabled to talk to each other by means of idiographic signs.

CHAPTER XLVI. THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.—I.

AFTER the Battle of Liaoyang both armies received the thanks of their respective sovereigns for the magnificent courage and endurance displayed in that hard-fought field. The Emperor of Japan's message to his men was of great length, and stated that the end of the war was still far distant; it called upon the Japanese troops for increased efforts and yet greater sacrifices.

The Czar's message was addressed to General Kuropatkin, and was conceived in these terms: "I beg you to thank your valiant army for the bravery which it has shown, and I send you my personal congratulations and my best wishes for your success. Courage!" To reinforce the Russian army it was determined to withdraw General Linievitch from northern Korea.

That officer, with the skeleton of an army, had been wandering about the mountainous country north of Gensan, making futile efforts to cut the Japanese communications, which the Russians seem to have supposed ran through Wiju and Seoul to Fusan. Inasmuch, however, as the Japanese commanded the sea, they were able to move their troops and supplies direct by water to Dalny or Newchwang, whence they were sent up by rail or by the Liao to the front.

In the week following the battle General Kuropatkin removed Major-General Orloff from his command of the 54th Division, on account of alleged misconduct in the fighting near Yentai. There was much recrimination and bitterness among the leaders of the Russian army, Kuropatkin blaming Stackelberg and Orloff for his defeat, while they blamed their commander-in-

The Yentai Incident.

chief for failing to give them support. The truth was that capable officers trained in the modern scientific methods of war were rare in the Russian army. There were many gallant generals ready to give their lives, but in twentieth-century warfare bravery is the least important quality.



A SMALL MOUNTAIN RANGE OF STORES FOR THE JAPANESE.
[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly," in U.S.A.
Photographed at Yentai Railway-station by J. H. Hare.

On September 17 General Kuropatkin, surprised at the absence of any sign of a Japanese advance upon Mukden, and observing that none of Marshal Oyama's troops had moved beyond the line of the Shaho, despatched a strong force to reconnoitre the country between Mukden and Pensiho, under Generals Rennenkampf and Sampsonoff. Near Pingtaitze it came into collision with one brigade of General Kuroki's army, which inflicted upon it considerable loss, and drove it back. General Kuropatkin, however, strengthened his force in this quarter, and on the 20th a sharp skirmish took place at Taling Pass, between Pingtaitze and Pensiho. In this the Russians had the worst of matters, and were once more forced north. Ten days later a body of Russian cavalry appeared at Changtan, on the opposite Japanese flank, and attempted to burn a large number of Chinese junks on the river Hunho which had been carrying supplies for the Japanese up to the front, but were

**Skirmish
at Taling Pass.**



STORES AT YENTAI RAILWAY-STATION FOR DISTRIBUTION TO JAPANESE REGIMENTS.

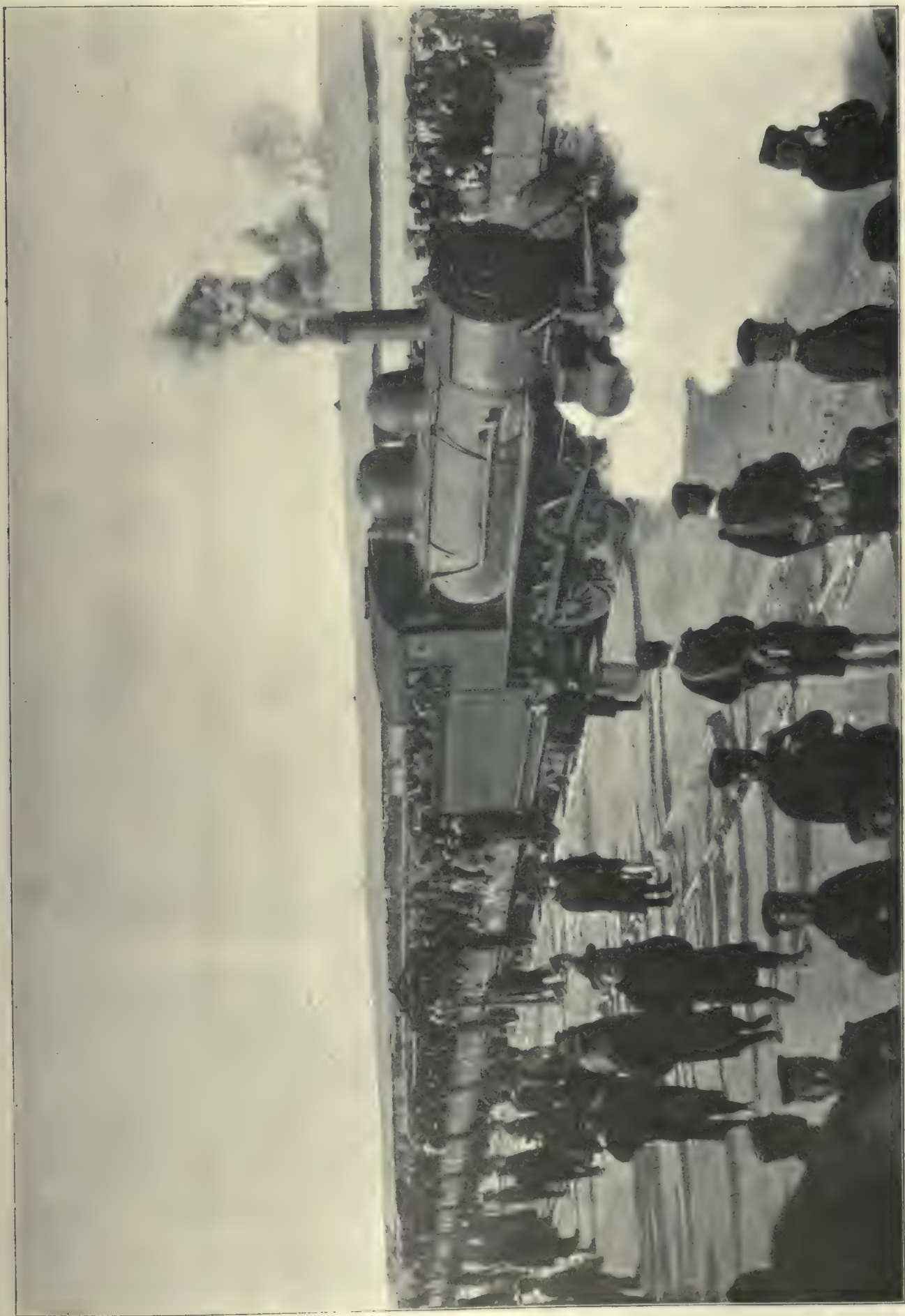
[Photographed by J. H. Hare. Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."]

repulsed without any great difficulty. The Russian object was rather to ascertain what the Japanese were doing than to effect a great coup.

In the last week of September the weather, which at this time of the year in southern Manchuria was usually fine and warm, turned prematurely wet and cold, and frosts were experienced at night. The

**Kuropatkin's
Position.**

Japanese were not taken unprepared; they had already made ready for a winter campaign, and had issued warm clothing to their troops. But the greater part of the Russian army had still only its summer dress, with the result that the men suffered severely. Large supplies were ordered from the Chinese or brought up by the Sinminting Railway, which had now become one of the mainstays of the Russian commissariat department. The interval of inaction was spent by the Russians in erecting strong field-works north of the Shaho and strengthening the defences of Mukden. Towards the end of the month the report spread through the army and reached the ears of



Photo, copyright, "Collier's Weekly."

A TRAIN OF JAPANESE REINFORCEMENTS BEING DRAWN INTO YENTAI STATION BY AN AMERICAN ENGINE.

Mr. J. H. Hare succeeded in photographing this train just as it was arriving at Yentai Station.



THE GUNS AMONG THE MILLET-FIELD FURROWS.

[Victor Bulla photo.]

These millet-fields silently witnessed the agonies of death and suffering. Thus one Russian officer, writing after the battle of the Shaho, said: "Hours often passed before the wounded were picked up, and many lay hidden in the millet fields or in the trenches a whole day." Many of the wounded were not picked up at all, but "died slowly in the blood-stained millet-fields." Mr. Maxwell speaks of the "farrowed fields of friable loam bristling with millet stubble hard as bamboo and sharp as razors."

clusively that the Japanese could not put more than 280,000 men in the field. As one-third of these were at Port Arthur, it followed that there could not be more than 190,000 men north of Liaoyang. General Kuropatkin at the close of September had at least 240,000, or, according to some calculations, over 260,000 men. He thus may well have believed that his hour of victory had come at last.

Meanwhile the Japanese Government had realised the necessity of greatly increasing the strength of its army. The war had not, as the Japanese had hoped, ended in September with the fall of Port Arthur and the capture of General Kuropatkin's whole force; on the contrary, it was now certain that the struggle must be prolonged for many months. Immense forces were being mobilised by Russia. At the end of September the term of service with the Japanese

Japanese Increase their Army.

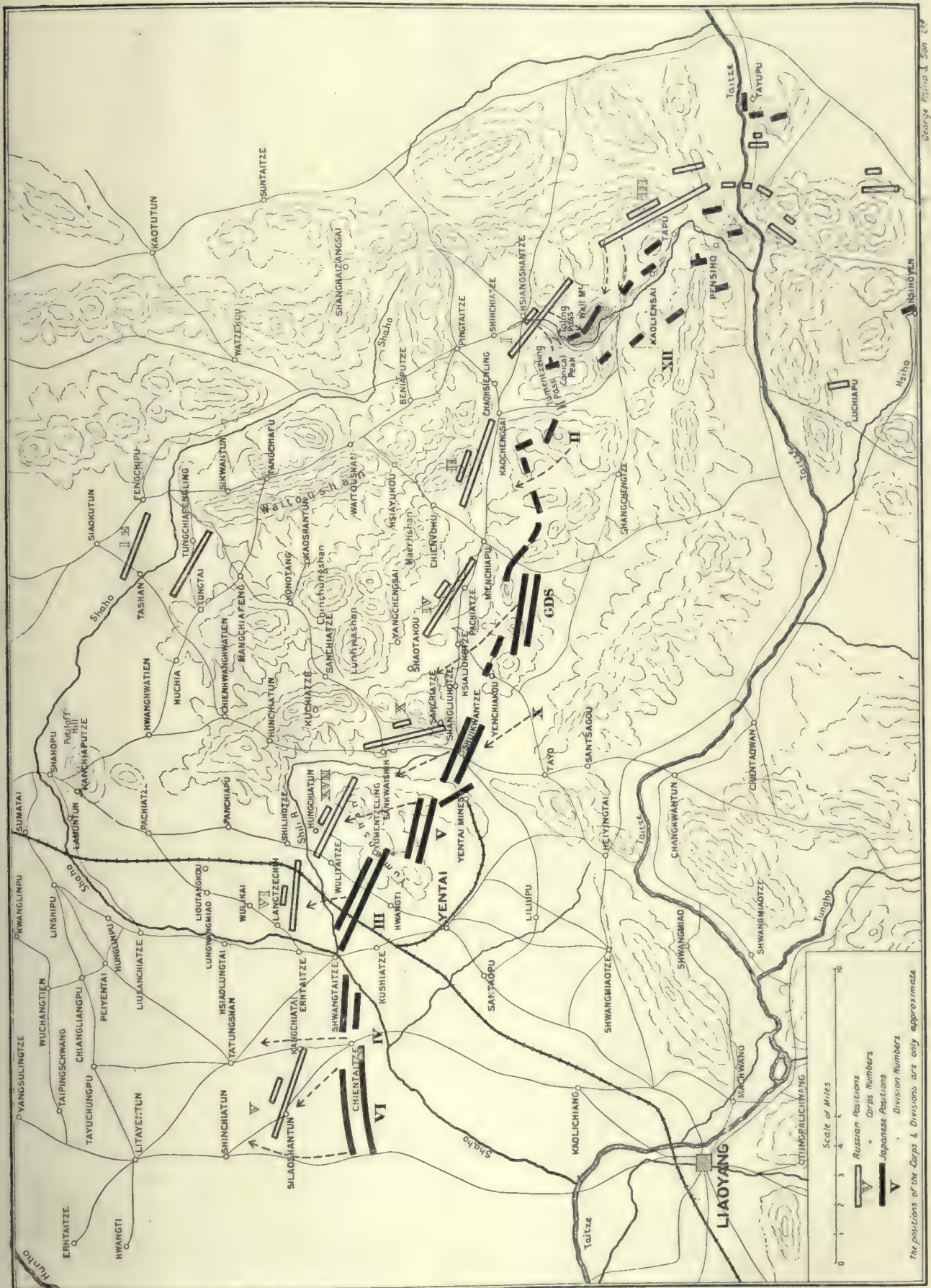
regular army was extended from 12 to 17 years, thus increasing the number of men available by 600,000, while the levy of conscripts for 1905 would give Japan an additional 300,000, when men unfit for service had been eliminated. These recruits would bring the total Japanese force in 1905 up to over 1,000,000, even when all allowance had been made for losses. The ordinary reserves had so far sufficed to meet all needs, and the Japanese force actually in the field at this date was certainly nearer 400,000 men than 300,000, but of the 400,000 one-fourth were before Port Arthur, others in Korea, and a part had not yet reached the front, so that near Liaoyang there were not more than 220,000 men. Japan was therefore able to contemplate the future with equanimity. Whatever reinforcements the Russians might send over the Trans-Siberian Railway, the Japanese Government could forward to the front two men for each Russian one, and the Japanese preponderance would steadily grow with each month of the war.

On October 2 General Kuropatkin issued a manifesto to his army, which is believed to have been drafted for him at St. Petersburg. It declared that in the seven

the Japanese that General Kuropatkin intended to take the offensive. He had been stung by reproaches in the Russian Press, and by the discovery that the Japanese at Liaoyang had no such superiority in numbers as he had imagined; perhaps, also, he had received orders from the Czar to attack the Japanese. He was heavily reinforced and had regained his confidence, while calculations were appearing every day in the German and Russian military Press proving con-



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."] THRESHING THE EARS OF MILLET.





BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.

[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."]

"Stop all traffic! the battle has begun." Message signalled by a sentry at the pontoon-bridge over the Taitze.

victory over the enemy. The Emperor has assigned for the conflict with Japan forces sufficient to assure us victory. All the difficulties of transporting these forces over a distance of 7,000 miles are being overcome. If the regiments which have been sent prove insufficient, fresh troops will arrive, for the inflexible wish of the Emperor that we should vanquish the enemy will be inflexibly fulfilled. Now the moment to go and meet the enemy, for which the whole army has been longing, has come; the time has arrived for us to compel the Japanese to obey our will, for the strength of the Manchurian army is great enough to begin the forward movement. Bear in mind the importance of victory to Russia, and, above all, how necessary it is speedily to relieve our brothers at Port Arthur, who for seven months have heroically maintained the defence of the fortress entrusted to their charge. The illustrious ruler of the Russian land, together with the whole of Russia, prays for you and blesses you for your heroic deeds. Strengthened by these prayers, imbued with the consciousness of the importance of the task that has fallen to us, let us go forward fearlessly with a firm determination to do our duty to the last and without sparing our lives. The will of God be with us all!"

Such was the interminable proclamation which heralded a bold effort to relieve Port Arthur. The first attempt

The Russian Advance.

had failed disastrously at Wafangkou; the fate of the second we have yet to see. The scene of the now imminent conflict between the two armies was to be the stretch of bare mountainous country which borders the Shaho, a little stream flowing in a wide loop from the high ground near Pingtaitze past Shaho Station, a few miles south of Mukden, to the neighbourhood of Liaoyang, where it enters the Liao. It is everywhere fordable with ease in the summer. From Liaoyang to Pingtaitze is about 30 miles across the loop, but measured along the river the distance is over 50 miles.

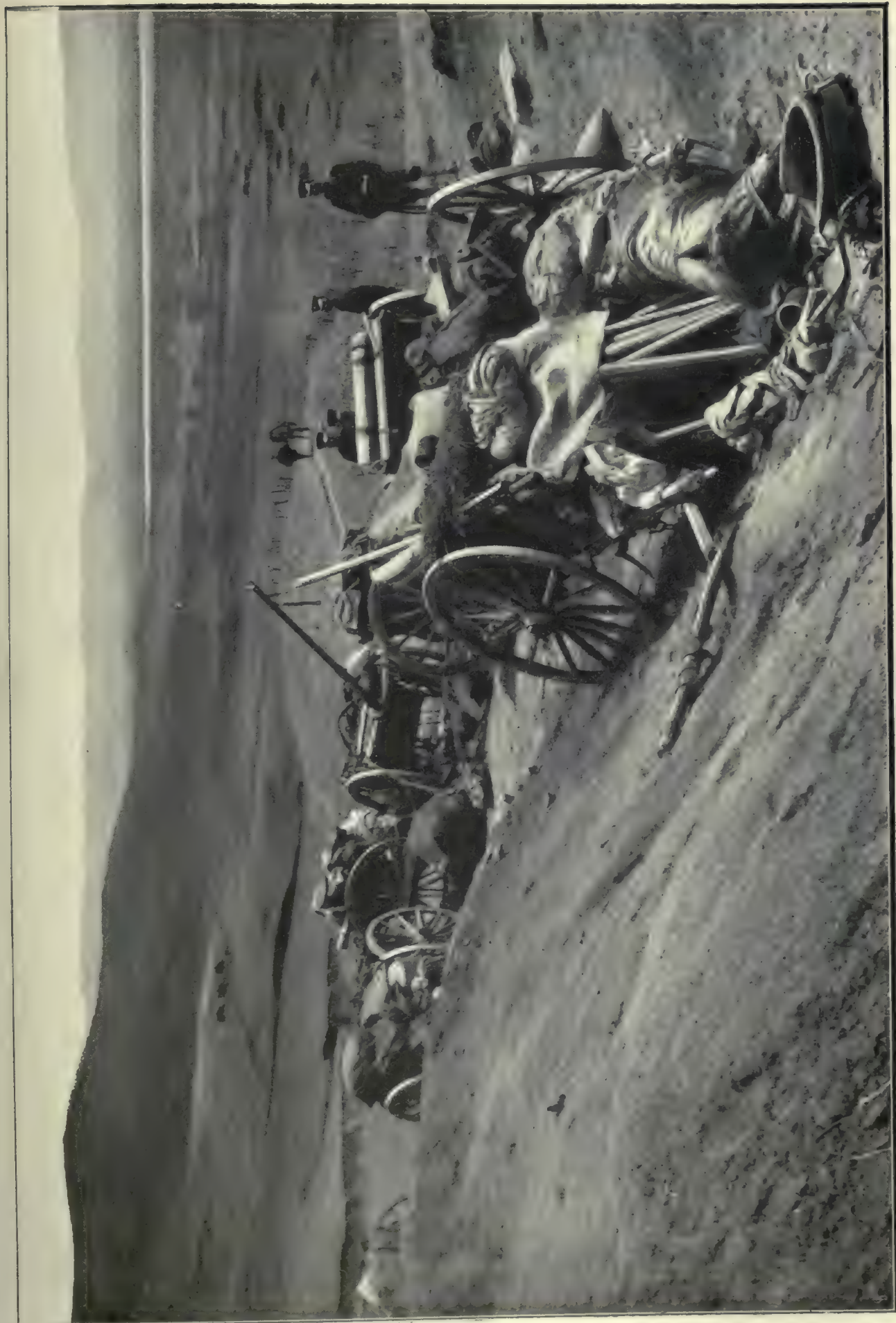
On October 4 General Kuropatkin gave the order for a general advance. His left, consisting of the 3rd, 1st,

months since Japan "treacherously fell upon us at Port Arthur" the **Kuropatkin's Manifesto.** Russian troops had performed many heroic deeds. The Japanese, however, "in their arrogance continue to dream of complete victory." Time had been required by Russia to strengthen her army, and this was the reason for the retreat from Tashihchao and Liaoyang. "I ordered the retreat with a sorrowful heart, but with unshaken confidence that it was necessary in order to gain a complete and decisive



(Victor Bulla photo.)

A RUSSIAN FIELD-TELEPHONE.



EFFECT OF A JAPANESE BOMBARDMENT AT THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.

and 2nd Siberian Corps, from left to right, was stationed from Fuling to Fushun, under General Stackelberg; the centre, composed of the 4th, 10th, and 17th European Corps, was stationed on the main road south of the railway, with the 1st European Corps in reserve to the rear; while the right consisted of the 6th and 5th Siberian Corps to the west of the railway. On the extreme flanks were the Russian cavalry and the Cossacks — Mist-

chenko, Stadriloff, and Rennenkampf to the east, and Grekoff and Korsakoffsky to the west. The general idea was that the Russian left should push rapidly south towards the Taitze and outflank the Japanese army in that direction. The main strength of the Russian army—three corps on the left and two in the centre—was to assail the Japanese troops between Yentai Mines and Pensiho, drive them back, cross the Taitze, and menace the Japanese communications with the south, while the centre and right merely marked time and made demonstrations against Marshal Oyama. It was the same plan in essence as that carried out by the Japanese at Liaoyang, the Russian left, facing General Kuroki, undertaking the very rôle which a month before had fallen to him.

The first plain indication to the Japanese that action was impending—though they obtained full information from Mukden of the Russian plans—was the appearance of a body of Russian cavalry far away on their extreme right. Making an enormous sweep through Chinhocheng,

and avoiding Hsienchang, where there was a Japanese garrison, the Cossacks on October 4 moved on Aiyang-pienmen, which lies between Saimatse and the Korean frontier, in the country through which General Kuroki had fought his way in June. The Russian force was engaged in effecting reconnaissances and in covering the left flank of General Kuropatkin's army; it delivered no serious attack on Aiyang-pienmen, but fell back northwards after a slight skirmish. On the same day the Russian cavalry showed itself to the east of Yentai Mines. The Japanese strengthened their outposts and waited for the Russian attack to develop, holding a line from Chientaitze, west of the Shaho, through Yentai Mines to the neighbourhood of Pensiho. They had detached garrisons, or observation-points, in front of this line at Shahopu and Beniaputze and to its rear to the south-east. Their main force was not scattered, but kept ready behind the line of outposts to deliver a vigorous counter-stroke, which Marshal Oyama wisely regarded as the best means of meeting the Russian attack.



[Victor Bulla photo.]

ERECTING WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS IN THE MILLET-FIELDS.



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
CHINESE STACKING THE EARS OF MILLET FOR
USE BY THE JAPANESE TROOPS.



GENERAL KUROPATKIN VISITING THE RUSSIAN OUTPOSTS OF THE SHAHO



{Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
ATTEMPTING TO DRAW WATER FROM THE WELL AT SANDEPU
DURING 14 DEGREES BELOW ZERO.

and Shaho; it was to go south some distance before it turned westwards to work to the rear of the Japanese.

On the 7th the Russian mounted troops showed themselves at Hsienchang, some 50 miles to the east of Pensiho, where the Japanese had a garrison, and attacked the place, their attacks continuing for several days. This same day Rennenkampf's and Mistchenko's Cossacks reached the valley of the Taitze, where they threw detachments across the stream near Tayupu, after some skirmishing with the Japanese outposts in this direction. The Japanese dropped back from Beniapatze and Shahopu, since the detachments stationed at these places had not been intended to offer a serious resistance, and the retreat of

On the 4th there was skirmishing near Yentai Mines, and during the next three days the Russian left was marching steadily south-east or south upon Pingtaitze and Pensiho, watched by the Japanese scouts, who fell back before the masses of Russians. The weather was clear and cold, the nights marked by hard frost; but the days were delightful, without the suffocating heat of August and September. The Russian left, under General Stackelberg, made its way through the mountains, which rise in a troubled sea between the upper waters of the Taitze



{Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."

A JAPANESE HOT BATH AT THE SHAHO.

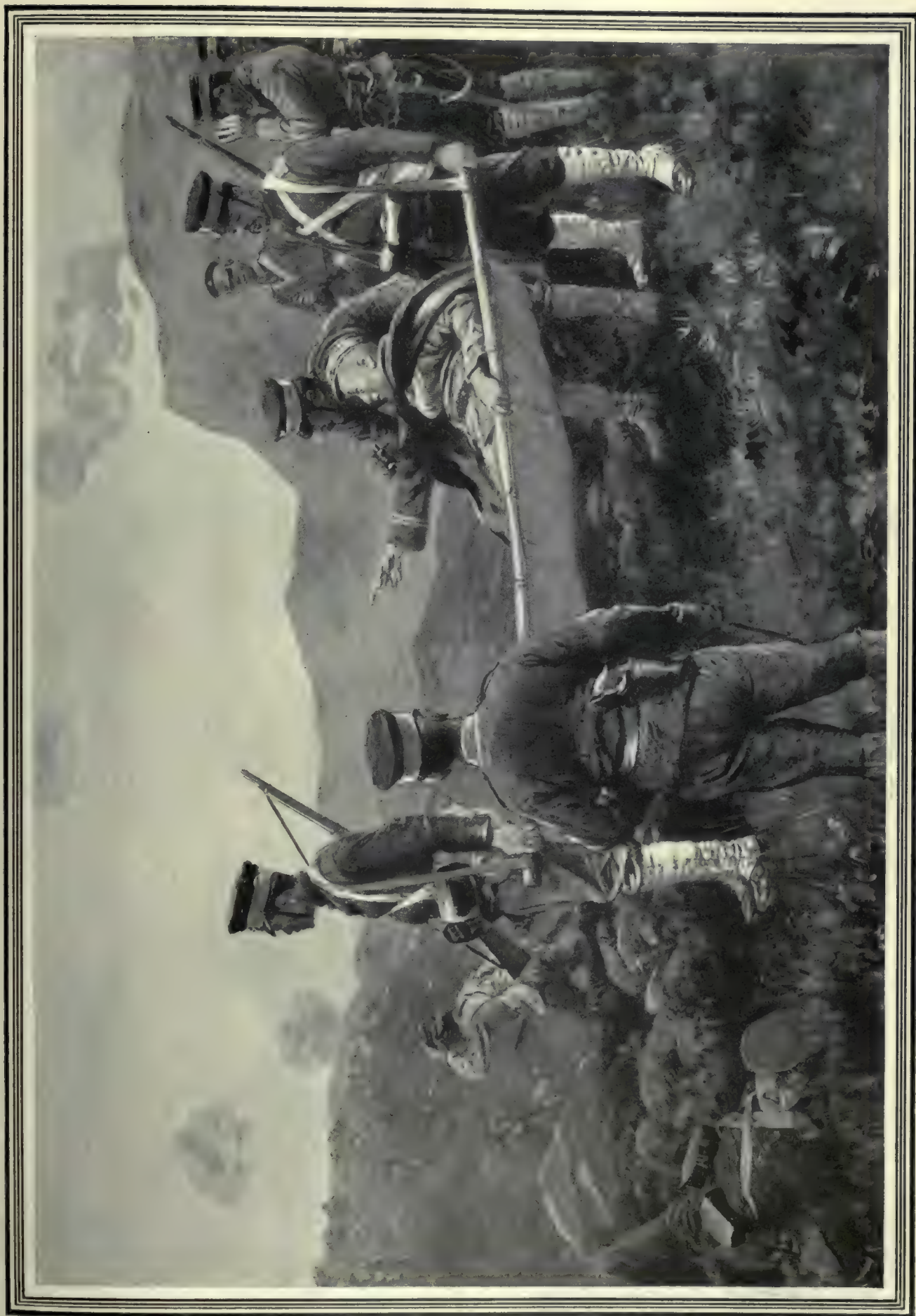
A large Chinese jar is let into the earth, and underneath a little furnace is built, with a flue to carry the smoke away.



WINTER QUARTERS OF THE JAPANESE ARMY AT THE SHAHO.

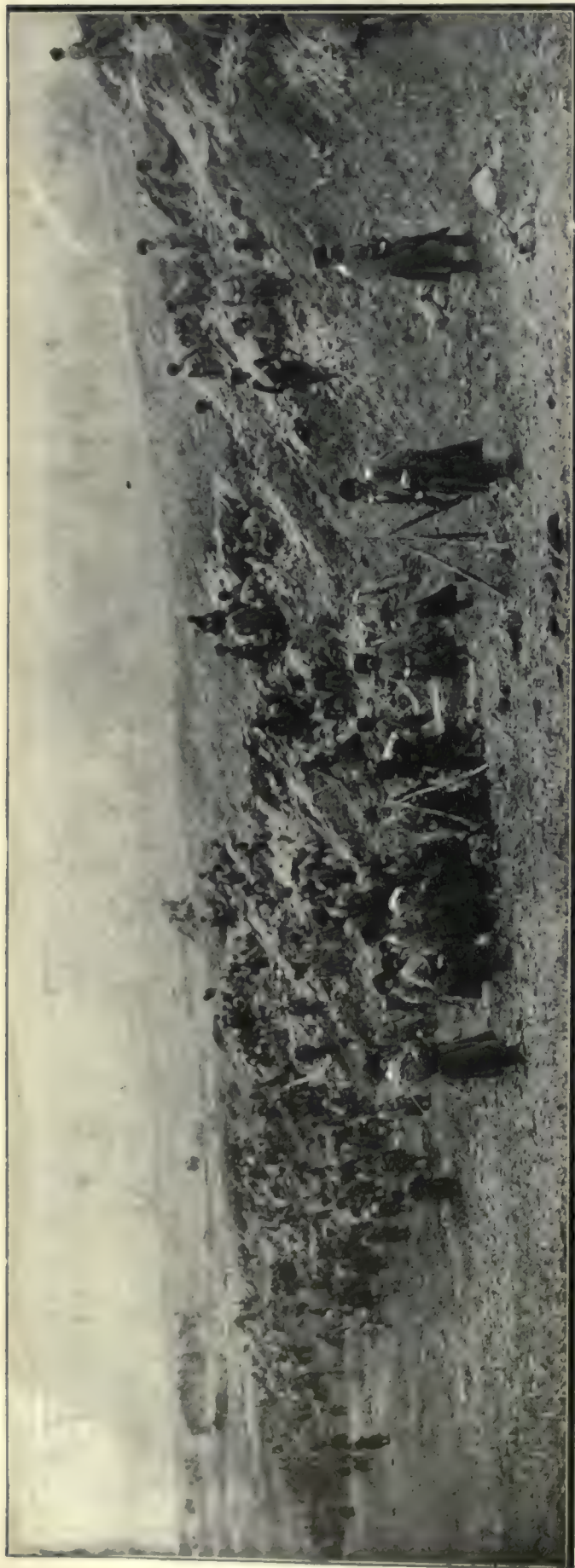
a few hundred infantry and cavalry was interpreted by the Russian General Staff as a general retirement of Marshal Oyama's army. As a matter of fact, the Japanese were merely drawing back the better to spring upon the Russian army.

All the 8th and 9th the Russian columns streamed southwards, meeting with little or no resistance, and General Kuropatkin's immense army deployed along a front which covered nearly 50 miles. Crossing the Shaho the centre took possession of Shahopu, which feat



GAME TO THE LAST. AN INCIDENT AT THE SHAHO.

This picture represents a wounded Japanese officer who insisted, when placed on a litter, on being carried to a spot where he could direct his men.



THE RUSSIAN ATTEMPT TO OUTFLANK THE JAPANESE RIGHT.

This picture illustrates an incident in the attempt of the Russians to outflank the Japanese. A Russian force under Stachelberg started from Fushan in order to menace the Japanese right. All went well until the force debouched on "a sort of Trafalgar Square of a valley," where all the roads from everywhere opened. Plunged right down in the middle of it was found a mountain standing like the Nelson Column, its summit being a huge mass of rock like an immense head springing sheer from the sloping shoulders of the mountain proper. Strange to say this remarkable hill was not on the map. There were Japanese on the crest of the mountain in an utterly inaccessible position, and they shot down the first Russian soldiers who tried to make their way up its slopes. The Siberian veterans, having had hill-fighting practice ever since the Yalu, marched doggedly up the lower slopes, only to be shot down.

was declared to be a great Russian success, while the left occupied Beniaputze and plunged into the mountainous country between the upper Shaho and the Taitze. All the 9th there was constant skirmishing along the line of the Russian front, the Japanese doing their best to delay the Russian movement, but not risking a serious battle till it could clearly be ascertained what the Russians were about. Early on the morning of the 9th a Russian infantry brigade crossed the Taitze, following behind the Cossacks, to the east of Pensiho, and, moving swiftly westwards, cut the communications between Pensiho and Hsihoyen, leaving the Japanese garrison at the latter place isolated. A very large Russian force showed itself near the Taling Pass, a position of the extremest importance, which was held by a small Japanese force with instructions to fight to the last man rather than surrender ground to the enemy. Near Pachiatze other Russian columns appeared, and on the railway the columns were five miles deep, proving that enormous masses were about to be thrown upon the Japanese. The heads of the column rapidly neared the valley of the little streamlet Shiliho, while well to the west of the Shaho the Russian troops appeared directing their march towards Liaoyang.

The kaoliang crop was cut if not harvested, so that the land was bare of all cover, and as the Russian Staff attributed the Japanese victory at Liaoyang to the shelter which the high crops gave, the Russian troops felt perfect confidence in themselves. They would meet the "treacherous yellow dwarfs" in the open, when, they argued, Russian valour and superiority of physique must inevitably prevail. Told by their leaders that they were superior in numbers, and that the Japanese army had practically annihilated itself by its long series of desperate attacks on the

great works at Liaoyang, they looked for an easy success, and the mere fact that they were advancing, and the enemy apparently giving ground, told upon their morale in a favourable manner. Of the real dispositions of the Japanese neither they nor their leaders knew much. The cavalry reconnaissances had ascertained little; behind the impenetrable screen of Japanese outposts all was mystery; but it was vaguely rumoured that Marshal Oyama was concentrating at Yentai, on the ground where a month before General Kuroki had delivered his famous flank attack.

As the Russian movements developed, Marshal Oyama took his measures of precaution. Fierce fighting began on the 9th near Pensiho, where Mistchenko and Rennenkampf had succeeded in menacing the Japanese flank, which was held only by a weak brigade of General Kuroki's army. The Russians to the south of the Taitze threatened to roll up the Japanese line, and were only prevented from so doing by the fighting power of the Japanese infantry, who are never so formidable as when in a desperate position. They stood their ground, though weaker far in numbers than the Russians, and reinforcements were hurried to them from the 1st Army. A division was directed to march due east, and the Japanese cavalry under Prince Kanin was ordered to march east, cross the south of the Taitze, threaten the Russian flank, and thus turn the tables on the assailants. Other detachments were sent to Hsihoyen to meet the Russian advance to the south of the Taitze. On the afternoon of the 9th General Kuropatkin moved his headquarters south of the Shaho, behind his left centre, in readiness for the great blow which he intended to strike next day.

That same night the Japanese Staff determined to meet the Russian advance with a Japanese advance. The reports of spies and of Japanese scouts agreed that the Russians were weak beyond the railway and along the lower course of the Shaho, and that the main Russian concentration was against the eastern wing of the Japanese army. This being so, Marshal Oyama resolved to carry out precisely the same manoeuvre against the Russians that they were attempting against himself. He would strike

Oyama's Precautions.

The Japanese Plan.



JAPANESE FIELD-TELEPHONE IN USE AT THE SHAHO.

at the Russian right, roll it up, and threaten the communications with Mukden, and at the same time he would break through the Russian centre. It was a bold plan, but the Japanese army had been trained always to take the offensive and to meet blow with counter-stroke. General Kuroki would be left to grapple with the Russian left; Generals Nodzu and Oku, with their magnificent troops, could be trusted to carry out the Japanese plan, which, if successful, must involve either the hurried recall of General Stackelberg and his army on the Japanese right, or the destruction and capture of that force. Some hours were required to complete the dispositions and deploy the Japanese armies for the great attack that was to foil General Kuropatkin and send his vast host staggering back across the Shaho. Thus the offensive was not vigorously begun until late on the 10th by the Japanese. And if Pensiho and the Japanese force about it were not able to hold their own for some days or hours the Japanese plan must collapse, and a general retirement to Liaoyang be ordered. Pensiho,

then, was the critical point.

All day the fight had raged about that place, the Russian line curving right round

it from the neighbourhood of Hsiangshantze to Liuchiapu. The Japanese force was placed at the strategic points, occupying the heights dominating the river bottoms, so that it formed no uninterrupted line, and was strung out along a front of some 15 miles, which gave less than 1,000 men per mile. Yet the men of the 12th Division would not yield a foot. For 12 hours on the 9th, from morning to night, the battle continued with indecisive result, the Russian masses constantly growing, till Stackelberg must have had five men to the Japanese one. At 4 p.m. the head of the first Japanese reinforcements arrived on the field at Kaoliensai, and, driving back some few Russians seen in the neighbourhood, pushed forward to Pensiho to the succour of the garrison there. Other detachments were sent



RUSSIAN STRAGGLERS ATTACKED BY CHUN-CHUSES.



AT THE SHAHO. JAPANESE TROOPS BRINGING IN WINTER FUEL.

north to the Taling and Tumentzeling, through which all-important passes it was clear that the Russians meant to advance. They were the gates through the range of mountains opening westwards towards Liao-yang; on the retention of these passes, coupled with that of Pensiho, depended the safety of Marshal Oyama's army. Far to the east of Pensiho a weak Japanese detachment was completely enveloped at Tayapu, but it clung to its position, and its tenacity saved it from disaster.

Late in the night of the 9-10th the Russian troops of the 1st and 3rd Corps, who had arrived in front of the Taling and Tumentzeling passes, made an attack upon the Japanese detachments holding these two defiles. Neither side was in great force, for the bulk of the Russian corps had not as yet arrived. After hand-to-hand fighting the Russians were repulsed; but near Pensiho they were more successful. Attacking two heights, each of which was garrisoned by a small Japanese force, they carried them. One lay immediately to the east of Pensiho, and the other east of Kaoliensai, and both were of considerable importance. At another



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."] JAPANESE STAFF OFFICER WATCHING THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.



[R. Johnston photo.
PROVISIONS LEFT BY THE RETREATING RUSSIANS AT THE SHAHO.

turning to the second company he seized the battalion flag and led the company forward, making a fierce counter-attack upon the Russians just as they imagined that their work was done, and hurled them off the crest upon a Russian battalion advancing below. This was thrown into confusion and attacked by him in flank with a heavy rifle-fire, when it recoiled, leaving a couple of hundred killed or wounded on the slope. Even the positions which had been won by the Russians were not long retained. Soon after daybreak on the 10th the Russians were called upon to meet a most determined counter-attack delivered by the troops at Pensiho, who had now received some small reinforcements.

A thick fog overhung the mountains when the Japanese advanced against the lost positions. The Russians could see nothing of their enemy till the Japanese were upon them. A swift, determined charge, the flashing of Japanese bayonets, a fierce hand-to-hand struggle, in which the little men dodged in under the Russian guard, and the two heights were regained by General Kuroki's army. Hosts of Russian dead were left on the heights, while the Japanese loss was only moderate. The Russians did not, however, abandon the attack. Heavy fighting began and continued all the day along the small stream which flows into the Taitze near Pensiho, the Russian 3rd Corps desperately attempting to force the Japanese back. The conduct of the Japanese troops was superb. Though still outnumbered they fought like lions, knowing that if they gave way catastrophe must befall the army.

In part the Russian failure was due to the badness of the Russian maps. Though the Pensiho country had been for four years in the occupation of the Russian army, though the Japanese had advanced through it on the eve of Liaoyang, no Russian engineer had ever troubled to survey

point in this direction the Russians during the night attacked a height held by one company of Japanese infantry, mustering, all told, 200 rifles. A second company was stationed below the crest of the height, under the battalion commander. Roused in the night by the rattle of rifle-firing, the officer proceeded to the summit, and found that the first company had already been driven off or annihilated. Re-



JAPANESE WITH RUSSIAN PRISONERS AT THE SHAHO.



THE TOIL AND DISTRESS OF A RUSSIAN RETREAT IN MANCHURIA DURING THE EARLIER OPERATIONS ON THE SHAHO.



GENERAL LINIEVITCH AND HIS STAFF WATCHING THE JAPANESE POSITIONS ON THE SHAHO.

it. The Tumentzeling Pass was altogether misplaced; the great ranges of mountains about Pensiho were most imperfectly represented, with the result that the Russian generals had only a very dim idea of where they were. Without the perfect system of communication adopted by the Japanese they were like blind men pitted against men in perfect possession of their sight. They could only feel blindly for the strategic points amidst the tangle of mountain valleys, while the Japanese had surveyed the country, and knew what was vital and what was unimportant. Nor could the Russians easily obtain information from the Chinese. Few of them could speak or write this difficult language, while almost every Japanese could understand it when written, and most of the Japanese officers spoke it fairly well.

While this fight was in progress near Pensiho

**Fighting by a great
the Yentai struggle
Mines.**

had begun to the east of Yentai Mines, where the Russians attacked a long line of heights held by the Japanese. The fighting in this quarter was mainly with artillery. The Russians had seized and were entrenching an eminence near Shaotakou, and the Japanese were making their preparations to assault it. In the Japanese centre the 10th Division was faced by a



(Ruddiman Johnston photo.)

JAPANESE TROOPS MENDING A BRIDGE.

Russian force which had established itself to the east of the Yumentzeling range, while the 5th Division had opened an attack upon the 17th Russian Corps in the neighbourhood of Wulitaitze, and was beginning to make headway, receiving, as the day went on, the support of the 3rd Division. To the west of the railway and of the Shaho the Japanese 2nd Army was developing an attack that was already causing General Kuropatkin grave anxiety. Two of its divisions were marching due north by the parallel roads which lead to Tatungshanpu and Shihchiatun, and thus moving directly towards Mukden. As the Russians only had one corps in this direction the Japanese made steady progress, storming Tatungshanpu and Silaoshantun, and forcing back the Russian right wing till it ran almost parallel with the railway.

During the night of the 10-11th the Russians

on the
By the Japanese
Taling Pass. right flank,

in the direction of the Taling Pass and Pensiho, showed great activity. More troops came up, and an attempt was made to push through the pass to the south-west. The Russian infantry marched into the gloomy defile, seeing no trace of the Japanese, who, high up on the crests of the mountains, lay in hiding, and waited in grim silence for their opportunity. It came when the Russians had advanced far into the pass. A heavy fire was poured down upon the Russians far below, and, though they gallantly stood their ground, their bravery only increased their losses indefinitely. They were compelled to do ultimately what it would have been wiser to do at once, so soon as it was certain that the defile was held—retire.



DEFEAT OF A RUSSIAN BATTERY ON THE SHAHO.

During the night of the 10-11th the Russians in the centre retired a slight distance, but the left, further reinforced, made ready to renew its attack on the Taling and Tumentzeling passes. Facing the 1st Corps was a high, conical hill, rising 800ft. above the valley, on which the Japanese were entrenched. A second mountain, flat-topped and precipitous on the face fronting the Russians, rose to the south-east of the conical hill, and from its wall-like face was called by the Russians Wall Mountain. Here again were



Victor Bulla photo.

GENERAL KUROPATKIN WITH HIS STAFF INSPECTING SOME MEN OF THE FOURTH ARMY CORPS.

the Japanese. To dislodge them from these two eminences was the problem, and not an easy one. The troops of the 1st Corps advanced against them from the north, while a brigade of the 3rd Corps attacked them from the east. The attack was prepared by a heavy shelling of the heights, carried out by six batteries with General Kondratovitch's division of the 1st Corps. The 48 Russian guns poured in a storm of shrapnel, to which as yet the Japanese made no reply. Then the 34th Regiment was ordered to advance to the assault of Wall Mountain, and the 33rd and 36th Regiments to the attack of the formidable Conical Hill. General Kashtalinsky, with the 3rd Division of the 3rd Corps, simultaneously attacked from the east, where the slope of Wall Mountain looked at first sight easier.

The attack of the 1st Corps did not make great progress. The

sturdy Siberian infantry gallantly crept up the lower slopes of Conical Hill, but after a time found themselves checked by the Japanese fire. Despite the hail of shrapnel which the Russian artillery poured upon the hill the groups of Russian skirmishers found that the courage and determination of the Japanese were unabated; their rifles flashed incessantly, and a steady trickle of wounded men down the hill began, while the slopes were covered with Russian dead. The Russians advanced in too close formation, so that many of the Japanese shots took effect. As the Russians watched the summits of the mountains from afar they could see the Japanese line, a few faint dots, half-hidden in the slight haze of dust cast up by the rapid rifle-firing; they could make out the stretchers going and



RUSSIAN CAÑON GUN.

under a terrific fire, they found that above them, near the crest of the ridge, rose a wall of rock, which was practically unclimbable. Born mountaineers like the Japanese might have made their way up, but the Russian peasant was helpless. The 34th Regiment was not more fortunate; it lost enormously, but it did not carry the Japanese position, and with a sense of exasperation the Russian generals realised that a mere handful of men was holding off a whole army. Towards evening the Japanese became bolder, and suddenly showed a battery on the mountain. It opened fire on a Russian battalion which was marching unconcernedly up from Hsiangshantze, as the officers knew that they were outside of rifle-range, and were not aware that the Japanese had guns. It took three minutes for the Russians to break and take to cover, but in that short period of time 20 men were killed and 52 wounded. The Russian batteries opened fire immediately, but before they could get the range of the daring Japanese gunners the guns had been withdrawn and the target had gone. The Japanese appeared to have the intelligence and energy of demons, and the word went round the discomfited Russian legions that the yellow dwarfs were invincible.

Further to the west fighting was fierce about

coming, see the men with boxes of ammunition arrive, and mark the flash of the exploding shell and shrapnel. All day the fight continued, with no result for the Russians except a host of casualties, and as evening approached Conical Hill was still in the possession of the Japanese.

Upon Wall Mountain the attack was not one whit more successful.

The Japanese position had been excellently selected, and was all but impregnable. When Kashtalinsky's men climbed the lower slopes



ARRIVAL OF THE RUSSIAN PRISONERS OF WAR FROM THE SHAHO AT KOMACHI STATION, NEAR MATSUYAMA.



THE A.D.C. TO PRINCE KUNI.

[R. Johnston photo.]

their way some distance up the hills, driving the Russians back, and secured a good position for a further attack on the Russian lines. The weakness of their artillery was, during the morning, a serious impediment to them; its range was too short for it to cover and prepare the Japanese attacks without venturing out in the open, where it was at once met by the concentrated fire of the Russian guns, so that the Japanese infantry had to win the battle almost without the help of artillery in the centre.

On the Japanese left much ground was gained, and the Japanese columns,

Outflanking the Russians.

marching rapidly north, neared Litayentun, so that they had outflanked the Russians in this quarter, and were now threatening to turn in eastwards upon the valley of the Shaho, a move which would imperil the three corps on the Russian left away in the hills near Pensiho. Each army was thus in this position—that it had outflanked its opponent's right, and was itself menaced on the left. But whereas Pensiho was remote from the Japanese line of communications with the bases at Dalny and Newchwang on which the Japanese army depended for its supplies,

Pachiatze, where the Russians were in great strength, and where they opposed a

Fighting about Pachiatze.

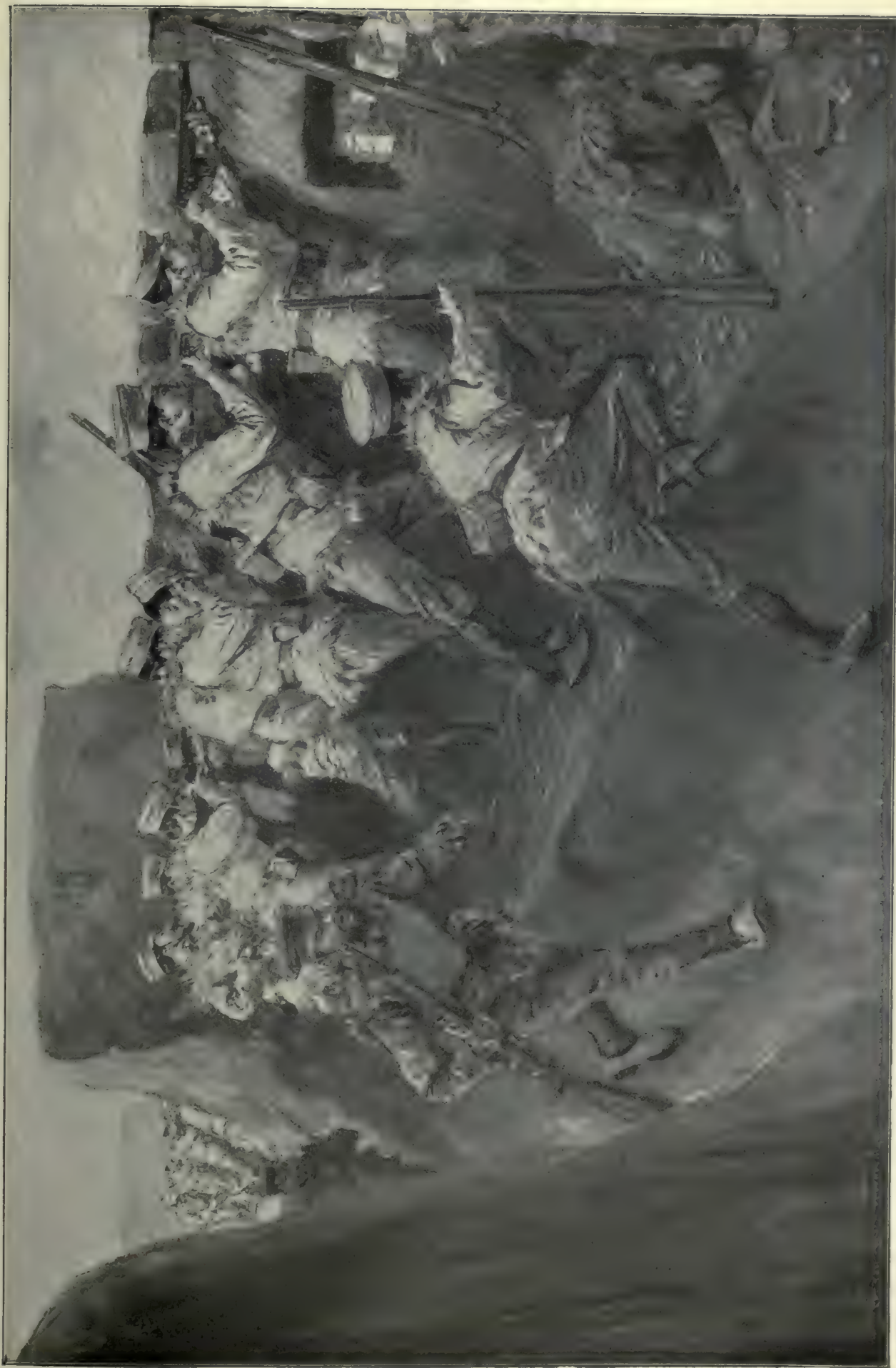
most determined resistance to General Kuroki's left, which was attempting to break through their line or to force them back. The Russian entrenched position in the centre, near Sankiatze, was assaulted by the infantry of the 10th Division and Guards at 3 a.m. in the morning of the 11th. The Russians had taken extraordinary precautions against such an attack; in front of their works they had stretched thick wire to which camel-bells were suspended, that tinkled and gave the alarm when an unwary Japanese touched the wire. Notwithstanding this the Japanese fought



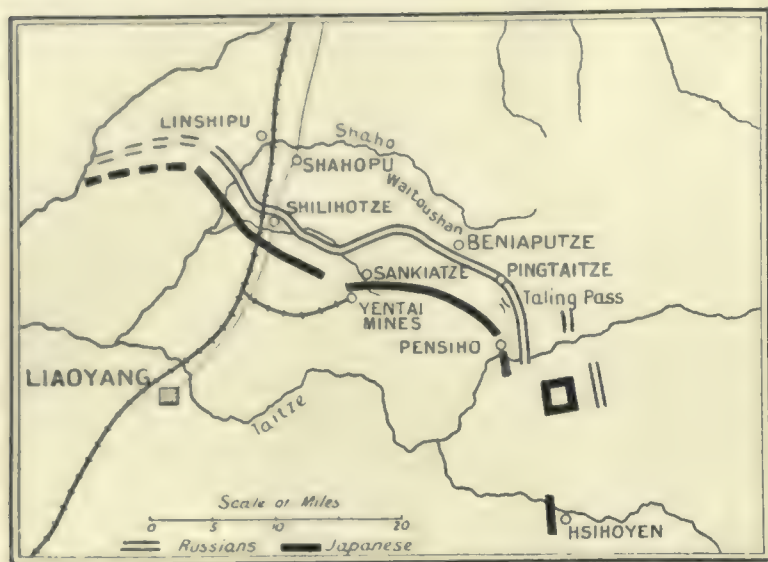
H.R.H. PRINCE KUNI'S ROOM.

[R. Johnston photo.]

He is attached to the First Army. The room shows camp-bed and hibachi with charcoal fire.

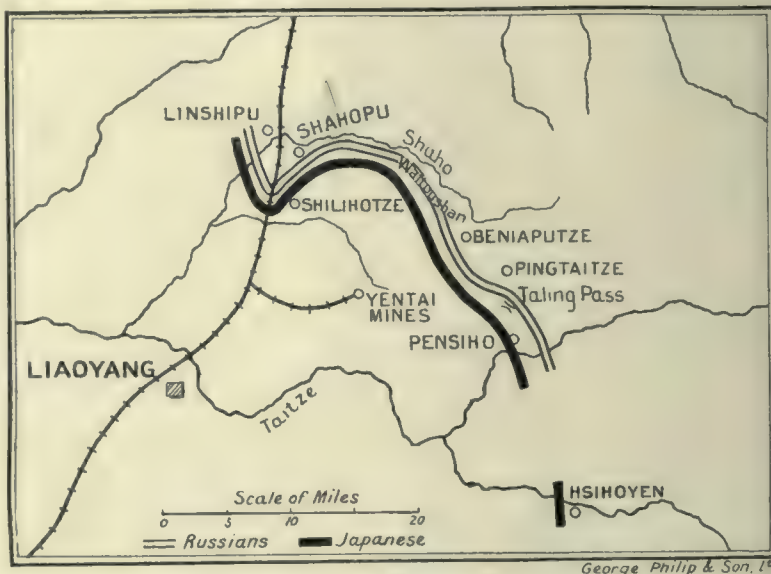


JAPANESE REPELLING A NIGHT ATTACK AT LINSHIPU.

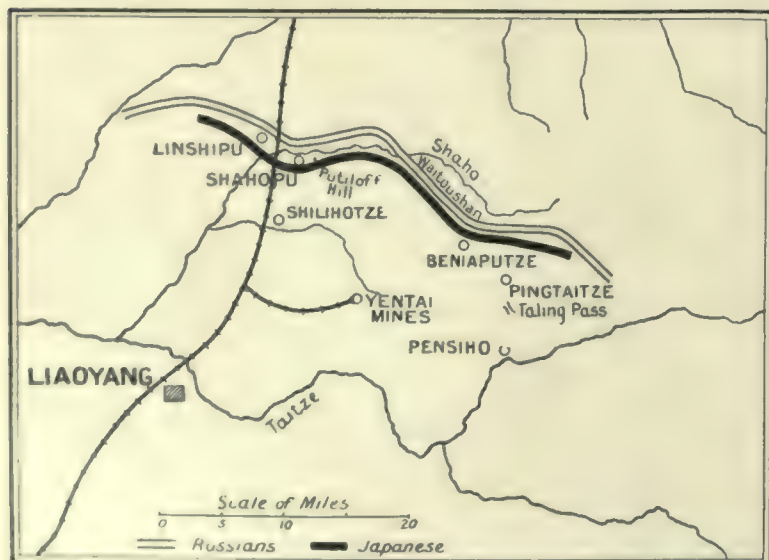


THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHE, OCTOBER 12-NIGHT.

hill on which there were two trenches," says the "Standard" correspondent. "Taking them in reverse they charged the Russians, and shot them down before they seemed aware of their approach. The fight was short and sharp and bloody. Then they vanished. Presently I saw them again coming over the brow of the hill. They descended the slope to the saddle, and threw themselves into a deep gully on the flank of another eminence. Here they lay to recover breath and prepare for another charge. On they came in a few minutes, at first a dozen, then six, then in twos and threes, running up the hill



THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHE, OCTOBER 14.



THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHE, OCTOBER 17.

Litayentun was close to the all-important railway, and at no great distance from the railway-bridge over the Hunho, just to the south of Mukden. The danger was therefore greater for the Russians than for the Japanese. The sound of the firing about Litayentun reached Mukden and made the windows shake, while the fact that it steadily drew nearer and nearer inspired the gravest alarm in the Russian Staff.

About noon of the 11th the Japanese renewed their attack upon the Russian entrenched positions near Sankiatze. "With heads bent as in a hurricane a company of Japanese were racing up a

like hares. Never were soldiers fleet of foot than these brave Japanese, and never did men stand in greater need of speed and daring. Scattering they ran, some to the right, others to the left, all making for the summit. Then out of the earth spring grey forms to meet them. Rifles flash, and the dark-blue uniforms vanish. Another second, and their comrades appear on the crest. Again the grey figures rise, a steady, resolute line, tipped with steel. Back fall the Japanese. Even in that terrible moment they obey the voice of their officer, who stands before them with drawn sword. They have formed line

Their bayonets flash in the sunlight. Twenty paces divide the lines of grey and blue. In the twinkling of an eye they meet. One mad rush, and they are welded together in a grip that nothing save death can loosen. For a moment I see the thrusting of cold steel and the scorching flash of rifles. Then the grey line breaks into fragments and rolls out of sight."

Over the ridge swept the wave of advancing Japanese in a line many miles long, always enacting the same scenes—the same steady, persistent advance in the teeth of the Russian fire; the same hand-to-hand fight when the Russian trenches were reached; the

same victory in the hand-to-hand conflict, till the hills and the ravines were covered with Russian dead, while the reserves behind the Russian front line were shot down by the hundred as they strove to escape. The Veronez Regiment was almost annihilated by a fearful fire delivered at only 400 paces. Too close formations, want of intelligence, and the complete lack of tactical capacity in the actual combat brought defeat and enormous loss upon the Russians. The Russian line was pierced, or all but pierced, near its centre, while, as we have already seen, it was in process of being rolled up on its right. The heavy loss in the centre and the continued retreat of the right had shaken the nerves of the Russian generals. Late in the afternoon, as the foreign correspondents watched, they saw that the great masses of Russian troops were now pouring north. The advance that

was to end only at Port Arthur had already ceased, and a retreat northwards had been substituted for it.

The Japanese reinforced their line and delivered a new attack on the positions which the Russian rearguard was holding to cover this retreat. The most sanguinary fighting was about Sankiatze and north of Yentai Mines. Here the Japanese made a desperate effort to storm a lofty rock, crowned with a temple, which rose from the valley, and succeeded in overwhelming a strong detachment of Russian infantry posted under it, after a fierce bayonet fight. But there the Japanese successes of that day ended. The Japanese



THE LIGHT SIDE OF THE WAR. CHUNCHUSES AMUSING THE RUSSIANS.

When the war broke out these jugglers accompanied the Russians to Manchuria to entertain the officers. They were present at the Battle of Liaoyang, and retreated with the Russians to Mukden. Kuropatkin gave them a pass to come west. Disguised as Europeans they reached St. Petersburg, where the ambassador gave them proper passports. They perform some extraordinary feats of legerdemain.



AN IMPROMPTU BISLEY AT THE SHAHO.
General Kuroki scores seven points with a rifle.

(Copyright, "Collier's Weekly.")

could not capture the main Russian position, and night fell without the Japanese army, in the terse expression of the official report, having "been able to effect the prearranged advance."

The fighting had been of the most furious description. Each side showed a complete disregard of the value of life. Hand-to-hand combats were frequent, and hand-grenades were thrown in these struggles with deadly effect. The whole 40 miles of the front of the two armies seemed ablaze with rifles and cannon.

Villages were taken and re-taken half a dozen times, till their streets were piled with dead and the ambulances lost all count of the wounded. On Mukden a constant stream of mutilated men poured by road and by train, till the hospitals were congested and could hold no more, and injured men were left lying in the streets or crowded into filthy Chinese houses, where every appliance for dealing with their misery was wanting.

CHAPTER XLVII. BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.—II.

THE night of the 11-12th was marked by heavy fighting in the direction of Pensiho, where the Japanese right was still hard pressed

by the Russians, short of ammunition, weak in numbers, and in a very critical position. Indeed,

At Pensiho, in this quarter of the vast field it was still "touch-and-go" for the Japanese. But reinforcements were moving steadily to the scene, and if only the Japanese division at Taling and Pensiho could hold out a few hours more its work would be done. To the south Prince Kanin with a large force of Japanese cavalry had already crossed the Taitze, and was moving steadily



A SHOOTING MATCH WHICH WAS HELD ON THE SHAHO, AND IN WHICH ENGLAND CAME OUT FIRST.

Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."

Sir Ian Hamilton wonders why he did not make a bull.



JAPANESE FIGHTING IN LINSHIPU DURING THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.

This village was held by the Russians, who were subjected to a prolonged cannon and rifle fire.

Edwin Woodville
1894

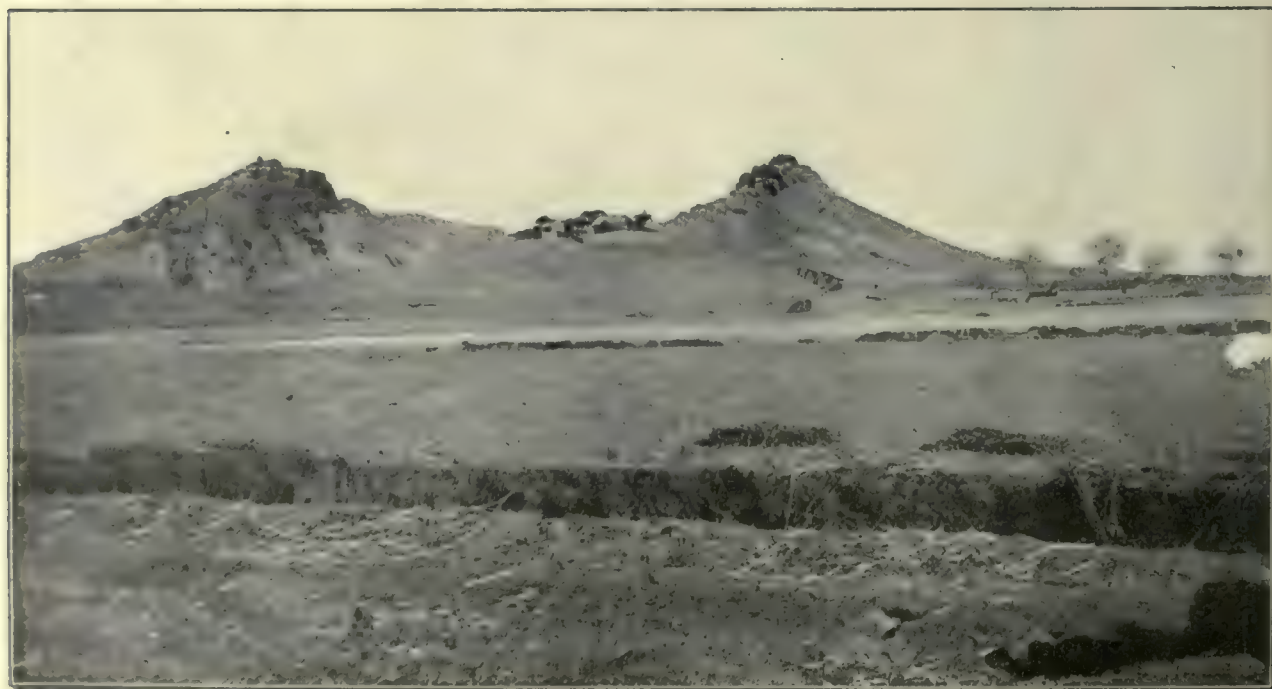


TEMPLE HILL. CAPTURED BY THE 15TH BRIGADE OF THE 2ND JAPANESE DIVISION AT 5 P.M., OCTOBER 12, 1904.

eastwards along its southern bank, preparing to take the Russians in their flank and rear. This was the first time that the Japanese cavalry had attempted so bold an enterprise; hitherto they had been employed in small detachments for scouting or keeping up the communications between the armies. But the men had now improved in horsemanship, and to a great extent had been provided with Australian or Mongolian horses, instead of the miserable hacks with which they had taken the field at the opening of the war.

While the Japanese cavalry were marching eastwards General Kuropatkin placed his reserves in line, in the hope of retrieving the position. The 1st European Corps, which had hitherto been held behind the fighting line in the neighbourhood of Siaokutun, and which was regarded as the best in his army, was moved forward. Actually, however, the European troops performed indifferently in the field, and proved much inferior to the Siberian soldiery.

**Unsatisfactory
Russian Troops.**



THREE STONE HILL THE SCENE OF A NIGHT ATTACK AND A FIERCE RUSSIAN RESISTANCE, SHOWING THE TEMPLE BETWEEN THE TWO SPURS OF THE HILL.



OFFICERS OF THE JAPANESE STAFF WATCHING THE RUSSIAN OPERATIONS AT THE SHAHO.

[From a photo by J. H. Hare. Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."]



A JAPANESE FIELD-KITCHEN.

[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"

Their hearts were not in the war, and there were many middle-aged reservists among them who were bad shots and practically untrained. The 17th European Corps was specially unsatisfactory, drawn from near Moscow, with a large disaffected element in it. The European Cossacks were valueless as scouts and fighting men; they had not been trained as mounted infantry, which the Russian army badly needed, but came to the Far East expecting charges

with sword and with lance, and found themselves sadly nonplussed amidst the wild mountains of Manchuria when pitted against the alert Japanese infantry.

In the direction of Pensiho the Russians, during the night of the 11-12th, delivered an attack upon the Japanese positions on Conical Hill and Wall Mountain, but without success, losing heavily in the process.

On Conical Hill. The slow, heavy-footed Siberian troops were indifferent mountaineers, and they were opposed to men who had spent their lives among the hills of Kiushiu. When daylight came a host of Russians could be seen from below, lying, as it seemed, in military array just under the crest of Conical Hill. Only when this array of prostrate figures had been watched for some minutes, and it was clear that it did not move, was the truth realised. The hill was covered with Russian dead, and the Japanese were still in possession of its summit. A little way below the crest, however, where the slope steepened to the precipitous, the Russian infantry clung to the face of the hill, directing upon the top a steady fire.

The Russian artillery re-opened, pouring in shell and shrapnel once more. "We can see the huge columns of earth and smoke ascending, sometimes in front, sometimes behind, sometimes on the very spot where the trenches of the enemy are supposed to be," wrote a correspondent with the Russian army describing this attack. "One of the shells sets fire to the grass and the thickets on the top. Flames are licking the slope, and thick volumes of smoke gather round the peak. The flame spreads rapidly; Conical Hill is ablaze. The infernal concert of battle becomes wilder and wilder; the dull roar of the common shell responds to the reports from the guns. The big projectiles



THE FROZEN RIVER HUNG.



AT THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.

Japanese soldiers occupying a hill after an engagement.

[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

rush through the air shrieking in treble note. The volleys of the infantry crack and click in a breathless, furious staccato, while the echo of the battle, extending over many miles of front, furnishes a terrible accompaniment of never ceasing, heavy thunder."

Yet in the teeth of fire and shells all day the Japanese clung to the peaks, with ammunition running low, little food and scanty water, while all day the Russian guns bombarded and the Russian infantry again and again advanced to the assault. Alternately the 3rd Corps and the 1st Corps attacked, but always without result. What, however, caused the Japanese commanders the gravest anxiety was the fact that to the south of the Taitze the Russians seemed to have been reinforced and were pushing west once more.

The Russian losses in front of the Taling and

Death of near Pen-
Colonel siho had
Pechuta. now risen

to some 10,000 men killed and wounded, and among the fallen were some of the best and most experienced officers in the Russian army. In leading the 35th Regiment to the assault upon Wall Mountain, Colonel Pechuta, chief-of-the-staff of the 9th Division, took his place



BIRD'S-EYE VIEW OF THE SHAHO COUNTRY.

in front of his men. Barely had he done so when he was struck by a bullet on the body, but, with blood pouring from his wound, he kept his place in the van, only to be stricken down by a second bullet when he neared the Japanese position. Nothing more was seen or heard of him, and he probably bled to death in the stretch of ground between the lines of the two armies, where it was impossible to succour the fallen, and where most of the wounded were killed by the fall of shells and bullets. He had fought gallantly in all the great actions of the war, from the Yalu to Telisse and Liaoyang, and was one of the youngest and ablest colonels of the Russian army. Two other Russian colonels died bravely at his side.

As the 12th wore on the Japanese troops south of Pensiho, just at the very moment when the Russians

appeared to have gained their point and completely turned the flank of the

**The Russians
Surprised.**

Japanese
army, saw a

remarkable movement in their enemy's ranks. The Russian cavalry and infantry were wheeling east and turning their backs upon the Japanese, breaking off the battle in the hour of Russian victory. The explanation of this startling change was the sudden appearance of Prince Kanin with the Japanese cavalry behind the Russians. On the morning of the 12th he had suddenly come upon the Russian reserves to the south of the Taitze. Feeling absolutely certain that the Japanese were outflanked and had no forces to their rear, the Russians in this quarter had placed no outposts or vedettes, and were caught quite unprepared for attack. The Japanese cavalry dismounted, entered a wood unobserved by the Russians, and, bringing a machine-gun to bear upon their enemy, suddenly opened a tremendous fire upon their sluggish opponents. The stream of bullets



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."]

SIR IAN HAMILTON AND PRINCE KANIN.

smote upon the Russians formed in a dense mass, and laid many of them low before they had recovered from their surprise. Taken thus at a complete disadvantage, and losing confidence in their officers, the Russian infantry retired in wild confusion, leaving behind them some 300 dead, and recrossed the Taitze. As for the Cossacks, who should have been covering the Russian movement, they did nothing to impede the Japanese cavalry or to retrieve the disaster, but fled eastwards through the wild country at the head of the Taitze, with the Japanese cavalry at their heels. The flight and the pursuit continued for some 30 miles before at last, on the 14th, Prince Kanin drew rein and left his opponents to find their way to Chinhocheng, certain that they would cause Marshal Oyama no more mischief.

This dramatic and unexpected intervention of the cavalry saved Pensiho from capture and the Japanese

right from destruction, but it did not as yet relieve the pressure on the small Japanese force holding the Taling and Tumentzeling passes, where the Russians were fighting with the utmost courage and determination in overwhelming force, and where the Japanese could only just hold their ground. But the Japanese Staff kept steadily to its plan of driving in the Russian right, and reinforced the western wing of the army constantly, trusting to the advance of the troops in that direction to bring the attack on the Taling to a standstill.

The Japanese centre, under General Nodzu, attacked the Russian positions soon after midnight in the



A LONELY JAPANESE VIGIL.

morning of the 12th, and with the help of a division from General Kuroki's army secured the heights of Maoerhshan and pushed the enemy back some distance from Sankiatze, capturing his entrenchments after close and sanguinary fighting. The Alexander III. Regiment, which had been ordered by General Kuropatkin to hold Sankwaishih to the last, was practically exterminated, and its colonel and 100 men taken. In the Russian works 11 field-guns were

**The Japanese
Centre.**



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly,"

THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.—A GENERAL VIEW OF A PART OF THE BATTLEFIELD.

captured, with a number of ammunition-waggon. The Russian force defending the guns had been cut off from the main body of General Kuropatkin's army, enveloped, and thrown into complete disorder. His success in this part of the field enabled General Kuroki to throw forward a division of his army towards Shihchiatze, threatening the rear of the Russian corps which were attacking the Taling Pass and operating against Pensiho. It was hoped at the Japanese headquarters that the great bulk of the force under General Stackelberg would be captured or destroyed, but, as will be seen, this hope was not destined to be fulfilled.



A RUSSIAN AMBULANCE COLUMN.

Several of the ambulance columns with the Russians were equipped by private individuals, and this was one of them.

The Russians were still falling back in the centre to the line of the Shaho, and had evidently abandoned all hope of fighting their way south past Yentai, of retaking Liaoyang, and relieving Port Arthur. The great offensive movement, heralded in such pompous terms, had already ignominiously failed, and the



JAPANESE HOWITZER BEING HAULED INTO POSITION UNDER FIRE NEAR THE SHAHO
[From a sketch by Frederic Whiting.]

Czar's "inflexible will" had not been "inflexibly" accomplished, for the excellent reason that its accomplishment was beyond the power of the Russian army.

Following up its success, the Japanese centre pushed swiftly north all the 12th, and reached the neighbourhood of Mangchiaseng, where it captured four more field-guns and destroyed another Russian detachment, after severe fighting. Twice did the Russians deliver counter-attacks, for at this point they were fighting under General Kuropatkin's very eyes, but each time the 10th Division repulsed their onslaughts with heavy loss. The Russian Commander-in-Chief himself in person led the Petrovsk Regiment of the 1st European Corps to meet a Japanese attack, and suffered extreme danger in so doing.

To the westward the Japanese achieved even more startling success, as reinforcements arriving in that

quarter of the field gave General Oku a great pre-dominance in force. Marching rapidly up the

Shaho valley he stormed the Russian works, outflanked the Russian corps stationed on General Kuropatkin's right, and early in the afternoon reached the neighbourhood of Liusanchiatze, capturing in his irresistible advance no fewer than 24 Russian guns with limbers and ammunition, and routing the Russian regiments, which fled, abandoning the artillery. Led by Colonel Vannovsky, the Russians were rallied, and, returning to the fight, recaptured nine of the guns, but the other 15 remained in the hands of the Japanese. The Russian line now bent sharply north from a point near Langtzechih, through Wulikai and Lungwangmiao, which places were still held by the Russian infantry. About them raged a furious encounter, the Japanese artillery delivering a terrific



COSSACK SCOUTS ON THE LOOK-OUT FOR THE ENEMY.

bombardment of these villages, while the Japanese infantry again and again attempted to carry them by assault. Ground was slowly gained, though the Russian resistance at this point was obstinate.

As the day wore on the success of the Japanese left began to tell upon the Russian troops near Wulikai, and they were compelled to retreat to avoid being cut off and destroyed, since the Japanese were now closing in upon them from either flank. The retreat was not accomplished without

35 Guns Captured. further disasters and losses. Nine more guns were captured, with a number of ammunition-waggons, bringing up the total captures made by General Oku upon this day to 24 guns, most of which were readily made serviceable and used against the Russians in the later stages of the battle. Thus the position on the 12th was that the Japanese had driven back the Russian troops to the south of the

Taitze with heavy loss; that they had just held their own at the Taling Pass; while on the centre and left they had gained important successes, beaten in the Russian front, turned the Russian right flank, and placed General Kuropatkin in such a position that he must either retire with all possible speed or accept a terrific disaster. Thirty-five guns in all had been taken from the Russians.



JAPANESE OFFICERS ON BOARD A TRANSPORT.

[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

This series of successes enabled the Japanese to reinforce their troops at the Taling Pass, who had all day been subjected to a bombardment delivered by 80 Russian guns, many of them large-calibre howitzers, with which the small Japanese mountain-guns were unable to contend on even terms. The reinforcements were needed. On the morning of the 13th the Russians renewed their efforts to carry Conical Hill, and through the whole long day their infantry made assault after assault, but failed to capture the position. The Japanese fought with the most magnificent determination, and they here had foemen worthy of their steel, as nothing could have surpassed the courage

Conical Hill Attacked.



[Victor Bulla photo.]

GENERAL SOUKHAMLINOFF AND HIS STAFF AT THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.

with which the Siberian regiments endeavoured to force their way up the precipices, down which their enemy fired into the very midst of the line of stormers. The last reserve was thrown into the fight on the Russian side late in the afternoon, but without decided result, though the Russians managed to seize and secure a position from which their Staff thought that a night attack could be made with success. The dispositions for this attack were being prepared when, with victory, as they supposed, well within their grasp, the Russian generals received from General Kuropatkin the order to retreat at once, and to fall back north-eastwards through the mountains. The Japanese had broken through his

line, and were to the right flank of General Stackelberg; their left was menacing the Russian communications with Mukden. There was nothing for it but to break off the battle and withdraw. As the sun set the retirement began; in the darkness the weary columns of infantry marched off through the mountains, leaving behind them 3,000 dead in front of the indomitable Japanese of General Kuroki's army.

Fighting elsewhere continued far into the night, when a great thunderstorm burst over the field, and the flash of the lightning showed up the dark forms of the combatants in its lurid glare. The roar of the thunder was lost in the tumult of cannon and rifle-fire. While the elements raged the infantry of the two armies fought hand-to-hand about Sankiatze and Shilihotze in the glow of the lightning and the bursting shells. The slaughter of the Russians was

Fighting in a Storm.

terrible. One regiment was annihilated in the fierce struggle near Shilihotze. A Russian officer and half a dozen wounded men belonging to this unhappy unit passed the general in command of the corps of which it formed part. "How dare you leave your men at such a moment?" was the general's first question. "Back you go at once! Where is your regiment?" "Here, sir," was the officer's reply. "What! Is that all?" the general exclaimed with horror. "Yes, sir; this is all."

The Japanese assumed the offensive vigorously upon the right on the morning of the 13th, while their

centre and left continued to press the Russians northward.

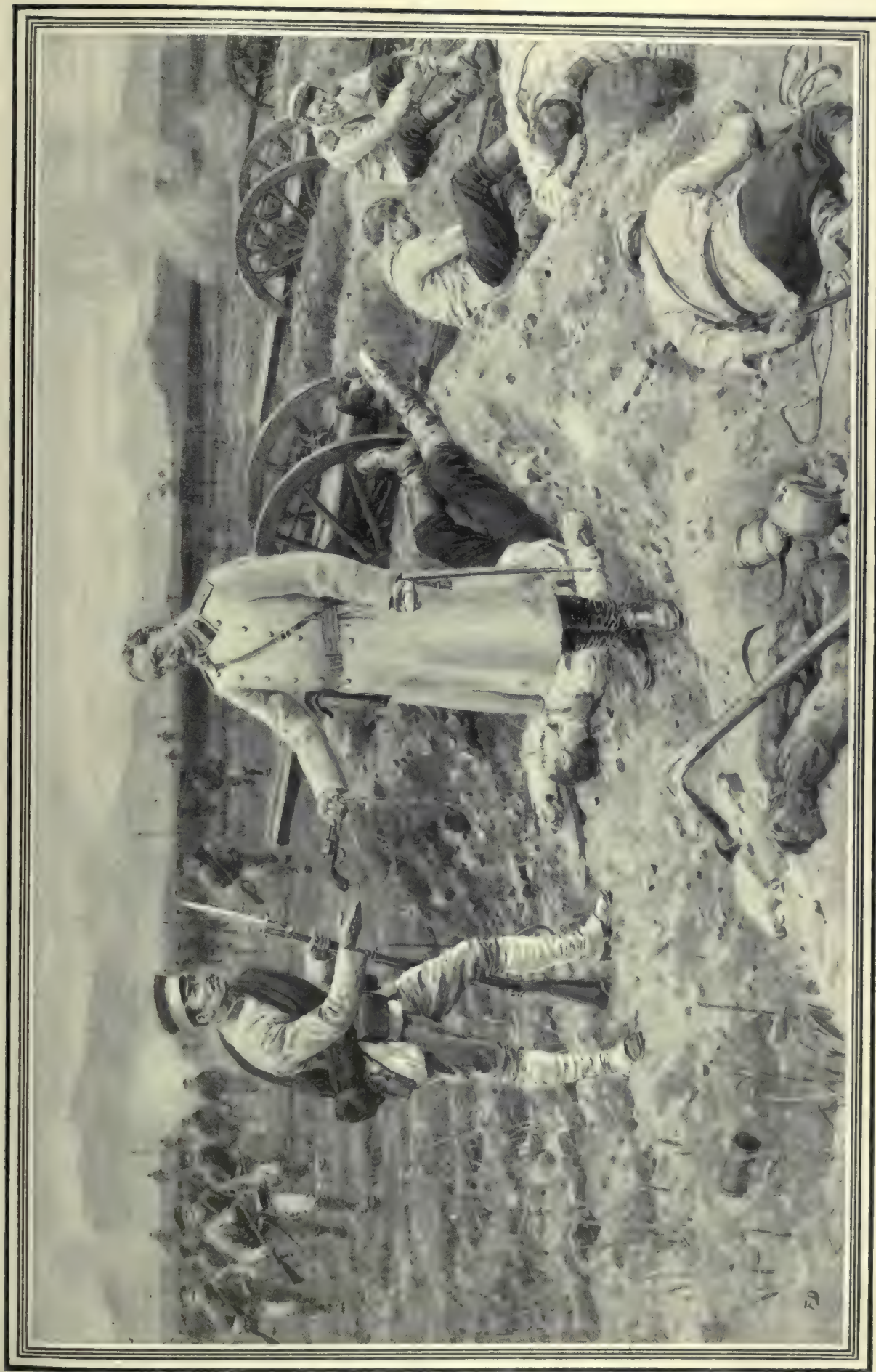
A Strange Duel.

General Kuroki,

who had a very large Russian force in his front, and at the same time difficult country for his attack, did not make great progress, and a prolonged and indecisive encounter swayed to and fro about Chaohsienling. In the centre the Japanese were more successful, and drew very near to the line of the Shaho. Near Mangchiafeng a peak which was held by the Russians had to be stormed, and it was carried with desperate gallantry by a Japanese brigade. "Covered by the fire of six batteries," writes the "Standard" correspondent, "the brigade advanced to the assault. As they crossed the valley they came under the heavy artillery-fire from guns posted on the northern heights. The movement began at



JAPANESE ERECTING A FIELD-TELEGRAPH.



A RUSSIAN OFFICER'S SURRENDER AT THE SHAHO.

Half a battalion of Japanese infantry shot all the horses of a Russian battery, and surrender became inevitable. A Japanese soldier, outstripping his commander, received the surrender of the officer commanding the battery.

dawn, and the sun was still low in the heavens when at the base of the mountains appeared the lines of khaki and blue. Here their progress was arrested. Stormed at by shot and shell, the brigade clung close to the side of the hill. Over their heads screamed the shrapnel of the Japanese batteries searching the crest and reverse slope. Above them on summit and ridge was a brigade of the enemy, who swept their front with a sheet of lead. Over the heads of the Russians, too, came the shells of their batteries. It was a strange artillery duel, and raged with unabated fury the livelong day, making that cluster of brown hills a real inferno. To advance looked impossible; to remain seemed certain death."

The Japanese brigade held firmly to its position on the face of the hill, and as the sun declined in the sky renewed its advance, creeping slowly up the hill in the teeth of the Russian fire. "It was nearly six o'clock in the evening when a company struggled to the summit. Then was witnessed a combat of heroes that held one breathless. Every movement was distinctly visible from the plain. Thirty or 40 men of that gallant company had resolved to capture the hill or die. Springing to their feet they dashed towards the enemy, who rose to meet them. The onset was fierce,

A Combat of Heroes.

but the advantage was altogether in favour of the defenders. Against that terrible fusillade no man could stand, however brave and reckless. The survivors of the little band turned and fled. Undismayed, another section ran forward and was rolled back, leaving several dark figures prone on the slope. Out of this carnage rose a handful of desperate men. Without pause or hesitation they charged right to the crest."

Wave following upon wave of men, the Japanese gradually bore down the Russian resistance. The summit of the hill was carried, and the crest left



RUSSIAN SOLDIERS CAPTURED BY THE JAPANESE IN SAFE KEEPING AT MATSUYAMA.
Prisoners being shaved.

covered with dead—Russian and Japanese. At dusk the Japanese troops advanced all along the centre and took up positions between Huchia and Kuchiatze, fronting almost due east, while the Russians were between them and the River Shaho. On the left General Oku carried Panchiapu, and pushed the heads of his most advanced columns to Pachiatze and Shahopu, while further to the west his troops had carried the little village of Liusanchiatze, in the valley of the Shaho, and drove their enemy before them in great confusion northwards, seizing Hunglinpu. The Japanese reserves were thrown into the fight in this direction with the best effect, and the Russian position became more than ever critical as the Japanese neared the railway towards Sumatai.

The fourth day of the great battle ended with the Japanese successful in all directions, though no decisive defeat had been inflicted upon the Russians. In the night the Japanese delivered a desperate attack upon Shahopu, and captured it. It was retaken by the Russians, lost again, once more retaken, and at daylight remained in Russian hands.

Russians In Retreat.

On the morning of the 14th the advance was resumed, the Japanese moving forward all along the line



JAPANESE INFANTRY OF THE 21ST REGIMENT ATTACKING A RUSSIAN POSITION DURING THE SHAN SU OPERATIONS.
From a photograph taken by an officer of the Japanese General Staff.)



THE JAPANESE BAMBOO GUN.

The bamboo gun is here seen with its muzzle covered to keep the bore dry. It is used to fire grenades during trench-fighting. Two men can easily carry it between them to any point where it is required. It fires very small charges.

threatened force to retire. But all the resistance of his rearguard was not enough to prevent the Japanese under General Oku from seizing 10 guns near Kanchiaputze and occupying the high ground south of Shahopu, while on the left the Japanese furiously attacked Linshipu. The Russians in the loop did not escape without enormous losses. In the afternoon they were caught between the converging fire of two Japanese detachments near Shahopu, on the plain. A great mass of 3,000 men were flying northwards under a terrific fire, completely demoralised. They ran the gauntlet of the Japanese rifles, leaving behind them over 1,000 killed or wounded, and when they reached the banks of the Shaho came under the fire of the Japanese guns, which plied them with shrapnel, causing them further loss. In the night the Japanese once more assaulted Shahopu, and carried it after a sanguinary combat. Thenceforth it remained in their hands. The Russians destroyed the railway-bridge over the Shaho, but in one night it was repaired by the Japanese.

On the right-centre the Japanese pushed up to the bed of the Shaho, near Tashan, and came under the fire of the Russian reserve guns at Siao-kutun. The Russian position was literally desperate; there was no body of reserves to meet the Japanese onset, and an immediate retreat to Mukden or beyond seemed inevitable, involving though such a step would the abandonment of the greater part of General Stackelberg's army to destruction. But just when the Russian Staff were in despair the Japanese advance ceased, and General Kuropatkin was given time to hurry men to the threatened point. The fact was that the Japanese

from Pensiho on the east to Hunglinpu on the west. The Russians were everywhere in retreat, either crossing or preparing to cross the Shaho. To the west their forces were in a most dangerous position, pressed up against the River Shaho between the left and centre armies of the Japanese. The Japanese made the most determined efforts to close the loop which they had drawn around the Russians, while General Kuropatkin concentrated all his efforts upon holding them off for a sufficient time to permit the bulk of his



A RUSSIAN PICKET-HOUSE SET ON FIRE BY A SHELL.



THE SCENE AFTER THE BATTLE OF THE SHAHO.

General Kuropatkin on the field.

ammunition had failed, and deprived the Mikado's troops of a brilliant success. The Japanese were compelled to halt or slightly withdraw their men until fresh ammunition could be brought up to the front, and the Russians, realising that something unexpected had happened, again crossed the Shaho and resumed their positions on the south bank of the river, near Tashan.

The Japanese right on this day followed up the Russian retreat. It pressed General Stackelberg's columns to Pingtaitze and Beniaputze, and gained a footing on the Waitoushan heights, which the Russians still retained to the south of the River Shaho. It could not effect a further advance owing to the want of ammunition, and thus on the centre and right the battle ended on the fifth day with the capture by the Japanese of the ground south of the Shaho, except Waitoushan. A fearful thunderstorm broke over the



JAPANESE OFFICERS CURLING AND SKATING IN MANCHURIA.

Mr. Frederic Whiting, the artist, says: "Curling and skating to the music of the enemy's guns is surely a novelty in warfare. During an interval in the fighting one of the British Attachés got some soldiers to saw the stump of a tree into equal sections, and fitted them with iron handles. These made an excellent substitute for curling stones. The game was at once adopted by the Japanese officers, and before long the General of the 6th Division came down to the ice and took a hand in the game."

field of battle on the afternoon of the 14th, swelling the Shaho so that it could only be forded with difficulty, and drenching the weary combatants.

On the Japanese left fighting continued till far on into the evening, and the want of ammunition does not seem to have been experienced. The fiercest struggle was about Linshipu, a wretched little Chinese village, the possession of which, however, was of great strategical importance. It was finally stormed by detachments of General Oku's and General Nodzu's armies acting in concert. The Russian force holding the place was about 3,000 strong with 16 guns, and was driven back to Samatai and Lamuntun. Reinforcements arriving, the Russians halted and delivered repeated counter-attacks upon the Japanese, in the hope of regaining Linshipu, but all the attacks were beaten off, and the day closed with the Japanese in possession of the greater part of the village, and commanding with their artillery the numerous tracks leading west over the plain.

With the night of the 14th ended the great battle of the Shaho, though on the following days there was a good deal of fighting at various points on the Japanese front, the chief object of which was to capture Lamuntun, a position that the Japanese Staff had determined to secure. The battle had been of unprecedented severity, and the losses on the Russian

side were out of all proportion greater than those at Liaoyang. The actual encounter lasted five days, and

**End of the
Battle.**



KUROPATKIN IN COLOSSAL EFFIGY.

A Japanese festal decoration in honour of the victories in Manchuria.

ended only through the complete exhaustion of the Japanese ammunition and the physical weariness of Marshal Oyama's infantry. Inferior in number to the Russians, inferior in power and number of guns, with but a small force of cavalry, with three or four of the best divisions absent before Port Arthur, the Japanese army had gained a great victory. Its success was not decisive, but without a great preponderance in numbers decisive success in modern war is almost impossible. The vast numbers in the field prevented such manœuvres as those by which Napoleon won Austerlitz and Jena. Two armies, each of about 250,000 troops, spread out along a front of 45 miles in mountainous country, cannot be moved as the pawns on a chessboard. The immense fronts and huge armies of our own day have increased the difficulties of the great general.

The Japanese might have followed up the Russians when these fell back. Their soldiers were ardent enough, in spite of their weariness, but there was little to be gained by a forward move. The weather was cold, rainy, and unfavourable; the roads atrocious; the Russian army too strong to be destroyed, and to drive it further north would only add to the Japanese difficulty in attacking it when the Port Arthur troops were free to enable Marshal Oyama to deal a heavy blow. Mukden could not easily be held with Tiehling in possession of the Russians, and the Russian army was too numerous to be pursued far without great risk.



HOW THE JAPANESE KEPT THEMSELVES ALIVE AND WARM DURING THE RIGOURS OF WINTER.

A "dug-out" on the hillside.

To the north of the Shaho the Russians had carefully entrenched strong positions on which to fall back in the event of defeat, and these the Japanese would have had to take by assault had they pressed further upon their enemy's heels. Far away to the north through the clear autumn air the Japanese could see the towers and pagodas of Mukden; but they only looked and longed; the prudence of their generals told them that the time for the capture of the great and sacred city of Manchuria was not yet.

The Russian dead found and counted upon the field by the Japanese numbered 13,300, while the Russian Press admitted a loss of over 12,000 killed. The Japanese had no means of estimating the

The Dead.

Russian wounded, but these were returned by the Russians at 55,800. The total Russian loss was thus not far short of 70,000, or nearly one-third of the entire Russian force engaged. In no battle of which authentic record remains has such a loss in killed and wounded been sustained by an army, for practically no Russian prisoners were taken. The huge casualties were due to the defective fighting methods of the troops, the want of intelligence, and the long series of unsuccessful attacks and counter-attacks upon Japanese positions, while any army retreating in the face of a victorious foe who pursues with energy is bound to face a heavy tale of losses. Among the distinguished officers on the Russian casualty list were General Zaschiok killed, and Generals Rennenkampf and Meyendorff wounded.

On the 15th the Japanese busied themselves in fortifying their position and in capturing the villages still held by the Russians to the south of the Shaho, near the railway. About Linshipu a terrible fight raged, as the Russians still held the northern end of the village. At Lamuntun the Russians were strongly

entrenched, and were supported by the fire of their artillery to the north of Shahopu, where six batteries' or 48 guns, were steadily firing on the Japanese. After a prolonged duel between the guns of the two armies the Japanese infantry attacked Lamuntun from the east and west simultaneously, and stormed



ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY, COMMANDER OF THE BALTIC FLEET.



THE "SUVAROFF," "ALEXANDER III," AND THE "BORODINO," OF THE RUSSIAN BALTIC FLEET. (Bulla photo.)

the place. A force of Russian cavalry which appeared on the extreme left flank of the Japanese army, near Litayentun, was also attacked and compelled to beat a retreat. The Japanese troops were ordered to throw up strong entrenchments along the line of the Shaho, and at once proceeded to carry out the order. One Russian gun was captured by General Yamada to the east of

Fight
at Linshipu.

Shahopu, with two ammunition-waggons, during the night of the 15th.

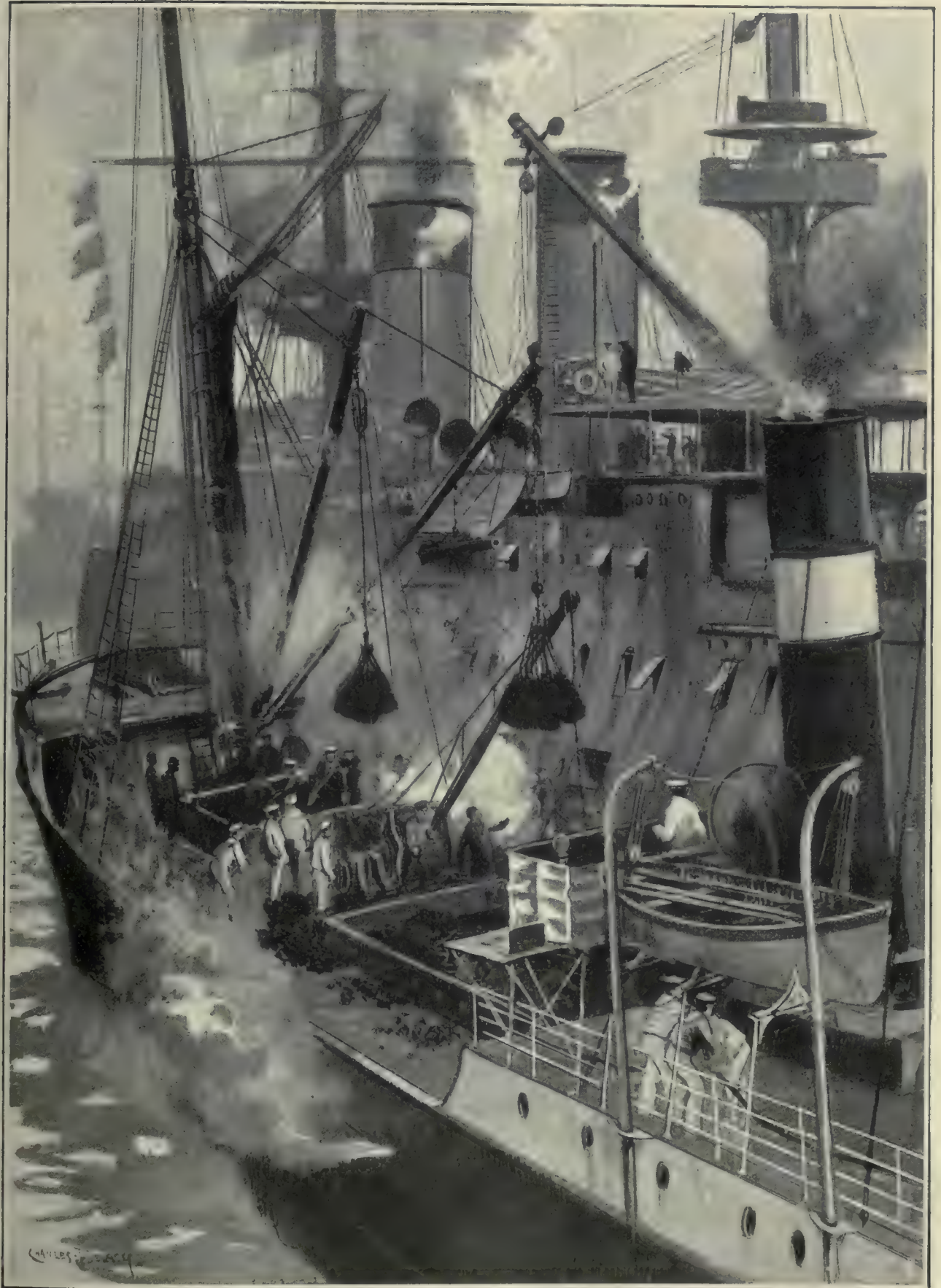
On the 16th the Russians displayed renewed aggressiveness on their right, delivering attack after attack upon the Japanese troops to the west of the railway, and attempting to outflank Marshal Oyama's army in that direction. All their attacks were repulsed with heavy loss. The Japanese Staff had anticipated these attacks, and prepared to meet them. General Yamada with a small detachment, numbering only five and a half battalions and a few guns, crossed the Shaho in the night of the 15-16th, to assail in flank the Russians who were moving south along the railway and cut them off. His movement had been observed by the Russians, and they in their turn took steps to deal with him. At first he met with considerable success, and captured two Russian guns with two ammunition-waggons. But on his way back across the Shaho he found the Russians moving in upon him. A Russian division had come down from the east and another force from the west. On his march out he had occupied a small hill known as Putiloff Hill, to the south of the Shaho, and slightly entrenched it. Near this point he was attacked with great vigour by General Putiloff. The Russians enveloped both flanks of his small force, and poured in upon his troops a terrific fire. They were three to one, and the fighting in the darkness was of the fiercest nature.

Surrounded, the Japanese could only fight their way through the midst of their enemy or die, and they lost very heavily. The horses and mules with the nine field and five mountain guns which accompanied General Yamada were shot, and though desperate efforts were made to bring off the guns, they had to be abandoned to the Russians. The rest of the mixed brigade extricated itself from an apparently hopeless position by sheer bravery and hard fighting, and regained the main army with a loss of about 1,500 men, while the Russians reported 4,000 of their own force *hors de combat*. The 14 guns taken by the Russians in this unfortunate action were the only Japanese guns which had been captured by General Kuropatkin in the course of the entire war, and they were sent as trophies to St. Petersburg. Putiloff Hill was stormed by the Russians late in the evening of the 16th, after a prolonged bombardment by the Russian artillery. It was not held without an effort. Twice the Japanese delivered determined counter-attacks, and twice they were beaten back. The hill itself presented an appalling spectacle. It was covered with Japanese and Russian dead; 600 Japanese lying upon its slopes were buried on the following morning.

Strange amidst this scene of death was the expression of the fallen. Mr. Baring, a correspondent with the Russian army, tells of the wonder with which he gazed upon the smile of one of the dead Japanese. "There was nothing grim or ghastly in that smile. It was miraculously beautiful; it was not that smile of inscrutable content which we see



COMMANDANT TSCHAGIN,
Of the "Almaz."



GERMAN COLLIER COALING A RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP.



THE BATTLESHIP "OSLABIA," OF THE BALTIC FLEET. [Bulla photo.]

portrayed on certain wonderful statues of sleeping warriors, such as that of Gaston de Foix at Milan, or Guidarello Guidarelli at Ravenna, but a smile of radiant joy and surprise, as if he had suddenly met with a friend for whom he had longed above all other things, at a moment when of all others he had needed him, but for whose arrival he had not even dared to hope"—the smile of a man who had done his duty, and for whom, having done it, death had no terrors. Around and about were the pathetic little belongings of the Japanese

soldiers—their picture postcards, destined never to be posted; their rifles, greatcoats, paint-brushes, and note-books—all the debris of the hand-to-hand encounter that had raged for hours upon the hill.

The Russians lost no time in covering the eminence with enormous works to assure its safety, and the Japanese no longer attempted its capture, realising that to assault it was to incur heavy loss with little gain, or possibly to bring on a general engagement. In Russian hands its value was not great, owing to the inertness of General Kuropatkin. The Japanese constructed counter-works in close proximity to the Russians, and their trenches ran only a couple of hundred feet away from the Russian lines.

On the 17th there was some further fighting at other points of the Japanese front, but it was not of a serious nature, except at Linshipu, where the Japanese dislodged the Russians from the northern end of the village, and mounted artillery on a slight eminence there which commanded the plain. On the Japanese left, to the west of the railway and near Shahopu, the Russians could be seen busily constructing earth-works. The 18th and 19th were likewise days of inaction, though the Russians showed that they had been heavily reinforced by their more confident attitude all along the line, and their heavy artillery, including howitzers of as large calibre as 6-in., maintained a harassing fire upon Shahopu Station. Small Russian reconnoitring parties once more appeared south of the Taitze, in the neighbourhood of Pensiho, and seemed to be pushing west, probably to ascertain what the Japanese were doing, and whether they were planning some fresh surprise.

The loss of the Japanese in the fighting on the Shaho was exceedingly moderate.

Japanese Loss.

Up to the 25th 15,879 officers and men were killed or wounded, while 14 guns were lost. The Japanese had thus inflicted upon their opponents four times as large a loss as their own, and had taken more than three times as many guns. But the battle was without decisive results, except in so far as it proved a final bar to General Kuropatkin's efforts to relieve Port Arthur. Months



ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY'S FLAGSHIP "KNIAZ SUVAROFF." [Bulla photo.]

passed before the Russian army was again in a condition to attempt an advance, and in the interval General Nogi had accomplished his task.

**Waitoushan
Hills.**

One more movement of some importance was made by the Japanese army in late October. The Japanese Staff considered it necessary to secure possession of Waitoushan, a range of hills on the upper Shaho, on the Japanese side of that stream, which after the great battle had still remained in the hands of General Kuropatkin's army. The mountain itself is described by the "Standard" correspondent as "a four-peaked hill that looks as if it

had been riven from the wild ranges that run eastward, like a myriad writhing dragons, and set down on the river flat. Bare heights bend round it on the south; across the shallow stream to the east rises the land of monstrous furrows, brown hills and brown valleys; while on the north stretches the grey plain of Mukden. Waitoushan runs almost east and west, and from the peaks descend ridges like ribs. The western peak is the highest, and is crowned with the ruins of a small temple, surrounded by an ancient wall. The mountain is very steep, and its slopes are clothed with long, fine grass, slippery as ice." It was held by a Russian battalion, strongly entrenched. A deep trench ran from one end of the mountain to the other along the ridge, while three formidable breastworks secured the Russian hold of the peaks.



GERMAN COLLIERIES BY THE WHARF AT ST. PETERSBURG.

the Russians against a night attack. Several machine-guns were so disposed in a hidden work as to sweep the crest with a sheet of lead; there were wire entanglements and mines artfully planted to supplement the machine-gun fire. But the Japanese were not in the habit of attacking recklessly or without reconnaissance. Their cardinal principle was not to do what the enemy had expected, and, as the Russians had made all their preparations for a night attack, General Kuroki, to whom the capture of the hill had been entrusted, determined to assault it by day. On the 27th the Japanese artillery opened on the ridge with a large number of guns, firing high explosive shell, to which the Russian

Every possible precaution had been taken by



THE THIRD RUSSIAN BALTIC FLEET MANŒUVRING.

[Bulla photo.]

batteries to the rear of Waitoushan attempted to reply with shrapnel. The range was too great for them, however, and their fire was without effect.

All the morning the bombardment continued, till at 1 o'clock in the afternoon the Japanese infantry began their advance. The Russians on the summit had now been reinforced to 2,000 men, but, apparently thinking that the attack was a mere demonstration, the Russian Staff did not concentrate any strong force to beat off the Japanese attack. With rope tied over their boots to give them a firm foothold on the slippery grass, the Japanese rapidly climbed the southern slope and neared the shoulder of the mountain. A swift rush, and the shoulder was carried. The next task to be accomplished was the storming of the Russian redoubt on the first of the peaks.

On this the Japanese artillery concentrated a terrific fire, while the Japanese infantry collected in the dead ground just below it. Clouds of smoke rose from the redoubt; the shells tossed fragments of humanity and masses of earth in the air, and by twos and threes the Russians could be seen bolting from the work along the ridge. For two hours this fire continued, the Japanese infantry always motionless below the work, the work always a-flame and a-smoke with bursting shells. Then at last, after a final salvo, there was a sudden and awful silence, and as the crash of the guns died away the Japanese line broke into life, and a dozen men dashed upon the work, led by a gallant sergeant, who had acted of his own initiative,

without orders. The little party reached the work with the loss of only two or three of their number; then the Russians stepped out to meet them, and the glint of the cruel bayonets was seen. Half the Japanese went down; the rest broke back to cover, but found themselves in the midst of the Russians. Only a lucky shell from a Japanese gun, which burst right in the midst of their assailants, saved the party from annihilation. While this combat had been in progress another company of Japanese had moved up the slope under the long-range fire of the Russian guns, and, aided by the Japanese artillery, which renewed its attack to cover the stormers, carried the redoubt. A few Russians bolted from it as the Japanese entered the work.

This Japanese success led the Russians forthwith to abandon their other redoubts and positions on the mountain.

About 4 p.m., just before sunset, At the Shaho. the Japanese infantry, covered by a tremendous fire, advanced along the ridge. They met with no resistance; the Russians were too busy hurrying



REAR-ADMIRAL NEBOGATOFF.

In command of the Third Baltic Squadron.

down the east side and carrying off their wounded to await their attack. Two machine-guns were captured; 60 Russian dead were found upon the crest, and on the eastern slope other bodies could be seen. The Japanese loss was small. Seventy men were killed and about 100 wounded, and at this price the Japanese front was carried to the Shaho. During the night and on the next morning the Russians heavily bombarded the hill, but with no great effect, as the Japanese found cover behind its steep slopes. Trenches and approaches were constructed, and from that date Waitoushan remained in the hands of the Japanese.

On the left of the army no great system of field-works was thrown up by the Japanese. Marshal Oyama had observed that wherever the Japanese constructed entrenchments the Russians did the same, and as he already was planning an offensive move for the early spring, he wanted the plain on his left clear



MAP OF THE DOGGER BANK OUTRAGE AND THE VOYAGE OF THE BALTIC FLEET.

of all such hindrances. To secure the Japanese position in this direction expeditions were made for the purpose of destroying the Chinese villages, in which the Russians found shelter. These were carried out on October 29 and 30, but not without sharp skirmishing between the two armies.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

DEPARTURE OF THE BALTIC FLEET—THE NORTH SEA OUTRAGE.

WHEN the Japanese torpedo flotilla delivered its great attack upon the Port Arthur fleet in February, 1904, strong reinforcements, as we have seen in the earlier chapters of this work, were on their way to the Russian fleet in the Far East. They included the battleship *Oslabia* and the cruisers *Aurora*, *Almaz*, and *Dmitri Donskoi*. They were at once recalled after the disaster at Port Arthur and brought back to Kronstadt. But at the date of their recall the Russian Admiralty announced its

intention of despatching a fresh fleet from the Baltic to the Far East at the earliest possible opportunity. In April, 1904, however, when all the ships *en route* to the Far East had returned, no more

The Fleet Waits. vessels of any serious value were ready; but the *Borodino*, *Orel*, and *Alexander III.*, all three new battleships of the most formidable type, were rapidly approaching completion.

After many hesitations the Russian Admiralty decided to wait till a formidable fleet could be collected, sufficient to confront the victorious Japanese navy, which, it was assumed, would be compelled to make considerable detachments for the purpose of watching the Russian squadrons at Port Arthur and Vladivostock. It would be necessary, if this object was to be attained, to delay the departure of the Baltic fleet till all the five new battleships of the *Borodino* class were complete, when, with the *Oslabia*, they would give a fairly homogeneous squadron of six battleships.

The destruction of the *Petropavlovsk* led the Russian Admiralty to suspend its plans for the moment, and for a few weeks to abandon the idea of despatching a fresh fleet to the Far East. But in May, 1904,

The Russian Ships.

the loss of the two Japanese battleships *HATSUSE* and *YASHIMA* (which latter vessel is now known to have sunk on May 15, close to Dalny, in shallow water, where hope is still entertained of recovering her) filled St. Petersburg with fresh dreams of vanquishing

Admiral Togo. Work was resumed on all the ships under construction and energetically pushed forward, and the *Orel*, which had sustained very serious damage through the disaffection of her crew during her steam trials off Kronstadt, was hurriedly repaired. But to complete her for sea before August, which had now been fixed by the Russian naval authorities as the date for the departure of the fleet, many important parts of the machinery had to be taken from the new battleship *Slava*, and thus it became clear that the *Slava* could not be included in the fleet which was to avenge Russia on her "insolent" foe.

There remained the four fine battleships *Borodino*, *Imperator Alexander III.*, *Orel*, and *Kniaz Suvaroff*, all sister ships, carrying each four 12-in. guns of the latest type, behind 10-in. Krupp steel armour, in two turrets rotated both by electricity and hand-power, with 12 6-in. guns of equally modern pattern, which were mounted in pairs in turrets behind 6-in. steel, and 20 12-pounders protected by 3-in. armour. On the water-line these formidable battleships had armour

Defects in the Ships.

7½-in. thick, while they were furnished with special plating to protect them against torpedo attack. The armour-deck, which all large warships carry, was in their case turned down before it reached the side to the ship's bottom, and formed a bulkhead of 2-in. steel, protecting the engines, boilers, and magazines. The speed of these ships was designed to be 18 knots, but this was not in practice attained. They had each six torpedo-tubes, two funnels, and two masts with military tops. They were modelled upon the *Tzarevitch*, interned at Kiaochau, and were slightly more powerful than her. In most respects magnificent engines of war, superior in many particulars to the best of the Japanese battleships, they had one fatal failing—the Russian "improvements" in their design had loaded them too heavily, so that they drew much more water than had been intended, and had an insufficient margin of buoyancy. Even in smooth water they rolled very heavily.

The *Oslabia* was a battleship similar in all respects to the *Peresviet* and *Pobieda*, already described in the Port Arthur fleet, but was a more defective and troublesome vessel than her sisters. She rolled badly in the slightest sea, and her boilers and condensers were always breaking down. Two of the older battleships were ordered to join the five new ships. These were the *Sissoi Veliky* and *Navarin*. The first was a small battleship of 10,500 tons, carrying four 12-in. guns in two turrets behind thick armour, with six 6-in. guns protected by five inches of steel. On the water-line she was well protected, but her speed was low, as she was not capable of doing more than 13 knots at sea, and to get even this she burnt a great deal of coal, her supply of which was none too large—only 1,000 tons. The *Navarin* was somewhat older than the *Sissoi*, and was a weaker ship of about the same size, with much the same armament and protection. She could not steam fast, and was a great consumer of coal. The seven battleships selected for service in the Far East mounted between them 24 12-in., 4 10-in., and 73 6-in. guns. The sea speed of the slowest ship, the *Navarin*, was 12½ knots, which set the pace for the fleet.

The cruisers ordered to accompany the battleships were the old *Dmitri Donskoi*, and the new protected cruisers *Oleg*, *Aurora*, *Almaz*, *Jemtchug*, and *Izumrud*, with the *Scvietlana*, a ship which had seen

some ten years' service. Twelve destroyers and one repair-ship, the *Kamschatka*, were attached to the fleet. A large number of fast liners were purchased from Germany, France, and other countries, and armed and equipped to serve as scouts. To the command of the fleet Rear-Admiral

The Cruisers.

Rojdestvensky was appointed, with, under him, Rear-Admirals Folkersam and Enquist.

Admiral Rojdestvensky was regarded in the Russian navy as the ablest officer available, now that Admiral Skrydloff was in the Far East and Admiral Makaroff was dead. Born in 1848, he had distinguished himself as a lieutenant, or claimed to have distinguished himself, in the

Rojdestvensky.

Black Sea during the war of 1877 with Turkey, when he commanded the Russian torpedo-boat No. 2 in an attack upon the Turkish armour-clad *Idjilieh*. Notwithstanding the glowing Russian reports of this affair, the Turks assert that the Russian attack was a miserable failure.

Rojdestvensky was also on board the armed steamer *Vesta*, which claimed to have fought the Turkish warship *Assari-Chevket* with great gallantry, but which was afterwards proved to have fired only a single shot and then to have run away. Rojdestvensky was lionised for his supposed courage in this affair, and received the fourth-class cross of the Order of St. Vladimir, but having quarrelled with his captain, he disclosed the real truth. Want of veracity, however, was no bar to advancement in the Russian navy.

After the war with Turkey he was appointed to organise the Bulgarian navy, and next served as naval attaché in England. From 1894 to 1899 he commanded the cruiser *Vladimir Monomakh* in the Far East, and so was in the Russian squadron which, in 1895, with the support of the French and German ships upon the China station, compelled Japan to abandon her gains in the war with China. From 1899 to 1902 he served in the Baltic fleet, and in the latter year, for his success in the Russian naval manœuvres,

he was appointed rear-admiral on the Czar's staff, in the presence of the German Emperor. In 1903 he became Chief of the General Staff of the Russian navy. In character he was eccentric, irritable, and excitable, so that at times he was scarcely responsible for his actions. He quarrelled with everyone, and had a great proclivity for the use of violence. His actual experience in command of ships or fleets was small, and there was little in his early career to suggest that he possessed any remarkable capacity as an admiral. He was unscrupulous, restless, impatient—the very type of man to turn loose if Russia desired to provoke complications with neutral Powers. For England and the English he felt barely disguised contempt, holding that the British Government would protest if he attacked British interests, but do nothing more. That such a man in command of a formidable fleet would be a danger to innocent non-combatants was not a consideration which troubled the Russian bureaucrats, and they took great pains in their instructions to him



THE MAN OFFICIALLY RESPONSIBLE FOR THE DOGGER BANK OUTRAGE.
Admiral Rojdestvensky, who commanded the Baltic Squadron.



REAR-ADMIRAL FOLKERSAM
Of the Baltic Fleet.

to make him as dangerous as possible to everyone except the enemies of Russia.

On June 23 the Higher Russian Naval Board held an important meeting, and decided that the fleet should start for the East in September.

Misleading the Japanese.

Perhaps, merely as a blind, it was given out at St. Petersburg that the route followed would be that by Cape Horn and South America. To mislead the

Japanese, reports were also circulated that the Russian authorities were considering the feasibility of using the Arctic route to the Far East, which, of course, was simply absurd. At this date only one new first-class battleship was actually ready for sea, but the other units of the fleet were nearing completion. The Russian authorities approached the French Government to obtain permission to coal the Russian ships in French ports on the way out, and the Russian request was granted, in the teeth of remonstrances in the Japanese Press and despite the

principles of international law. To secure a supply of Welsh coal, the Russian Government proceeded to make large contracts with firms in South Wales.

Germany was not less obliging than France, and not less ready to do violence to the spirit of international law. Her Government had already permitted the sale of several large German steamers on

Obliging Germany.

the German Admiralty's list of auxiliary cruisers for the German fleet; it now permitted the Hamburg-American Steamship Company to take the contract for coaling the Russian fleet, and to place 42 German and other vessels in the virtual position of tenders to Admiral Rojdestvensky. These offences against neutrality seriously affected the position, and rendered the voyage of the Baltic fleet possible. But for such conduct on the part of France and Germany the Russian ships would never have ventured from the Baltic. Indirectly the three Governments concerned were attacking the position of England, for it had always been assumed that neutral ports would be closed in war to belligerent cruisers, which would have prevented attacks upon British commerce. But now, by setting up and establishing new principles, while England looked on, the way might be paved for future German raids upon her commerce.

The truth was that both Germany and France calculated upon the victory of the Baltic fleet. They would not have incurred the risk of future demands from Japan for damages "material and moral" had

German and French Miscalculations.

they realised that the Baltic fleet was going forth to the most condign defeat ever sustained by any naval force, and that the sole result of its mission would be to reinforce the Japanese navy with four excellent battleships.

It may have been because the hopelessness of the Russian enterprise was better understood in England that the British Government took no determined action. It was, after all, not England's business to prevent a large number of ships from being sent eastwards for our allies to capture, nor would it have been an altogether friendly act to Japan to cut short the career of Admiral Rojdestvensky. These considerations must be fairly weighed in the episodes with which we shall soon have to deal.

On June 29 the Czar visited Kronstadt and made an inspection of the Baltic fleet, and of some of the steamers and transports that had been

The Czar Visits the Fleet.

purchased and fitted to accompany it. About this time he is said to have received from the German Emperor a guarantee that, in case England should offer any opposition to the voyage eastwards of the fleet, the German navy would support Russia. To emphasise his sympathy with Russia and to encourage the Czar to send his fleet away from "the one German



(Russell & Sons, Baker Street, photo.)

SIR CHARLES HARDINGE,

The British Ambassador at St. Petersburg, who communicated to the Russian Government the Note containing the demands of the British Government.



GENERAL VIEW OF THE GAMECOCK FLEET OFF THE DOGGER BANK WHEN FIRED ON BY THE BALTIC SQUADRON.

Sea," the Baltic, the Kaiser in mid-July sent an extraordinary telegram to the Viborg Russian Regiment, of which he was honorary colonel, congratulating it on the prospect of meeting the enemy, "proud that my regiment will have the glory of fighting for their fatherland." "My sincere good wishes accompany the regiment," he added, "and may God bless its standards." Every possible step was taken to irritate the Czar and those about him against England, in the hope that incidents arising out of the despatch of the fleet would bring about war between England and Russia, or, better still, between England and France.

Admiral Rojdestvensky, during the months of waiting, permitted himself to be frequently interviewed. To the correspondent of a French paper he declared in July that he would use British ports, ridiculing the

The Admiral Interviewed.

suggestion that the British Government would prevent him from so doing. He would put into Kiel, Plymouth, Naples, Aden, some Indian port, and Hong Kong. In private conversation he is known to have expressed his intention of taking "French leave" if admission to the British ports was refused him, for with his powerful fleet, as he explained, no one could say him nay. He added that the heavy-draught ships, which drew too much water to go through the Suez Canal, would go by the Cape, while the cruisers and torpedo craft would go by the canal. The interview was in exact keeping with the man's character—proud, violent, disdainful of the rights of others, full of empty boasts. A few days later all the Volunteer cruisers in the Black Sea were placed under orders for the East. The purchased steamers, *Fuerst Bismarck* of 21 knots, *Columbia* of 20½, *Maria Theresia* of 20, and *Augusta Victoria* of 19½, were added to the Russian Navy List as the *Don*, *Ural*, *Terek*, and *Kuban*; while the *Irtish* (ex-Belgia), *Anadyr* (ex-Vickerstown), and *Argun* hoisted the flag as Russian Government transports. The *Orel* of the Volunteer fleet was brought out from the Black Sea, fitted up at Toulon as a hospital-ship for the fleet, and equipped with wireless telegraphy to do scouting work, as it was safer to send a non-combatant ship in advance of the main fleet, though such action was a grave infraction of the laws of war. The Volunteer ships, *Vladimir*, *Voronez*, *Tamboff*, *Yaroslavl*, *Kieff*, *Dnieper* (ex-Peterburg), and *Rion* (ex-Smolensk), were fitted up as auxiliary cruisers or colliers, the last two after they had been shepherded home by the British fleet in September.

At the opening of August it was announced that the fleet would sail on August 16, and might be expected to reach the Far East in 69 days. It would make for Port Arthur, which the Russian Government

The Admiral Hoists His Flag.

felt certain could hold out till the end of October. On the 14th the fleet began its manœuvres in the Baltic, though all its ships were not yet complete. On that day Admiral Rojdestvensky went on board the magnificent new battleship *Kniaz Suvaroff*, and hoisted his flag amidst the thunder of salutes and a shower of telegrams congratulating him upon his mission. The naval commander of Kronstadt, Admiral Birileff, signalled to him a farewell, which was somewhat premature in view of the fact that he was not actually to leave for another two months. Considerable delay was caused by the fact that the coaling arrangements were not yet complete, and that the Russian Government wished to make certain that the Japanese assaults upon Port Arthur would not succeed before it despatched its fleet. On the 25th the fleet left Kronstadt on a ten-days' cruise to execute evolutions, and give its raw crews some training; but the voyage did not last so long. Several accidents occurred on board the new battleships. A turret in one showed signs of weakness, and the fleet had to return for repairs on the 30th.

As the departure of the fleet seemed imminent in August, and the British Government was determined to give Admiral Rojdestvensky no opportunity of making good his threats and boasts that he would

British Neutrality.

use British coaling-stations, a proclamation was issued on August 12th by the Governor of Malta closing that British port to belligerent ships proceeding to the seat of war. Similar orders were given at all the other British coaling-stations along the route to the Far East, so that neither Russia nor Japan was able to use the British stations. This was a strict and honourable enforcement of British neutrality, and it would have been better in the end for Russia had France acted in the same way. As for Germany, the German Government maintained a stricter attitude than France, and did not permit the Russian fleet to coal in its ports. Arrangements had been made for the Baltic fleet to coal at Kiel; but at the last moment the German Emperor intervened, and prevented the transaction.



THE BALTIC FLEET BOMBARDING ENGLISH FISHING-BOATS IN THE NORTH SEA.



REAR-ADMIRAL ENQUIST
Of the Baltic Fleet.

Coaling the Fleet.

Late in August, colliers began to take up their position at various ports along the route to the Far East in readiness for the Russian fleet; but the departure was still delayed. Early in September Admiral Rojdestvensky was alleged to have sailed; but only a day or two later he returned to Libau, as one of his battleships was still unfit for the voyage. This was the unfortunate *Orel*, the crew of which battleship were notoriously disaffected. She touched a sandbank—stuck upon it in the sight of all the fleet at Kronstadt, which made not the faintest attempt to render her any assistance, and when she got off had sustained so much damage that it was necessary to spend some weeks in repairing her. Almost every day attempts were made to injure some one or other of the ships in the fleet by the numerous revolutionaries among the crews, and they had to be guarded as carefully in this Russian harbour as if they had been lying on the coast of Korea. The

constant vigilance needed to prevent these attacks reacted unfavourably upon the nerves of the undisciplined crews.

Meantime, many of the factors upon which the Russian Government had reckoned in its calculations had ceased to possess any serious value. When the Port Arthur fleet was ordered to go out on August 10, the Russian Admiralty undoubtedly hoped that many of its ships would be able to get away to neutral ports, and, on various excuses, avoid internment, so that they would be free to join Admiral Rojdestvensky when he arrived in the Far East. But the cruiser *Askold* and the destroyer *Grosoroi*, which had taken refuge at Shanghai, were finally disarmed on August 24, though not until a Japanese squadron had arrived under Admiral Uriu prepared to enforce the disarmament, if required. The Russians demanded that the crews of the ships should be permitted to return to Russia, but this was refused by China as the result of vigorous action by Japan. The Russian vessels at Kiaochau, including the *Tzarevitch*, were also disarmed; while the Russian cruiser *Diana*, which had taken refuge at the French port of Saigon, had to haul down her flag and submit to internment. Thus the Russians lost the aid of one battleship and two cruisers upon which they had counted.

Apparently with the object of testing the disposition of the American Government, in case Russia decided to send the Baltic fleet by the Cape Horn route, the Russian auxiliary cruiser *Lena* crossed the

The "Lena."

Pacific from Vladivostock and put in to San Francisco on September 11. She asked to be permitted to execute repairs to her boilers. This was not granted, and she was compelled to disarm, while her crew were interned. It may be conjectured that this incident finally determined the Russian authorities not to despatch any part of the fleet by the Cape Horn route.

Late in September several of the Russian colliers arrived at Las Palmas and Teneriffe in readiness for the coming of the fleet, while the Russian Volunteer cruiser *Nimi Novgorod* sailed from the Black Sea with a large number of troops. Her

mission was to land the Russian force on board in Crete, and ship the troops in Crete for the Far East. It was known that the Russian Government intended to send about 5,000 infantry with the fleet, so as to enable Admiral Rojdestvensky to seize a base in Chinese or Japanese waters, if he felt so disposed.

At last, on October 10, all was ready for the start. The Russian battleships *Kniaz Suvaroff*, *Alexander III*, *Orel*, *Borodino*, *Oslavia*, *Sissot Veliky*, and



A RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP.

[Bain photo.]

Navarin, the armoured cruisers *Admiral Nakhimoff* and *Dmitri Donskoi*, the protected cruisers *Aurora*, *Sviatlana*, *Almaz*, and *Jemtchug*, the armed liners *Kuban*, *Ural*, and *Terek*, the destroyers *Bodry*, *Boiny*, *Bystry*, *Bezoupritchny*, *Bravy*, *Bedovy*, *Blestiashty*, and another, the repair-ship *Kamschatka*, the transports *Anadyr*, *Koreia*, *Malaya*, *Meteor*, *Kitai*, *Kniaz Gorthakoff*, *Jupiter*, *Mercury*, *Tamhoff*, *Yaroslav*,



LORD CHARLES BERESFORD, WARDEN OF THE CHANNEL, ON BOARD H.M.S. "CESAR."

Photo by Russell & Sons. Details of coming-tower from photo Gale & Polden.



COMMANDANT FERSEN, OF THE
"IZUMUDU."

Commandant Fersen is of Scotch descent,
his name being a modification of Macpherson.

After a last interview with Admiral Rojdestvensky he left the ship. As he proceeded ashore his heart may well have swelled with hope at and all the dim fears inspired by the vanished. In battleships, the four, and five of the Russian ships that many of the Japanese ships had Admiral Rojdestvensky reached the his work had been done for him by Sea, and that the Japanese fleet face the Russians with the faintest

On the 11th the fleet left Reval accidents, it remained four days.

Officers and Men. part of reservists, received only a course of their service. Many any naval training whatever, had of officers was such that many were

infantry regiments, and throughout the whole fleet there was only a small sprinkling of thorough sailors or officers with experience. To send a fleet so manned against Admiral Togo's hardy seamen, trained to the highest pitch of perfection by many months of war, sailors by nature and disposition, inured to the sea from birth up, was an act of foolhardiness in the eyes of those who knew that the man behind the gun is everything, and that victories are not won by the outward semblance of strength, but by skill and knowledge.

Before the departure of the fleet Admiral Rojdestvensky received from the Russian Admiralty orders, some fragments of which were divulged in

"Fire on any
Vessel."

private conversation in St. Petersburg, and which should have put every neutral Power on its guard. He was instructed according to the "Russ," "to fire on any vessel seen approaching the fleet, and even to adopt more vigorous measures should these be required." He could seize or sink neutral vessels without informing either his own Government or the Government whose subjects were attacked. He could go where he liked and do what he liked, and he was assured of the open or secret support of his Government,

and *Kieff* were reviewed at Reval by the Czar, accompanied by the Grand Duke Alexis, the Grand Admiral of the Russian Navy, and by Admirals Avellan, Birileff, and Rojdestvensky. The

October 10, 1904.

Oleg, *Izumrud*, and four other destroyers were still unready, and did not form part of the fleet reviewed, while the hospital-ship *Orel* was waiting at Toulon.

The ceremony was a magnificent one as the Czar embarked on board the Russian flagship amidst the thunder of the guns firing an imperial salute and the cheers of the crews to whom he had assigned the task of regaining for Russia the command of the sea. The Emperor himself, in naval uniform, proceeded to the fore-and-aft bridge of the flagship, and, standing upon it at the conclusion of the review, he addressed the men of the *Suvaroff* below. He told them that a desperate struggle lay before them, and directed his officers not to avoid the Japanese, but boldly to give battle to them, and thus to regain what Russia had lost. His address was received with prolonged cheers.



COMMANDANT SEREBRIAKOFF,
OF THE "BORODINO."

As he proceeded ashore his heart the sight of so magnificent a force, warnings of his best advisers have Russians had seven to the Japanese were absolutely new. It was said been damaged; perhaps, when Far East it would be to find that the Russian mines of the Yellow had wasted till it could no longer chance of success.

for Libau, where, owing to minor The crews were composed in great who had little experience, having few months' training in the whole peasants, and even soldiers, without been drafted on board. The want taken from Russian cavalry and



COMMANDER YEGORIEFF,
OF THE "AURORA."

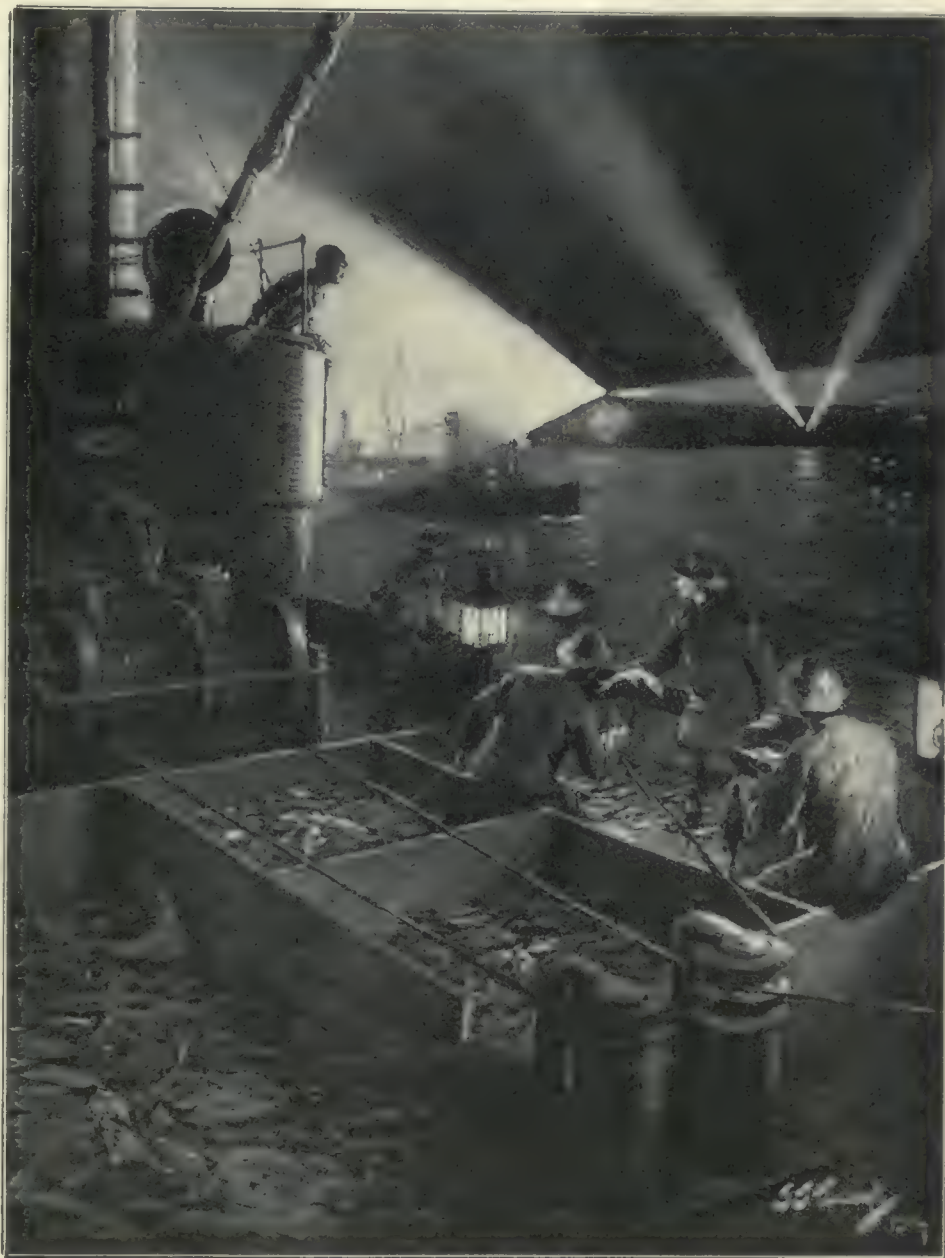
The "Aurora" was one of the vessels that played a prominent part in the North Sea incident.

whatever his actions. To turn this firebrand loose with such instructions, and with a heavily-armed fleet under his command, on seas covered with neutral shipping, upon the highways of international traffic, was a crime against humanity. But the guilt of the proceeding rests with the Russian Government rather than with its subordinate or with the disorganised personnel of the fleet.

On October 15 the Baltic fleet left Libau for the Far East, and the German fleet quietly made ready in case the conduct of the Russians should produce complications with England. In the British Press letters appeared urging the Government and the Admiralty to take precautions for the security of British property, if not of British lives, when the fleet moved

d o w n -
The Action of the Channel.
The British Government. The warn-
ings fell on
indifferent ears. The

Government did nothing; the British Admiralty prepared for a possible crisis by sending the powerful British Mediterranean fleet into the remotest corner of the Adriatic. The Channel fleet, consisting of eight battleships, was at Gibraltar. The cruiser squadron of powerful armoured cruisers was ordered into the dock-yards for extensive repairs, and the ships were temporarily dismantled, so that they could not proceed to sea immediately. Only the Home fleet was left, a weak force, counting seven battleships, in the north of Scotland. No attempt was made to patrol the North Sea or to give protection to the lives of British fishermen and seamen, though it was known that the Hull fishing fleet would be at its usual work



SCENE ON THE TRAWLER "MINO."

some 50 miles from the course that would under ordinary circumstances be steered by the Russian fleet. For the incident which followed, for the lamentable loss of British lives, the British Government and the British Admiralty must share the blame with the Russian Government and Admiral Rojdestvensky. The safety of the nation was most imperfectly secured by these dispositions, which took no heed of the German preparations or of the approach of the Russian fleet. It was an unsatisfactory exhibition of carelessness and want of foresight.

Faithful to its instructions, the Russian fleet fired at any vessels which were unfortunate enough to pass



COMMANDANT BUCHVOSTOFF, OF
THE "ALEXANDER III."

near it on its voyage westwards. The frantic terror of its officers and men excited the derision of the German and Danish pilots when it entered the Great Belt. Tugs preceded it dragging for mines, and a sharp look-out was kept for imaginary Japanese torpedo-boats. A warning had been sent to St. Petersburg from Berlin that the Japanese intended attack in the Belt or the North Sea, and the fears of the Russian officers and men were pitiful to behold. In the Great Belt the fleet fired at a Danish torpedo-boat, at a skiff, and at a merchantman; but, fortunately, the aim of its gunners was so bad that no damage was done.

Terror of the Russians.

The Outrage on the Fishermen.

Of the events which occurred when the Russian fleet entered the North Sea, we shall first give the story told by the Russian officers before the North Sea Commission, warning the reader that no real evidence in favour of the Russian version was produced; that the only Russian document brought into court had been mutilated; that the logs, signal-books, instructions, and wireless-telegraphy tapes of the Russian ships were withheld, though, if the Russian story were true, their production would have greatly strengthened Admiral

four witnesses from the fleet appeared, cross-examined by British counsel by the British Government, while all carefully rehearsed tale, and one utterances of these same officers out of the affair published at the time Russian Press. The British witnesses, examined in the strictest fashion, document of importance or relevance reader must make his choice his own conclusion as to the side

According to the Russian evidence, off the Danish coast Admiral various sources that a torpedo attack North Sea, news which confirmed St. Petersburg from Berlin. He professed to have heard of suspicious vessels on the Norwegian coast, and one of his transports, on her way south from the White Sea, saw, some distance to the north of the

A Mythical Torpedo-boat.

Skaw—or pretended that she had seen—four torpedo-boats showing only a single light. On this, Admiral Rojdestvensky ordered the Baltic fleet to sail from the Cattegat a day in advance of the intended date, and divided up his ships into six divisions, which proceeded independently at short intervals. The first four divisions do not concern the story, though it is alleged by the Russians that all the Russian torpedo craft were with these four divisions. The fifth division was composed of the repair-ship *Kamschatka*, the old armoured cruiser *Dmitri Donskoi*, and the fast protected cruiser *Aurora*, and was directed to steam at 10 knots. The course ordered was one which would take the fleet near the eastern end of the Dogger Bank, the most famous fishing-ground in the world, where hosts of small craft would certainly be encountered trawling, as the Russian Admiralty pilot-books warned Admiral Rojdestvensky. No word of caution against firing on the fishing-boats was issued by the admiral, and his conduct in taking



COMMANDANT BAER, OF THE
"OSLOBIA."

Rojdestvensky's position; that only and that they were not severely owing to the timid attitude adopted four told what appeared to be a which did not agree with the of court, or with the Russian versions of the outrage in the French and on the other hand, were cross-and on the British side every to the issue was produced. The between the two versions, and reach upon which lay the truth.

during the Baltic fleet's short stay Rojdestvensky was warned from would be made upon his fleet in the the information that had reached



COMMANDANT IGNATIEFF, OF
THE "KNIAZ SUVAROFF."



THE RUSSIAN ATTACK ON THE GAMECOCK FLEET OF FISHERS.



(Bulla photo.

RUSSIAN FIRST-CLASS CRUISER "DMITRI DONSKOI" OF THE BALTIC FLEET.

his fleet into the midst of a host of fishing craft is not easy to explain if he really feared torpedo attack, since torpedo-boats might easily have approached under cover of the trawlers. No prudent or humane admiral would have risked the twofold danger. A humane officer, to avoid accidents, would have directed his fleet to steer a course which would have taken it clear of the trawlers and the fishing-ground; a prudent officer, supposing that he had attached any importance to reports

which were on their face absurd, would have steamed down the Dutch coast, and avoided this great assemblage of small craft lying on the Dogger Bank, or would have passed through the zone of danger in daylight.

The Firing Division.

The last division of the Baltic fleet was composed of the battleships *Suvaroff*, *Orel*, *Alexander III.*, and *Borodino*, with the transport *Anadyr*, under Admiral Rojdestvensky's immediate and personal command. It followed some distance behind the fifth division, passing the Skaw on the night of October 20. According to the Russian story, the repair-ship *Kamschatka*, in the fifth division, had a breakdown in her engines, and towards the night of October 21 fell far astern of the *Aurora* and *Dmitri Donskoi*. For some unexplained reason these two ships went on ahead, leaving her behind. This action on their part at least suggests that the Russian officer in charge of the division apprehended no danger of torpedo attacks, or else that he was guilty of a grave error of judgment. The crew of the *Kamschatka* appear to have given themselves up to panic terror, and they acted on the orders issued to the fleet to fire at everything which approached them. The German trawler *Sonntag* was the object of a heavy bombardment, which, fortunately, did her little or no injury. The Swedish steamer *Aldebaran*, about 8 p.m., was attacked, again without the indifferent gunners of the Baltic fleet succeeding in sinking her, though they fired at her for half an hour. The French steamer *Guyane* also received some shots. It was at this juncture that, according to the Russian evidence given before the North Sea Commission, she signalled by wireless telegraphy to Admiral Rojdestvensky the news that she was "attacked on all sides by torpedo-boats." Accepting this as correct, since the day when Don Quixote tilted against windmills in the firm belief that they were armed knights, history does not record a more absurd position than that of this Russian vessel firing madly on a number of harmless merchantmen in the belief that they were hostile torpedo craft when there were none such within 15,000 miles of her.

Admiral Rojdestvensky claims to have accepted at its face value the message from the *Kamschatka*, without considering or investigating by means of his wireless instruments the nature of these torpedo-boats, and without so far



(Bulla photo.

FIRST-CLASS RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP "SISSEI VELIKY" OF THE BALTIC FLEET.

as the Russian evidence showed) sending a cruiser to follow them up, which is somewhat remarkable. He continued to steam south towards the fishing fleet, leaving the *Kamschatka* some 50 miles astern at the mercy of her terrible assailants. Yet she was the only repair-ship with his fleet, and had she been disabled, according to Russian witnesses, the difficulties of the Baltic fleet must have been enormously increased. It would therefore seem that he did not regard the danger to her as being of a serious nature. About 11 p.m. the *Kamschatka* sent a wireless message to the effect that the torpedo craft had disappeared. An hour earlier Admiral Rojdestvensky had signalled to his fleet to increase its vigilance, and to be on the look-out for a torpedo attack. Having made this signal, the Russian admiral continued to steam towards the peaceful, inoffensive fishing-boats, without a single word of caution to his officers, knowing that his crews had orders to open fire on their own initiative in the event of a vessel approaching his fleet from ahead, so that what may be regarded, according to the point of view of the reader, as either a wanton outrage or an easily preventable accident, caused by criminal carelessness, was now morally certain to occur.

The Russian evidence produced before the Commission ignored the fact that the *Aurora* and *Dmitri Donskoi* had both dropped behind their proper position, and that possibly one or more Russian destroyers were with them. They were thus close



ENQUIST.

FOLKERSAM.

ROJDESTVENSKY.

[Avelan photo.]

THREE RUSSIAN ADMIRALS.

Admirals Rojdestvensky and Enquist were in command of the Second Baltic Squadron, Admiral Folkersam controlling the Third.

upon Admiral Rojdestvensky's battleships, though he himself seemingly did not know it, while the *Kamschatka* was also fast nearing the fishing-boats. The advance guard of the Russian fleet sighted the lights of the fishing-fleet late in the night of the 21st, the anniversary of Trafalgar, passing to the north-west of the trawlers. Admiral Folkersam steamed close to them, examined them carefully without seeing anything suspicious, and proceeded on his way. Close upon 1 a.m. of the 22nd Admiral Rojdestvensky's division of battleships approached the boats of the Gamecock fishing-fleet, which flew the British flag, and which were fishing on the regular ground. The Russian ships were somewhat to the south-east of the fishing-boats, and saw their lights.

The Admiral's Movements.

At this juncture a green rocket was fired from one of the trawlers. One might have supposed that the officers of the Russian fleet and Admiral Rojdestvensky, its commander, would be aware that the firing of a rocket by trawlers is a signal to shoot the trawls, and if this knowledge was not common property in the Russian fleet, and the British Admiralty was unwilling to grant proper escort to the fishing craft, the fishermen should at least have been cautioned by the British naval

The Fishermen.

authorities against the use of rockets during the passage of the Russian vessels. But no caution had been issued, and no preparations made to protect the lives of the fishermen. Secure in the belief that the great and glorious British navy watched over them, the British trawlers plied their work in waters that from time immemorial the flag of England had dominated, feeling as safe as in their own homes. Few of them knew the story of the *HIPSANG*; fewer still had troubled themselves over the sinking of the *Knight Commander*, or the long series of outrages to British shipping that led up to and prepared the culminating act of violence that the night was to bring forth.

At the firing of the rocket, according to the Russian evidence, the officers of the *Suvoroff* swept the horizon with their glasses for some sign of an attack. On the bridge of the *Suvoroff* were Admiral Rojdestvensky and Captain Klado, Rojdestvensky's Chief of the Staff, who had been sent from Vladivostock to acquaint him with the details of the situation in the Far East, and whose narrative of the proceedings must demand some attention, if only to point out that its suppressions and distortions of the truth are innumerable. Presently, the group of officers in the *Suvoroff* sighted, 4,000 yards away upon their starboard bow (though, according to their own account, the night was hazy), a vessel which seemed to them suspicious, because she had low funnels, carried no light, and seemed to be making directly for the *Suvoroff* from ahead. The searchlights were turned on, and disclosed a torpedo-boat proceeding at great speed which, for a torpedo-boat, means at least 18 to 20 knots—so that the mysterious craft would be nearing the *Suvoroff*—which was steaming towards her at 10 knots—at the rate of about 30 knots, and would thus cover the distance parting her from the *Suvoroff* in four, or at the most five, minutes. Within an interval of five minutes the torpedo attack, supposing a torpedo-boat were really present, must either succeed or fail. This is an important fact to bear in mind in view of the duration of the firing by the Russian fleet.

The order to fire on the approaching vessel was given at Admiral Rojdestvensky's command by sounding the "Commence fire" on the bugle. With a roar the four Russian battleships opened a furious and indiscriminate fire, not upon the alleged torpedo craft only, which was coming "Commence Fire!" up on the starboard side, but also on the trawlers to the port side of the Russian fleet, for the Russians had now steamed right into the midst of the trawlers. The battleships, however, rolled heavily, and the Russians were indifferent shots, so that the damage done was not so terrible as might have been expected. On board the battleship *Orel* a serious accident occurred, as, just as a 12-pounder gun was being fired, the ship rolled, and a wave struck the muzzle of the gun, with the result that it burst violently, killing or wounding several of the gun-crew. At this moment, according to the Russian evidence, a vessel was seen right ahead of the *Suvoroff*, so that, to avoid collision with it, she had to alter course to port. She turned her searchlights upon it, when it proved to be a trawler, whereupon the rays of the searchlights were turned upwards—a signal to the fleet not to fire at it. Immediately after this, according to Captain Klado's evidence, the searchlights of the *Suvoroff* showed a second torpedo-boat on the port-side, much nearer than the first, about 15 cables (3,000 yards, or $1\frac{1}{2}$ sea miles) away. Almost at the same instant the ray of a searchlight from some Russian ship far away from the squadron and on the other side of the fishing-fleet caught the torpedo-boat and showed her dark outline silhouetted against its glare. The newly discovered torpedo-boat was fired at, when it and the torpedo-boat first seen went in opposite directions, the one first seen steaming off to the right or starboard, the second one to the left or port-side. The trawler which had so nearly collided with the *Suvoroff* meantime passed along the whole Russian line to starboard of it, and probably got in the line of fire. One of the torpedo-boats was either sunk or "ought to have been sunk," but as Captain Klado contradicted himself repeatedly on details of his evidence, and as he himself confessed that he published falsehoods in articles over his own name which appeared in the "Novoe Vremya" soon after the outrage, no statement of his can be accepted where it is not corroborated.

Captain Klado admitted that he saw a trawler which had been struck by the Russian shells, so that the Russians could not plead ignorance of the injury which they had inflicted. He owned, under cross-examination, that the ships of Admiral Folkersam's division were seen, that the two cruisers *Aurora* and *Dmitri Donskoi*, under Admiral Enquist's orders, flashed their names to the battleship squadron,



HOW A TORPEDO ATTACK IS MADE ON MODERN WARSHIPS.

The method of working a turntable tube from which a torpedo is discharged.

and that the *Dmitri Donskoi* signalled after the firing had ceased that the *Aurora* had been hit. He was positive on the head that he had seen a torpedo-boat, and had not mistaken the *Aurora* for one; and

Klado's Evidence.

Lieutenants Ellis and Schramchenko, of the *Alexander III.* and *Borodino*, also were positive that they had seen torpedo-boats. All three officers put the duration of the firing at 9 to 10 minutes. Accepting this as true, though the British witnesses put the duration of the firing at from 15 to 20 minutes, the Russians, on their own admission, were still shooting long after the torpedo-boats must have passed them and vanished in the night or disappeared to the bottom of the sea.

When the firing at length ceased, the Russian admiral calmly steamed off into the night without ascertaining what damage he had done to the trawlers, though he knew that one at least had been sunk;

**The Admiral
Steers Off.**

without apologising for his mistake; without rendering any assistance to the wounded and the drowning; without attempting to communicate, on his passage down-Channel past the English coast, the news of the incident to the British Government; without making any report on the affair to his own Admiralty, and pretending that he had sunk a Japanese torpedo



THE THIRD BALTIC SQUADRON.
Four battleships, one cruiser, three transports.

vessel. Even accepting his own version, he was guilty of grave want of humanity in leaving the crew of the torpedo vessel to drown like dogs, and it is deeply to be regretted that a number of distinguished naval officers of all nations should have condoned such conduct on his part. It adds to the discredit attaching to the Russian navy that the *Aurora* and other Russian ships remained upon the scene for some hours, and that, though their crews must have observed what was passing, they made no attempt to give assistance or tender apology.

When Admiral Rojdestvensky at last condescended to break his silence, which does not seem to have been before October 26 or 27, he declared that the affair had been brought about by the appearance of two torpedo vessels, "which, with lights out, and sheltered by the darkness, prepared to attack the ship at the head of our line. When the squadron began to make signals and then fired, many other small steamers resembling trawlers were observed. The squadron did its best to spare these steamers, and ceased fire the moment the torpedo-boats had disappeared. The British Press is indignant that a torpedo-boat left on the

scene by the squadron gave no assistance to the victims. I may tell you that there was not one single torpedo-boat with the squadron, and, therefore, one could not have been left behind. It follows, then, that the boat which remained was one of the two hostile torpedo craft which had not been sunk, and which was only damaged. The squadron could not render any assistance to the trawlers, which might well be suspected of complicity in the attack, in view of their obstinate attempts to break our line. There were some boats which showed no lights at all, and others which only showed them long after our appearance."

The whole report is a tissue of falsehoods; it suppresses the facts, which are known and definitely ascertained, that the *Aurora* and *Kamschatka* were near the scene of the outrage next morning; it asserts an untruth when it affirms that the British trawlers did not show their proper lights; it brings an abominable and unfounded charge of treachery against them. It was not supported by the case laid before the North Sea Commission by the Russian Government, and differs from it on important details. It bears internal marks of having been hastily concocted to explain an affair for which there was no possible excuse.

A False Report.



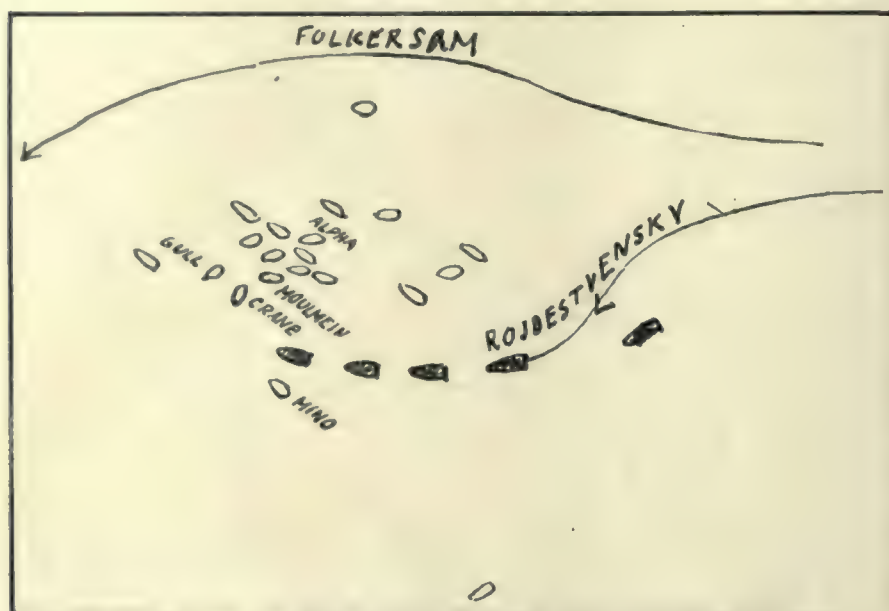
ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY, IN COMMAND OF THE BALTIC FLEET, AT TANGIERS IN COMPANY WITH THE RUSSIAN CONSUL.

CHAPTER XLIX.

THE NORTH SEA CRISIS—BRITISH GOVERNMENT'S DEMANDS.

MEANTIME the story of the British fishermen who were targets of the Russian fire has to be told. On Sunday, October 23, a scene unprecedented in the annals of Hull was witnessed when two steam trawlers put into that port with their flags flying at half-mast. They brought this report. On the night of Friday, October 21, the Gamecock trawlers were on the Dogger Bank preparing to shoot their trawls. The weather was hazy but not thick. About 11.30 p.m. lights were noticed to the west, and a large number of men-of-war hove in sight. The warships were taken at first for the British Home fleet which was known to be in northern waters, and no particular attention was paid to them. As the mass of ships came nearer it could be seen that the strange vessels were at least nine in number. Three or four passed to the north of the

The Fishermen's Story.



THE ROUTE OF THE BALTIC FLEET BY THE DOGGER BANK.

fishing-fleet, nearing the fleet and examining it, without, however, taking any further notice of it. A few minutes later, however, four large ships rapidly approached the fishing-fleet from the north-east, steering across its course and nearing it on the east side. Passing to the south of the great bulk of the fishing-boats, the strangers suddenly made signals, flashed searchlights in all directions, and then and there, without further warning, opened a terrific fire from either broadside.

About the time when the four large ships opened fire other warships were seen to the south of this squadron by one or two trawlers fishing at a distance from the main body of the fishing-fleet. One of these vessels turned her searchlight upon a trawler and opened fire upon it. All the Russian ships continued firing, despite several green rockets which were sent up by the admiral of the trawlers, to intimate to the strange fleet that the vessels attacked were engaged in the inoffensive work of fishing.

"We were just to the north-westward of the fishing-fleet, and had our fishing gear down, when the strange lights appeared," stated the captain of the carrier *Swift*. "The vessels with the lights had then evidently become aware of the presence of the fishing-fleet, for they came on towards us at the rate of only about three or four miles an hour. I was, owing to our position to the northward, about the first to see these men-of-war. In ten minutes or so after I sighted them they were among us and stopped. Our fishing-fleet had all their regulation lights burning—the duplex fishing-signal at the masthead, the white light below it, the green light on the starboard, the red on the port side, and a white light at the stern. The Russian fleet, which lay in a line south-west and north-east, heading south-west, began to use their searchlights to examine our ships, and to fire their guns. I thought it was simply blank shots to warn us to stand off, more especially as our admiral immediately sent up two green rockets advising us to bear to starboard as much as was possible for us with our trawls down. I had altered course towards the west, so as to give the warships a wider berth, when a shell struck the water a few feet from our port bow and, bursting, gave us a drenching. I shouted to the crew that the warships were firing shell, so that they might lie down. The firing lasted from a quarter of an hour to twenty minutes. Another shot whizzed between the wires over the bridge a foot or two from my head. We could see the flash of the guns of four different ships. They at last stopped firing and then resumed their course, going off much faster than they came, and soon disappearing in the haze and darkness, without troubling themselves in the least about the damage they had done. Our men are boiling with

Strange Lights Appear.



SCENE OF THE DOGGER BANK OUTRAGE.

indignation at this cowardly and unprovoked attack upon us.

"The Russian ships were within 150 yards of my boat, and were using searchlights. They could clearly see the distinctive letters on the fishing-boats—letters which are two feet long—and it was quite impossible that they could take us for anything but fishing-boats."

The captain of the *Maggie* told a grimmer tale. "The one of our fishing-fleet to suffer most



TAKING THE BODIES OF THE VICTIMS OF THE DOGGER BANK OUTRAGE ON BOARD THE TRAWLER "MOULMEIN."

from the attack was the trawler *Crane*. She was steaming towards the Russian fleet with all lights burning, when fire was opened upon her. The skipper of the *Crane* had his head completely blown off by a shell; another projectile killed the mate, slicing half his head off from chin to hair. All the crew of six were wounded, some seriously, and the boatswain had his left hand blown away. Nobody knew this at the time, though groans were heard, and presently it was seen that the *Crane* was settling down and making signals of distress. So the skipper of the *Gull*, which was nearest to her, at once launched his boat and boarded the *Crane*. He told me that her deck presented a shocking spectacle, with blood all about, the headless trunk of the captain and the ghastly body of the mate, which was faceless, and the wounded men lying about in such shelter as they had managed to reach. The low skunks! The cursed murderers!" And the captain lost self-control as his mind went back to the terror of the night and the cruelty of this attack upon hundreds of defenceless neutrals.

Not less terrible was the story told by Mr. Joseph Smith, of the trawler *Crane*, the vessel sunk by the Russian fire. He was the son of Captain Smith, who commanded the *Crane*, and who was killed by the Russian



THE TRAWLER "MOULMEIN" RETURNING TO HULL WITH THE DEAD FISHERMEN.

projectiles. While asleep in his bunk on the fateful

**Captain night he
Smith's Son's was aroused
Story.**

by the heavy report of guns firing. As he was getting up a shot struck the star-board side of the *Crane* and went through the fore-castle. It extinguished the lamp, close to which he was standing, and missed him only by a few inches. He rushed on deck, where he saw his father, George Smith, and the second mate, Leggett,

lying prostrate with their heads blown off, and the rest of the crew scattered about, several of them very badly injured. At the time of the attack the men of the *Crane* were engaged in gutting the fish, and the dead had knives in their hands for that purpose. The *Crane* was making much water, and sinking fast. But her mate, William Smith, though he had a wound in the back from a shell-splinter an inch and a quarter long, stood manfully to his post. In the thick of the firing he shouted to the crew: "Lads, look after yourselves; we are crippled, and the ship is sinking!" He gave the order "Out boat!" but the winch had been riddled, and the boat could not be lowered. All this time the Russians were still firing on the *Crane* as she lay in the full blaze of their searchlights, her true



ADMIRAL NEBOGATOFF, OF THE RUSSIAN NAVY.

character evident to any but a Russian admiral. So close were the Russian ships that the click of the gun-locks could be plainly heard.

A signal of distress was made to the nearest trawler—the Russians cared nothing for signals of distress. It was the *Gull*, and, as just at this moment the fire ceased, the *Gull* sent a boat, which removed from the sinking vessel the wounded—Boatswain Hoggart, with his right hand blown almost completely off and with several other severe wounds; Second Engineer Rea, wounded in the chest; Trimmer Almond, wounded in the forearm; Mate W. Smith, wounded deeply in the back; Chief Engineer Nixon, severely wounded in the head, with other wounds on the right arm; and Deck-hand Ryder, with a deep wound on the right hip. The two dead, Captain Smith and Second Mate William Leggett, were transferred to the *Gull* before the wounded were taken out. Some minutes later the *Crane* went to the bottom.

Among the trawlers less seriously damaged by the Russian fire were the *Moulmein* and *Mino*. The *Moulmein*, when she put into Hull, showed several hits; while the *Mino* had sixteen shot-

holes in her sides. She only reached Hull with great difficulty, being barely able to keep afloat. One shot went clean through her hull, and to prevent her from foundering the two holes which it made had to be plugged with wood and canvas. Another shell passed through her galley skylight, cutting the mizzen-rigging. A third struck one of the cabins, perforated the mizzen-mast, and passed through the trawl fishing-board. Two more pierced the fore-cabin chimney; a sixth went through the mizzen-sail. Others hit the boat tackle, the boat, and the main companion. Several pieces of shell lay upon the *Mino's* deck when the Russians ceased their fire and steamed off into the night. The trawler *Snipe* was struck by a bullet, and many other boats had traces of hits from machine-guns or rifle-fire.

It was at first reported that a second trawler, the *Wren*, had been sunk with all hands, as she was missing for several days. But fortunately it turned out that this report was false, and that she had not been seriously injured. The hospital-ship *Alpha* was under fire, and a shell exploded under her

stern, its fragments leaving numerous marks upon her hull and straining the vessel severely. To escape destruction she extinguished all her lights, after she had been the target of the Russian fire for some minutes, and attempted to make off to the northward.

All the British witnesses agreed that the Russian ships came to the

very closest
No Warning quarters with
Given. the main body

of the trawlers, and that in the intense and dazzling glare of their searchlights the large numbers on the fishing-boats were plainly visible, while the sail which each boat was carrying at the moment of the attack

should have instantly differentiated the vessels of the trawling-fleet from torpedo-boats. None of the witnesses saw anything of torpedo-boats, whether of Japanese or other nationality, and no hostile act of any kind was committed by the trawlers. On the contrary, when they saw the Russians steam right into the midst of the fleet, cutting through the nets or compelling their abandonment, all that they were anxious to do was to get out of their assailants' way. The witnesses were further unanimous that no sort of warning was given by the Russian fleet before opening fire. It discharged no blank shot and used no signals but those of the Russian service, which were unintelligible to the British fishermen. No one in the fishing-fleet doubted that the Russians were perfectly aware of the nature of the vessels at which they were shooting, and to the fishermen the whole affair wore the air of a deliberate and murderous outrage.

Two witnesses, Captain Green of the *Gull*, and Boatswain Costelloe of the same craft, thought that they saw a torpedo-boat some minutes after the Russians had opened fire. Costelloe, as was afterwards

ascertained, took the hull of the *Alpha*, after all her

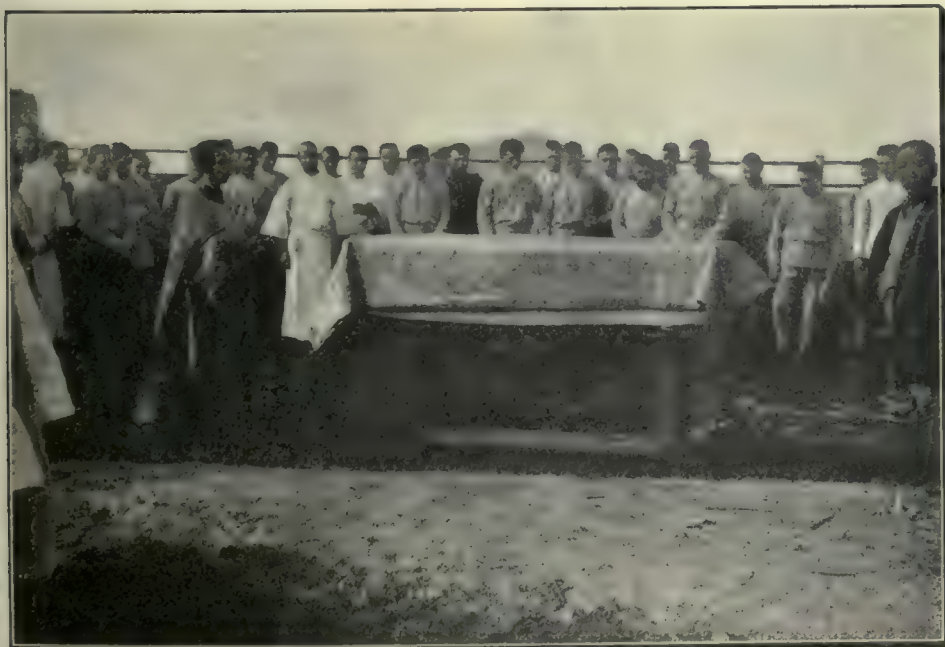
The lights had
Mysterious been ex-
Torpedo-boats. tinguished,

which was not till some considerable time after the Russians had opened fire, for a torpedo-boat. As there was much smoke from the *Gull* he could not see the *Alpha* clearly, but when the positions were laid off on a chart after the affair no real doubt remained in his mind that the vessel was the *Alpha*. Captain Green, long after the firing had



NORTH SEA COMMISSION IN PARIS.

Scene of the deliberations at the French Foreign Ministry.



A FUNERAL PROCESSION AT MATSUYAMA.

begun, "saw something ahead of the *Gull* coming without lights," but did not know what it was at first, and said "There's a torpedo-boat coming." An instant later the supposed torpedo-boat disclosed her identity and showed a white light and then a red—the signal of distress. He steered towards it and found it was the *Crane*, which had extinguished her lights, after the Russians began to hit her badly, as the one and only hope of safety. Her crew hailed the *Gull*, and shouted that she was shot to pieces and sinking, whereupon the *Gull* sent to her aid as has already been recorded. This evidence shows that there was no torpedo-boat near the trawlers, nor anything like a torpedo-boat, before the firing had begun.

In the small hours of the morning the wounded men were transferred once more from the *Gull* to the

hospital-ship, *J. and S. Miles*, attached to the Great Northern fishing-fleet, which was at work a few miles away from the Gamecock fleet. The *Alpha*, attached to the Gamecock fleet, had drifted out of reach in the turmoil and confusion.

Despite Admiral Rojdestvensky's positive statement that no Russian vessel

A Misleading Statement.

remained near the trawlers, and that therefore the

Russians could give no assistance, despite his contention—which the North Sea Commission accepted—that his fleet was bound after this outrage to take itself off as speedily as possible for fear of further torpedo attacks, it was ascertained that one or more Russian ships had remained on the scene of the outrage for several hours after the Russian squadron ceased firing. It is strange, to say the least, that the distinguished admirals of the North Sea Commission should not have inquired why these ships rendered no aid and made no apology, even accepting the Russian view that the battleship division was bound to make off. One of these vessels was the *Kamschatka*, which was seen by the crew of the trawler *Kennett* at 7 a.m. of the 22nd close to the scene of the outrage. The other was a three-



ADMIRAL HIRILEFF, OF THE RUSSIAN NAVY.

funnelled ship, easily identified as the *Aurora*, observed by the *Moulmein* about 4 a.m. The same vessel was sighted by the *Mino* a few minutes later, and nearly ran that badly damaged trawler down, with such criminal carelessness did the Russians navigate their vessels. It must therefore be reluctantly concluded that the real reason why the Russians gave no aid to the fishing-boats which they had attacked and injured was, not that they were compelled by military exigencies to steam away from the spot, but that they regarded the killing and wounding of British subjects as a trivial matter, and the laws of humanity as having no application to neutrals who happened to get in the way of the Baltic fleet.

The news of the attack was received in England with deep indignation, though the British public had now grown accustomed to see its ships molested or sunk upon the high seas without any sort of redress

being obtained. It was only in degree that the outrage in the North Sea differed from the attack upon the *Hipsang* or the sinking of the *Knight Commander*. After

The News in England.

each of these outrages there was an impulsive outcry for the British Government to vindicate the security of its subjects' lives and property, but without the support which steady purpose and exalted national spirit give to such a demand; and on each occasion, when the British people reflected upon the sufferings and sacrifices that war with Russia would involve, it came to the conclusion that the cheapest and most comfortable course would be to do nothing but to condone the outrage in question. The gain of such a course was immediate; the fact that it must weaken the nation's position in the world, shake the shipowners' confidence in the protection given by the flag, and slowly re-act upon British commerce, was not clearly understood.

The story told by the Hull fishermen, however, aroused for the moment a storm of indignation in the country, which had not then come to believe that British subjects could be killed on the high seas at the price of a few thousand pounds per head. The King at once telegraphed to the Mayor of Hull the fact that he had "heard with profound sorrow of the unwarrantable action which has been committed against the North Sea fishing-fleet," and wished "to express the deepest sympathy of the Queen and his Majesty with the families of those who have suffered from this most lamentable occurrence."

On October 24 the Russian Ambassador hurriedly returned to London, and was hooted by a crowd at Victoria. That same day, the 24th, Lord Lansdowne telegraphed instructions to the British Ambassador

Action of the Government.

at St. Petersburg to inform the Russian Government of the outrage, which, in the words of his dispatch, "would seem to have been of the most deliberate character. . . . The fact that these vessels could have been mistaken for anything but what they were—namely, a peaceful fishing-fleet engaged in their ordinary occupations—can only have been due to culpable negligence. The indignation provoked by this incident cannot possibly be exaggerated. The action of the Russian commanding officer in leaving the scene of the disaster without offering assistance has aggravated this feeling, as before his voyage was resumed he must have known that his fleet had fired upon and seriously injured innocent and defenceless fishermen." The dispatch continued that the British Government would formulate no demands till it had received the Russian explanations, which "no doubt" would be speedily forthcoming, but it would exact "ample apology and complete and prompt reparation, as well as security against the recurrence of such intolerable incidents."



DR. H. N. ANKLESARIA.
Doctor of the North Sea Mission Ship.



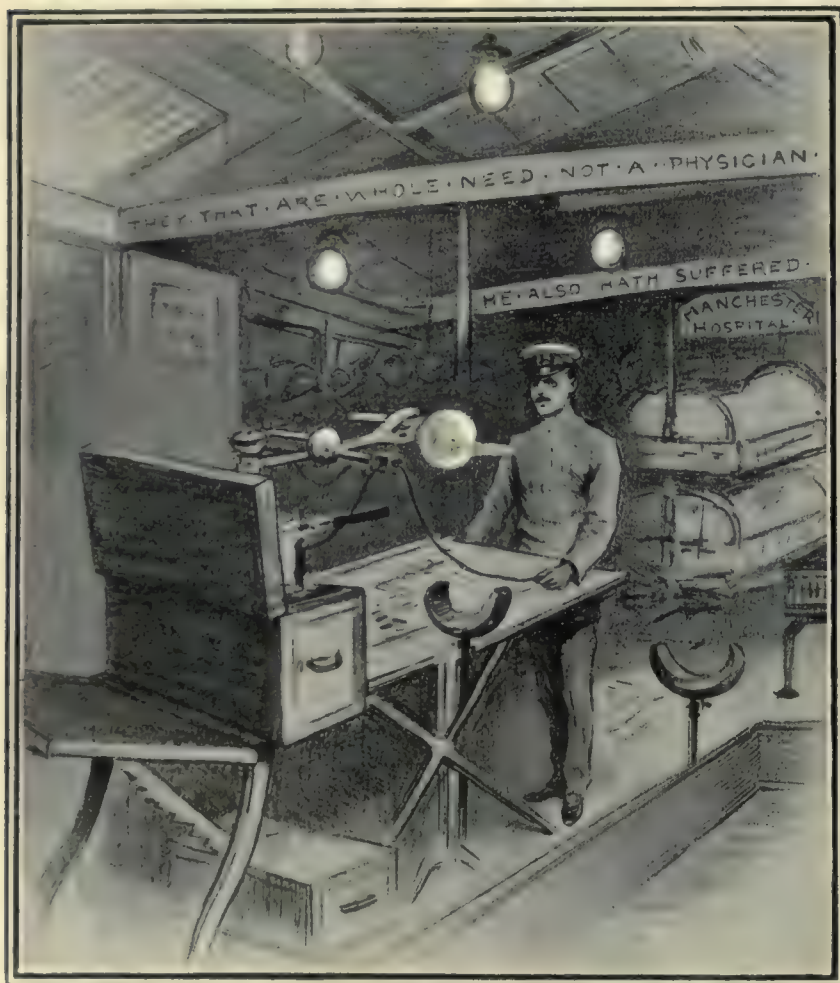
[Photo, Thomson, London.
VICE-ADMIRAL SIR LEWIS A. BEAUMONT.
British Representative on the International Commission on
the North Sea outrage.

The explanations, which it was too hastily assumed by Lord Lansdowne would at once be forthcoming from the Russian Government, had to be long awaited, though the Russian Foreign Minister at once declared that, if the information given in the Press was confirmed, full reparation would be given, and that the Russian officers at fault would be "adequately punished." The British Ambassador at St. Petersburg, on October 24, warned the Russian Government that "it would not be possible to allow the situation created by this deplorable incident to be indefinitely prolonged," for Admiral Rojdestvensky, with easy nonchalance, had made no report on the occurrence, and seemed in not the slightest hurry to make one. That same day a British correspondent boarded one of the Russian transports, the *Kitai*, which had put into the neutral French port of Cherbourg and was transferring coal to the Russian destroyers there, and informed a Russian naval officer that the Russian fleet had sunk two British fishing vessels. "I am glad to hear it!" exclaimed the

Russian officer, alongside of whom was now standing the commander of the *Kitai*. "Imagining that I had not heard correctly, I asked him to repeat his words," telegraphed the correspondent. "'So much the better!' he shouted. 'Let them all sink! That's what we say.' I took copies of the Paris papers on board the Russian sea-going torpedo-boats which were still busy revictualling. In no case was there any expression of regret for the innocent lives sacrificed."

The Baltic fleet, meantime, was quietly proceeding on its way, in Captain Klado's words, paying no attention to "the furious clamour of the English Press," or the complaints of the British Government; but, on the contrary, exulting, if he can be believed, "that our brave sailors were not afraid to assume heavy responsibility by immediately opening fire on the unknown torpedo-boats, taking no account of the presence of the so-called neutral fishing-boats," and determined not to be "too squeamish" as to the means by which they terrified neutrals into keeping a great

**Baltic Fleet
Proceeds.**



THE SURGERY IN THE NORTH SEA MISSION SHIP "JOSEPH AND SARAH MILES."

distance from everything which flew the Russian flag. At the Russian Admiralty it was openly stated that, though no report had been received from Admiral Rojdestvensky, his ships had orders to shoot at any vessel which came within a certain distance, "if his signals were not answered," while at the Russian Foreign Office the story that the British fishermen were in the pay of the Japanese, and were laying mines in the course of the fleet, was formulated in reply to questions put by the "Daily Mail" correspondent at St. Petersburg. It might almost seem that the outrage had been anticipated and prepared at the headquarters of the Russian Navy from the tone of the statements made to foreign correspondents.

The outrage found the British Navy unprepared and unready. We have already detailed the dispositions, which were thoroughly defective, and exposed Great Britain to the gravest

danger by leaving her without a strong naval force in the North Sea. It accentuated the seriousness of the position that on Trafalgar Day the control of the British Navy had changed hands, Admiral Sir J. Fisher succeeding Admiral Lord Walter Kerr as First Sea Lord. Admiral Fisher cannot be held in any way responsible for the situation with which he found himself compelled to deal. Owing to an unfortunate illness he, who was by common consent the ablest officer of the fleet, was not able immediately to take over the management of the British strategy. The consequence was that time was wasted at the most critical moment, and though steps were at once taken to get the British cruiser squadron to sea, and to move the North Sea fleet south out of the zone of danger from Germany, the powerful Mediterranean fleet was permitted to linger in the Adriatic, when it ought to have been instantly moved west to Gibraltar or the Channel. Of all the British fleets, the Channel fleet under Lord C.

Beresford was alone in immediate readiness, at Gibraltar; it comprised eight excellent battleships, under an officer of tried capacity and brilliant tactical skill. On this fleet, it was quickly seen, might devolve the task of stopping the Baltic fleet, if the British Government did not give way to Russia and if Admiral Rojdestvensky continued his voyage in tranquil contempt for British protests and expostulations.

On the afternoon of the 24th Lord Lansdowne received from the Russian Chargé d'Affaires in London the first outline of the explanation which the Russian Government was preparing to cover the misdeeds of the officer whom it had sent forth in command of the Baltic fleet. The Russian diplomatist declared that the Russian Government knew Japanese agents were visiting England "for the purpose of organising attacks on the Baltic fleet, and in these circumstances it was perhaps not unnatural that the captains of the Russian ships should have been alarmed at finding these vessels (the trawlers) in close proximity to the



SIR EDWARD FRY, Admiral Sir Admiral Admiral Admiral Admiral (Photo by Nouvelles.
British Legal Assessor. LEWIS BEAUMONT. SPAUN. FOURNIER. DUBASSOFF. DAVIES.

THE NORTH SEA INQUIRY COMMISSION IN PARIS.

The four original members of the North Sea Commission were Admiral Davies (United States), Admiral Fournier (France), Admiral Kaznakoff (Russia), and Admiral Sir Lewis Beaumont (Great Britain). Subsequently Admiral Dubassoff replaced Admiral Kaznakoff, owing to the latter's ill-health. The fifth Commissioner, who was elected by the four already appointed, was Admiral Spaun, of the Austro-Hungarian Navy.

men-of-war." The 24th passed without any report from Admiral Rojdestvensky, though he is said to have been in communication with the Russian Government by the French wireless stations during his passage down the Bay of Biscay. The game of amusing the British authorities was being played with complete success, the Russian Government insisting that it had no information, as in the case of previous outrages, and the Russian naval officers communicating no information, in accordance with their secret orders.

On the 25th, as there was still silence on the part of the Russian admiral, the British Admiralty informed the Press that on the 24th "preliminary orders for mutual support and co-operation were as a measure of precaution issued from the Admiralty to the Mediterranean, Channel, and

The Navy Active.

Home fleets." The Home fleet left Cromarty and steamed south; the Channel fleet was announced to be coaling at Gibraltar; but the Mediterranean fleet still dawdled in the Adriatic. In a speech at a public dinner that evening Lord Selborne declared that "an inexcusable outrage had been

committed," and that a nation, such as the British or American, supposing that its fleet had committed such a "terrible blunder," would have offered an immediate and ample apology, have made every reparation that it was in its power to make, have punished those responsible, and have offered every security against the recurrence of such a blunder. The Czar on this day conveyed to the King his regrets at the occurrence, and promised "to take the necessary measures of reparation to the sufferers," but only "as soon as a clear account is given of the circumstances in which the incident occurred."

At the same time the Russian Ambassador in London assured the British Government that "no difficulty would be experienced in regard to the question of compensation," on receiving from Lord

Lansdowne the British demands, which were as follows:

British Demands.

1. An ample apology and disclaimer from the Russian Government. (There had so far been none, but instead an accusation against the trawling-fleet.)
2. The fullest reparation to the sufferers.
3. A searching inquiry to ascertain who was to blame for what, if the circumstances were as stated, could only be regarded not only as a blunder, but as a culpable blunder.
4. The adequate punishment of the persons, whoever they might be, who proved to be responsible.



RUSSIAN OFFICERS PURCHASING FRUIT AT MATSUYAMA.

5. Security against the repetition of such incidents. ("The Russian fleet had acted upon the supposition that these innocent fishermen were Japanese agents in disguise, in spite of the fact that the trawling-fleet was upon ground which it habitually frequented and displayed the signals required by the international regulations in force. If in such circumstances innocent people were fired upon, on the assumption that they were Japanese in disguise, who would be safe, and what was to prevent the Russian fleet during its long journey to the Far East from carrying death and destruction with it throughout its course?")

The 26th passed without any report from the Russian admiral, and in more deliberate delay on the part of the

Russian Government. The British naval attaché at St. Petersburg called on the Russian Admiralty and received the astonishing news that, though a fast steamer had been sent to intercept Admiral Rojdestvensky off Finisterre, this vessel had only carried a message informing him of

Russian Delay.

the fact that British trawlers were fishing in the Bay of Biscay, and had not conveyed to him the Russian Admiralty's demand for an immediate report on the occurrence in the North Sea. The Russian Admiralty pretended that he would be certain to lose no time in making his report, though it was perfectly well aware that by his orders he was expressly instructed that he need make no reports whatever he did, and though for two days the British Government had been pressing the Russian Government to take prompt action in the matter.

Shortly before midnight on the 25th, the British Government received a note from Count Lamsdorff, the Russian Foreign Minister, attributing the affair to a "deplorable misunderstanding,"

Russian Excuses.

expressing regret at the attack, and promising full compensation "as soon as the facts are cleared up"; and on the following morning (the 26th) Count Benckendorff, the Russian Ambassador



THE FLIGHT OF PIGEONS AS THE NEW JAPANESE BATTLESHIP "KATORI" LEFT THE WAYS.

The first-class battleship "Katori," built for the Japanese Government by Messrs. Vickers, Sons, and Maxim at Barrow-in-Furness, was launched on July 4, 1905, by Princess Arisugawa, who was accompanied by the Prince. As is usual at such Japanese ceremonies, when the vessel leaves the ways a balloon-shaped structure of red-and-white cloth, hung at the bows, opens, setting free a flight of pigeons and a shower of confetti. Part of the ritual of the Japanese war-god Kashima is the liberation of birds, hence the custom. Prince Arisugawa remarked that the "Katori" was "framed with iron from the soil of our allied country and riveted with the warmest sympathy of our allied nation."

in London, waited on Lord Lansdowne to reply to a note which his Lordship had addressed to him, informing him that "it is absolutely necessary that the Russian Government should ascertain who are the persons responsible for this unprovoked attack on British fishermen, and that we should be able to say that the Government inquiry will be directed to this object also, and that the guilty persons will receive exemplary punishment. We shall also expect to be given every facility for bringing forward evidence in support of our case, and satisfying ourselves that the investigation is full and complete. It seems to me, I must say, absolutely incomprehensible that the officers of the fleet should have left your Minister of Marine without information as to so grave an event, that the fleet should be pursuing its way to the East, carrying with it all those who are able to give an account from your point of view of occurrences which surely call for prompt and searching investigation, and that the Minister should apparently be without the means of communicating with it expeditiously." Thus Lord Lansdowne repeated the demand for the punishment of the guilty Russian officers, adding that he required their punishment to be exemplary, and hinted, what is known to be the case, that the Russian Government could easily have communicated with its offending admiral had it chosen to do so.

The interview with Count Benckendorff was of the gravest nature.

The Count stated that measures were being taken to intercept the Baltic fleet. As for the demand that the British Government should have the right of satisfying itself that the Russian investigation into the conduct of the officers concerned was a full and proper one, the Russian Ambassador demurred to this; and with regard to the punishment of the guilty Russian officers, "he preferred to await further instructions before authorising me (Lord Lansdowne) to say that the inquiry would deal with the question of responsibility with a view to the punishment of the guilty persons, but he felt himself no doubt that this was the case," thus carrying out the usual



CAPTAIN KLADO GIVING EVIDENCE BEFORE THE NORTH SEA INQUIRY COMMISSION AS TO THE ALLEGED TORPEDO-BOATS.

Russian tactics of giving assurances by word of mouth which could easily be repudiated a few days or weeks later. Lord Lansdowne impressed upon him the need of at once issuing instructions which would render any repetition of the outrage impossible, and taking steps immediately to intercept the Baltic fleet. "If it were allowed to continue its journey without calling at Vigo, we might find ourselves at war before the week was over. I took the opportunity of calling his Excellency's attention to the communiqué which appears in to-day's papers as to the concentration of the British fleet at Gibraltar and elsewhere."

The effect of the threat of war was at last to elicit the report which Admiral Rojdestvensky had kept up his sleeve so long, though a second and still stormier interview with the Russian Ambassador was

A Threat of War.

necessary on the evening of the 26th to obtain even this. At this second interview Lord Lansdowne told the Russian Government that, unless the British demands were complied with, "it might be necessary for us to take measures for the purpose of enforcing them," and warned him that the Russian reply to the British Government must be known by Friday evening, the 28th, when the Premier, Mr. Balfour, would be making a most important speech. Finally the Russian Ambassador consented to telegraph to his Government that the "immediate trial of the Russian officers is an absolute condition of the peaceable termination of the incident." We shall see how



WAITING FOR THE RETURN OF THE HULL FISHING-FLEET.

step by step the British Government abandoned the demands which it had made, until it finally consented to the trial of the innocent fishermen for being shot at and injured by Admiral Rojdestvensky. Fortunately, it is only in international incidents that the offender is permitted to have the innocent tried for the offence of being the object of his violence.

On the 26th a part of the Baltic fleet, including the battleships under Admiral Rojdestvensky's immediate command, reached Vigo, in Spain, while that same night the British Channel fleet made ready

to intercept the Russians. Four of its battleships were placed under secret and urgent orders to steam north

Baltic Fleet at Vigo.

and reinforce the Home fleet at Portland, so as to secure England against the attack by Germany,

which was dreaded as the result of the measures taken by the German Admiralty. It was given out that these ships had orders to shadow the Baltic fleet. They were to proceed north on the 28th. But a part of the Mediterranean fleet was still delaying in the Adriatic, from which sea it appeared unable to tear itself away, and the naval dispositions were still far from satisfactory in view of the immense outlay on the fleet for the ten years preceding the outrage and the large force which England nominally possessed. The Home fleet on the 26th was still on the Scotch coast, while the cruiser squadron was quite unready for sea.

Meantime the authorities at St. Petersburg affected to treat the whole affair with the most cynical indifference. The "Novoe Vremya," which is known to have spoken with the inspiration of the Russian Admiralty, asserted that "in view of the enormous responsibilities weighing upon our seamen, they ought to be invested with enormous powers"; affected to believe that the fishermen were to blame, and insisted that their evidence was worthless against that of Russian officers. Though at this date the Russian Government pretended not to have heard from or communicated with Admiral Rojdestvensky, it is instructive to find the legend of the Japanese torpedo-boats already making its appearance. In official Russian circles it was declared that Russia would not punish her officers "under any circumstances," and that the British Government would never venture to



COMMANDER KEYES, OF THE BRITISH NAVY, GIVING EVIDENCE ON TORPEDOES BEFORE THE NORTH SEA INQUIRY.

press this demand. The whole affair, said the Russians, would blow over after some banal expression of regret and the payment of an indemnity to the injured. The Russian officials were perfectly right in their estimate of the British demands. But they, perhaps, forgot that the British Government might leave the punishment of the offending admiral to another and a greater Judge than ours on earth, to whom vengeance for innocent blood wantonly shed belongs. And we who know the terrible nemesis which was to overtake these shameful deeds, when in one day the Japan Sea swallowed up 3,500 Russian dead, can feel that even in this world the criminal must expiate his crime.

On October 27 some astounding communications were made to the British Government by the Russian Foreign Office. Admiral Rojdestvensky's report had been received at St. Petersburg, apparently that morning. It affirmed the presence of two Japanese torpedo-boats in the fishing-fleet. Count Lamsdorff further asserted that he had "received positive proof that 20 Japanese officers had arrived in Hull a few

days before, and that attacks of such a nature were being planned. He maintained that the word of a

The Admiral's Statement.

Russian admiral, which his subordinates could corroborate, was of greater value than the testimony of "panic-stricken fishermen." The cynicism and mendacity of these statements are difficult to characterise in polite terms of speech, for as a matter of fact the Russian Foreign Minister neither had then nor could afterwards produce before the North Sea Commission a single "proof" of any kind of the truth of his assertions.

The British, reply to this farrago of inventions and counter-charges was to formulate new demands for :

1. An inquiry before the Russian fleet left Vigo as to the persons responsible for the attack, these persons to be left behind, with any others whose evidence was essential.

2. A full inquiry into the facts by an International Court.

3. An undertaking by the Russian Government to "punish adequately any persons found guilty by the Commission."

This was a very serious weakening of the British position. An International Court would be composed of persons who would judge the outrage, not on the strict merits of the affair, but according to the political relations of their countries with Russia. It was not in the least probable that they would bring in a verdict of criminal negligence against Admiral Rojdestvensky. If the British Government held that there had been criminal negligence, it was England's duty to take steps to punish the offender by the use of her fleets ; she could not shift her burden to the

The British Position.



EFFECT OF A FLOATING MINE ON A MERCHANT VESSEL.

The steamship "Kashing," bound from Chifu to Shanghai, struck a mine off the Shantung Promontory at midnight on October 25, 1904. A hole measuring twelve feet by nine was blown out of her side under the port bow.



COMMANDANT KLADO, OF THE BALTIC FLEET.

shoulders of others, or expect neutral Powers to quarrel with Russia, when she was unwilling or afraid to do so, though she was the injured party. Moreover, the British Government ought to have known that the admiral in command is alone responsible for such an occurrence, and ought specifically to have mentioned Admiral Rojdestvensky among those to be detained. By failing to take this step, it showed a want of strength of purpose. The third demand should never have been made unless it was to be pressed ; and before making any of these demands the Government should have remembered that, in view of the arrogant temper of the Russian Court, they meant almost certain war.

If the British Government was anxious to avoid war with Russia, and to permit the Baltic fleet to continue its voyage to certain destruction, which might conceivably have been in accord with one view of British interests, it should never have raised the question of punishment. The Japanese method of asking nothing but that which the whole nation will stand or fall by, is the only sound one. Once an ultimatum has been issued, there should be no yielding on vital points. And Lord Lansdowne presently went on to say that the question of punishment was vital—was a *sine quâ non*.

The fatal day—the 28th—arrived. Would Russia fight to defend an enormous act of wickedness? Would England stand firmly by demands which were just and righteous, and support right with might, or once more weakly give way? That was the question in all minds throughout the

A Fatal Day.

world on that eventful morning. The omens on the Russian side were not propitious. The officers of the Russian squadron at Vigo affected to regard the incident as of trifling importance. Warnings, they said, had been given to all maritime Powers that the Russian fleet would fire on any vessels approaching the Baltic fleet. This was quite untrue, but it showed the danger to innocent non-combatants involved in turning this fleet loose upon the high seas. The accounts of the affair which they gave did not agree, and differed in the most important respects. Some said openly that fire had been opened on the British vessels because they approached the Russian fleet, which there is good reason to believe is the real truth. Others repeated the myth of the Japanese torpedo-boats. All made no secret of the fact that they had steamed off when they knew that their fire had damaged the trawlers.

The utterances of the Russian Press were such as to lend further countenance to the belief that the outrage was expected if not planned, and that the Russian orders to the Baltic fleet, to fire on any vessel seen approaching it, were intended to provoke international complications, as the result of which the



ARRIVAL OF RUSSIAN WOUNDED AT MATSUYAMA FROM THE SHAHO.

Russian fleet might either take refuge in some neutral port, instead of pursuing its voyage to the Far East, where its doom was certain, or obtain the support of the French and German navies against England. The Japanese torpedo-boat myth was obviously intended to secure French sympathies, and to lead the French people to suppose that the British Government had planned a secret and treacherous attack upon the Russian warships. It is known that the British

Government approached France, and received from her intimation that she would feel bound, in case England proceeded to extremities, to support Russia. But such a statement can scarcely be accepted at its face value. That France would have fought to defend an outrageous wrong, when by the very facts of the situation she would have had to bear the main brunt of the war, is most improbable. Still this no doubt weighed with the British Government, which for sound political reasons was anxious above all things to avoid a conflict with her new friend. Japan was safe in any case, for her seamen felt confident of their ability to destroy the Baltic fleet. But a war between England and France would be a war which could have no result except to strengthen the enemies of England.

On the morning of the 28th the first stage of the crisis ended. The Russian Ambassador called upon Lord Lansdowne and stated that Admiral Rojdestvensky had been ordered to remain at Vigo to "elucidate the facts" with regard to the outrage; that "a full and searching inquiry would be then held as to the whole of the facts, and that any persons found guilty of misconduct would then be placed upon their trial and adequately punished"; further, that the Czar would accept the international inquiry proposed.



SERVING A GUN IN ROUGH WEATHER ON BOARD A JAPANESE BATTLESHIP.

In rough weather the difficulties of gunnery are increased tenfold, and the distant target is often invisible in the trough of the waves. At such moments the nerve and alertness of the crew are strained to the utmost, and good practice depends more than ever upon quick co-ordination of eye and hand.

CHAPTER L.

THE NORTH SEA COMMISSION AND ITS VERDICT.

BARELY had the British Ministry recovered breath after the alarms and excursions of the week following Trafalgar Day, barely had the British public accepted the solution laid before it publicly by Mr. Balfour on October 28, when the news reached the world that, after the briefest and most perfunctory investigation into the circumstances of the North Sea outrage, Admiral Rojdestvensky's squadron had put to sea from Vigo on November 1, leaving behind it as the persons responsible and as the

only witnesses to be produced before the International Court four officers, three of whom were of very inferior rank. The officers were Captain Klado, whom Admiral Rojdestvensky disliked as a meddlesome intriguer, Lieutenants Shramtchenko and Ellis, and Ensign Ott. That these four men could have been the responsible parties was simply unthinkable to anyone familiar with the discipline of a fleet. But the whole affair was treated in Russia with easy-going derision. The British public was astonished at the fact that its Government had apparently accepted the innocence

of Admiral Rojdestvensky, and felt that it had been duped. As for the Russian inquiry at Vigo, its minutes were never produced, and no one knows to this hour what took place at it.

Meantime the Russian Government was steadily repudiating its promise to punish the guilty officers. It manœuvred England into the position of the offending party by its false charges, alleging that she had connived at "diabolical" and "cowardly" Japanese attempts upon the



RUSSIAN PRISONERS FROM MOTIENLING AT TAKAHAMA STATION.

Russian fleet from a base on British territory, and by insinuating that the British fishermen had given these purely imaginary Japanese treacherous assistance. The use of such shameful epithets, applied to the ally of the British nation, and absolutely undeserved by Japan, was permitted to pass unrebuked, to "avoid causing trouble." The British Government was compelled to consent to pay half the cost of the international inquiry, which had been necessitated by a crime on the part of the Baltic fleet. The British fishermen were finally placed in the dock together with the Russian officers, and the good faith of Britain's ally was to be referred to a tribunal of foreign Powers. At every turn the British Government knew that the Russian assertions were false; it knew that there were no Japanese torpedo-boats in the North Sea; that no Japanese officers had been seen at Hull; that the fishermen had committed no act of treachery or hostility against the Russians; yet it did not support right with might. Of all the recent pages in British annals this story of the North Sea outrage and the subsequent negotiations is the most painful to the citizen of a great nation.

The vital article of the convention settling the terms of reference to the International Court was the second. In the British original project it reads as follows:

"The Commission shall inquire into and report upon all the circumstances attending the disaster in the North Sea, and particularly as to where the responsibility for the disaster



WATCHING THE RUSSIAN FLEET.

Mr. Seppings Wright writes: "The fleet was sighted at 4 a.m. resembling those of a big town. We made out thirty-four ships, crowded clad in every conceivable costume, from the Japanese kimono to the bathrobe.

SCENE ON BOARD THE NORDDEUTSCHER-LLOYD S.S. "PRINZ REGENT LUITPOLD," 5 A.M.

At first one light was reported, then a second, and so on until the whole squadron hove in sight, moving slowly and majestically through the darkness, the lights flashing on us, and a corps of destroyers came abreast, evidently to look at the name on our bows. All hands turned up, a maelstrom of excitement, and the figure in uniform, who had the apprehensions of some of the passengers, who recalled the North Sea incident. The forecabin was crowded with Russian refugees, principally from Port Arthur.

lies, and the degree of blame which attaches to those upon whom that responsibility is found to rest."

It was altered at the demand of Russia into:

"The Commission shall inquire into and report on all the circumstances relative to the North Sea incident, and particularly on the question as to where the responsibility lies, and the degree of blame attaching to the subjects of the two high contracting Powers, or to the subjects of other countries in the event of their responsibility being established by the inquiry."

Thus the "disaster" became an "incident," and the British fishermen, as we have said, were put on

their trial for the offence of being shot at. The lamb was to be indicted for attacking the wolf!

Another alteration introduced into the text of the convention enabled the Russian Government to withhold evidence, while all mention of punishment of the guilty was dropped, and the sine qua non was surrendered by the British Government. The International Court was thus from its very inception a mere useless waste of British money. Its verdict could lead to no result, since there was not one impartial man in Europe or the world who believed the Russian story, which was received with general incredulity. The Baltic fleet was free to proceed, and, as we shall speedily see, it was free to repeat its attacks upon British shipping, for which from that hour to this no satis-



MAP SHOWING THE RELATIVE POSITIONS OF THE DARDANELLES AND THE BLACK SEA PORTS TO THE TRADE ROUTES THROUGH THE RED SEA.

faction has been offered or extorted. It steamed off towards the East, but this time to meet other antagonists than helpless non-combatants.

And while it was progressing on its long voyage the International Court assembled at Paris and gave its verdict. It was composed of five distinguished naval officers—Admiral Beaumont, representing England;

The International Court.

Admiral Davies, representing the United States; Admiral Fournier, representing France; and Admiral Spaun, representing Austria. It was characteristic that Russia changed her representative, first appointing Admiral Kaznakoff, and then sending Admiral Dubassoff to Paris, where her agents were busy running a Press campaign against Great Britain in the French journals. In this Captain Klado was prominent.

In England the Government brought every kind of pressure to bear at the inquest at Hull on the victims of the outrage to prevent a verdict of murder being returned. The jury were warned to consult



"Kniaz Gortchakoff," "Vorenej," "Yaroslav," "Mercury," "Tamboff," "Svetlana."
ADMIRAL FOLKERSAM'S SECTION OF THE BALTIC FLEET AT PORT SAID.

political considerations, which rendered war with Russia inexpedient. They obeyed that warning, and the whole proceedings were conducted with a caution which may have been politic, but was certainly not heroic. At the Board of Trade inquiry into the affair the Russian Government was represented, though no British representative had been permitted to attend the singular Russian inquiry at Vigo; and presently Hull was overrun with Russian agents seeking to suborn evidence. Advertisements appeared in various journals on the Continent, at the instance of the Russian Government, offering large rewards to anyone who would give information as to the mythical Japanese and the complicity of the British fishermen. The rewards induced one Englishman to come forward and testify against his countrymen, but they produced no evidence worth the name. On the other hand, diplomatic inquiries addressed by the British Government to the foreign Powers on the North Sea coast elicited the fact that there had been neither German, French, Danish, nor Dutch torpedo vessels near the scene of the outrage on Trafalgar night, and that none of these Powers knew anything of Japanese emissaries. France, however, declined to answer for her own coast; but the Russians had never even suggested that the imaginary Japanese had made their base within their ally's territory.

Surveying the inner history of that period, it seems probable that the British Government's apparent weakness was due to the wish to avoid a war which might have involved a conflict with France. The destruction of the French navy would have served no British interest and deranged the balance of power in Europe. British intervention in the war would have had no influence on the struggle in the Far East, except, as events have since proved, and as the British Admiralty correctly foresaw, to deprive the Japanese navy of four valuable prizes. The British Government could urge in reply to its critics that its function was not to aspire to the place of God, or to make of itself the supreme judge and avenger of the wrong done, when there was such strong political

"Almaz." "Vladimir." "Jupiter."



"Gamsuk," "Sissoi Veliky," "Navarin," "Kiev."
THE BALTIC FLEET AT PORT SAID.



RUSSIAN PRISONERS DEPARTING FROM TAKAHAMA FOR NAGOYA

motive for avoiding pushing matters to an extremity. But this does not constitute the least excuse for Russia or for the Baltic fleet. The behaviour of the Russian Government was deplorable. Knowing England's desire to live on kindly terms with France, it presumed on that desire in every possible way, and deliberately strove to entangle its ally in a conflict which must have proved disastrous to France, whether England conquered or failed in

it. Knowing that its fleet had made what was either a wanton or a blundering attack on the British fishermen, it never lifted a finger to punish the guilty parties, and preferred to perjure itself. Its conduct was not that of a civilised Power.

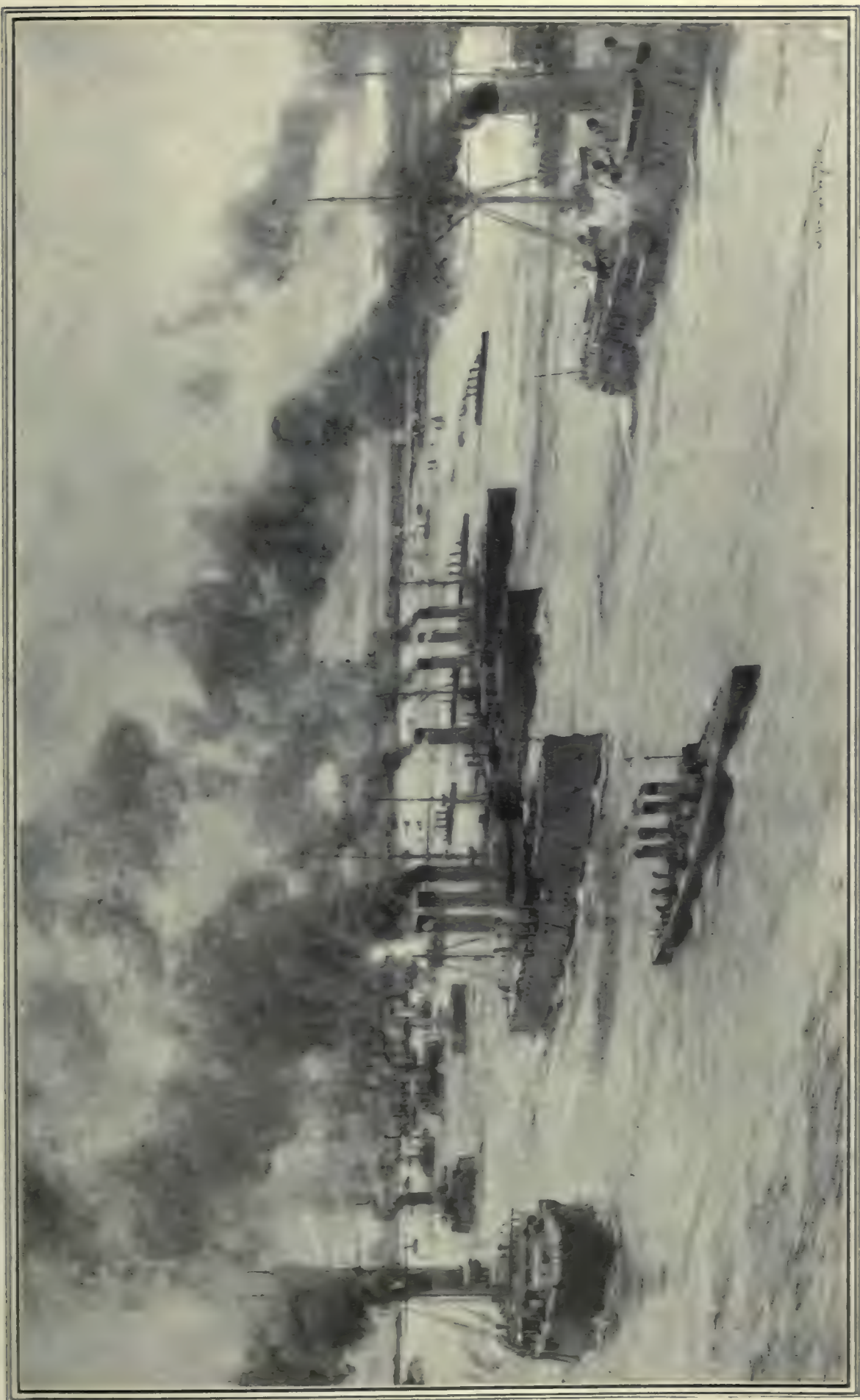
The North Sea Commission at its sitting of January 9, 1905, elected as its president the brilliant and tactful French officer, Admiral Fournier. From the first the British admiral on the Commission behaved as an impartial judge; the Russian admiral as a partisan and representative of Russian interests. Just before the first sitting of the Commission the Russian naval authorities had at last admitted the fact that the Russian cruiser *Aurora*, on October 21, had been

North Sea Commission.

fired upon by the Russian fleet, and had had a chaplain mortally wounded, though for some reason or other this piece of intelligence had hitherto been carefully concealed. According to some accounts, no fewer than 11 men were killed on board the *Aurora* in the course of a duel with the *Kamschatka*, which lasted 20 minutes. And as no Russian witnesses from the *Aurora* were produced, these reports may have been true. Captain Klado, in his examination by the Commission, owned that the *Aurora* had been struck by projectiles, but clung to the torpedo-boat story as told by Admiral Rojdestvensky, though he refused to submit to a thorough cross-examination, referring the British counsel to his depositions whenever an awkward question was asked. He maintained that no lights of fishing-boats had been seen before the torpedo-boats were made out, and accused the fishing-boats of being without lights. But he produced not



THE FRENCH PORT, KAMRAH BAY, WHERE ROJDESTVENSKY'S FLEET SHELTERED.



ROJDESTVENSKY'S FLEET IN THE STRAITS OF MALACCA.

one shred of evidence to support the Russian charge that the boats made "obstinate attempts to break the line of our ships"—in the words of Admiral Rojdestvensky's report. And the Commission held that he had not told the truth as to the lights of the fishing-boats, since it paid no attention to his assertions, which were indeed fully disproved. Those conducting the British case brought expert naval evidence to show that the *Aurora* might quite possibly have been mistaken for a torpedo-boat, but not for a moment would the Russians admit this. Nor is it altogether probable that such a mistake was really made.



A DUEL TO THE DEATH.

After the evidence had been heard each side submitted its conclusions from it. The first of the British conclusions was that there was no torpedo-boat among the British trawlers on the night of the outrage.

**Conclusions from
the Evidence.**

It was pointed out that all the foreign Powers had given assurances to the effect that they had had no torpedo-boats near the Dogger Bank that night, that no evidence as to the presence of such vessels in the North Sea had been produced by the Russians, and no explanation given of the manner in which Japanese boats reached or retired from the scene of the outrage; that the *Aurora* had probably been mistaken in the first instance for a torpedo-boat, and that the



STOESSEL, THE DEFENDER OF PORT ARTHUR, ON THE RAMPARTS OF THE BELEAGUERED CITY.
No. XLVIII.

supposed torpedo-boats to right and left of the Russian fleet were the *Crane* and the *Mino*. If the Russian evidence was correct—to the effect that a torpedo-boat had been sunk to the right of their fleet—it was urged that she must have foundered near the *Crane*, and it was contended that it would “have been impossible to believe that any torpedo-boat can have been in a sinking state in the position alleged and have received no assistance from these men (the fishermen); and to find that this was so would be to cast an undeserved slur on a large body of brave fishermen.” It will be observed that the British case was silent as to the slur on the conduct of the Russian fleet, which, on the Russian officers' own showing, had steamed off, leaving its enemies to drown.

Secondly, it was deduced by the British authorities that there was no sufficient justification for opening fire at all; that there was a failure to control and direct the fire when opened, so as to avoid injuring the fishing-fleet; and that the fire continued for an unreasonable time. Officers of judgment, it was remarked, should have paused and made a careful examination before giving the order to fire. Though a fleet has a right to protect itself in time of war, reasonable precautions must be taken to prevent unoffending vessels from being injured. Further,

No Justification for Firing.

“Svetlana.”

“Suvaroff.”

“Orel.”



“Aurora.”

“Oslabia.”

“Alexander III.”

“Borodino.”

THE RUSSIAN COMBINED FLEETS—THREE BALTIC SQUADRONS.

despite their own assertions that they did not fire at the fishing-boats, the Russian officers' statements on this head were at variance with the evidence of the fishermen and the ascertained facts; while the Russian reports, accusing the fishing-boats of aiding the “Japanese,” hint that the Russian fleet did deliberately fire on the trawlers. Captain Klado even suggested that the *Crane*, which was sunk by the Russian fleet, might have been in the act of laying mines, and his evidence strengthened the belief that the Russian fleet did attack the trawlers and direct its fire on them.

Thirdly, it was concluded that the Russian fleet should have rendered assistance to the injured men and damaged vessels. Here Admiral Rojdestvensky himself gave two quite contradictory explanations of his misconduct. First he alleged that the fishing-boats were acting in manifest complicity with the “Japanese.” Secondly he alleged that the fishing-boats were numerous enough to succour each other. Even accepting his own version, he had repelled the torpedo attack, and his ships were in no danger, so that he had no excuse for steaming off. Still less was he justified in failing to report the occurrence and the need of giving assistance to the injured trawlers on his voyage down the Channel past Brighton.

Assistance Should Have Been Given.

Fourthly, it was concluded that there was no fault of any kind in the conduct of the men on board the trawlers or those connected with them.

This moderate summary, which carried absolute conviction to every fair-minded man, was diametrically opposed to the Russian conclusions, which were to the effect that Admiral Rojdestvensky had fired "in the legitimate accomplishment of the military duties of the chief of a fleet, and that consequently no responsibility could possibly rest upon him or his subordinates." It was added that the Russian Government deplored the fact that there had been "innocent victims," thus finally and completely abandoning its allegation of the complicity of the fishermen, and would grant pecuniary compensation.

The final sitting of the Commission was held on February 25, when the verdict was read. It must again be remembered that the Commission was not a legal tribunal, and did not apply juridical methods.

Verdict. It strove to effect a compromise which would keep the two parties, England and Russia, from war, without fatally alienating either of them. Its aim was policy, not justice.

Thus only can certain very surprising conclusions be understood.

It found that all the British trawlers had carried the regulation lights and obeyed the customary rules.

"Izumrud."

"Admiral Seniavin."

"Oleg."

"Jemtechug."

"Admiral Ushakoff."

"Admiral Nakhimoff," "Vladimir Monomach."



"Nicolai I."

"Navarin."

"Admiral Apraxin."

"Sissoi Veliky."

"Dmitri Donskoi."

THE THREE BALTIC SQUADRONS

The majority of the Commission found Admiral Rojdestvensky responsible for opening fire on a suspicious vessel, which the Russians believed to be a torpedo-boat. He was held to be responsible for the results of the cannonade sustained by the trawlers. The majority of the Commissioners declared that they lacked "precise elements to identify on what object the (Russian) ships fired," but unanimously agreed that the trawlers committed no hostile act, and the majority of the Commission found that, there being no torpedo-boats on the spot, the fire opened by the Russians was not justifiable. The duration of the firing to starboard, accepting the Russian version, was longer than was justifiable in the opinion of the majority; but the Commission unanimously acknowledged that Admiral Rojdestvensky personally did all that he could to prevent the trawlers, recognised as such, from being the targets of the Russian fire. They unanimously agreed that he was right to steam off after the attack, but expressed regret that he did not inform the British authorities of the affair on his passage through the Straits of Dover. Finally, they declared that there was nothing in the report to discredit the "military value" or humanity of the Russian admiral and his fleet.



THE DESTINATION OF ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY'S FLEET.

The lighthouse outside Vladivostok would have been the first object seen by Admiral Rojdestvensky's fleet if it had reached its destination. The island lies immediately in front of the entrance to the eastern channel leading to the port of Vladivostok.

to drown ; and that the British representative after this affirmed the humanity of the Russian admiral and the Russian fleet, are some of the most astonishing facts in the story of this astonishing affair. They prove the aberrations which may be committed when justice is sacrificed to policy, and when doing right is postponed to expediency. They tend to cast reflections on a great and glorious service by suggesting that its code of honour and humanity is lower than that of civil life. It has been suggested that these findings were accepted by the British Admiral because, if England formally accepted them, her fleet would be able to imitate the conduct of the Baltic fleet in war and attack all comers. Such a suggestion is absolutely incredible. The findings were quite irreconcilable and in complete contradiction to fact. They affirmed in one breath that a great crime had been committed, and in the next that the criminal had not committed a crime, but had behaved in an honourable and humane manner. Nothing whatever was said of the conduct of the two Russian ships, the *Aurora* and *Kamschatka*, which are known to have been close to the scene of the outrage hours after Admiral Rojdestvensky had steamed off with his battleships ; nor did any of the admirals ascertain why these ships gave no assistance.

The verdict of this Court has done much to discredit arbitration, and has permanently endangered the lives of all neutrals and non-combatants on the high seas in time of war. Hereafter it will be a simple matter for rash and impetuous officers to attack, cannonade, or, perhaps, torpedo neutral ships or any chance vessel that they may meet. If the ship goes to the bottom with all hands, no one will be any the wiser. If some of her crew or passengers survive, all that the offending officer has to do is to invent some cock-and-bull story, and appeal to the North Sea tribunal's findings, when his humanity and competence are called in question. The tendency of the past century has been to diminish the savagery of war and the suffering which it inflicts on the innocent. The North Sea Commission has taken a step in the opposite direction—back to barbarism. Personal respect for many of its members should not blind us to such deplorable results. It adds to the irony of the whole affair, that the Czar, who posed as the peacemaker and friend of humanity at the Hague, should have been the direct cause of this reversion to cruelty.

Of punishment for the guilty Russian officers after the muddled findings of the Commission there was none. If the principal actors and the miserable instruments in their hands all ultimately suffered in the most terrible fashion, it was in the hour when they met the Japanese

That the British representative on the tribunal

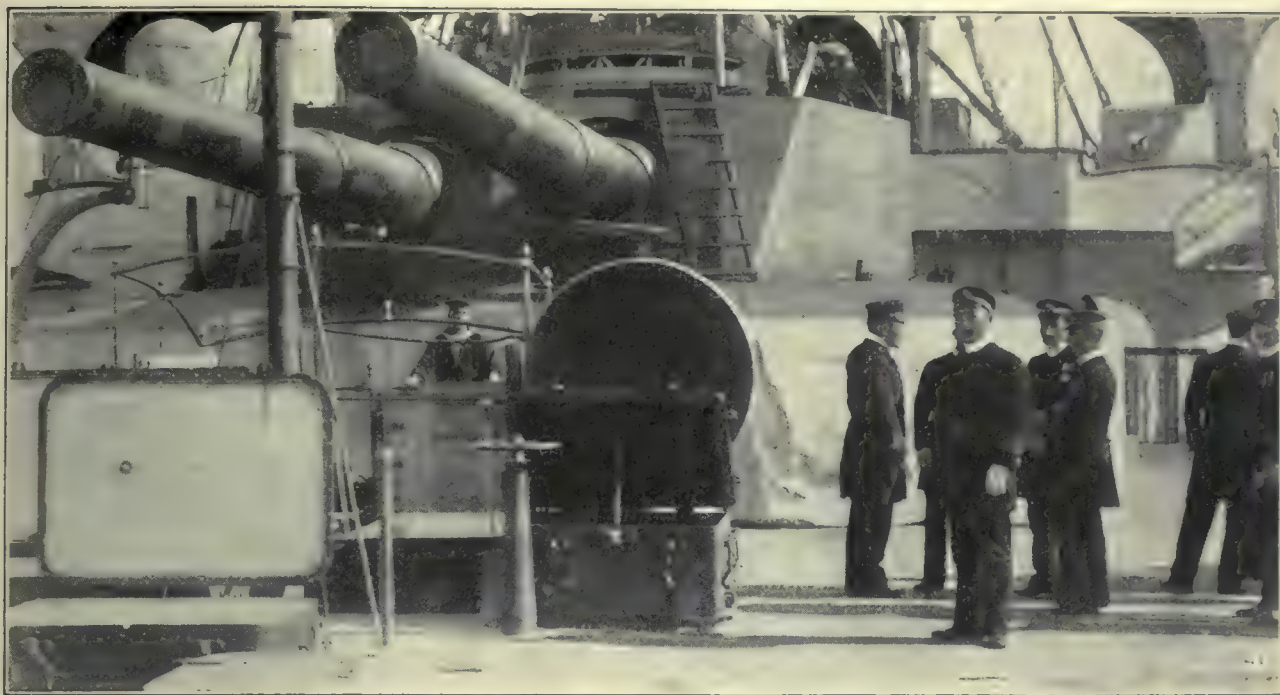
Effects of the Verdict.

should have concurred in findings which acknowledged that the Russian admiral did all that was possible to prevent the trawlers from being fired at, in the teeth of the Russian admiral's own reports ; that the British representative held him justified in steaming off and leaving his victims



CAPTAIN K. WADA

commanded the "Naniwa," a third-class cruiser which took part in the battle of the Yalu during the Chinese War.



BIG GUNS ON THE "ASAHI."

[Photo, Symonds & Co., Portsmouth.]

fleet, and not from any sense of justice on the part of the Russian Government. The criminals in the highest place have still to make their expiation, but confidence in the supreme righteousness which guides this world assures us that they, too, will not be permitted to escape their deserts.

The sum of £65,000 was paid by the Russian Government in compensation. In that amount was included no charge for "moral injury." And the British Government reduced the original assessment of £103,000, in somewhat striking contrast with the action of the Russian Government which, after the Peking expedition in 1900, claimed from the Chinese Government and obtained the cost of maintaining twice as large a force as it had really placed in the field.

CHAPTER LI.

THE VOYAGE OF THE BALTIC FLEET TO MADAGASCAR.

ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY remained at Vigo, coaling and provisioning his four battleships and holding his strange court of inquiry, from October 26 to the morning of November 1. The British Government had promised Russia that it would make no diplomatic representations to Spain with regard to this stay in a Spanish port on the understanding that Admiral Rojdestvensky employed his time in the investigation of the North Sea outrage. Meanwhile the British Channel fleet was



[Photograph supplied by Leon Bouet.]

ROJDESTVENSKY'S VAIN OBJECTIVE: THE TOWN AND HARBOUR OF VLADIVOSTOCK.

assembling in force at Gibraltar, and Lord Charles Beresford, its commander, despatched a division of four battleships north to Portland, to reinforce the fleet at home against the eventuality of a German attack, and

Naval Activity.

an armoured cruiser, the *Lancaster*, followed by a strong cruiser squadron, to the neighbourhood of Vigo, to watch the proceedings of the Russians. Admiral Rojdestvensky had some slight trouble with the Spanish authorities, who were anxious to limit the amount of coal that he placed on board his ships. But he finally had his own way by a mixture of chicanery and "bluff." At Villagarcia, in the immediate proximity of Vigo, the British cruisers *Suffolk*, *Endymion*, *Theseus*, and *Hermes* took up their positions, ready to assist the *Lancaster*, if occasion should arise. On October 29 the other part of the Baltic fleet, including the larger vessels under Admiral Folkersam's command, had arrived at Tangiers, where it coaled under the eyes of the British fleet. At home, by the night of October 31, 13 battleships, 8 cruisers, and 60 destroyers and torpedo vessels had collected at Portland, and the period of grave danger to the British Isles was at an end. Three submarines were ready at Dover, and three more were placed at the entrance to the Thames.

The *Lancaster*, carrying the flag of Rear-Admiral Sir B. Walker, after a visit to Vigo withdrew to



RUSSIAN PRISONERS GOING ON BOARD JAPANESE TRANSPORTS.

Villagarcia, where she joined the rest of the British cruisers, just before Admiral Rojdestvensky, on November 1, put to sea. So perfectly was the Russian admiral's intention concealed

A Dangerous Moment.

from the British cruisers that many of their officers were ashore when suddenly the news came in that the Russian fleet had sailed. The British ships put to sea in pursuit, short of officers and without the provisions which they had ordered. For a moment it appeared as though there was to be war. The British squadrons were ready and in their positions; the harbour at Gibraltar was closed with a boom, and the straits patrolled by British torpedo craft and cruisers. There were reports, which seem to have been true, that the British battle squadron had made its battle preparations. The trouble appears to have been caused by uncertainty as to whether the British Government would accept as satisfactory the Russian court of inquiry at Tangiers, and whether it would drop its demand for the punishment of the offenders. As we know, it gave way on both these heads, and the crisis passed. Admiral Rojdestvensky reached Tangiers unmolested, and there concentrated his fleet.

The Russian torpedo craft attached to the Baltic fleet proceeded to Algiers and Bizerta, and coaled in

these French ports, in defiance of the principles of true neutrality. On November 3 Admiral Folkersam, with the *Sissoi Veliky*, *Navarin*, *Svietlana*, *Jemtchug*, *Izumrud*, *Gortschakoff*, and *Jupiter*, left Tangiers for Suda Bay and the Suez Canal, and to meet him the Volunteer cruisers *Yaroslav*, *Voronez*, *Kieff*, *Tamboff*, and *Vladimir*, which were laden with stores and mounted a few guns, passed the Bosphorus, claiming to be mere harmless merchantmen. On the 5th Admiral Rojdestvensky also put to sea from Tangiers, bound round the Cape. He had with him all the heavier and deeper draught vessels in the Russian fleet, the passage of which through the Suez Canal might have been a matter of some difficulty. With him were the five big battleships, the four of the *Suvaroff* class and the *Oslabia*; the cruisers *Aurora*, *Nakhimoff*, *Dmitri Donskoi*, *Kuban*, *Ural*, *Terek*, and the five transports *Kamschatka*, *Anadyr*, *Malaga*, *Korea*, and *Meteor*, with a steam collier and the hospital-ship *Orel*. The torpedo fleet, consisting of the seven destroyers *Bravy*, *Biedovy*, *Blestiashty*, *Bodry*, *Boiny*, *Bystry*, and *Bezupretshny*, with the store-ship *Kitai*, proceeded from Algiers and Bizerta to Crete, where the whole of Admiral Folkersam's force was to assemble.

The Russian fleets, in the preliminary stage of their voyage, were watched by the various British squadrons, to prevent any recurrence of "regrettable incidents." On November 10 Admiral Folkersam was at Suda Bay, where he behaved as though he had been in a Russian port. There he coaled his ships and made preparations to pass the Suez Canal. The Russian seamen went ashore, and serious riots ensued, as they obtained liquor, and in their drunken fury caused a reign of terror. Admiral Rojdestvensky, with his squadron, on November 12



RUSSIAN SCOUTS CUT THE TELEGRAPH WIRES.

arrived at the French port of Dakar, on the west coast of Africa, where, in accordance with the secret promises which the French Government had given to Russia, he was permitted to do what he liked. It was pretended that his ships were outside the three-miles' limit, and could not be controlled by the French authorities. He was allowed to coal and provision his ships, and to enjoy French hospitality for five days, till November 16, when at last he took his departure. There were sharp comments in the Japanese Press upon the assistance which was extended to him in defiance of international law, but the Japanese Government behaved with admirable forbearance. It never wavered in its proud self-

confidence, though, with each stage that the Baltic fleet progressed the peril to Japan seemed to impartial observers to grow more and more menacing, and even the wisest heads doubted whether, if Port Arthur continued to hold out, the Japanese navy would be strong enough to fight with success on two fronts against the Russian ships in that harbour and against Admiral Rojdestvensky. There were still five good battleships in Port Arthur; Admiral Rojdestvensky's arrival with another seven would give the Russians three times as many battleships as the Japanese.

For every reason it was imperative that the Russian fleet, if it really meant business, should move with all possible rapidity. It was known to the Russian authorities at St. Petersburg that Port Arthur could not resist indefinitely. But in nothing was Admiral Rojdestvensky's incapacity so signally demonstrated as in his slow progress. He had all the French ports at his service, and there was nothing whatever to prevent him from coaling with speed and making the voyage to the Far East in six or eight weeks. As he delayed and waited at every conceivable opportunity,

Russians' Slow Progress.



RUSSIAN OFFICERS ON PAROLE AT NAGASKI.

the belief must be strengthened that his mission was diplomatic rather than military—to bring other parties into the war, and to create trouble between England and France, rather than to fight the Japanese.

On November 24 Admiral Folkersam arrived at Port Said, where his destroyers were permitted to tranship coal from a Russian collier. This caused much unfavourable comment, since in 1898, during the war between Spain and the United States, the Spanish Admiral Camara had been forbidden to coal by the Egyptian authorities, acting under the general directions of the British Government. It was unfortunate that the British Government brought no pressure to bear to prevent an incident which may serve as a precedent against itself in future wars; but its defence was that it had no power over the Suez Canal Commission, which controlled traffic through the Canal. The Russian ships passed through the Canal on the 25th. The banks were patrolled by Egyptian

Coaling at Port Said.



JAPANESE UNDERGROUND WINTER QUARTERS IN MANCHURIA

troops, and such elaborate precautions were taken to prevent any attack on the fleet that it might almost have been supposed that Egypt was the ally of Russia. With the Russian fleet were three yachts, one of which flew the British flag. Their mission was to steam in advance, acting as scouts and conducting a careful search of the waters of the Red Sea. On the 26th the fleet was at Suez, where its torpedo craft once more coaled from the Russian transports. On December 2 it passed Perim, and on December 5 it coaled off the Mosha Islands, a small French group in the Gulf of Aden, entering neutral waters for the purpose, and thus again violating the neutrality of France.

On its passage through the Suez Canal there was some opportunity for neutrals to study its quality. The Russian officers appeared to be professionally competent; the ships were for the most part of old type, but had been armed with modern guns, and were in passable condition.

The Russian Personnel.

The real weakness lay in the crews, which were composed in great part of landmen, without the slightest nautical knowledge or sea-training. They were constantly drilled in the use of small arms and in the manipulation of the guns, but trustworthy reports showed that they had done practically no target practice. Though the officers indulged in the most boastful language, the feeling among the men was one of sheer terror. They had heard of the high efficiency of the Japanese, and saw in it something of the supernatural. Among them were many revolutionaries, who preached the solemn duty, in the interests of Russia, of ensuring the defeat of the fleet, and stimulated every kind of insubordination. There were numerous more or less important mutinies on board,



MEMORIAL AT PETROPAVLOVSK

To celebrate a victory of Russian troops over a French and English force landed at Petropavlovsk in 1854



RUSSIAN PRISONERS WAITING TO BE PHOTOGRAPHED.

though the reports of great and organised outbreaks, resulting in the execution of dozens of seamen, appear to have been mere fictions. There was none of that high national spirit or of that sublime devotion to a great cause which marked the Japanese Navy from admiral to cabin-boy.

Admiral Folkersam showed no immoderate anxiety to reach the Far East. His fleet lingered in the neighbourhood of Djibuti and the Mocha

Islands for several days, till December 14. The assistance extended to it by France was the subject of further complaints on the part of the Japanese Press, but the Japanese Government showed its customary self-restraint, and made no move other than perhaps to record a polite protest. In England, notwithstanding the cordial understanding with France, there was some indignation at conduct which was held, and rightly held, to be a departure from the strict line of neutrality. Indeed, had the Japanese Government chosen to claim British help on the score that these proceedings brought the alliance into operation, the spread of the conflagration in the Far East to Europe must have followed. But the first aim of Japan was to conquer by her own strength alone, while it was also the case that, during these days of delay at Djibuti, she had greatly strengthened her position. The bloody and protracted assault upon 203 Metre Hill had given her army before Port Arthur the key to the defences of that fortress, and had enabled her siege gunners to inflict the gravest damage upon the Russian warships within the harbour, and to destroy the workshops and means of repair in the arsenal. Already, then, in early December, the greatest crisis in the life of Japan was ending, and her final and complete victory in the war was coming into sight. Though the full meaning of these facts was not grasped in the West, except perhaps by the British Government, it did not escape the nimble wits of the Japanese statesmen. And with remarkable disinterestedness and regard for their ally, they refrained from bringing any pressure to bear upon her. But the British Press, expressing the inmost sentiments of the British nation, began to speak out, because it saw that these violations of neutrality towards Japan involved not merely a grave injury to our ally, but also danger to the very existence of England in future conflicts.

Admiral Folkersam's delays on the east coast of Africa are wrapped in some mystery. There is reason

Russian Swindlers.

to believe that the Russian authorities feared that he might be attacked by the Japanese if he arrived in the Indian Ocean much in advance of Admiral Rojdestvensky, and for that reason directed him to wait until his commander-in chief



M. OKURA.

A rich Japanese who sold his possessions to provide money for the war.

neared the Cape. During the stay at Djibuti, French residents had some opportunity of examining the Russian ships, and predictions of disaster multiplied. The vessels were insufficiently supplied with stores and provisions, and made large purchases in the French colony. The cynical indifference with which the officers swindled their Government surprised Frenchmen, who tried to think the best of their ally. The captains demanded for themselves an allowance from the merchants of 10, 20, or even 50 per cent. upon their purchases, and the result was that they bought stores which were only fit to be thrown into the sea.



TOGO'S MAIN POINT OF OBSERVATION—WAITING FOR THE RUSSIAN FLEET—SOUTH CAPE, FORMOSA.

Drawn by Allan Stewart from a photograph by G. A. Corder, F.R.G.S.

South Cape is the extreme southern point of the Island of Formosa, and was jealously watched by Togo, as the Baltic Fleet had either to pass to the east or to the west of it. The anchorage is magnificent, and would accommodate the largest battleship. On the promontory is an occultating light erected by the Chinese to serve as a point of guidance for ships going north and south.

Meanwhile Admiral Rojdestvensky, after leaving Dakar on November 16, proceeded to Libreville, in the French colony of Gaboon, where he made a further stay, and once more coaled and provisioned his ships.

Baltic Fleet's Progress.

He does not appear to have left before the 26th or 27th, though the exact details of his movements at this point are difficult to obtain, owing to the fact that he resorted to harbours out of the main line of commerce, and exerted himself to the utmost to prevent news of his proceedings from being telegraphed. From Gaboon he proceeded to Great Fish Bay, on the coast of Portuguese West Africa, and with easy unconcern for the neutrality of Portugal used that harbour for some days as a base before he accomplished the next stage of his voyage, which brought him to Angra Pequena, a small island on the coast of German South-West Africa. Here he made all his preparations for the passage round the Cape, as he was aware that his fleet would not be received in any British harbour. The voyage through the stormy waters to the south of Cape Colony he contemplated with considerable anxiety, as the battleships of the *Suvoroff* class had caused great uneasiness by their



THE JAPANESE CRUISER "TAKASAGO."

unstable behaviour in heavy weather. Even in the North Sea they rolled so much that seas swept the 12-pounder battery, and a gun burst on board the battleship *Orel*, during the attack upon the trawlers, as the result of a wave striking the muzzle just as the weapon was being discharged.

The hospital-ship *Orel* was sent a week in advance of the Baltic fleet to act as a scout and to ascertain the disposition of the British authorities. She appeared at Cape Town on the 12th, and speedily discovered that the Baltic fleet would not be permitted to fill up with coal or provisions on the coast of the British colony. On December 19 Admiral Rojdestvensky's fleet was sighted rounding the Cape, and it proceeded, without touching at any British port, to the neighbourhood of Delagoa Bay, off which port it picked up several colliers that had been awaiting its coming. It does not appear to have coaled on the Portuguese coast, but to have steamed to the French island of St. Marie, on the west coast of Madagascar, where it cast anchor on January 1. Two days later Admiral Folkersam anchored on the coast of the same island, at Passandava Bay. Thus the two sections of the Russian fleet had now all but effected their junction.

Junction of the Two Fleets.

They had been able to proceed thus far because neutrals had not done their duty. No real difficulty

had been encountered by the Russian commanders,

who had

120 Miles a Day. been per-

mitted to

obtain shelter and purchase all kinds of stores, except coal, which was brought to them by a large fleet of German and British transports—for there were Englishmen who were ready to assist a fleet which was proceeding to the attack of England's ally, and this notwithstanding an emphatic warning against such



[Photo, copyright, "Collier's Weekly."]

THE RIGOURS OF WINTER.

Japanese in trenches made under great difficulty.



ADMIRAL SKRYDLOFF, COMMANDER OF THE VLADIVOSTOCK SQUADRON, TAKES THE BRIDGE.



HOW THE JAPANESE KEPT THEMSELVES ALIVE AND WARM DURING THE RIGOURS OF WINTER.

Stables formed of kaoliang to protect the horses.

[Photo, copyright, "Collier's Weekly."]

conduct issued by the British Foreign Office. The Russian ships had not been compelled to refill their bunkers or to effect repairs on the open ocean, which would have been tasks beyond their crews' capacity. Every port, except on the coasts under British influence, had been open to them, and thus Russia had positively benefited by the fact that she possessed no coaling-stations. Russian bases would have been

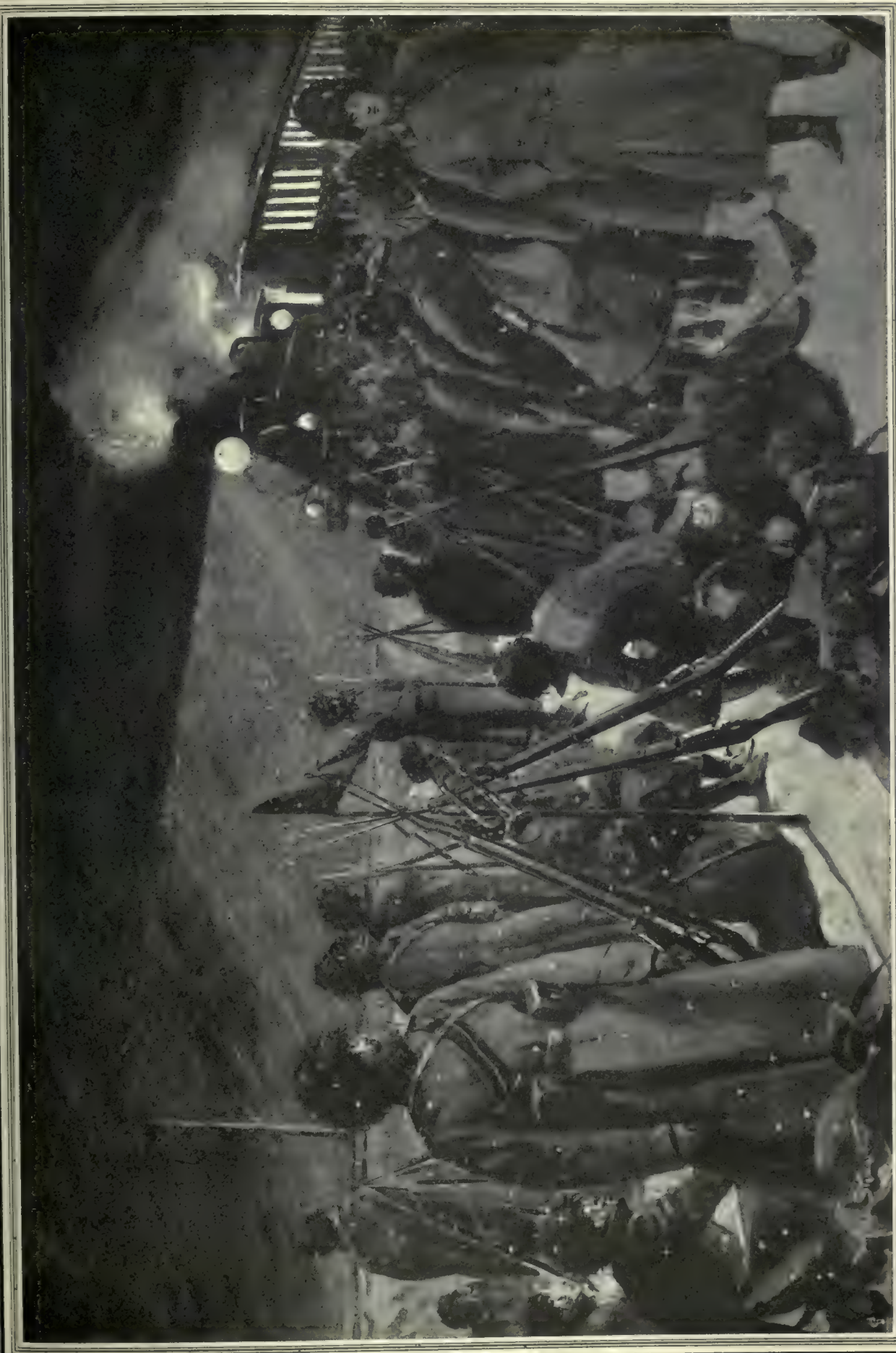
liable to attack by the Japanese, and must have been carefully guarded. Lying at such bases the Baltic fleet would have had to fear night and day the onset of the Japanese torpedo craft, the alleged presence of which in the North Sea had, on the showing of the Russians, worked such dire effects on the nerves of their seamen. But in neutral harbours the Russians were absolutely secure, since Japan, with her deep respect for international law, was not in the least likely to disobey its positive injunctions. The surprising fact, however, is that with all these advantages the progress of the fleet was so exceedingly slow. Between October 10 and January 1 it covered only 11,000 miles, or an average of little more than 120 miles per day. Making every allowance for time spent in coaling, this was a poor performance, if Admiral Rojdestvensky's mission was serious.

Another fraction of the fleet followed some weeks behind the main force. This consisted of the cruisers *Oleg* and *Izumrud*, with the Volunteer cruisers *Rion* and *Dnieper*, and the destroyers *Gromky*, *Grosny*, *Prozorlivy*, *Prusitelny*, and *Pritky*. It sailed from Libau on November 17, with orders to pass through the Suez Canal and meet the rest of the fleet at Madagascar. On the way down the North Sea this squadron encountered heavy weather, and the *Prusitelny* sustained serious damage and put into Brest. There she asked to be repaired, and with remarkable complaisance the French naval authorities undertook to put her in order, in the teeth of Japanese remonstrances, though this was certainly a violation of neutrality. The vessel, however, seemed destined to perennial breakdowns. Defects showed themselves after her repair, and she had to be left with the *Prozorlivy* at Algiers, where the two destroyers were again put in order, their repairs taking several weeks. Without



YEE YONG IK

Was at one time the most powerful and most hated man in Korea. He was once a eunuch, but amassed great wealth, and became the Marquis of Korea. He was removed from his position by the Japanese, and is now in their custody. His costume was that in which he represented the Japanese at court.



A RUSSIAN INFANTRY BIVOUAC ON THE RAILWAY.

In sharp contrast to the luxury in which the Russian Commander-in-Chief travelled was the cheerless lot of the common soldiers bivouacked at intervals along the railway-line. As Kuropatkin's train approached through the blinding snow bearing the General to the scene of action, the huge lamp of the engine threw the scene into weird relief, and showed the soldiers huddled together among the snow-drifts. The ground was littered with the men's baggage, their kit-bags, and their piled arms. The rifles of each stack were tied together to give them better support against the fierce wind.

waiting for them the squadron proceeded to Suda Bay, there coaled, and steamed to Port Said, off which port it arrived on January 10. Passing through the Canal, it left Suez on the 13th. It arrived at Djibuti on the 18th, where its crews received the first news of the fall of Port Arthur.

The effect upon them was stunning. Officers and men alike openly despaired. According to French witnesses, profound depression, extreme alarm, sheer terror at the thought of meeting the redoubtable

The Fall of Port Arthur.

Admiral Togo, filled all ranks, and the alarm was not dissipated by the vague reports which were coming in of the presence of Japanese cruisers and torpedo craft in the Indian Ocean. As a matter of fact these reports were untrue. But at the time they sounded probable enough to panic-stricken men.

The three Russian detachments were now in the Indian Ocean. But since their departure from Russia the fall of Port Arthur had profoundly modified the position. Admiral Rojdestvensky's fleet was plainly much too weak to face the victorious Japanese, who were known to have withdrawn their heavy ships from Port Arthur some days before its fall, in order to give them a much-needed overhaul and refit. The Russian Government was hoist with its own petard. The force which it had intended to use to provoke international trouble hovered like Mahomet's coffin, suspended midway between Europe and the Far East, too weak to proceed, too strong to return without incurring eternal dishonour and ridicule. The Russian people had been led to expect miracles from this fleet, so that its recall would have infuriated the populace, already raging under the terrific shock of the surrender of Port Arthur. The internal situation was such that the Czar determined to sacrifice his navy, not perhaps without a last hope that Admiral Rojdestvensky, by his prolonged use of French bases, might provoke war between France and Japan, and cause a world-wide cataclysm. Only by such tactics could the Baltic fleet be saved from destruction.

But if Admiral Rojdestvensky was to practise waiting strategy in the hope of embroiling France and Japan, there was no reason why reinforcements should not be sent out to him. Very soon after the North

A Further Fleet Suggested.

Sea outrage, the irrepressible Captain Klado had begun to clamour for the despatch of another Baltic fleet, comprising every seaworthy ship in the Baltic and the Black Sea. That the passage of the Black Sea fleet through the Dardanelles would have involved instant war with England was not a matter which troubled him in the least. He contended that since England had swallowed the North Sea outrage, she would swallow anything. Fortunately, however, the French Government intervened at this juncture, when the wilder spirits at the Russian Admiralty were to all appearances really contemplating the despatch of the Black Sea fleet, and informed the Russian Government, if trustworthy information can be believed, that France would regard such action on its part as provocative, and would not support Russia should war with England follow. The scheme was at once dropped, and Captain Klado was punished in the most exemplary fashion for having stirred a sleeping lion.

But if the Black Sea fleet was not to sail, there were certain ships in the Baltic that could be sent out without any breach of international law. These were the old battleship *Nicolai I.*, the coast-defence ships *Admiral Seniavin*, *Admiral Ushakoff*, and *Admiral Apraxin*, and the old cruisers *Korniloff* and *Vladimir Monomach*. Captain Klado urged in addition the despatch of the new battleship *Slava*, of the same type as the four *Suvaroffs* with Admiral Rojdestvensky, and the *Alexander II.*, an old battleship very similar to the *Nicolai I.* But the *Slava* was in a backward state owing to the fact that many of her fittings had been removed to replace damaged parts on the other battleships of her class, and could not be completed for sea before the summer at the earliest. The *Alexander II.* and *Korniloff* were also unfit for immediate service, so that only five vessels of any size remained available. Early in December work had been started upon these vessels to prepare them for service, but in a half-hearted fashion. Had they been energetically pressed forward they might have joined Admiral Rojdestvensky at Madagascar early in February. But, as it was, the fall of Port Arthur found this squadron still quite unready, and only after the fall of Port Arthur was its equipment prosecuted with vigour.

These five ships were placed under the orders of Admiral Nebogatoff. The speed of the slowest vessel in the little squadron was only about 11 knots under service conditions. All these five ships were of small or old-fashioned type, but they mounted a considerable number of heavy guns, and were well



RUSSIAN OFFICERS MAKING FUN OF THE ATTACK ON THE HULL FISHERMEN.

protected by armour. The *Nicolai I.* is said to have been re-armed shortly before her commissioning. In all, Admiral Nebogatoff could dispose of two 12-in., three 10-in., and twelve 9-in. guns, with a number of smaller weapons. Trained officers and men to take the ships to sea were, however, wanting, and a very large proportion of landsmen and reservists with no nautical experience had to be placed on board. The revolutionary element was even stronger in the crews of this section of the fleet than it had been in the divisions under the orders of Admirals Rojdestvensky and Fokersam, as the strength of the revolutionary movement in Russia was growing daily, and the popularity of the Government was hourly declining before the shock of continued defeat and calamity unprecedented



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
JAPANESE SOLDIERS TRAVELLING ON THE BUFFERS OF
THE WAGGONS.

in the history of the Russian nation. In February, after many delays and hesitations, the Government at last decided to order the departure of the squadron, and on the 15th Admiral Nebogatoff sailed from Libau, with instructions to follow the Suez Canal route to the Far East. Some days before he left the Russian auxiliary cruiser *Irtish* had passed through the Suez Canal with orders to join Admiral Rojdestvensky.

CHAPTER LII.

THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR—JAPAN'S DARKEST HOURS.

THE month of September, 1904, had passed without any sensible progress in the attack upon Port Arthur. Thousands of gallant lives had been sacrificed, yet the only result to show for the sacrifice was the possession of a few unimportant Russian outworks. A multitude of wounded poured from the camps and trenches in front of the beleaguered fortress home to Japan, and, despite its magnificent stoicism and self-restraint, the Japanese nation began to chafe at the slow advance of General Nogi's attack. In every home there was suffering; and though the rich shared their wealth with the poor, and thus strove to alleviate the distress, the number of the bereaved and of the penniless daily increased. Wives and children stinted themselves of food to send the

Port Arthur,
September, 1904.

cheapest little luxuries to the fighting men at the front. The people still cheerfully paid the terrific taxes; the bankers gladly subscribed to the incessant loans issued to defray the ever-growing cost of the colossal conflict. But a fierce impatience was showing itself amongst this much-tried people. They craved for decisive success to end their torments, and the decisive success did not come.

A sense of dejection showed itself in these sad days among the Japanese, and at moments they even seemed to forget the fact that the history of the war had been one long tale of Japanese triumphs. They were not fighting for glory or wealth, but for their freedom, and to them, a poor and weak people, so far as material resources went at that date, but a nation of giants if the moral element be considered, which in human affairs counts for more than is commonly supposed, it seemed cruel that this trial, which they had never sought, should have befallen them, and that they should have had to fight for what was really the cause of civilisation and justice alone. Yet, when all is said, the historian will look back upon this period



JAPANESE SKETCH OF AN ENGAGEMENT.

of trial and disillusionment for the true proof of Japanese greatness. It is not in the hour of prosperity and success that a people's noble qualities are best manifested, but under the shadow of calamity and defeat. Japan's sufferings abated her resolution by not one jot, and not a single voice was raised for a cowardly peace. There was no pro-Russian party of traitors in Japan, and no outcry against the enormous losses in battle. The Japanese played the terrible game of war like men and gentlemen.



A JAPANESE SKETCH OF A FIGHT BETWEEN THE RUSSIANS AND THE JAPANESE

Towards the close of September the first of the 11-in. howitzers had been placed in position before Port Arthur. The concrete emplacements which were needed to take the shock of the recoil had been prepared long before the arrival of the weapons themselves. The guns were moved up **The 11-in. Howitzers.** as near as possible to the front by rail, and then were transferred to small trucks with steel wheels, the rims of which were 6-in. wide, so as not to sink in the earth. The guns on these trucks

were man-hauled to the batteries, windlasses being employed where sharp corners had to be turned. They were then placed upon ordinary hydraulic mountings. The selection of the batteries in which they were to be placed was a matter of extreme importance. They had to be carefully masked from the enemy's observation, as if the Russians had once ascertained their whereabouts not many hours would have passed before their carriages and concrete platforms would have been destroyed by the terrific fire which the defenders of Port Arthur were able to turn in every direction from the huge guns mounted in the forts.



A RUSSIAN GUN AND GUN TEAM OVERWHELMED IN BROKEN ICE.

Hill. Firing a projectile of 500lb. charged with high explosive, these guns could command the entire area within the fortifications and search the harbour. About the same time six 6-in. and four 7-in. naval guns were added to the siege-train, bringing it up to a total of 310 guns. Even now the Japanese were weak in the heaviest type of gun, and all the howitzers were not available till the early days of November.

On October 1, however, the first six opened fire. It was a state occasion, and a large number of distinguished officers, including General Kodama, then on a visit to headquarters before Port Arthur, watched the practice. A hundred huge shells were poured into North Kikwan Fort, from which rose

Six howitzers were in position before October 1; 12 more arrived a fortnight later. The 18 weapons were placed thus: five behind Taku-shan, on the extreme left of the Japanese attack; nine in the centre near Lungtoa, and four about a mile north of 203 Metre

clouds of dust and smoke. No very great effect was produced; the enormous strength of the work enabling it to defy this attack for weeks, and only gradually did its concrete and masonry dissolve beneath the storm of steel. On the 2nd the fire was directed on the harbour and the fleet. The *Pobieda* was hit after many misses, and from her deck forward a great spout of smoke and flame went up. From the 4th to the 7th the shelling of the battleships continued, and the *Retvisan*, *Poltava*, *Peresviet*, and *Pobieda* were all struck, and their crews compelled to abandon them. Perceiving that the fleet would be destroyed unless something was done, the Russians removed most of the ships into the East Harbour, where they were invisible to the Japanese. To protect those ships for which there was no room in the East Harbour, they stationed a hospital-ship in the line of fire. Against this conduct the Japanese at once protested.

**Firing on the
Battleships.**



JAPANESE OUTPOST ON THE ALERT.

The position of the Russian fleet inside the fortress was going from bad to worse. Admiral Viren, a brave and capable officer who had the confidence of his subordinates, had now been placed in command, instead of the incompetent Prince Ukhtomsky, but the change had come too late to save the fleet. It is believed that Admiral Viren received orders direct from the Czar not to put to sea with the remnant of the fleet, but at all costs to keep it within the harbour, so that it might be intact when the Baltic fleet arrived. He seems further to have been instructed to sink the hulls in the last resort, as a means of protecting them against the Japanese bombardment. It was hoped that if the Baltic fleet arrived and compelled the Japanese to raise the siege, the ships might be recovered, raised, put in order, and employed to reinforce Admiral Rojdestvensky. Even if Admiral Viren had wished to go out, he was powerless to do so. A large number of guns, officers, and men had been landed from the fleet to take part in the defence, and General Stoessel had to be consulted before they could be withdrawn from the works. Now General Stoessel, for reasons of his own, had determined that

**Instructions to
the Russian Fleet.**



BREAKDOWN OF A TROOP TRAIN ON THE TRANS-SIBERIAN RAILWAY.

the fleet should stand or fall with the fortress. There was incessant friction between the Russian army and navy, and in the fleet the bitter cry was heard, "It is not Togo but Stoessel who is destroying our ships."

While the bombardment continued the Japanese pushed their saps up towards the Russian forts with admirable patience and resolution. Day after day they dug and blasted, till the whole face of the land near

Port Arthur was covered with hundreds of miles of trenches, some of them so wide and deep as to contain thousands of men, and to permit of the passage through them of mountain-guns. At the head of the saps, as these neared the forts, the work was most perilous. Incessant hand-to-hand fighting with bomb and bayonet proceeded, and the Russian heavy artillery constantly directed an infernal fire upon the heroes labouring with pick and spade.

The dynamite bombs were of all devices the most terrible; where they did not kill they inflicted appalling wounds, and they rained incessantly upon the Japanese. To throw them the Russians employed small wooden mortars as well as hand-power. Discovering this, the Japanese adopted the same expedient, and employed some hundreds of wooden mortars, which were stationed in the front line. As it was vital to give the troops in the saps protection against these bombs, every kind of device was tried, but finally nets of spring wire, like wire-mattresses, were placed to cover the workers. From these the Russian bombs rebounded and exploded without effect. But in the hand-to-hand encounters such contrivances could not be used, and the slaughter was then appalling. Few on either side came out alive from such affairs; when the smoke of the bombs lifted it disclosed a sea of human wrecks swimming in blood. Ingenious, too, were the devices tried to enable the pioneers to penetrate and destroy the wire entanglements. Some of

these contrivances have already been described, but one which was much used in the later period of the siege was a shield carried by the sapper, who supported himself by two strong bamboo props, so that he was not thrown down by the violent



GENERAL ANDRIEFF.
Commander-in-Chief of the fortress at Vladivostock.

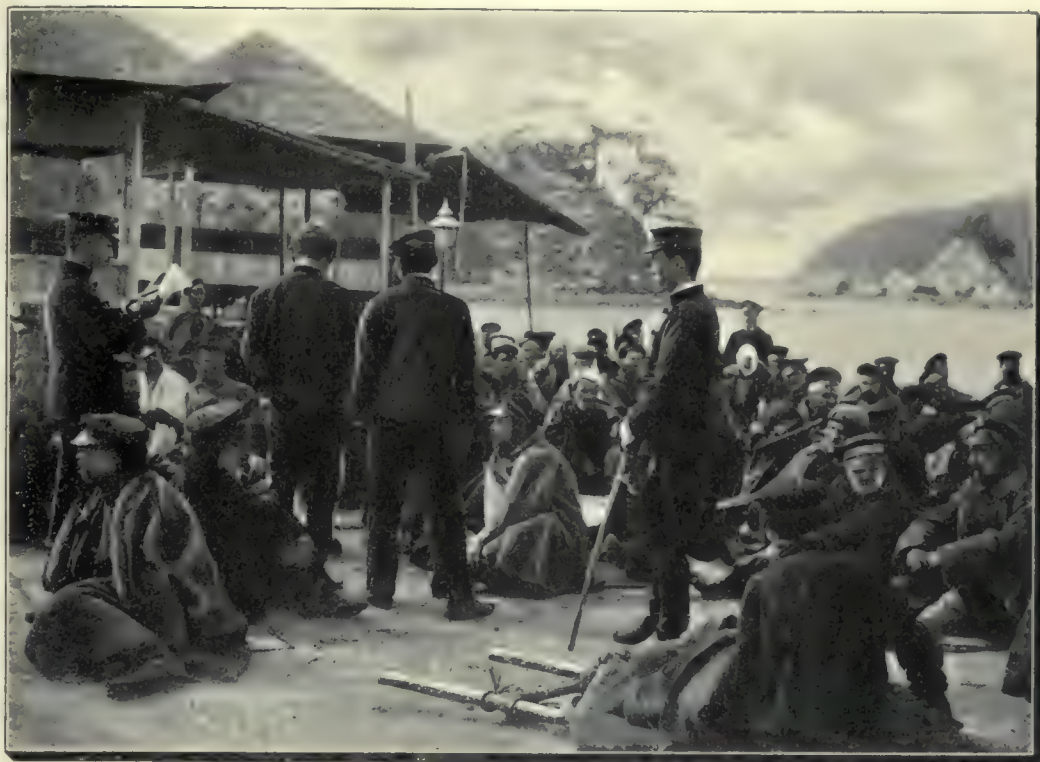


COMMANDANT N. P. SOKOLNIKOFF.
Governor of Anadyr Province, Siberia.



GENERAL KASBEK.
Commandant of the fortress of Vladivostock.

shock of the bullets when they struck his steel armour. When a man went forward to cut the wires of the entanglements, the Russian rifles opened on him at once. After the rifles came the machine-guns, which, with their deadly whirr, filled the air with projectiles, and generally accomplished their dreadful purpose. Hundreds of pioneers perished on the slopes by



JAPANESE CHECKING RUSSIAN PRISONERS ON THEIR ARRIVAL.

the most frightful deaths conceivable; if wounded the Russians continued to fire at them, because it was a habit of the Japanese sappers to feign death, and thus to accomplish stealthily the cutting of the wires. To bring in the wounded was a work of impossibility for the Red Cross service; and when it was attempted they had to be dragged over rough ground, whatever the state of their wounds, so that on that passage of agony they, too, often succumbed to their injuries. Yet the high spirit, the passionate devotion of the Japanese, was shown by this, that there was no hanging back on the part of the men. They went to torture or certain death, but they never repined.

One of these fierce hand-to-hand fights upon a small scale occurred on October 2, when the Russians suddenly assaulted the head of the Japanese sap near North Kikwan. The two combatants were only a few hundred feet apart, and one determined rush carried the Russians into the trenches. The Japanese fought to the last, but were overpowered and killed to a man, when all that they had so painfully

accomplished by long days of patient labour was undone in a few minutes with high explosives. The Russians, however, were made the

Hand-to-Hand Fights.

object of a counter-attack, and were finally expelled from the trench with heavy loss, after a furious encounter. The same day the Russians attacked

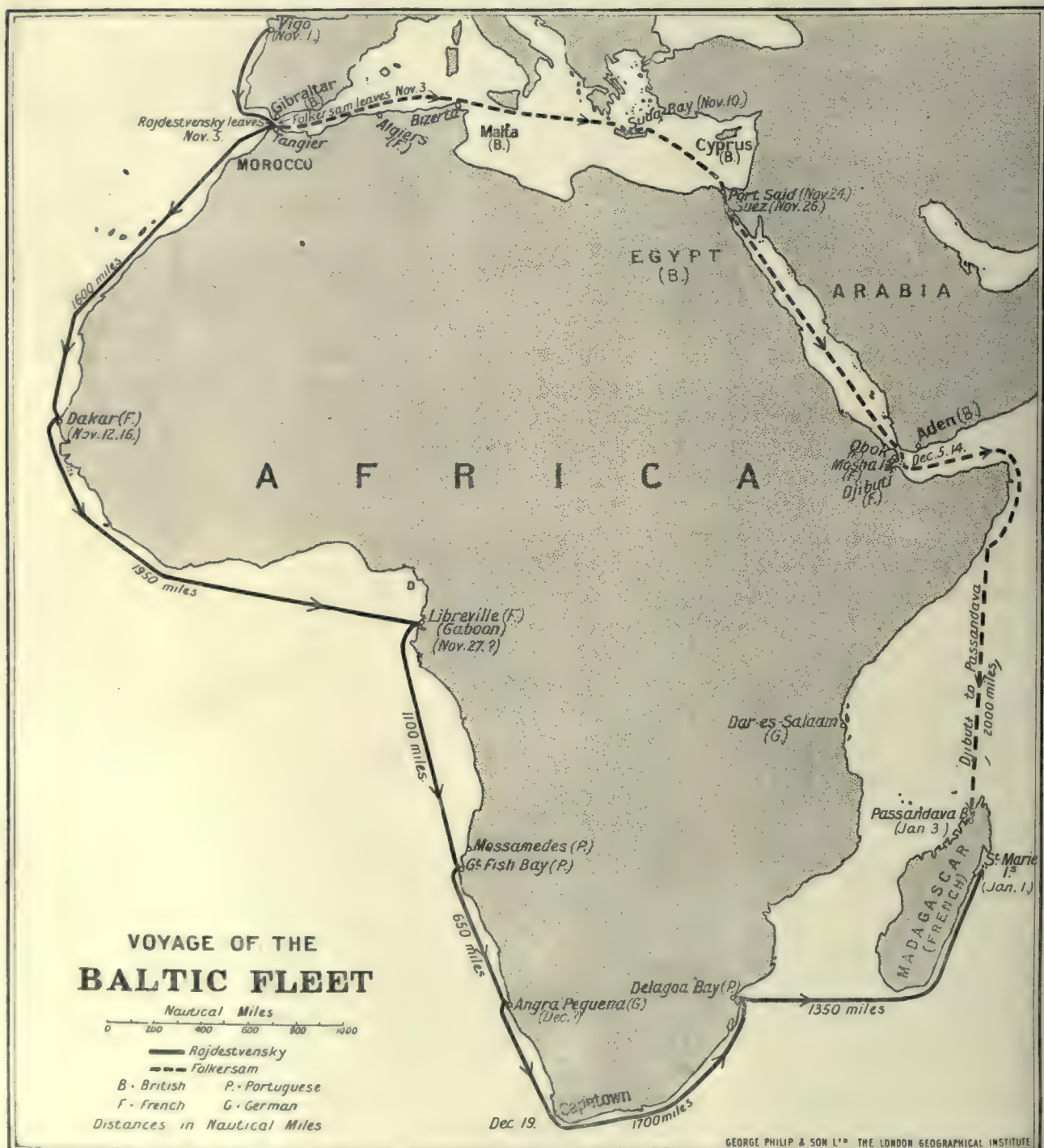
the saps near 203 Metre Hill, but this time without success, though they repeatedly assaulted with the utmost bravery and resolution. On the 4th the Japanese suddenly attacked a couple of machine-guns which the Russians had placed in a semi-permanent work at Yenchang on the extreme Japanese left. They rushed the work and destroyed the guns, but were forced by the heavy shell-fire of the forts to withdraw when this had been accomplished. But though the work was recovered by the Russians, it gave no more trouble.

In mid-October the Japanese Staff determined to secure possession of Hashimakayama, a hill which lay just between Erhlung and West Panlung, and upon which the Russians had constructed field works and mounted small guns. The capture of the hill was necessary before the

CAPTAIN SHIMANURA
Of the Japanese Navy.

saps could be pushed up close to Erhlung. At the same time steps were taken to secure control of the ground in front of the fort on Sungshushan. To the west of the fort was a culvert on the railway held by the Russians. On October 11 this was attacked, and the Russians driven back to the railway-bridge further to the south; on the following day the bridge was also seized and a footing gained on the western slope of Sungshushan. The Russians delivered several counter-attacks, but failed to dislodge the Japanese, who were now able to destroy the reservoirs from which the garrison had drawn a part of their water supply.

During these attacks the preparations for the assault on Hashimakayama had been completed. The strength of the hill was such that very heavy loss was expected in storming it, but, as so often happened in the siege, when the apparently easy proved impossible and the impossible easy, the capture was effected



MAP SHOWING THE ROUTE OF THE BALTIC FLEET TO THE FAR EAST.

without any great difficulty. On October 16 the 9th Division made ready to assault, and the artillery concentrated on the hill a terrific fire, at times sending shells into the great Erhlung Fort. "Round after round of 11-in. and 6-in. shells burst within a space of less than 50 yards square, held by infantry in rifle-pits. The hill was soon enveloped in a great bubbling mass of smoke, into which pieces of bomb-proof timbers, pieces of sand-bags, and fragments of decapitated men were for ever rising in blacker relief against the wreaths of lighter smoke," says Mr. James, the "Daily Telegraph" correspondent.

The bombardment was so terrific and so effective that, when the moment came for the Japanese infantry to charge, the way lay open. In a great dark wave the Japanese with fixed bayonets surged up towards the crest, still under cover. As they neared the point where they would have to enter the zone of fire an officer waved his sword. The Japanese artillery saw the signal, and as if by magic ceased its fire upon the hill; its storm of projectiles now hurtled upon the Russian forts closest to Hashimakayama. The curtain of smoke from bursting shells and shrapnel had

**The Mountain
Won.**



THE "RETVISAN" TURRET GUNS TAKEN AT PORT ARTHUR AFTER ITS FALL.

scarcely lifted from the summit of Hashimakayama when a crash of firing rang out from the Russian forts, and simultaneously the great wave of Japanese troops swept forward. Seconds only were needed to reach the Russian trenches, but in those seconds many of the assailants fell; the trenches were rushed; the last remnant of the enemy within them bayoneted or dislodged by bombs, and the summit of the hill was won.

No further advance could be attempted by the Japanese. On the position which they had so gallantly secured a furious fire was directed from the Russian works to its rear, where supports with machine-guns were in readiness to deliver counter-attacks upon the Japanese. The attention of the 9th Division was fully occupied for some hours by these attacks, but after severe fighting, which lasted far into the night, the enemy were beaten off, the hill held, and connected with the Japanese saps by long lines of trenches.

Simultaneously with the attack on Hashimakayama the Japanese had feinted in force against Erhlung and the trenches in its front, thus occupying the Russian garrison of that fort, and preventing it from giving aid to the garrison of the other hill. The feint was most useful, and was one of the causes of the relatively small loss with which Hashimakayama was carried. The Japanese loss in this gallant and determined attack was only 300; the Russians left 100 dead and fragments of many more on the summit. Four guns were captured—one field-gun, one quick-firer, and two machine-guns.

In the third week of October the saps of the 11th Division were close to the forts of the Kikwan



JAPANESE SHELLS IN AN OPEN CAISSON BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

group. From North Kikwan's moat the head of the sap was only 130 feet distant; from P Fort, which had been constructed to the north of North Kikwan, the sap was 130 yards distant; from Q Fort, between North and South Kikwan, it was 200 yards away; from South Kikwan 150 yards. The 9th Division on its part had with incredible labour carried its saps close up to Erhlung and Sungshushan, and the 1st Division was close to 203 Metre Hill. But the actual trace of the Russian forts was

**Sapping near
Kikwan.**

unknown to the Japanese, nor were they aware of the nature of the obstacles which they had still to encounter in the shape of concrete caponnières buried in the earth, deep moats, and almost impassable scarps and counter-scarps. Stung by the growing irritation shown in Japan at the failure of the army to storm Port Arthur, alarmed at the progress of the Baltic fleet, and believing that the Russian force within Port Arthur numbered not much more than 12,000 men, whereas its strength was really over 50,000, the Staff determined to deliver another general assault. The preparations for it at once began, and meantime the attack upon North Kikwan was pressed with all imaginable energy.

In front of this work the Japanese discovered a number of Russian mines, which, however, had failed to explode. They were compelled to tunnel in towards the moat in order to avoid the terrific fire which was concentrated upon the sap, and which rendered progress impossible. But the

A Tunnelling Duel.

moment the Japanese began to tunnel the Russians did the same. They carried a counter-tunnel out under the very feet of the Japanese. The Japanese miners heard the Russians at their work, and determined to deal with them. A small hole opened in the side of their gallery, leading into the Russian tunnel. Six volunteers offered to force their way into the Russian gallery and remove the explosives which it was thought to contain. With ropes fastened to their legs they worked their way into the gallery, while their comrades withdrew some distance. Soon after the little handful of heroes had

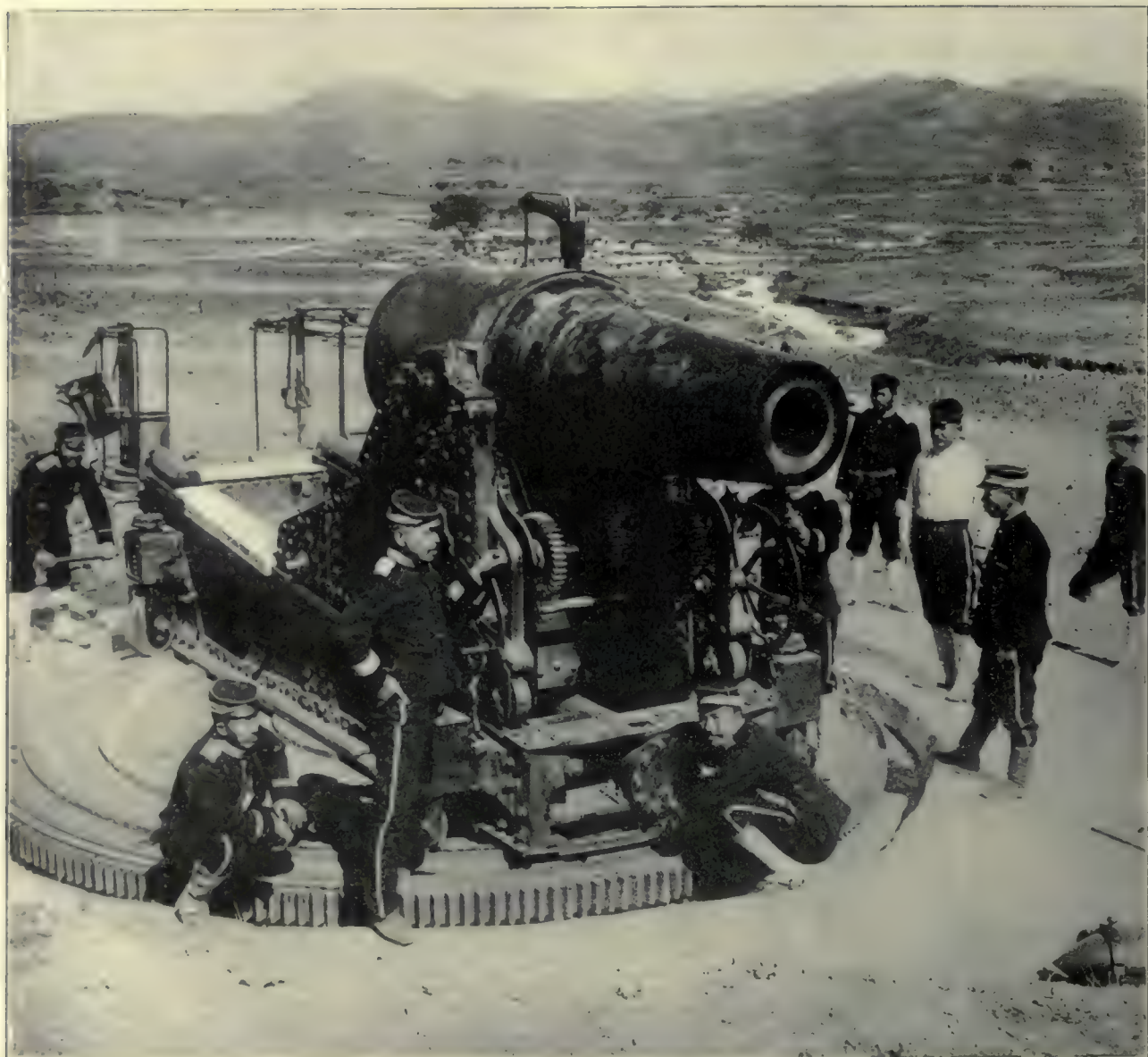
disappeared there was a violent explosion, in which four of the party perished. The other two, badly wounded, were dragged out by the ropes.

Though the explosion did great damage to the Japanese sap, it did even more to the Russian work. It laid bare the concrete side and top of the gallery in the moat at the corner nearest the right end of the



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood.]

LUNCH WITH GENERAL NOGI BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

ONE OF NOGI'S BIG GUNS NEAR PORT ARTHUR.

Japanese parallel; moreover, it opened a rift in the ground by which the corner could be approached without inordinate danger.

Some words of explanation are required to enable the reader to understand the nature of the defences of North Kikwan. The moat of the fort was 33ft. wide at the top, narrowing to 20ft. at the bottom. Its depth was 20ft. In front of the moat, on the side exposed to the Japanese attack, was

The Kikwan Defences.

a gallery of concrete, with walls about 8ft. thick, approached from the fort through a long concrete passage. This gallery was divided up by walls, also of concrete, into seven chambers, communicating with each other by narrow arched doorways. From the passage a steel door opened into a small concrete work projecting out into the moat and looking towards the fort. In this work, which was what is strictly known as a caponniere, was mounted a machine-gun, so disposed as to sweep almost the entire moat. Till the explosion of the Russian mine nothing could be seen of the caponniere or of the long gallery, and its very existence could only be inferred, not known.

But when the roof of the caponniere gallery had been exposed, the Japanese knew what was before them. That very night they ran their trench up to the opening, and began a desperate conflict, which lasted for weeks, for the possession of these underground chambers. Individual heroism and initiative



THE TELEPHONE IN THE DUG-OUT. DIRECTING RUSSIAN ARTILLERY FIRE.

Mr. Julius Price, the artist, writes: "This was one of my most exciting experiences. I happened to be in the trenches making some sketches, when suddenly the Japanese opened fire upon us from an unexpected quarter. The officer in command of the nearest Russian battery was rung up on the telephone, and in a few minutes his guns opened fire, the range being given by telephonic message. The din was terrific, and as the combatants were less than 2,000 yards apart, the situation was not exactly comfortable, for shrapnel was shrieking everywhere."

were the factors which this prolonged conflict brought into play, and which gave eventual success in it. The first step taken was to enlarge the hole that had been made in the roof sufficiently to permit the passage of a man. A powerful charge of gun-cotton was exploded against and

The Caponniere. under the wall, opening a hole about 3ft. in diameter. Several pioneers in succession jumped down into the darkness of the chamber within, but were all shot as soon as they alighted by the Russians within. It was clear that this method of attack must be abandoned, and different methods substituted. The caponniere could not be stormed before the general assault, and it had to be left for the time being in the hands of the Russians; but a strong parallel was constructed to the rear of the caponniere gallery, deeply excavated, with enormous sand-bag defences.

The Russians did not permit the Japanese saps to approach at this and other points without offering a desperate resistance. At Erhlung they fired two torpedo heads into the saps by means of torpedo tubes. The charges exploded with dreadful force, wrecked the saps, and killed many of the men at work. At

203 Metre Hill they delivered attack after attack, and finally succeeded in capturing the head of the sap for some minutes, destroying a considerable section of it. Counter-attacks were then delivered, and by the use of the bomb and the bayonet they were forced back. A Russian Red Cross officer surrendered at this point, and stated that he had given himself up because supplies were running short. There was also a report that a large part of the garrison of 203 Metre Hill had formed a plot to surrender, but, having been detected in their prepara-



[From stereograph made by James Ricalton. Copyright, 1905, by Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.]
JAPANESE COOKS PREPARING FOOD—CHOPPING UP MEAT.

tions, had been seized and shot by General Stoessel. Whether this was true or not will probably never be definitely known.

On October 26 a preliminary attack was delivered by the Japanese on the eastern forts. The 11th Division was ordered to assault the two Kikwan forts. The 9th Division was to attack P Fort and Erhlung Fort. The 1st Division was to move against Sungshushan. Very early in the morning

Attack on the Eastern Forts. a heavy bombardment of the forts which were to be assaulted began. 11-in. shells, 6-in. shells, and showers of shrapnel from the field-guns were poured upon the Russian works. As the morning advanced the Russian heavy guns replied, singling out the big howitzers for their attack. The Japanese were using smoky powder, and, though the howitzers were screened from direct view, yet from time to time clouds of smoke rising above the intervening hills gave some indication of their position. But though the Russian shells burst near the howitzers, they made no serious hits, with this exception, that they twice struck the concrete foundations under the howitzers and put two of them temporarily out of action. The Russian forts were enveloped in dense smoke, and spurts of fire and fragments of timber flying up from them from minute to minute told that the Japanese bombardment was not without effect.



UNDERGROUND FIGHTING BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

Frequently during the siege, when the Japanese sapped the Russian defences, the adversaries would get to such close quarters that breaking partitions brought them face to face.

When the Japanese guns were firing their fastest, about 5 p.m., the assaulting columns suddenly broke from the parallels against Erhlung and Sungshushan. The Japanese wore their dark winter uniforms, and showed black against the hill-side. In a mass they swarmed into the dense clouds of smoke that overhung the forts, and rushed the Russian advanced line of trenches under a fearful shrapnel-fire from the guns in Itzeshan and Antzeshan, while the Japanese artillery turned its attention from the front line of trenches to the great earth and concrete works of the forts behind. At Sungshushan the assailants secured a position on the edge of the counter-scarp of the moat. At Erhlungshan, just after the Russian trench had been carried at the point of the bayonet, the enemy exploded a small mine, which caused some confusion, but only killed four men. Then with incredible rapidity, under the very eyes of onlookers, the Japanese dug themselves into the earth, so that they seemed, as it were, to sink by magic into the soil. They ran three saps with amazing speed up the slope from the head of the Japanese advanced line of trenches to the trench just won, and in an hour the work was

**A Terrific
Attack.**



ONE OF THE RUSSIAN GUNS IN PORT ARTHUR LAID FOR HIGH-ANGLE FIRE.

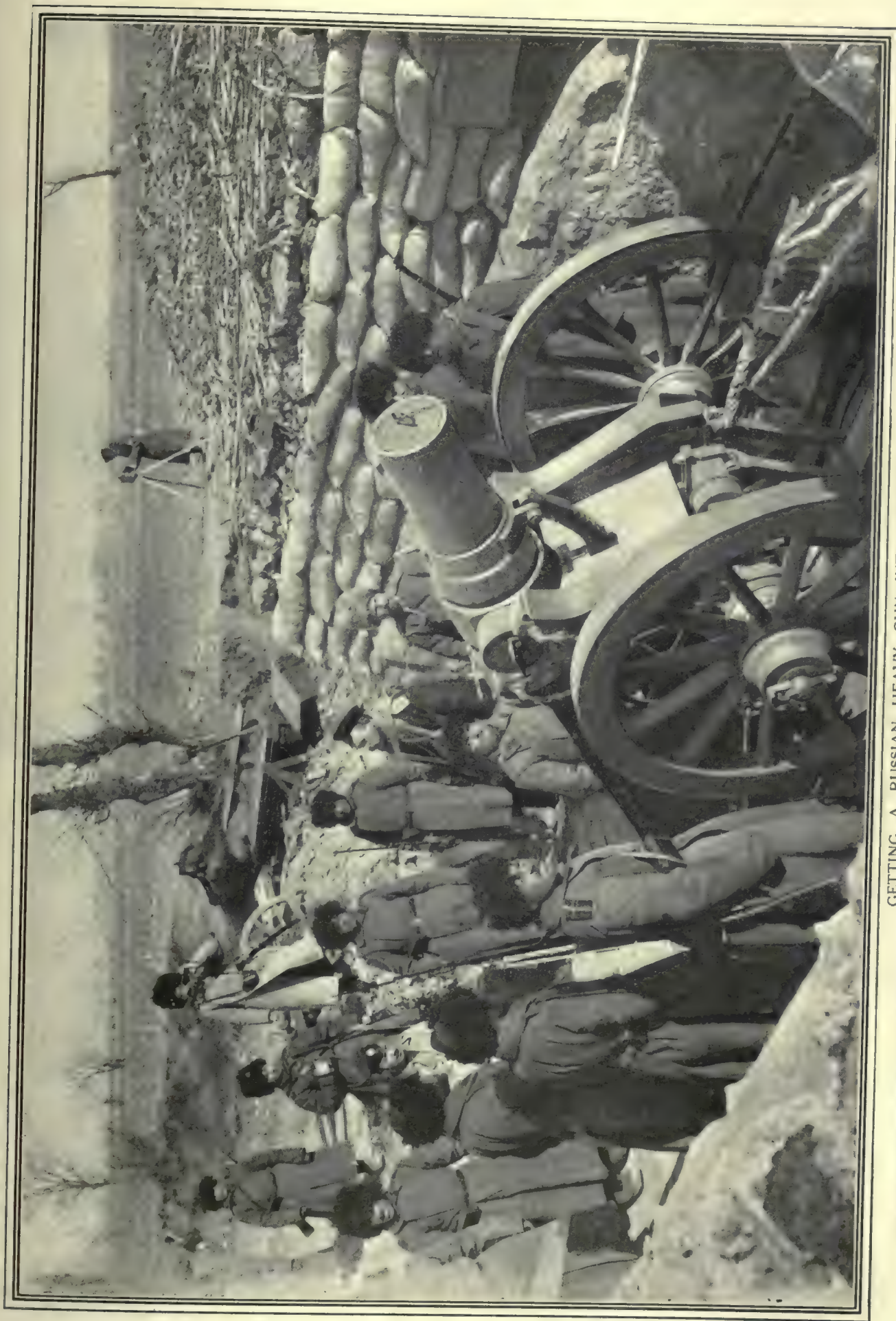
accomplished, accomplished under a fire which made the earth rock, which covered the slope of the steep hill with dust and smoke and bursting shells, amidst the incessant violent detonation of dynamite or gun-cotton bombs. Yet the loss in this most daring operation was only 280.

For some reason or other, perhaps satisfied with the success that had been attained, perhaps because the other attacks had only been intended as mere demonstrations, the Japanese did not press their assaults upon the Kikwan forts or 203 Metre Hill. But late that night the Russians assailed the trench in front of Erhlung with extraordinary energy and determination. They came on, throwing bombs and using bayonets, in small parties, followed

by stronger detachments, which rushed the trenches so soon as the advanced guard had thrown its bombs. The combat was of the bloodiest nature, for neither side gave quarter, and each displayed the utmost fury. Not a Japanese private on those hills but knew that upon Port Arthur turned the issue of the war and the fate of his fatherland, and thus in these hours of conflict the men were strung to fever pitch. Finally, towards dawn, the Japanese got the upper hand, and forced back their assailants. The trenches were recovered, and 60 dead Russians and 316 killed and wounded Japanese prostrate on the hill showed the fierceness of the encounter. On the Sungshushan trenches there were similar assaults similarly repulsed, with a loss to the Japanese of about 132 officers and men.

The ground was now clear for the general assault, which was to be carried out in obedience to orders from Japan. All the 27th, 28th, and 29th a bombardment of the Russian works proceeded, which did great damage, and prepared the way for the final success some weeks later. But the main fortifications still remained intact, and there was little to justify the daring and bloody attack meditated. The Japanese saps were making rapid progress, and a little patience would have compassed the end sought without enormous loss. But the Japanese nation, inured to stoicism, exultant in self-sacrifice, was calling for victory at any price, unlike that British people which cried out at the loss of a hundred men in the South African war. Its demand must be obeyed by the Port Arthur army.

**Ready for the
Great Assault.**



GETTING A RUSSIAN HEAVY GUN INTO POSITION.

The above picture represents a gun of a Russian 6-in. howitzer battery getting in position, protected in front and flanks by a sand-bag emplacement. The Russian 6-in. howitzer has a range up to 5,000 yards.

CHAPTER LIII.

THE SECOND ASSAULT UPON PORT ARTHUR.

THE Emperor of Japan's birthday was at hand, and, stirred and moved by the impatience of the Japanese nation, the troops before Port Arthur determined at all cost to make their ruler and commander-in-chief the most precious of offerings before that date—the capture of the fortress that had so long withstood the might of the third Japanese army. In preparation for the attack, as has already been noticed, the heavy guns had for three days maintained an incessant bombardment of the forts on the eastern front, from Kikwan to Sungshushan, while the Japanese sappers and engineers got ready scaling-ladders 30ft. long for the passage of the moats which surrounded the forts. But even now the Japanese were not aware of the obstacles which they would have to encounter; the ladders were far too short, and the problem of passing the moats was not seriously faced. The Japanese, as it were, would find themselves on the tops of the houses on one side of a street, with the whole depth of the street between them and their enemies on the roofs of the

**Japanese
Difficulties.**

houses on the other side, and if they attempted to lower themselves down one perpendicular face into the moat they would find their enemies shooting at them from the loopholes of the caponniere galleries in the moats below.

On October 30 the bombardment reached its height. It had continued steadily the whole of the previous night, but as morning dawned—a cold and clear autumn day—the rate of fire was



IN PORT ARTHUR. A BATTERY READY TO OPEN FIRE ON THE JAPANESE.

accelerated, till it reached the highest pitch of intensity about 8 a.m. Two hours later there was an abatement in its vehemence, but at 12.30 p.m. came the preparation for the assault. Shell and shrapnel

October 30, 1904.

struck the Russian works at the rate of 100 per minute; clouds of smoke rose from the forts, and a deep haze settled over the landscape, toning down the brilliant hues of Nature. North Kikwan at moments appeared like a volcano in eruption as the spurts of flame from the big shells flew upwards, tossing masses of timber and clouds of earth in the air. When the big guns were firing their fastest, the smaller field-guns of the Japanese suddenly began to pour a deluge of shrapnel upon the forts in terrific salvos. The turmoil was beyond the power of man to describe; it was the loud, swelling, continuous crashing of 500 guns firing their fastest, and it seemed that nothing could withstand a torrent of metal such as had never before been poured upon any fortress in the world.

The infantry were simultaneously to assault from west to east the Sungshushan, Erhlung, P, North Kikwan, Kobu, Q, and South Kikwan Forts—seven works in all. Early that morning a footing had been

gained in the caponniere gallery of North Kikwan. Through the opening in the gallery which had been made by the Russian counter-mine, exploded on October 23, and which had subsequently been enlarged, bombs were flung into the second chamber in the gallery, and the Russians inside it blown to pieces. A couple of Japanese sappers then leapt down into the reeking vault below, through the fumes and dust thrown up by the explosion. No sooner

**Assault on the
Caponniere Gallery.**

had they entered than the Russians in their turn flung bombs at them from the next chamber in the subterranean gallery and killed them, so that the interior of the chamber was left in a horrible condition. Determined to secure a hold upon the gallery and force out the Russians, the Japanese placed a very powerful charge of explosive in the hole in the roof of the second chamber and detonated it, following this up by bringing a machine-gun into play and directing a hail of projectiles from it through the opening. Fearing that the gallery would be carried with a rush, the Russians fell back to the third chamber



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
JAPANESE FILLING THE GREAT 11-IN. SHELLS WITH POWDER.

and closed the narrow doorway between the two chambers with sand-bags. The second chamber was then occupied by the Japanese, who also became masters of the first chamber beyond it, which had no communication with the fort. They were now able to look out upon the moat through the loop-holes of the chambers, and to think out the best means of capturing the whole gallery. Their first proceeding was to bring up explosives and blast a hole through the concrete leading out from the second chamber into the moat. Finally, timber and sand-bags were brought up in readiness to build a bomb-proof passage across the moat on the top of the rubbish which had been thrown

down by the bombardment and by the explosion of the charges in the wall of the gallery. This task, owing to the incessant fire from the Russian works above and in the counter-scarp of the moat, could only be accomplished at night. Nothing could be done on the day of the general assault.

About 1 p.m. the Japanese artillery preparation was judged complete. The advanced trenches were crowded with troops of the 44th and 12th Regiments, ready to rush upon the Russian works, and waiting the signal which was to be given by a brief cessation of the fire. About 1.10 p.m. the terrific turmoil ceased for an instant, and before the smoke from the bursting shells or the veil of dust that overhung the landscape had lifted, the wild, impetuous attack began, centring upon the Kikwan forts, where the supreme effort was to be made. Suddenly the face of

Terrible Russian Forts.



A JAPANESE TRENCH.

(Copyright photo by J. Rosenthal, of Urbanora.)

The wooden gun was used to fire dynamite grenades into the Russian trenches.

guns. The Japanese bombardment instantly recommenced, and a heavy cloud of smoke settled down upon the scene. But as the pall of smoke dropped it could be seen that the Russian shrapnel was cutting down the masses of Japanese in swathes of death, and that men and fragments of men were being swept bodily off the slope by the furious fire. The Japanese Staff were astonished at the complete failure of their calculations. The Russian forts were as terrible as ever; the great effort of the bombardment had been wasted; and a part of the Japanese army was committed to a desperate enterprise, which all could see had now but the very faintest prospect of success.

The assaulting columns charged over Kobu Fort as though they had been the sea sweeping away a child's castle on the sand. They went over the rampart, and vanished in a haze of smoke from bomb explosions. Behind them lay the dead and wounded, mown down by the most fearful fire which troops have ever faced, but the Japanese infantry were not to be turned back by anything much short of annihilation. The peril, the deadly peril of their country, swept them forward and led them to give their lives that she might live. From Kobu Fort they forced

A Most Fearful Fire.

East Kikwan Hill was black with Japanese; the regimental colours showed; the bayonets glinted in the sun; the echo of cheering men came back; but swift upon the heels of this spectacle came a roar of firing from the Russian works—those works which were supposed to have been silenced by the bombardment. The rattle of the Russian machine-guns could be heard above the crash of the Russian field artillery firing shrapnel and above the deep note of the fortress

their way close up under the parapet of East Kikwan, and were there at last brought to a standstill by the magazine-rifles and machine-guns of the garrison. In front rose the fort; behind them was a steep slope on which there was no shelter, swept by the fire from the southern works still in the hands of the Russians, and from the fort itself. The Russians turned maxims upon them, and the rush of bullets, like that of water from a hose, cut them down with appalling rapidity, while shells from the big Russian guns pitched amongst them and blew whole sections in pieces. A part of them, in blind fury, seeking to escape from



AN INCIDENT IN THE TUNNELLING DUEL BETWEEN JAPANESE AND RUSSIANS.



THE BOMB-PROOF OF LIEUT. GEN. TEUCHIYA, OF THE 11TH DIVISION 800 YARDS FROM THE FIRING LINE.

He is looking at the bombardment with his glasses through a 4-in. slit.

their terribly exposed position, and to come to handgrips with their enemy, surged round to the rear of the fort towards the Chinese wall, which crossed the western slope of the hill. Great gaps showed in their ranks as they went forward, a merciless deluge of shrapnel-bullets poured over the whole slope, and when they neared the Chinese wall they found that their plight was absolutely hopeless. From all sides came shrapnel and shell; from the wall before them came rifle and machine-gun fire, till their numbers melted away and the force died to a man, the final destruction being dealt out by the Russians in a fierce hand-to-hand mêlée, in which bomb and bayonet were used with terrific

effect upon the spent and wearied assailants. Six great 6-in. guns in the East Kikwan Fort vomited fire upon them and prevented the arrival of support. This little band of survivors of what had been the 44th Regiment perished on the crest of the hill to the rear of the fort.

Meantime, the men of the 12th Regiment, which formed the other half of the force assaulting East Kikwan, had also endeavoured to work round to the rear of the fort, after they had for some instants endured the full intensity of the Russian fire. They were seen to pass over the crest of the hill amidst shrapnel, bullets, and shell, pursued through each foot of their painful upward progress by the storm of projectiles from the machine-guns. But

A Bullet-swept Zone.

having reached the summit of the ridge, they were met with bayonets and hand grenades by the Russian reinforcements, which had now come up. For an instant they could be made out in their mortal struggle, silhouetted against the sky-line; then they recoiled in a wild rush, flying for their lives with sadly diminished numbers. Some of them fled towards Koku Fort; others attempted to retreat due north to the trenches from which they had advanced. Here, as they rushed back, they were met by a fresh swarm of assailants pouring up the hill, and were for a few instants rallied and again carried forward. But no power of man could prevail against the obstacles which faced the Japanese attack. It was impossible for the best and bravest troops to attempt to cross the bullet-swept zone which lay between the glacis of the forts and the Chinese wall. The Russian rifle-fire redoubled; parties of Russians moved out to the trenches which had been passed by the Japanese in their assault, thus threatening the rear of the 12th Regiment; a ring of flame and glistening steel encircled the doomed companies. They scattered in wild confusion, fled hither and thither in quest of shelter from the fire, and only a small part of them succeeded in breaking through the Russians and regaining their trenches. The rest were left upon the hill, surrounded by the enemy, the target for every Russian gun, with no chance of safety, and with the certainty of an



JAPANESE USING THE BAYONET.

In a fight on October 17 the Russians were received with fixed bayonets, the captain being lifted into the air by several Japanese on the points of their weapons.

agonising and a lingering death if they were not stricken down by the bullet or the bomb. With two regimental flags, in a patch of dead ground where the declivity gave some faint degree of shelter from the Russians, gathered a cluster of wounded men, and there they remained two days waiting and hoping for aid which was never to come, until all perished of hunger and cold.

This frightful struggle was only one incident of a great battle which was proceeding along two miles of front. At P Fort and Kobu Fort there were almost as savage encounters. The Kobu Fort was rushed, as

**A Two-mile
Front.**

we have seen, in the course of the assault upon East Kikwan by the 44th Regiment.

It was an exceedingly small earthwork, really one of the outworks of North Kikwan Fort, and had the fatal defect, from the Japanese standpoint, of being overlooked from high ground in the rear, which was still in the possession of the Russians. But it was held in the face of counter-attacks and of the terrific fire which was instantly concentrated upon it, though heavy casualties

were incurred by the Japanese garrison.

At P Fort the Japanese assaulting columns charged resolutely from their trenches with fixed bayonets. As they came on the Russians stood up, and in perfect order delivered a terrific fire on their assailants. The distance was, however, too short for this fire to have the desired effect, and the two opponents met on the sky-line, full in the sight of the Japanese army. The Japanese were worsted in the first shock of the hand-to-hand encounter, and were giving ground, when a fresh swarm of assailants arrived to their



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

PORT ARTHUR. ENTRANCE TO JAPANESE DUG-OUT.

support and carried them with a great neave right into the work, which was only a trench supplied with bomb-proofs, girding the hill between East Panlung and North Kikwan. As the Japanese fought their way in, the Russians exploded two mines with but small effect, though dense clouds of smoke and fragments of timber were sent up high into the air.

The outer trench at P Fort was taken, but the Russians had only fallen back to another entrenched position to the rear of the outer work, commanding the whole summit of the hill. Attempts to break

P Fort.

through past this work and to reach the Chinese wall failed, owing to the fire from the heavy Russian artillery, the machine-guns and rifles, which was concentrated upon the intervening ground from all the neighbouring forts and batteries. Twice the Japanese were repulsed, though they advanced with all imaginable ardour. As the day went down their position on the hill became very precarious. They were rapidly entrenching themselves, but the fire upon them was appalling, and their own artillery, which gave the most admirable support throughout the struggle, was unable to beat it down, though the huge howitzers were still launching projectiles incessantly upon the Russian works, and the naval and field guns kept up a monotonous shrapnel-fire, like steam-hammers beating furiously upon an unyielding anvil.



'TWIXT HEAVEN AND EARTH.

On the flanks of the steepest points above the Tumen Pass several companies of Russians remained, who lived between heaven and earth without food and water, crouching in the clefts of the rocks. October 17, 1904.

With night the Japanese artillery-fire greatly diminished, and the Russians gathered to recapture P Fort, shrouded from the eyes of the Japanese by the dazzling beams of the searchlight which glared upon the wounded on Kikwan Hill and buried the rest of the ridge in impenetrable obscurity. They crawled to the Japanese trenches, and then suddenly rose and leapt upon their enemies, using bombs, revolvers, bayonets, and rifle-butts. A wild mêlée took place in the pitch darkness; the Japanese fought like demons, and took and gave no quarter. Officers wrestled with officers, men with men, and the tricks of jiu-jitsu stood the men of the Far East in good stead. The numbers of the Russians were, however, irresistible. The Japanese in the trench were killed almost to a man, and so terrific was the fighting that next day, when the interior of the work was inspected, it was found that many on either side had been hacked in pieces.

Learning that P Fort had been recaptured, General Ichinobe, who commanded the 6th Brigade of the 9th Division, gave orders that it must be retaken by the Japanese at all cost. He put himself at the head of the 35th Regiment, and led the onslaught sword in hand. As the rifle-shots and Russian cheers on the hill were dying away in the fulness of triumph, the 35th Regiment burst in upon the Muscovites with loud shouts of "Banzai!" and, hurling bombs amongst them, followed up the bombs with the bayonet. Again there was a fierce mêlée lasting several minutes, but this time the Japanese were in superior force, fighting with invincible fury, and determined not to lose the one substantial recompense for the day's sacrifices. The Russians about midnight were driven back once more; P Fort was retaken, and from that hour it was christened Ichinobe Fort, in commemoration of the gallantry of the soldier who had been the chief agent in its recapture. Its value, however, was small, and, like Kobu Fort, it could only be held at the cost of heavy sacrifices in daily casualties. But the Japanese clung to it, and never again relaxed their grip upon it.

At Erhlung Fort the Japanese assaulting columns found, when they rushed at the moat from their saps which had been carried close up to the counter-scarp, that the moat was too wide and too deep for their scaling-ladders. They did not persist in the assault, which would have been absolutely hopeless under such conditions, but, instead, attempted from their saps to fill up the moat at one point with sand-bags, and thus to build a bridge across. Hundreds of sand-bags were laboriously brought up to the advanced parallel and thrown into the moat, and, as hour after hour passed, the Japanese, with a pole 40ft. long, sounded the abyss which yawned just beneath their feet, unable under the terrific fire which the Russians poured upon everyone who showed his head above the parallel to make ocular observations. When hundreds of bags had been thrown in, and the engineers calculated that the moat ought to have been filled, the pole still failed to touch the bottom. Then at last it dawned upon them that they were engaged in a Sisyphean task. As fast as they threw in sand-bags, so fast the Russians in the moat below carried them away. Their labour was in vain, and for the moment nothing more could be achieved. At Sungshushan Fort the assaulting force reached the edge of the moat, but found when they reached it that their scaling-ladders, which were only 30ft. long and weak in construction, were much too short. They had therefore to return to their parallels, as the gap before them was one which could not be crossed.

Against Q Fort the attack completely failed. At North Kikwan the conditions were such as to render any attempt to storm the work impossible until cover had been constructed in the moat and a better hold secured over the caponnières in the counter-scarp.

In the town of Port Arthur the bombardment produced some serious fires. About sunset a great fire could be seen in the New Town, from which dense volumes of smoke went up. But no very grave damage was inflicted. The early hours of the night were marked by a sortie of the Russians against the Japanese parallels in front of Erhlung and Sungshushan, in which considerable loss was incurred by both sides, though no very great damage was done.

Thus the second assault had issued in complete and tragic failure. The Japanese losses were not so heavy as they would have been had the original plans been followed and the effort to rush the forts been seriously carried out. But, even so, they were bad enough. The wounded on the 30th were returned at 1,174, which did not include the losses in the

Erhlung and Sungshushan Forts.

Second Assault Fails.



THE TERRORS OF BOMB-THROWING.

"The Russians advanced against the rock and climbed up the steep sides, leaving heaps of dead at the base. At last they reached the top, when they were met by the Japanese, who rushed from their trenches and flung bombs at them." October 17, 1904.



[Copyright photo by J. Rosenthal, of Urbanora.

INSIDE THE WEST ERHLUNG FORT, PORT ARTHUR, TAKEN ON DECEMBER 31, 1904.

capture and recapture of P Fort, or the killed. All things considered, the total of killed, wounded, and missing was probably between 3,000 and 5,000, a very large proportion of whom were killed.

The attack was premature, dictated by political considerations and by the pressure of public opinion in Japan. The 3rd Army felt that its courage was impugned, and sacrificed itself at

the dictates of "Bushido." Its discomfiture had upon it a stunning effect, as it had hoped even against hope that valour might overcome physical obstacles. But the enormous moats yet yawned unfilled, and even the most desperate and determined in the Japanese ranks recognised that steps must be taken to remove the impediment which they offered to any assault. As events proved, more than a month of hard fighting under the most painful conditions was required before the caponniere vaults could be destroyed and easy access obtained to the hither walls of the moats.

The cost of the great bombardment to Japan was enormous. It has been estimated that the ammunition fired on October 30 alone represented a sum of £40,000, which had, to outward appearance,

brought no result, though long afterwards it was known that the rain of shells had begun to make an impression on the Russian works. The 18 11-in. howitzers had fired each 100 rounds on the morning of the fatal day. Thousands of rounds were also discharged from the naval guns, the smaller siege weapons, and the field artillery. The sanguine expectations of the Japanese artilleryists were cruelly disappointed when facts proved that this storm of shell and shrapnel had failed to silence the Russian fire or to render the Russian trenches untenable.

On the night of October 30 the Japanese at North Kikwan succeeded in building a wall of sand-bags across the moat up to the scarp of the fort itself, and with timber constructed bomb-proofs along this approach. There was a good deal of rubble in the moat at this point, as the result

A Wall of Sand-bags.

of the Japanese blasting operations and of the falls of earth and debris brought down in the course of the bombardment, so that they were able to slant their approach up to the actual earth rampart of the fort. All this was achieved under a terrific fire, and though

the Russians were in control of the caponniere chambers in the gallery, from which they directed their machine-guns and rifles on the working-parties. On the morning of the 31st a party of 80 Japanese filed across the moat under shelter of the bomb-proof just before dawn, and, reaching the rampart above, began to dig a trench up its steep slope. The Russians in the caponnières saw what was in progress, and



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.

CHINESE DIGGING A RUSSIAN GRAVE AT PORT ARTHUR.

October 31, 1904.

GALLANT LITTLE PARTY.

1177

brought down to the vaults a mountain-gun from the fort, through the long gallery in the concrete. With this at daybreak they opened on the breastwork crossing the moat, shelled it, set fire to it, and rapidly destroyed it.

The little party of less than 80 Japanese—for many of them had fallen—were left entrenched, isolated, on the face of the fort. They were now systematically attacked from the fort. Over the rampart high-explosive bombs were flung amongst them, killing them, or inflicting the most dreadful wounds. From the caponniere loopholes an incessant fire was maintained upon those who strove to recross the moat or to go to their help from the opening which the Japanese had made in the concrete of the gallery.



A HAND-TO-HAND FIGHT.

The Japanese know how to handle cold steel, and they bayoneted all they came across. The night of October 17 was so dark it was difficult to see at three paces.

The Japanese did not put up the white flag and surrender. They continued, fighting desperately and suffering incessantly from hunger and cold, till the morning of November 3, when there was no longer rifle-fire or any sign of life from the trench on the face of the rampart.

On the night of the 31st the Japanese made an attempt to assist the little party of men on the face of the fort rampart. They sent a number of pioneers through the opening which they had cut into the moat, while the Russians in the caponniere gallery were watching their comrades. These sappers crawled to the loopholes of the three next chambers, lying down in the moat, and from outside placed in them bombs timed to explode immediately. As the bombs exploded with great violence, killing many of the Russians in the gallery, the

Fighting in the
Gallery.

Japanese at the second chamber, who were waiting in readiness for the crash of the bombs, burst through the doorway between the two chambers, and made themselves masters of the next three chambers so rapidly that the Russians had not time to close the doorway. A desperate struggle ensued for the possession of this doorway, which was so narrow that only two men at once could pass through it, and then with some difficulty. Rifles, bayonets, and hand-grenades repulsed every attempt to carry the opening.

For a fortnight the two combatants faced one another at this door. The Russians, after beating off the first Japanese assaults, rapidly built up a sand-bag barricade, leaving loopholes for rifles. The Japanese then crawled up to it and flung bombs over it, but no sooner had the Russians behind the barricade been blown to pieces than others took their place and retaliated in the same way upon the Japanese, till the floors and walls of these forbidding vaults were strewn with human remains, and it was almost equivalent to a death sentence for any man to be ordered to, or to volunteer for service in, the subterranean fight. Innumerable devices were tried by the Japanese to force this fatal passage and to drive the Russians from the vaults. It was suggested that the moat and galleries might be pumped full of water and the Russian

force drowned out, but on investigation this plan was abandoned. The Japanese next built up great heaps of millet stalks and set them on fire to smoke the Russians out, but the smoke blew the wrong way, and drove them themselves from their chambers for some minutes, though fortunately the Russians were too much surprised to seize the opportunity and regain the ground that they had lost. Next the Japanese sent down a man in diving-dress with an air-hose, carrying



[R. Johnston photo.]
PORT ARTHUR—MONUMENT ERECTED IN MEMORY OF THE SOLDIERS OF THE 3RD DIVISION WHO SACRIFICED THEIR LIVES IN THE TAKING OF PORT ARTHUR.

cylinders of carbonic acid gas, with which he filled the whole gallery. This compelled the Russians to retire, but it was impossible for the Japanese to use their advantage, as the atmosphere was as deadly to themselves as to their antagonists, and even the diver seems to have been overcome by it. Neither side could enter the vaults till it had cleared, and then they were back in their old position.

Foiled time after time, the Japanese determined to cut down through the earth and rock at the back of the concrete gallery and to blast it away. They excavated a deep trench along the back of it, when the Russians detected their proceedings, and at once ran out a counter-mine, which was exploded on November 18, destroying a great part of the trench and killing one or two Japanese. But this mine was much more disastrous to themselves than to their enemy. It opened up a gap in the concrete wall at the back of the gallery, and rendered the whole front of the gallery untenable, with the result that they had immediately to withdraw their men from three of the chambers which they had so far held. They still retained the long passage on the eastern front of the fort, and to secure their possession of it they built a sand-bag barricade across it near the corner, with other barricades at intervals along its length. Gaps were left in these so as to permit the passage of men in single file, though all preparations were made for closing them when the necessity arose. They also built a breastwork across the moat near the point where the tunnel leading from

Blasting the Gallery.



A RUSSIAN COUNCIL OF WAR AT PORT ARTHUR.

the gallery entered the fort, so as to prevent the Japanese advancing up the moat and forcing their way with explosives into the southern end of the gallery.

On November 21 a party of five Japanese volunteers crept out into the moat with bombs, which they were to place in the loopholes of the gallery, repeating the tactics previously employed in the attack upon the chambers in the front of the gallery. They succeeded in their daring enterprise,

Japanese Heroism. and at the sound of the explosions the Japanese inside the vaults rushed the first barricade, tearing it down, but found themselves under rifle-fire from the men behind the second barricade, the opening in which had instantly been closed. New tactics had to be employed, and were immediately devised. A pioneer built up a little breastwork of three sand-bags at the corner of the gallery; then, lying down behind it, pushed it forward, using his feet to get leverage against the wall at the bend of the gallery. When he had straightened his legs and body and forced the three sand-bags forward, another man threw himself down, and the first man used his legs against the other's shoulders, the second man meantime bracing his body against the wall. So they forced the little pile of sand-bags some distance down the gallery, and when they had done this brought up more bags, and built a breastwork three sand-bags thick

across the gallery.

The next operation was a simple one. The bags of the inner line were lifted cautiously over the other two and dropped on the further side, the process being continued with each row in turn, and thus the Japanese barricade slowly moved nearer to the Russians, till finally it touched their barricade. This steady, merciless advance was not accomplished without heavy loss to the Japanese, who had many killed by



RUSSIAN PRISONERS FROM PORT ARTHUR AT MATSUYAMA.

bombs, but it was accomplished in the end. The most terrible incident of the struggle has still to be told. When the Japanese bombs were exploded in the loopholes of the gallery, two Russians standing in the gallery were severely wounded and stunned. They were not able to join their

A Terrible Death. comrades when these rushed back behind the sand-bag barricade, and, on recovering consciousness, found that the opening in it was closed. They were left between the advancing line of Japanese sand-bags and the Russian barricade. In vain they implored their comrades to let them through; the Russians behind the barricade answered that the thing was impossible; to open a gap would be to give the Japanese the fort. Slowly and surely the Japanese sand-bags moved in upon them, forcing them up against the Russian barricade, and thus smothered them.

The Japanese then closed the loopholes in the Russian barricade, and, lying on their own pile of sand-bags, pulled the Russian barricade down bag by bag. In the darkness of the gallery, which reeked of blood and bombs, they fought like demons with the Russians who strove to defend the gap. But finally the fury of the Japanese attack carried the day. An opening was made sufficiently large to permit of the Japanese throwing their bombs, and the defenders were killed or hurled back to the next breastwork in the long passage. There the same process was repeated with the same result, until, on November 25, the Russians abandoned the whole gallery, and blew in the tunnel which led from it to the fort. The Japanese were now in possession of all the caponnières of North Kikwan, after fighting

of the utmost ferocity. Thus they could work along the moat and undermine the fort without any difficulty.

At Erhlung Fort great difficulties were encountered by the Japanese sappers. The moat here was cut



RUSSIAN PRIEST BURYING RUSSIAN SOLDIERS.

deep in the live rock, and the parallels and saps had to be built up with sand-bags upon the surface of the rock. It was 40ft. deep and 30ft. wide. From the advanced parallel, on the top of the counterscarp,

Erhlung Fort. mines had to be driven down through the rock under a constant fire and hail of bombs. On November 20 three mines were exploded, and the effect of these was so great that the moat under them was filled to within a few feet of the parapet. After the explosion the moat was reconnoitred by a small party of daring Japanese, to discover whether it contained caponniere defences. It was found that there were none in the front of the moat, though on the two

flanks distinct traces of galleries could be seen.

At Sungshushan the Japanese miners set to work to sink seven shafts on the **Sungshushan Fort.** counterscarp

of the deep and wide moat, and, when they had driven down their shafts 12 feet, came upon the concrete of a caponniere gallery. Through this they could not easily cut, so they turned their shafts outwards towards the outside wall, along the roof, and then drove them down till they had worked under the very floor of the caponniere, then they connected the shafts by a long horizontal tunnel. This was filled with explosives, and, on the afternoon of November 17, the charge was fired. There was a terrific explosion, and half the caponniere gallery was completely destroyed. The other half remained intact, though a hole was blown in the roof. The Japanese carried their approaches across the rubbish in the moat, much impeded by a small quick-firer which the Russians mounted behind a pile of sand-bags thrown up round the hole in the roof of the caponniere gallery. The gun was put out of action however



[Stereograph copyright, 1904, Underwood & Underwood.
GENERAL FUKUSHIMA, WHO ASSISTED GENERAL NOGI IN CAPTURING
PORT ARTHUR.

on the 23rd by four sappers, who stole up to the barricade, found none of the Russians there, but only the one machine-gun mounted and another dismounted close to it, and carried both off without making any noise. A powerful charge was then placed in the caponniere, and the roof and barricade sent flying in the air. Thus, by the close of November, the Japanese had gained access to the moats of the three great eastern forts, and were in a position to attack the actual works. Tunnels under the forts were now begun with the intention of exploding enormous charges beneath them and blowing them bodily into the air.

On November 23 an attempt was made by the 12th Regiment of Japanese to capture the trench on

East Kikwan Hill, which had caused the regiment such fearful loss in the October assault. The trench was bombarded heavily from noon till dusk, when the assault was to be made. The space which parted the trench from the Japanese saps was only 30 yards; about 6 p.m. the Japanese, 1,000 strong, suddenly charged across it. The Russians were ready for them, and met them with a fearful fire. But they crossed the gap, entered the Russian trench, and there fought hand-to-hand, capturing all but a small portion of the work. Three hours later the Russians delivered a furious counter-attack, and, amidst a hail of bombs, forced the Japanese out of the trench at the point of the bayonet. Reinforcements came up to the aid of the 12th, and a second time the trench was stormed and filled with Russian dead, of which the Japanese built breastworks. But the Russians were resolved not to let the position go. If captured, East Kikwan fort became untenable. A renewed assault was delivered in the small hours of the morning: the Russians fought their way round a section of the 12th and penned it in, when there was a fearful slaughter in the darkness. Both sides fought with

**East Kikwan
Trench.**



[Copyright photo by J. Rosenthal, of Urbanora.]
JAPANESE IN THE TRENCHES BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

indomitable resolution, and again the Japanese died to a man, mown down by the Russian quickfirers and torn to pieces by the bombs. When day broke the trench was still Russian, but 300 Japanese and 200 Russian bodies lay fresh upon it in ghastly piles.

CHAPTER LIV.

THE NOVEMBER ASSAULT UPON PORT ARTHUR—STORMING OF 203 METRE HILL.

NOVEMBER was drawing to its close, and the Baltic fleet was nearing its goal. Its two divisions were moving steadily, inexorably to the Far East, and Port Arthur still held out, still sheltered within its harbour a great fleet, still detained the Japanese battleships and armoured cruisers in the mine-sown waters of the Gulf of Pechili. During the long months of the blockade the Japanese navy had suffered further losses from mines, though great care was now taken not to expose the larger ships to



RUSSIAN HOUSES DESTROYED IN PORT ARTHUR BY JAPANESE SHELL. (R. Johnston photo.)

assault upon the fortress in November. Generals Kodama and Fukushima came down from the north to confer with General Nogi and to advise him upon the course to be followed. Strong reinforcements were despatched to the army in preparation for a fresh attack, the gaps in the ranks were filled with reservists, and fresh battalions, composed of reservists, were added to General Nogi's regiments. A new division, the 7th, commanded by General Oseko, was brought to Dalny and moved towards the western defences of Port Arthur. Thus now four divisions were attacking—the 1st and 7th to the west, and the 11th and 9th to the east. Since the Japanese estimated the Russian garrison at only 12,000 men—though its actual force was even now nearer 35,000—there were hopes that some of the main forts might be rushed, the more so as access had been gained to the moats, and the actual parapets of the works had become accessible. It was, however, a misfortune that the attack on the eastern front was not delayed, as the tunnels to undermine the forts were making steady progress, and it was morally certain that before many days passed Erhlung, Sungshushan, and North Kikwan must be taken without any immoderate loss.

In mid-November the Japanese forces to the west succeeded in dislodging the

the terrible risks which had to be faced on the mine-fields. On

September 18 the old
November 1, 1904.

armoured gunboat HEI YEN, which had been captured from the Chinese in the war of 1894-5, disappeared in Pigeon Bay, where she was at the time engaged on picket duty, co-operating with the army. The vessel was of 2,067 tons, and of no serious military value, but 197 officers and men were lost on board her.

The Japanese General Staff, anxious as speedily as possible

to capture
A Fresh Attack. Port Arthur,

in order to set the navy free, determined upon a fresh general



(Copyright, 1904, by "Collier's Weekly," in U.S.A.)
LIEUTENANT YOSHI SERGO,
The hero of the hand-to-hand fight at Kwantai.

Russians from the village of Kaokiatus and securing control of Pigeon Bay. On November 25 an attack upon the eastern forts was decided upon, and orders issued to open it next day. The works selected for attack were Q Fort, North Kikwan, Erhlung, and Sungshushan. P and Kobu Forts, it will be remembered, had been taken in the October assault. Good approaches had been made to all these forts, and to the Chinese wall near Hashimakayama. The attack on the 26th opened with a general bombardment, while the infantry waited for the explosion of a mine under the parapet of North Kikwan as the signal to deliver the assault.

About 1 p.m. a heavy report was heard above the din of the cannonade, whereupon the infantry rushed upon the forts. Two columns mounted the parapets of North Kikwan, one at its north-east corner, and the other about the centre of the north front. So far they advanced without any difficulty, but on reaching the crest of the parapet they encountered barbed-wire entanglement and a most determined resistance. General Kondrachenko was determined that the fort should be held, and had stationed men to its rear with instructions to shoot down

**At North Kikwan
Fort.**



DAMAGED RUSSIAN ARTILLERY POSITION AT PORT ARTHUR.

[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

any Russian soldier or officer who might attempt to retire. As the Japanese came on, several Russians broke and fled to the rear, when they were instantly shot. The rest of the garrison saw that there was no hope of escape; the last and only chance of life was to repel the Japanese. The Japanese came on with savage ardour, stung to the quick by the bitter criticism of the Japanese Press, and by the news which came down from the north that the Northern Army thought meanly of the Port Arthur troops' courage. And in every soldier's mind was the knowledge that it was vital for Japan to have possession of Port Arthur and to make an end of the Russian fleet. If this could not speedily be accomplished all their labour was in vain.

The north-eastern column, under a storm of bullets, could not force its way through the wire. From far off the men were seen wrestling in vain with this impediment, till the summit of the parapet was black with dead. A magazine exploded within the fort at this juncture and added to the horror of the scene;

but the explosion, though it covered the fort with a pall of smoke, did not render the task of the Japanese easier. With sadly thinned ranks they had to fall back. The column assaulting the north front reached the parapet, but there encountered a fire which cut down every living thing and absolutely prevented advance. Twice it strove to cross the crest; twice it melted away and recoiled.

At Q Fort the stormers rushed upon the parapet 250 strong, and in the brief space of 25 yards their numbers had fallen to 25, who were killed in a furious mêlée. Another 250 made another rush with

At Q Fort. exactly the same result, the few brave men who reached the parapet alive being promptly slain with bomb and bayonet. Nothing could exceed the fury with which they rushed upon the fort, but the most fanatical courage was useless against the incessant fire of magazine-rifles and machine-guns. The one solid success gained in this direction was the capture of a trench on East Kikwan Hill, which was of great importance, because it dominated the approach to East Kikwan Fort.

At Sungshushan Fort the Japanese penetrated the work, but found that the interior was commanded

by machine-guns placed in concrete works, into which

At Sungshushan Fort. it was not possible to fight their

way. They were mown down by the Russian fire, and forced out under a hail of heavy shells from the other Russian forts, which blew whole squads of men in pieces. With very heavy loss they regained their trenches. They continued to attempt rushes on the fort, but without any serious success. At Erhlung Fort the Japanese entered the work and gained a precarious footing inside it, when they dug hurried defences under a shower



RUSSIAN PRISONERS OF WAR FROM PORT ARTHUR.

of bombs and a hail of bullets from machine-guns. From Hashimakayama a Japanese force managed to advance close up to the Chinese wall, and for some time held a trench only 100 yards from it, which was taken from the Russians. But desperate counter-attacks were delivered against the Japanese, and, overwhelmed by numbers, by bombs, and by the hail of projectiles, they were finally compelled to withdraw, leaving the ground heaped with dead, and to retire to their lines.

These events occupied no long period of time. About 2 p.m. the first phase of this assault was over, with nothing to show for it except the seizure of a position in Erhlung. More troops were at once brought up, and the order issued to assault again, and, if the assault failed, not to come back. All the battalions told off for this effort were instructed to fix bayonets as they reached the advanced parallels. And meantime the artillery resumed its attempts to beat down the fire of the forts. About 4 p.m. the bloody work began. By the general consent of eye-witnesses on that fatal day, the Japanese infantry, always so unsparing of their lives, had never before advanced with such resolution and such absolute disregard of death. Again and again they went forward all along the line, from East Kikwan to Sungshushan, in great masses; again and again the masses withered away in the blast of flame which always blew from the works and trenches, till men with heart could no longer look upon a spectacle which, if sublime in the grandeur of the devotion displayed, was excruciating in the agony of its utter hopelessness.

The fiercest attacks were made upon the Chinese wall, where it crossed the gorge of East Kikwan Hill, and to the rear of the Panlung forts, while continually the Japanese surged up the face of North Kikwan. Small parties of men could be made out climbing the Chinese wall and passing to the other side, flinging bombs as they went down into a sea of smoke. Furious hand-to-hand encounters were observed to be raging all along the ridge, as men wounded and unwounded closed in the embrace of death. In North Kikwan there was speedily scarcely room to move by reason of the masses of killed and wounded on each



GENERAL STOESEL.

side. At Erhlung and Sungshushan a terrible fight went forward. Everywhere the Japanese suffered awful losses from the heavy artillery fire of Antzeshan and Itzeshan, the guns in which forts covered the parapets of Sungshushan and Erhlung with shrapnel and shell.

Night fell while the fighting was at its very height, and the Russian searchlights came on and the star-shells flared overhead. The whole landscape seemed to be ablaze; a red glare showed from the forts, the guns of which flashed incessantly; the pom-poms and machine-guns beat a devil's tattoo to the deeper hammering of the heavy guns. But the bloodiest fighting

East Kikwan.

of all was upon East Kikwan, where the Japanese fought madly to hold their captured trench, and the Russians fought as madly to drive them back. Sections of this trench changed hands time after time; the whole neighbourhood of the trench swam with blood; bomb and bayonet were mercilessly used to exterminate the men who held the position; but about 9 p.m. the Japanese, by sheer weight and persistence, got the upper hand, and pressed forward over the heaps of slain, attempting to work east and west from the portion of the trench which they had carried, and so to secure the whole line.

The Russians, however, had made their preparations. To prevent such an advance they had excavated a line of pits, filled these pits with coal, and fired the coal, which now burnt furiously. Behind the fiery furnace stood marksmen and machine-guns, pouring a terrific fire upon everyone who attempted to approach the burning pits. This was an obstacle which nothing could overcome. All the courage and all the ingenuity of the Japanese could not carry them through the fiery furnace, and, repelled in this quarter, they were compelled to set to work to build sand-bag traverses across the section of the trench which they had gained, using bodies to support the sand-bags. The moment they began this work the Russian pom-poms opened upon them, cut down the sand-bags, and tore the bodies in pieces, at a range of only about 100 yards. All the efforts of the Japanese were in vain, and as the night advanced the Russians, covered by the fire of their automatic guns, pressed forward and ejected the Japanese from the now untenable trench, and were left masters of that horrible spot amidst a host of dead.

All night the assaults upon the Chinese wall and Q Fort continued without any result except to increase immensely the Japanese losses. All night, too, inside North Kikwan the assaulters continued their desperate endeavours to capture the fort, but again and again they were beaten back by the fire of the machine-gun in the concrete positions to the rear. All that they could effect was to entrench themselves upon the northern parapet overlooking the interior of the fort, and this footing was only gained after attack upon attack had been repulsed with the bomb, and after barricades had been built with the dead.

During the night a determined attempt was made to storm Fort Stoessel, which lay to the rear of Sungshushan. Two thousand troops volunteered for this purpose, and were led by General Nakamura.

Fort Stoessel They moved, armed only with swords, from the Swishiyung redoubts down the valley, but hardly had they begun their movement when the Russian searchlights turned their beams upon them. The brilliant rays of white light struck them, and, following the glare of light in their dazzled eyes, came a perfect tempest of fire. Yet they pressed forward, decimated by shells, and as they advanced the men of the 9th Division charged forward from Hashimakayama and from the parallels in front of Sungshushan and Erhlung upon the forts. Neither attack succeeded. The Russian fire was so fearful that the Japanese could not force their way through it, though the killed and wounded covered the slopes.

Day dawned, veiling in a haze of mist the horrible scene upon the ridge where the high bravery of the Japanese had been shattered upon walls of concrete before the muzzles of machine-guns. The assaulting

A Terrible Assault. divisions had been shaken by the fearful losses of the afternoon and night, and no longer responded to the order to attack. Regiments were recalled from the front and ordered in disgrace to the north, but the army on the eastern front had shot its bolt. Two hundred and eight officers and 5,933 men were brought down or crawled down wounded into the hospitals, and the tale of dead no one would disclose. Yet there is reason to think that nearly as many men lay inside the forts or on the brief intervals of open ground which parted the parallels from the parapets, in which case the loss of the Japanese in this great effort was over 10,000. It was the greatest disaster that Japan had yet suffered, and the last—the final buffeting of fate. Before news so terrible could be given to Japan and to the world, success must be won at all cost. The Staff decided that the eastern ridge was impossible of assault. It must be captured by the slower devices of the sap and the mine. But there yet remained one card to play. The 1st and 7th Divisions, the one composed of the splendid fighters from Tokio and still unshaken, the other of fresh troops from the island of Hokkaido, might be thrown upon the western defences of Port Arthur and ordered to capture 203 Metre Hill. This position was the key to the Russian defences on the west. Its strength was enormous, and it had withstood repeated attacks. The troops who were to be charged with its capture were given to understand the extreme urgency of success. With them it must be death or victory, and it was far more likely from the look of affairs to be death.

Golden Hill.

Tiger's Tail.

Mantaushan.

Tanushan.



Japanese Naval Battery.

A NIGHT ATTACK ON PORT ARTHUR.

No. 1.

The rocky crest of 203 Metre Hill dominates the whole sea of hills which surround Port Arthur and overlooks the town and harbour. To the north-east of it was the fortified position of Akasakayama, which is linked to it by a narrow ridge. The hill itself has twin peaks with a sharp drop

203 Metre Hill.

between. On its precipitous slopes were two lines of trenches, one a short distance up and the other near the summit. The rear of the hill was filled with bomb-proofs, which gave security to its garrison against the Japanese shells. The two peaks were crowned with strong fieldworks, constructed of timber, steel rails, and sand-bags, and connected by tunnels with the rear. Many machine-guns were mounted on the hill, and were supported by a few heavier pieces. But the real defence of the place was its inaccessibility and the fact that the slopes by which it could be approached were swept by the guns in Taiyangkou, Itzeshan, and Antzeshan Forts.

Towards this hill the Japanese had for two months been sapping steadily from the north-east, north, and north-west in the teeth of a terrible fire, which continued night and day. They had constructed a parallel 100 yards away from the first Russian trench on the hill, and from this parallel had driven forward saps in two places through the elaborate wire entanglements on the hill to points 50 yards from the lowest Russian line. This work was accomplished in the teeth of constant sorties and incessant attacks by Russian parties, who threw bombs into the Japanese saps. While the saps were pushing forward, four 11-in. howitzers concentrated their fire upon the summit of the hill, tearing it bodily away with their shells, and demolishing by day the work which the Russians steadfastly replaced by night. The hail of 500lb. projectiles put most of the Russian guns on the hill out of action, but did not as yet destroy the bomb-proof to its rear. The naval guns were directed upon it, and a large number of Japanese field-guns were placed so that they fired with effect, deluging with shrapnel the slopes to the rear of the hill up which the Russian reserves must advance.

**Japanese
Parallels.**

The saps were not complete or all preparations made for the assault when the order was given to attack on the evening of November 27. The regiments to make the attack were the 15th on the right, 1st in the centre (both belonging to the 1st Division), and the 38th (of the reserve). They broke from cover, supported by a vigorous bombardment, and, almost before the Russians had opened fire, had rushed the front line of trenches and bayoneted the Russian defenders. Immediately they set to work to strengthen the entrenchments and to secure their position. Reinforcements were poured up to the line which they had won, and in the darkness they managed to cut gaps through the wire entanglements between the first and second line of trenches. Savage hand-to-hand tussles took place all along the Japanese front, but all night the trench was held, and with dawn orders were issued to advance a step further and to attack the summit of the hill.

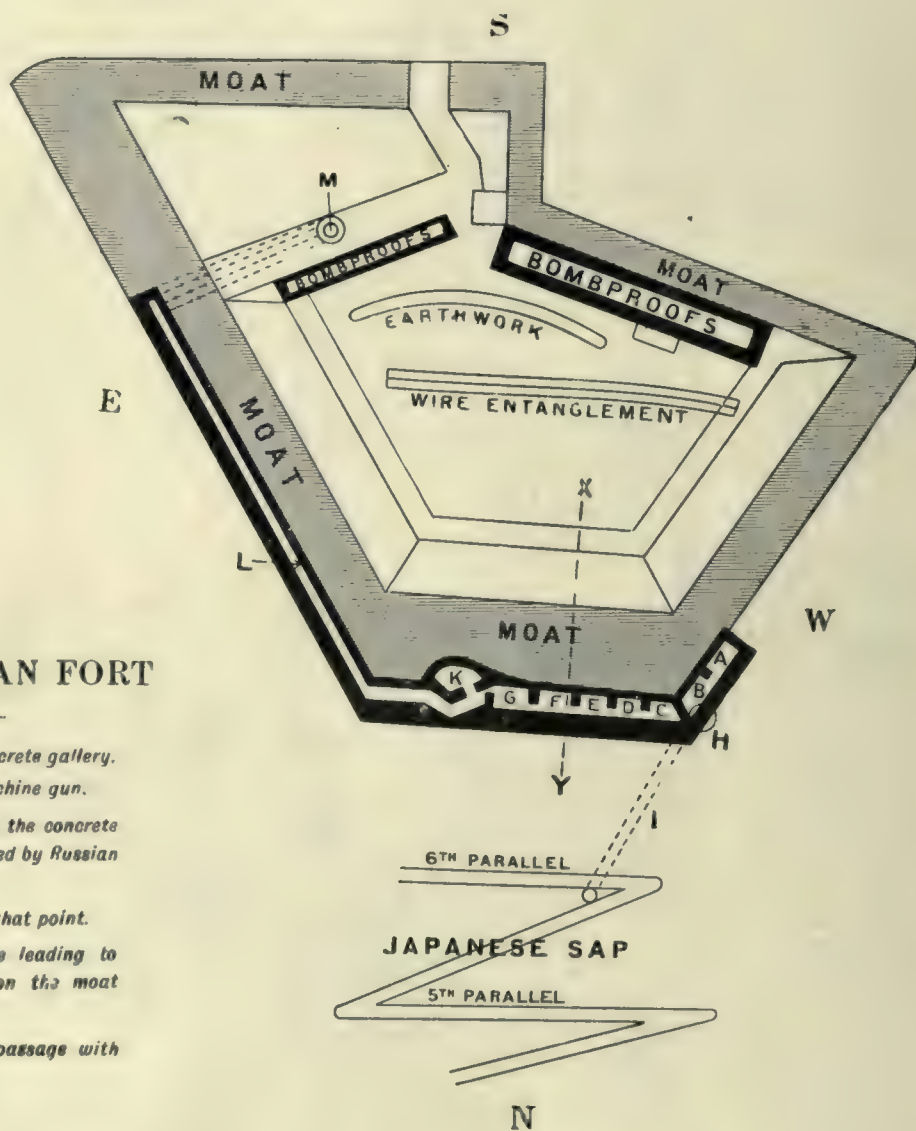
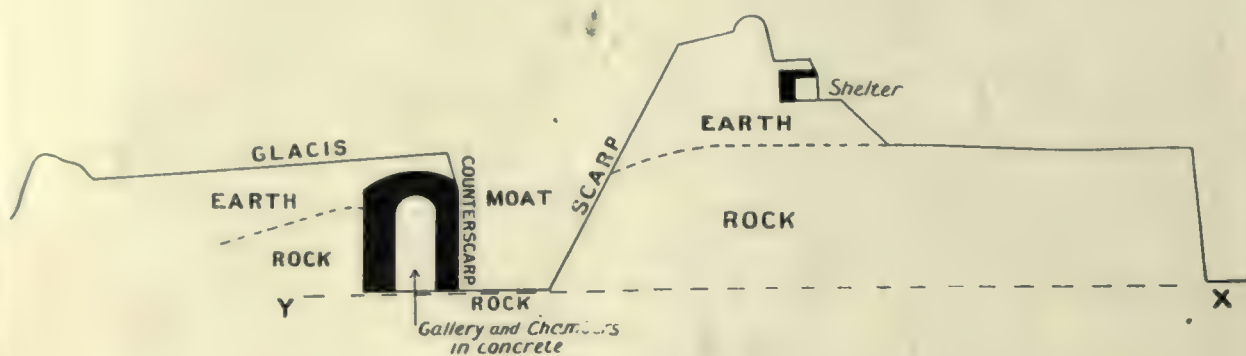
**Metre Hill
Attacked.**

At 8.30 a.m. of the 28th three columns moved out, two against the upper trench-line on 203 Metre Hill, and the third against Akasakayama, supported by a fearful bombardment of the Russian works, upon which the Japanese howitzers and guns concentrated their fire. As the stormers left cover the Russian guns in the neighbouring forts opened upon them with heavy shells and shrapnel, and in a few minutes the whole face of the two hills was veiled in smoke, through which the progress of the fight could be but dimly descried. The Japanese were seen to rush the second line of trenches and to make a determined onset upon the crests of the hill. Here, however, they received such a fire from the Russian machine-guns and from the heavy guns in the other Russian forts that they staggered and recoiled. Again they moved upwards as a swarm of reinforcements reached them, and again they recoiled; four times they swayed backwards and forwards on the hill. At 3 p.m. they made a rush in such force, and with such resolution, that they carried the crest, overbearing the strong wire entanglements as though these had been made of packthread, though hundreds died or were mangled on the barbs. On the crest they could be seen through the smoke at work with the bayonet, but the Russian shell came upon them in hissing droves through the air, and, stimulated by General Kondrachenko, the Russian reserves advanced with equal ferocity to drive them back. After a prolonged, furious encounter on the summit of the hill the Japanese gave way, and their columns broke down the slopes. Late in the evening they were forced completely off the hill, compelled, amidst a shower of bombs, to evacuate even the lower trench, and driven back to their parallels. The attack upon 203 Metre Hill had completely failed.



STOESSEL'S FAREWELL TO PORT ARTHUR.

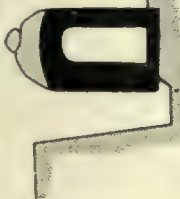
The commandant inspecting a forlorn hope.



NORTH KIKWAN FORT

- A-G** Chambers in the concrete gallery.
- K** Caponniere with machine gun.
- H** Point where roof of the concrete gallery was exposed by Russian mine
- I** Japanese tunnel to that point.
- L** Passage in concrete leading to fort; loopholes on the moat side.
- M** Tunnel connecting passage with the fort.
- X-Y** Line of section.
- Concrete.

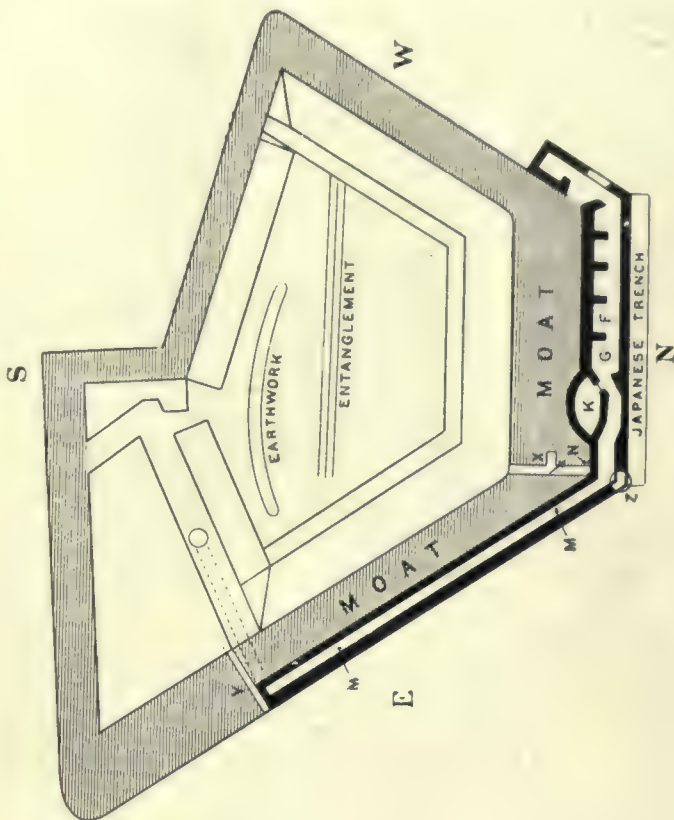
7TH PARALLEL



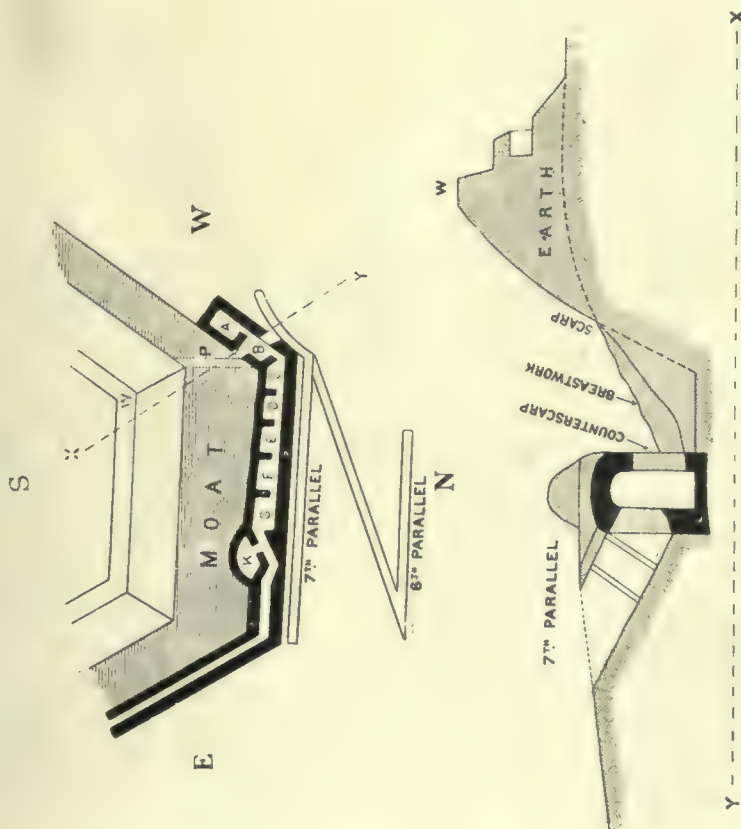
Japanese trench, laying bare, back of Caponniere wall.

NORTH KIKWAN

Concrete.



- Z Russian countermine which blew a hole in the gallery wall.
- M Gallery with sand-bag barricades.
- Y Russian barricade across the moat.
- X Japanese barricade across the moat; mounting one gun.
- KGF Caponniere chambers.
- N Passage into the moat made by the Japanese.



OPERATIONS AGAINST NORTH KIKWAN CAPONNIERES.

- A B Chambers captured by the Japanese, October 30th.
- P Breastwork built by Japanese across Moat, night of October 30th.
- W Point where thirty Japanese perished.
- C-K Caponniere Chambers in Russian possession, October 30th—November 1st.
- CDE Caponniere taken from the Russians, night of October 31st—November 1st.

Concrete.



GENERAL RASHELINSKY.



MAJOR-GENERAL FOCK.

On Akasakayama their was as fierce, as prolonged a struggle; but in this

quarter the conflict
The Struggle on Akasakayama. did not go so unfavourably for the

Japanese. Two rushes were repulsed with heavy loss, but a third attack resulted in some ground being won and in a strong redoubt being built of sand-bags 50 yards from the Russian lines.

On the morning of the 29th the Japanese Staff put the 7th Division into the battle, under the personal direction of Generals Kodama and Fukushima, who were assisting General

Nogi. It was the first time that the troops of this division had ever been under fire, and nobly they acquitted themselves. The strength of the division was great; its units were filled to overflowing with reservists, and it numbered some 25,000 men when its great trial began. At 8.30 the 38th Regiment had renewed its assault upon Akasakayama, and to the support of the regiment the first brigade of the 7th Division was led. It debouched from the saps upon ground covered with blackened dead, whose "faces wore a look of frozen horror" at the death which had overtaken them from the bomb, towards trenches torn and shattered by the Japanese projectiles. Advancing in great force the Japanese carried Akasakayama, reaching the crest, but there the fire from all the Russian forts met them and tore them bodily away. They were blown off the hill by the blast of the fire rather than driven from it by the resistance of the Russian infantry; and only a shattered remnant retired to their trenches. At nightfall they advanced again, and a second time carried the summit, when the tragic experiences of the day were repeated. Russian shell descended upon the hill till the air was thick with humming splinters, and no human being could remain and live. The soldiers of the 7th Division, after their baptism of fire, fell back before the Russians, and were pursued by the cruel bombs, which rent living men in pieces and covered the slopes with shreds of flesh.

On the 30th the struggle recommenced. The Japanese Staff had no intention of owning to defeat while a man remained fit to fight. Both hills must be taken at all cost.

A Third Attempt. At mid-day on the 30th a party of Russians made a desperate effort to capture the small Japanese redoubt on Akasakayama, and, crawling to it, flung bombs into it, and then leapt over the parapet. They never reappeared. The Japanese survivors inside met them as they came over and killed them to a man. Two hours later the attack on Akasakayama recommenced, two Japanese battalions advancing in close order. They were delayed at the wire entanglements, and as they went forward in a serried mass were literally

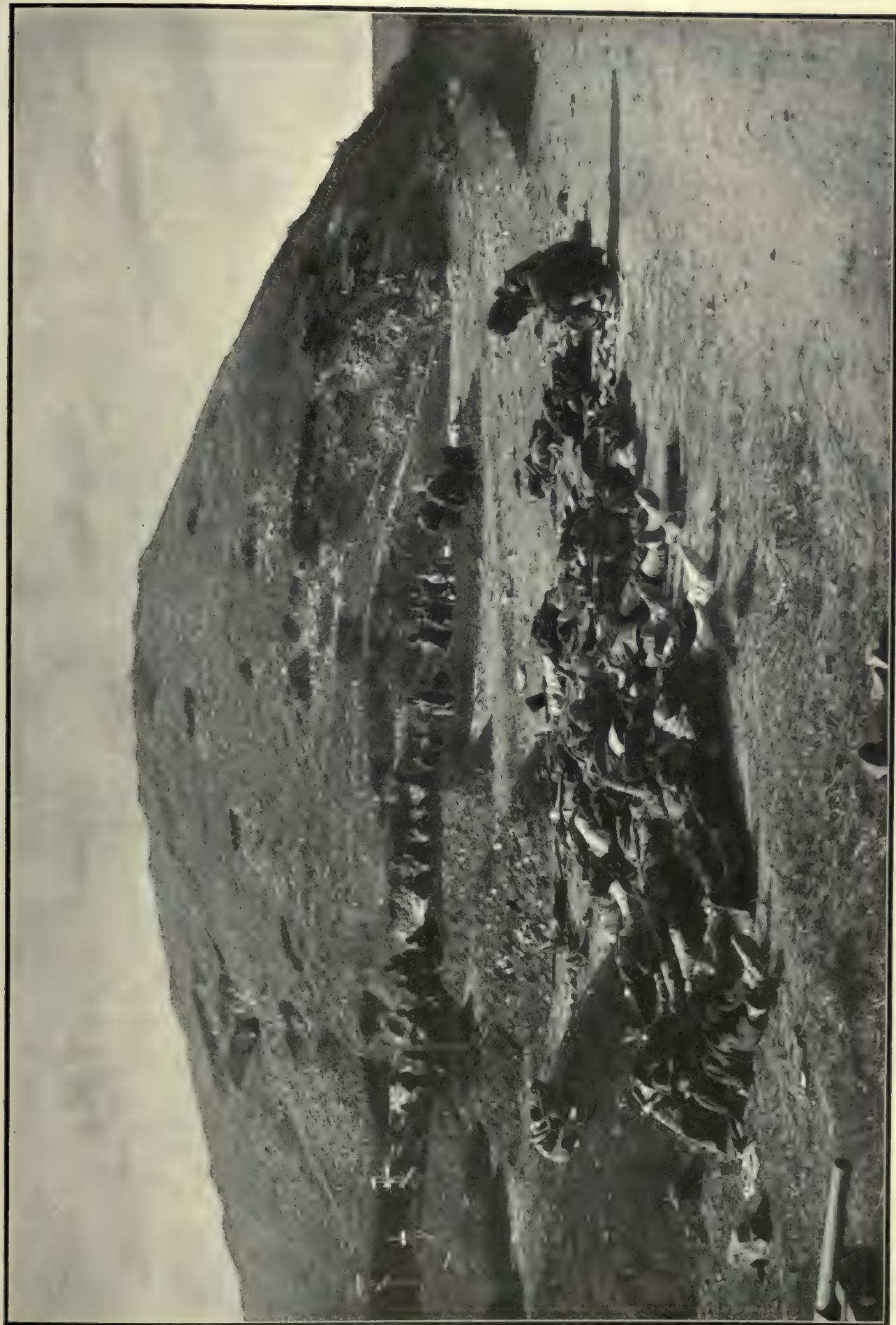


MAJOR-GENERAL KONDRACHENKO.



COLONEL ZARINTSHKOVSKY.

Members of General Stoessel's Staff at Port Arthur.



203 METRE HILL ON THE DAY OF ITS CAPTURE.
Russian soldiers collecting the cartridges of the dead before burial.

mown down by the Russian fire. The officers could be seen giving the word of command and motioning with their glistening swords; the discipline was magnificent, but the losses were appalling. The Russians suffered them to approach within range of bombs thrown by hand, and then launched these murderous projectiles upon the close ranks. Dozens went down in the smoke, but still the 7th Division swept forward. Then at last a comprehension of their position seemed to come upon the Japanese soldiers, and they realised that if they stood their ground they would be killed to the last man without achieving success. In a moment they broke and went headlong down the hill in terrible disorder, under a murderous fire, and regained their trenches, where they found the Japanese reserves waiting calmly in perfect order with fixed bayonets. There at length they were rallied and returned to the fight. Swarming up the fatal hill once more, with the most magnificent courage and resolution, these very same men, who had but a few minutes before fled in disorder, forced their way into the upper trench-line and held it till night.

During that afternoon a great calamity befell General Nogi. His eldest son had died in battle at

Nanshan, and now only one son was left to him.

That son
Death of Nogi's Son. was serving in the 1st

Division. Knowing his spirit and moved with compassion for him, the Japanese General Staff had striven to remove this son from the field of danger by attaching him to headquarters. General Nogi recalled him from the post of safety and sent him to the front. He who had found himself compelled so often to sacrifice others would not spare his own house. The young soldier died carrying a message; and when



CAPTIVE RUSSIAN OFFICERS IN THEIR QUARTERS AT MATSUYAMA.

the tragic news was brought to General Nogi, the bereaved father, who now had no heir, showed no signs of emotion. But those about him saw him often thereafter weeping silently at nights.

The assault was not energetically pressed that afternoon, though there was continuous fighting, and though some fresh attacks were made. The Japanese navy had intended to assist in covering the assault, but while the old cruiser SAI YEN—for the Japanese, after the heavy losses which they had suffered from the Russian mines, did not dare to expose to this insidious danger any of their modern ships—was getting into position in Pigeon Bay and shelling 203 Metre Hill, she was so unfortunate as to strike a mine, which sent her to the bottom. The AKAGI, which was co-operating with her, went to her assistance, and succeeded in rescuing 15 officers and 175 men, but her captain, Tajima, and 37 officers and men went down with her. The result of her loss was that the other ships withdrew, and were not able to give effective help to the army. Thus a succession of calamities clouded the 30th of November.

During the night the sappers and pioneers worked hard to carry a sap up to the north-western summit of 203 Metre Hill, and before daylight had constructed a fresh parallel, strongly held, close to the very crest. In the night, too, another unsuccessful assault was made upon Akasakayama, and fighting of the most desperate description went on continuously through the hours of darkness upon that bloodstained

eminence. Each side used bombs without mercy, and the losses were frightful. But about dawn, aided by the fire from Itzeshan and Antzeshan, the Russians drove the Japanese back, and once more regained the hill.

With morning of December 1 the artillery concentrated a terrific fire upon 203 Metre Hill, the 11 in. howitzers pouring in their monstrous shells with ever-increasing effect, tearing the summit in pieces and rendering it untenable. The Russians, however, sheltered in the tunnels and bomb-proofs, and only ventured out on the crest of the hill at the last moment when the Japanese were advancing to the assault. But the howitzers now put their shells among the bomb-proofs on the reverse side of the hill and caused serious loss even there. Meantime the Japanese sap advanced and reached the very crest of the hill, where, only a few feet away from the shattered Russian fort upon the western summit, a strong parapet was built and machine-guns mounted in

Firing on
203 Metre Hill.



DIAGRAM TO SHOW JAPANESE LINE OF FIRE FROM 203 METRE HILL ON THE RUSSIAN FLEET IN PORT ARTHUR.

it. The parapet was held all day, in the teeth of attacks. Thus at last one of the summits was in Japanese hands.

On December 2 the Russians collected a force on the eastern crest and advanced against the head of the Japanese sap and the work on the summit, as if they had intended to storm it. Their punishment was fearful, as every Japanese gun instantly opened upon them, and by weight of metal drove them back in utter rout. It seemed indeed doubtful whether they were not in the act of abandoning the hill, as they could be seen sending heavy loads down it by rope-lifts which they had fitted on the slope towards Port Arthur. Afterwards it was discovered that the loads sent down were the Russian killed and wounded. The Japanese seized the opportunity to strengthen their position on the crest of the western summit, whence they could look down into the harbour of Port Arthur and command the whole town and the interior of the defences. A telephone-wire had instantly been carried up, so that from this eyrie the Japanese Staff were kept informed of the fall of each shell, and the destructive effect of the bombardment was greatly intensified. Still, the Japanese hold upon the hill was even now exceedingly precarious. The Russians retained the eastern summit, and through their tunnels could bring

December 2-4, 1904.

up men at any moment for a fresh attempt to retake the western crest. Until the eastern summit was in Japanese hands, 203 Metre Hill could not be considered won.

On the 3rd and 4th the big Japanese guns maintained a fire upon the hill which had the most devastating effect. The Russian bomb-proofs could be seen from the Japanese post on the summit, and by telephone the Japanese gunners were instructed how to place their gigantic shells upon them. Fearful loss was caused to the Russians sheltering in these excavations by the fire. At times the howitzers turned



MAP OF PORT ARTHUR SHOWING THE ATTACKING LINES OF THE JAPANESE.

their shells upon the Russian fleet, which could be plainly seen from the hill floating in the harbour far below. All through these two days projectiles rained upon every part of Port Arthur, the harbour, and 203 Metre Hill, in preparation for the culminating effort of the whole siege. The masses of dead upon the summit of 203 Metre Hill were torn and shattered by this hail of shells, and the living shared the fate of the dead.

On December 5 the final assault was to be delivered by the troops which had been fighting for more than a week about this accursed hill. All the morning the bombardment continued, till the summits

of 203 Metre Hill and Akasakayama smoked and

flamed with

December 5, 1904. the con-

stant ex-

plosions of the shells. The

Japanese field artillery in

overwhelming strength

took post on the heights

to the south-west of the

Metre Range, where it

could search with its fire

the reverse slopes of 203

Metre Hill and Akasaka-

yama. In this position

it could absolutely inter-

dict the movement of reinforce-

ments from the town to the point of attack.

About noon the troops of the 7th Division, battalion by bat-

talion, each man with his name marked in several places upon his dress, so

that if blown to pieces by the bombs his body might yet be identified, all washed and

dressed in their best, as was the Japanese habit on the eve of battle, began to file through the approaches

which led to the summit of the hill. Each battalion as it entered the saps fronted to the regimental

colours, and saluted those colours. The men had been reminded of the danger in which Japan stood,

and of the necessity of victory. If they failed in this last great assault it meant the failure of the siege,

the arrival of Admiral Rojdestvensky with his fleet of reinforcements, perhaps the collapse of Japan.

Never have issues so great been staked upon a single throw; it was the life or death of a people that

on this day was to tremble in the balance. Overhead shrieked and roared the shells which were paving

the way for the final onset; and before the troops stood out against the chill winter sky the frowning

summit, torn and scarred by the shells and strewn with the dead.

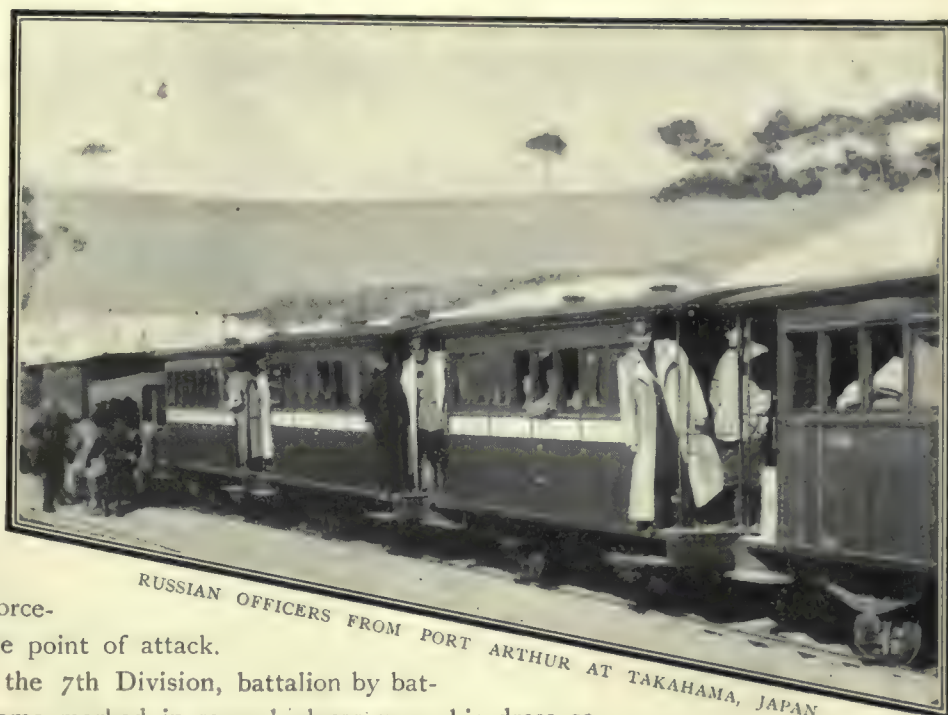
Major-General Saito was to lead this attack with eight battalions totalling 8,000 men. Under the

rain of shells the configuration of the hills was visibly changing; the summit was posi-

203 Metre Hill Won.

tively melting away. About 1 p.m. a movement was perceived in the Japanese trenches

near the summit, which now were crowded with troops. The glint of bayonets showed far away, and



RUSSIAN OFFICERS FROM PORT ARTHUR AT TAKAHAMA, JAPAN.



THE NORTH FORT, PORT ARTHUR. CAPTURED BY THE JAPANESE.

then Japanese infantrymen began to trickle upwards towards the crest. From the western summit men poured out along the ridge to the eastern summit, which still smoked like a volcano. The men worked forward slowly, but the fearful bombardment this time seemed to have served its purpose; there was little apparent opposition. The Japanese field-guns, sweeping the rear of 203 Metre Hill with a curtain of shrapnel, prevented the arrival of reinforcements, and compelled the Russians on 203 Metre Hill to play their hand alone. About 3.30 the Japanese carried a trench midway between the two summits on the ridge; ten minutes later the fire on the eastern summit ceased, and suddenly the watchers saw with indescribable emotion a small band of figures, evidently Japanese, upon that summit, clear against the sky-line, in the attitude of men flinging bombs down the reverse slope. The hill had been won at last.

Little loss was suffered in its capture, and upon it only three Russians were found alive. The rest had been torn to pieces by the hail of shells. But at Akasakayama the fighting was more determined,



PORT ARTHUR. RUSSIAN POSITION DESTROYED BY JAPANESE SHELL FIRE.

[Johnston photo.]

and the assaulters, despite the fury of their attacks, were foiled again and again. Thrice they advanced to the attack, and were twice driven back with grievous loss. The third time they carried the hill, deluging it with bombs, but were dislodged by the arrival of the Russian reinforcements originally intended for 203 Metre Hill. Early on the morning of the 6th the onslaughts were renewed, and under a heavy fire from 203 Metre Hill, which rose above their heads, the last survivors of the Russian garrison were forced to retire, and Metre Range was thenceforward in the undisputed possession of the Japanese.

During the night of the 5th-6th the Russians had intended to deliver a counter-attack, and to make one more effort to regain possession of a position which they knew was the key to Port Arthur. But the Japanese had also laid their plans, anticipating such an attempt. With nightfall the whole eastern wing of their army began a series of attacks upon the eastern defences, and thus prevented the Russians from concentrating a sufficient force to retake the hill.

The Japanese loss in the storming of 203 Metre Hill and Akasakayama was at least 10,000 men, and may have been considerably more. The Russian loss was placed at between 4,000 and 5,000. The

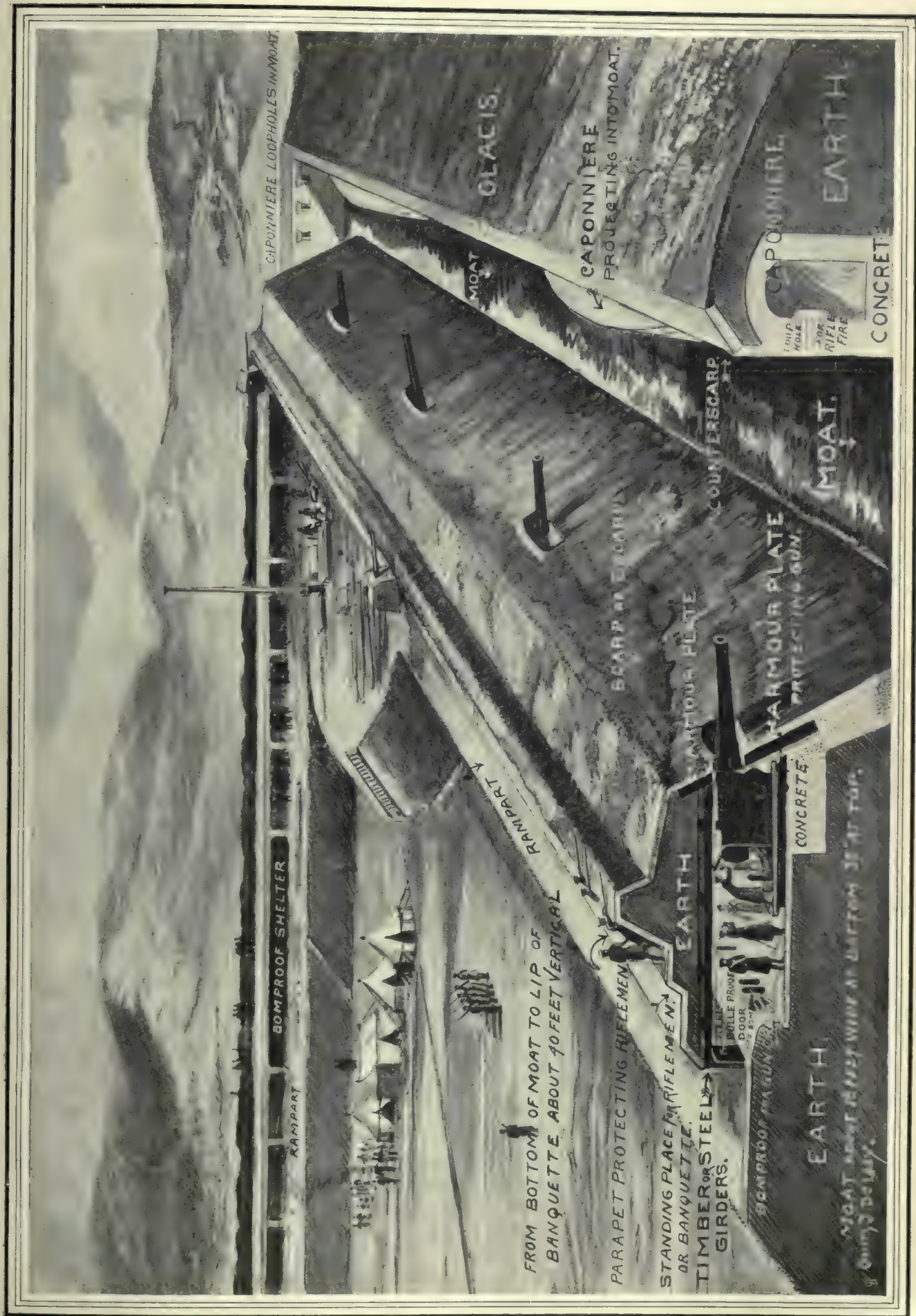


DIAGRAM TO SHOW THE NORTH KIKWAN FORT AND THE CAPONNIERE. (See page 1167.)

spectacle upon the hill was an appalling one. "The crest," states the "Times" correspondent, "had been absolutely smashed to pieces; and even one could not trace the lines of the original defence. Among

Losses.

this confused jumble of rocks, sand-bags, shells, charred timber, broken rifles, bits of uniforms, and soldiers' accoutrements of every description the dead lay in hundreds, many smashed beyond all recognition or resemblance to the human form, so terrible is the effect of modern shell fire. On the east side lay the Russians, on the west the Japanese; the summit was sacred to both. It was freezing during the days of the attack, and the bodies were perfectly preserved and had bled little; some seemed to have died a natural death, from the ease of their posture and the contented expression of their faces, but the majority, especially the Japanese, who had been struck down while advancing up a steep slope, had their teeth clenched and a look of fierce resolve written on their faces." Whole groups of Russians had been killed in the bomb-proofs and were found with rifles stacked.

This was the first great victory which the Port Arthur army had gained after five months of continuous fighting, the most terrible in the annals of war, after repeated assaults, after incurring enormous losses. Its importance was immense. The day when 203 Metre Hill finally passed into the hands of Japan marked the turning point in the war. Up to that date it had seemed to many that the Russian defeats might by great efforts be finally retrieved and peace be dictated at Tokio. But swift upon the capture of 203 Metre Hill, and as its direct consequence, followed the fall of Port Arthur, the movement to the north of General Nogi's army, the withdrawal of Admiral Togo's fleet to refit, the victory of Mukden, and the crowning mercy of the battle of the Japan Sea, when Admiral Rojdestvensky arrived in the Far East too late, to find his mission impossible of accomplishment.

CHAPTER LV.

THE FALL OF PORT ARTHUR.

ON the days following its capture, the Japanese holding 203 Metre Hill were greatly surprised to find that the Russians opened no heavy fire upon the hardly-won position. Several naval 4·7-in. guns were immediately mounted in battery between Akasakayama and 203 Metre Hill to attack the Russian ships in the harbour with their direct fire, but even this proceeding failed to draw the Russians. Hitherto they had never failed to launch a perfect storm of projectiles upon any captured position; now their energy seemed to be flagging and the efforts of their artillery to be showing signs of exhaustion. From the silence of the Russian guns the Japanese Staff drew the happiest auguries, and concluded that ammunition was at length beginning to run low in the magazines of Port Arthur.

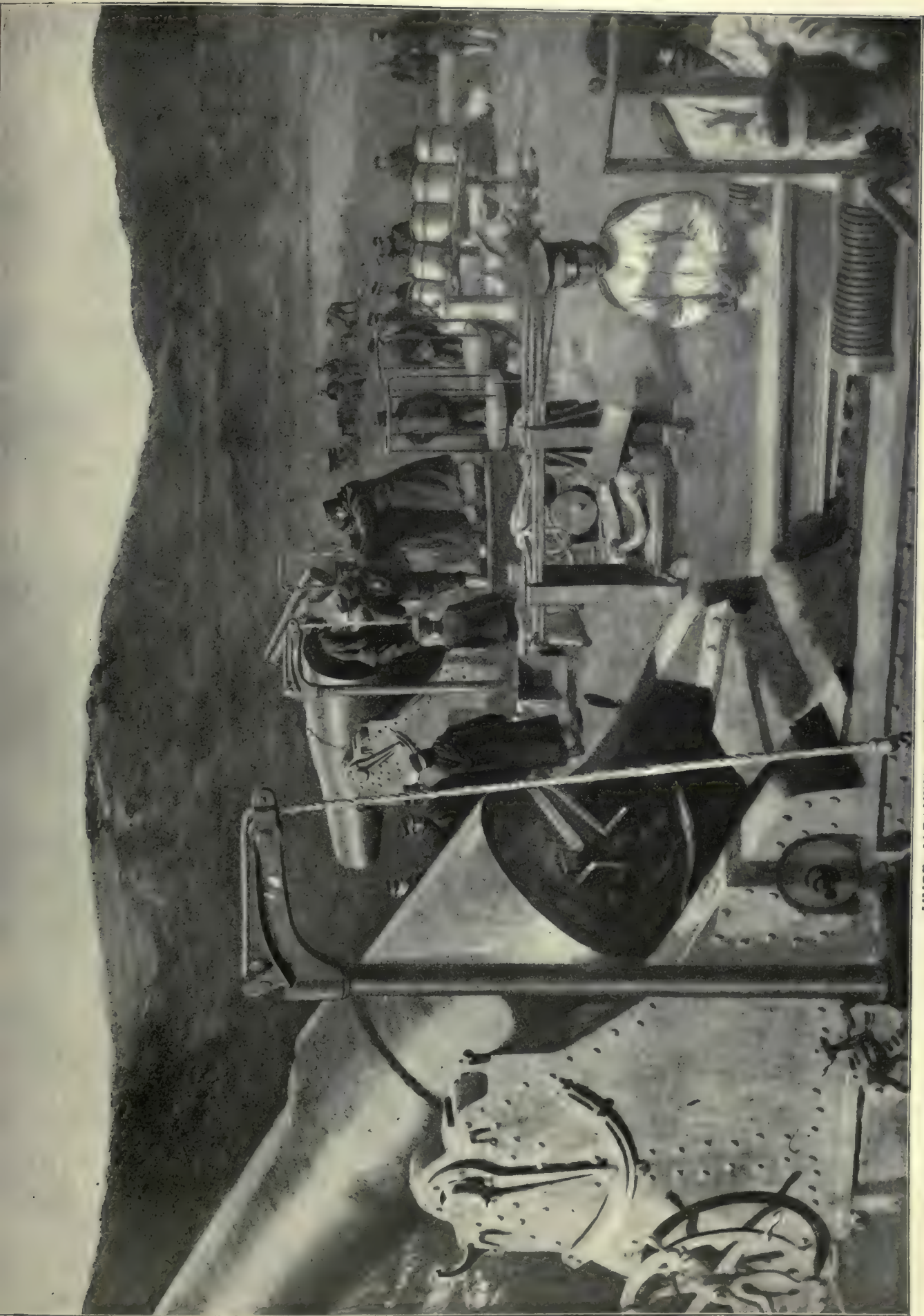
A Suspension.

That same day the Russians sent in a written message asking for a suspension of hostilities to give time for the collection of their dead on 203 Metre Hill, pointing out that an informal armistice had been granted after the great assault upon the eastern forts while the Japanese were recovering their killed and wounded. This particular message said nothing of the wounded, and the Japanese, either thinking that for this reason there was no extreme urgency in giving their reply to it, or perhaps unwilling to permit the Russians to see the exact disposition of the trenches and batteries which were now fast being constructed in the neighbourhood of 203 Metre Hill, promised to answer it next day. When a favourable answer was returned, the Russians complained that their wounded had already died of exposure in the bitter cold or else had been transferred to the Japanese hospitals, so that all need for the armistice had passed.

It now remains to treat of the fate of the remnant of the Port Arthur fleet. We have already noted that from mid-October onwards the Japanese fire began to inflict serious injury upon the Russian battleships and cruisers. On October 31 the *Gilyak* and two steamers had been sunk; on the two

Port Arthur's Fleet.

following days three steamers of from 3,000 to 3,500 tons were sunk; on November 3 a great fire was caused in the dockyard by the explosion of Japanese shells. On the 15th the Russian destroyer *Raztoropny*, with despatches for Chifu, containing an urgent appeal from General Stoessel for the instant despatch of the Baltic fleet to Port Arthur and a statement to the effect that the garrison was now nearing the limit of its resistance, put to sea at 11.30 p.m. in a heavy snowstorm, and,



HUGE JAPANESE SIEGE-GUNS BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

This battery—the photograph of which was taken during the bombardment of October 28—was situated 2,400 yards from the nearest Russian batteries, and nearly 5,000 yards from the citadel of Port Arthur. The heaviest gun is ready to be fired; the second is being loaded.

aided by bad weather, succeeded in passing through the blockading fleet. Towards daylight she was seen and chased by Japanese ships, and several destroyers were called up by wireless telegraphy to deal with her, but before these vessels could overtake her she entered neutral water at 7 a.m. of the 16th. The Chinese authorities demanded her complete disarmament, but all difficulties were solved by the action of the commander of the boat, who blew up his own vessel, probably because he knew that the Japanese would have seized her but for this proceeding. The crew were detained as prisoners by the Chinese until the close of the war.

A day or two later a large German blockade-runner was captured at a short distance from Port Arthur, the last vessel of this class but one that attempted to enter the harbour.

On December 3 the bombardment of the Russian warships, with the object of sinking them, had recommenced, aided by the observation-post established on 203 Metre Hill. The naval 6-in. and 4.7-in.



(From stereograph made by Jas. Ricalton. Copyright, 1905, by Underwood & Underwood, N.Y.)

GENERAL NOGORI'S STAFF BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

Front row: General Ijichi, Major Oba, Captain Hirai, Major Yamaoka, Captain Yasahara.

guns and the big 11-in. howitzers, firing special armour-piercing projectiles, were the chief weapons employed in this attack. Great care was exercised by the Japanese in the bombardment; since the capture of the summit of 203 Metre Hill they held that the fall of the fortress was at hand, and that the vessels in the harbour would consequently speedily become Japanese prizes. It was desirable so to injure them that they would be incapable of steaming out to battle, but not to injure them so much that after capture their hulls would be impossible of repair.

On December 3 30 hits were inflicted upon the warships, the *Pobieda* and *Retvisan* receiving most injury. The Russian battleships were crowded together in the east port with few officers or men on board, since a large part of the personnel had been landed for the purpose of co-operating in the defence of the fortress. On the 5th there were many hits, and the *Poltava* took fire and burnt for about an hour. On the 6th she was sunk by the Russians to save her from complete destruction. Before sending her to the bottom the Russians carefully greased all the machinery, so that it should not suffer by immersion, and covered the deck with a layer of sand-bags. On the 7th the bombardment was most effective. The *Retvisan* was observed to have sunk—she had been treated by the Russians in the same way as the *Poltava*. A great fire broke out on board the *Peresviet*, and the *Pobieda* showed a heavy list. All these ships, as well as the *Pallada*, were struck again and again. On the 8th observations from 203 Metre Hill proved that the *Pobieda* and *Peresviet* had been sunk, and that the *Pallada* was fast sinking. A fire broke out on board this ship, and contributed to her disappearance below water.

The Japanese shells were now concentrated upon the only ships of fighting value which yet remained



[Facsimile sketch by Mr. F. Villiers.

THE COCKSCORN FORT—CAPTURED DECEMBER 4, 1904.

Mr. Frederic Villiers says: "This fort has been the bone of contention for some time. In the general attack of October 30 it was involved in the Japanese operations, but the Russians succeeded in holding their own. Twice did the Japanese stormers enter, but were driven out. I went up the position the evening of the day after the attack, at which I was present with the 11th Division. The glacis was strewn with Japanese dead. There was not a living being to be seen but the Russian sentry between the guns on the skyline. The admiration of the whole fighting world must be extended to the gallant Muscovite garrison for their untiring heroism in defending this position. Worn out with fatigue, and passing through the ordeal of ghastly shell-fire, the most terrible, probably, in the annals of war, and having braved the onslaught of the finest infantry of modern times, the soldier of the Czar was in possession still."

outwardly serviceable. These were the armoured cruiser *Bayan* and the battleship *Sevastopol*. The *Bayan* was hit 22 times, mainly with 11-in. projectiles, and burst into flame about 11.30 a.m., burning till 4.15.

The "Bayan." The *Sevastopol* was hit several times, and suffered serious injury. She was now so damaged and battered that she, the last survivor of the battle-fleet, was quite unfit for fighting on the open sea. The mining steamer *Amur*, which had caused the Japanese navy such grievous loss, was also hit on this fatal day, and towards evening was in a sinking condition. A hail of shells was directed upon the smaller craft in the harbour and upon the dockyard buildings, and great damage was done to them. Through all this terrible bombardment the Russians seemed stunned by the calamities which were overtaking them, and made no energetic effort to reply to the Japanese guns with their heavy weapons. They left the naval battery on the slopes of 203 Metre Hill alone, and only sent a few shells in

the direction of the big howitzers behind 203 Metre Hill, without effecting any hits.

The Japanese, meantime, had prepared emplacements

The "Sevastopol" Destroyed. howitzers than the four originally mounted on the western section, and were moving the guns to them from their eastern batteries, so as to bring a yet heavier fire to bear upon the western forts, which now lay open before them. On December 9 the battleship *Sevastopol*, with but a handful of her crew and with only about three of her 14 big guns serviceable, issued from the harbour and took shelter

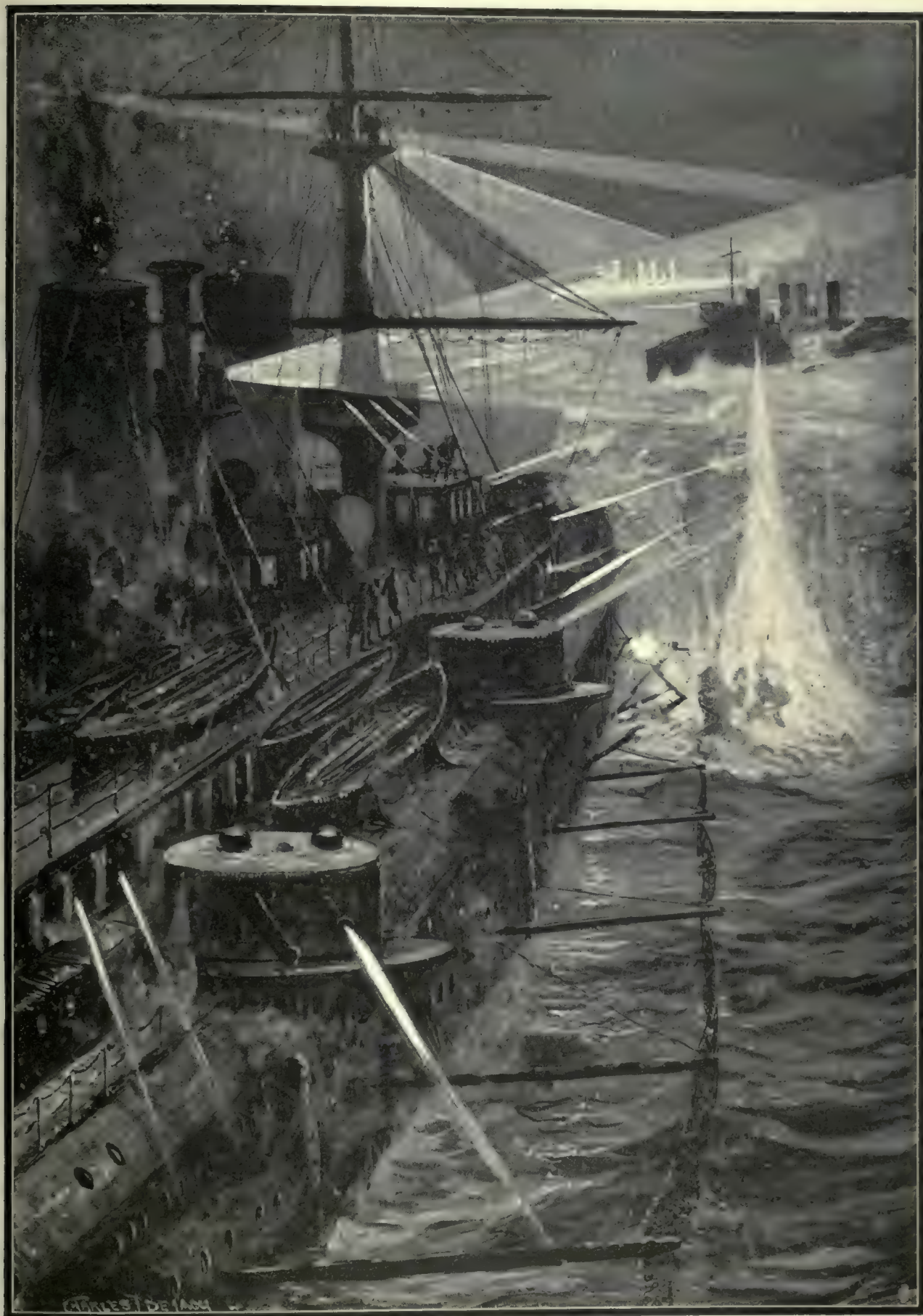


BRINGING UP A SHELL FOR A BIG JAPANESE SIEGE-GUN BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

behind a great boom of timber under Mantushan Fort on the Tiger Peninsula. The same day much further damage was done to the sunken warships, and the hardest task of the Japanese army was virtually accomplished—the destruction as a fighting force of the Port Arthur fleet.

The Japanese navy had now to take up the work of destroying the *Sevastopol*. Orders were given to the torpedo flotillas to sink her at all cost. On the night of the 12-13th began a long series of attacks upon her, conducted with the utmost daring. Under Commander Kasama the first attack was delivered, and numerous torpedoes were exploded against the boom which surrounded her or against her nets, which were rigged and in position. Commander Kasama's flotilla was followed by two other boats under Commander Masato, which exploded two torpedoes against the boom. At 2.30 a.m. a third detachment under Commander Arakawa, closed upon the ship and fired several torpedoes, with little result other than to damage the boom and severely to shake the *Sevastopol*, whose crew were losing their nerve from the constant onslaught and the perpetual explosion of torpedoes on all sides of them. Two of Commander Arakawa's boats were disabled, but these were towed off. Towards morning two more flotillas made attacks, but without result, though several torpedoes were fired.

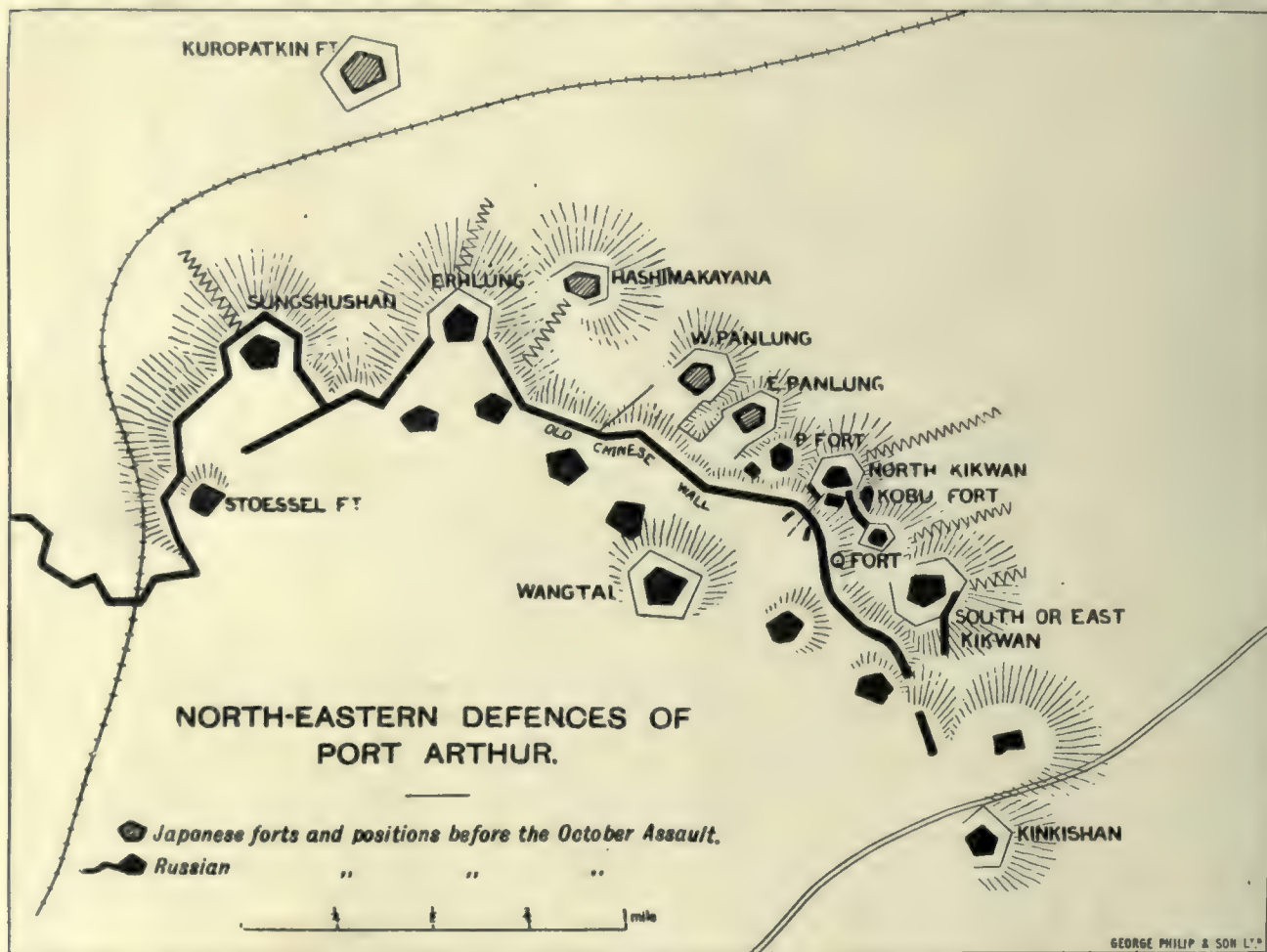
On the night of the 13-14th the attacks were resumed with greater energy and persistency than



DESTRUCTION OF THE RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP "SEVASTOPOL."

before. The weather was fearful; a high sea was running and a snowstorm was in progress, so that it was almost impossible for the attacking boats to see the target or each other. Commander Otaki found the enemy and fired several torpedoes at the battleship. Other flotillas made hits on the boom, and when morning dawned the bows of the *Sevastopol* were seen to be low in the water. She had not been actually struck by any of the Japanese torpedoes, but the constant explosions close to her sides were loosening her rivets and causing leaks, which could only be kept under with extreme difficulty. The Japanese lost one torpedo-boat, sunk on the night of the 13-14th, and another disabled. On the 14-15th the attacks were renewed.

The Japanese boats once more closed round their enemy like a swarm of buzzing hornets, and through



the snow, which was still falling, discharged torpedo after torpedo at the *Sevastopol*. Some slight damage was inflicted upon the Russian ship, while the Japanese torpedo craft suffered severely. On the night of the 15-16th yet more determined attacks were delivered; the Japanese torpedo-boats steamed in till they could hear the Russians on the deck of the *Sevastopol* talking to each other. Commander Ezoye took his boat close to the battleship, and, almost touching the boom, let go two torpedoes in succession, the second of which struck the battleship on her stern, blew a small hole in her, and deranged her steering gear. The end was near, and all the efforts of her captain, the gallant von Essen, barely sufficed to keep her afloat. Repair was out of the question; no ship could live in the shell-swept harbour of Port Arthur. A few days later, on the 20th, von Essen took the damaged battleship into deep water just off the forts, opened the Kingston valves, and, withdrawing the 100 men who had fought the ship to the last, watched her founder. Thus perished the last of the Port Arthur battle-squadron. The Japanese, recognising that she was useless, left her alone for the last few days of her existence above water, and withdrew all their fleet, save a few torpedo-boats, to refit.



THIS VIEW OF THE MANCHURIAN RAILWAY IS TAKEN A FEW YARDS FROM THE TERMINUS STATION AT PORT ARTHUR.

In the fierce fighting about the hull of the *Sevastopol*, certainly one, and perhaps two, Russian destroyers were torpedoed and sunk or badly damaged. The hull of one could be seen beached on Tiger Peninsula.

Meanwhile, the Japanese on the eastern front of Port Arthur were busily completing their arrangements for the destruction of the three great forts of Sungshushan, Erhlung, and North Kikwan. The tunnels under the last fort were complete, and enormous charges of dynamite were being

Mining the Forts.

placed in them. At the same time an incessant rain of 11-in. shells was poured upon the concrete works of the fort, which were now at last dissolving beneath the repeated blows. On December 13 the Russians detected the Japanese tunnels, and consulted as to the measures to be taken to meet the new danger. General Kondrachenko was conferring with the commander of the fort and with a number of other distinguished Russian officers in one of the concrete bomb-proofs when suddenly a Japanese 11-in. shell alighted on the vaulting and perforated it. It exploded with the most fearful effect, killing Kondrachenko and most of the officers present. The death of Kondrachenko was an irretrievable calamity for the Russians. He was the heart and soul of the defence, for which General Stoessel took the entire credit; and he it was who at the very beginning of the siege had dissuaded General Stoessel, with some difficulty, from surrendering. When he was gone there was no one to lead and order; the soldiers loved him, and would follow him because they saw that he was unsparing of his own life. The death of this great and gallant officer may be said to have sealed the doom of the beleaguered fortress.

As the result of his death under such horrible circumstances, nothing was done to meet the Japanese mines. The date of the explosion was fixed by the Japanese authorities for the 18th. Two tons of dynamite and gun-cotton in seven charges, reached by two galleries under the fort, were to do the work. But, unfortunately



SHELL-MARKS ON HOSPITAL No. 9, PORT ARTHUR.



[T. Ruddiman Johnston photo.]
RUSSIAN PRISONERS MARCHING OUT OF PORT ARTHUR.

for the Japanese, the weather turned so cold that it was impossible to close up the galleries leading to the mines and thus get the full effect out of the charge. All the morning of the 18th a vigorous bombardment of the fort proceeded, and North Kikwan, Wangtai, and South Kikwan were systematically pounded. The 22nd Regiment of the 11th Division, which now was commanded by General Samejima, who had succeeded General Tsuchiya, wounded in the assault of the 26th, was detailed for the attack. Its men had carried on the bloody and protracted combat in the caponnières, and they claimed the right of striking the final blow against the work in which lay so many of their comrades. Samejima held that they had been too long in front of the fort, and would have preferred to make the attack with the 38th Reserve Regiment, which had played so heroic a part in the storming of 203 Metre Hill. That regiment was brought up to the sap and held in readiness.

Aware of the work that lay before them, the Japanese infantry made all preparations for death. The men of the 22nd had their names written all over their clothing; the men of the 38th were rigged out fantastically in their winter hoods, with their grey underwear outside their uniforms, and long smoking matches for the hand-grenades fastened round their waists. In this guise they looked more like demons than men. At 2 p.m. a mushroom-shaped cloud rose from the fort, and the air was rent by a heavy, dull detonation. As the noise of it echoed into the hills, a second, far heavier, followed; the six remaining mines were fired simultaneously, and upon the dense cloud of smoke and fragments that rose high above North Kikwan Fort the Japanese artillery turned a terrific fire. The stormers had simultaneously charged; indeed, they started too soon, as 50 who had emerged from cover at the first explosion were buried under the débris thrown up by the second explosion and perished. Through an immense gap in the rampart they poured, but as they reached the interior they found that the concrete buildings in the rear of the fort were still practically intact, and held by Russian troops with machine-guns. Between the rampart, or what remained of it, and the concrete works in the rear of the fort yawned the crater made by the explosion. Fierce rushes by the Japanese were beaten back. The 22nd Regiment had suffered too fearfully in previous assaults upon this fort to go forward with the desperate resolution required. General Samejima, arriving upon the scene with his Staff, determined to withdraw the shaken regiment and to put in the 38th Regiment to the final assault. The 22nd Regiment was dismissed; the 38th filed in and took its place. Just at the summit of the crater, in front of the concrete buildings, ran a Russian line of earthworks strengthened by sand-bags. About dusk the 38th Regiment, led by Captain Yawamoto, worked into the crater and made ready to rush the trench. At 7 p.m. they flung their bombs, and then delivered one of the most furious assaults ever seen.

Storming the Forts. In the darkness they swarmed



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]
CHINESE RETURNING TO PORT ARTHUR AFTER ITS FALL.



THE LOSS OF THE "SEVASTOPOL."

over the work with a ferocity and determination against which nothing could stand. The Russians fought to the last, and then, after suffering and inflicting terrific losses, fell back a few paces to the concrete buildings, where the last stand was to be made. The 38th Regiment

**In North Kikwan
Fort.**

responded to its leader's appeal, though it had suffered grievously in the struggle. It burst upon the barracks in a tempest of fury; neither magazine rifles nor machine-guns could hold its soldiers back. They closed on the loopholes and tore at the rifles which the Russians protruded from them; they gathered at the steel-armoured doors with heavy charges of explosive and blew them in with an absolute disregard of death. Then into the dark interior of the barracks they swept, flinging the deadly bombs, and a sharp struggle began within. Reinforcements poured up to the aid of the Japanese; the Russians sent none; and about midnight 20 men out of 500 who had formed the garrison of the fort retired—the sole survivors of the struggle on the Russian side. The rest were dead or dying in the fort. Samejima, who had led this furious assault in person, called for champagne to celebrate the capture of the first permanent fort that had fallen into Japanese hands, and commended the heroism of

the 38th. Then his men set to work to rescue the entombed and to collect the dead and wounded. The capture of the fort had cost Japan close upon 1,000 men.

Japan's sun still waxed in the firmament. The morning of the 19th rose with her flag flying over North Kikwan, and not a soldier in General Nogi's army but felt that now victory was very near at hand. To the west the Japanese were closing in and fast pushing down towards Port Arthur from 203 Metre Hill. The violence and aggressiveness of the attack were hourly increasing, while the force of the defence was sensibly diminishing. Towards Yahutsun the parallels were advancing rapidly, and but a few more days must elapse before the attackers on this side would be able to turn the Taiyangkou Forts. On December 18 the Japanese stormed a position between Yahutsun and Pigeon Bay, which enabled them to threaten the communications be-



(Copyright, 1904, by "Collier's Weekly."
JAPANESE SOLDIERS WRESTLING UNDER A CANOPY IN JAPANESE STYLE.

tween Port Arthur and Laotishan. On the 16th General Stoessel had complained to the Japanese that they were firing at the Russian hospitals. The charge was afterwards found to be untrue, though accidents could not be avoided during a bombardment. The Russians had scattered their hospitals up and down the town, instead of collecting them at the outset in one small area, which could have been spared. But the incident seems really to have been only an excuse on General Stoessel's part for entering into relations with the Japanese headquarters.

On the 20th a battery close to North Kikwan was rushed, and found to be in a most shocking state, with all its guns smashed by the Japanese bombardment. The mines were now nearly complete under

**Mining Erhlung
Fort.**

Erhlung Fort; the five tons of high explosives which they were to contain were placed in five separate chambers beneath the fort. Under Sungshushan the shafts and galleries had been completed, notwithstanding the efforts of the Russian sappers, who drove counter-mines in all directions to impede the Japanese. On December 28 the Japanese troops concentrated in the trenches near Erhlung, waiting for the explosion under the fort, which was arranged for 10 a.m. Extraordinary precautions were taken on the Japanese side. Four battalions were held ready



'Drawn by R. Caton Woodville.

THE WEARINESS OF STRIFE. THE DAWN OF ANOTHER DAY AT PORT ARTHUR.

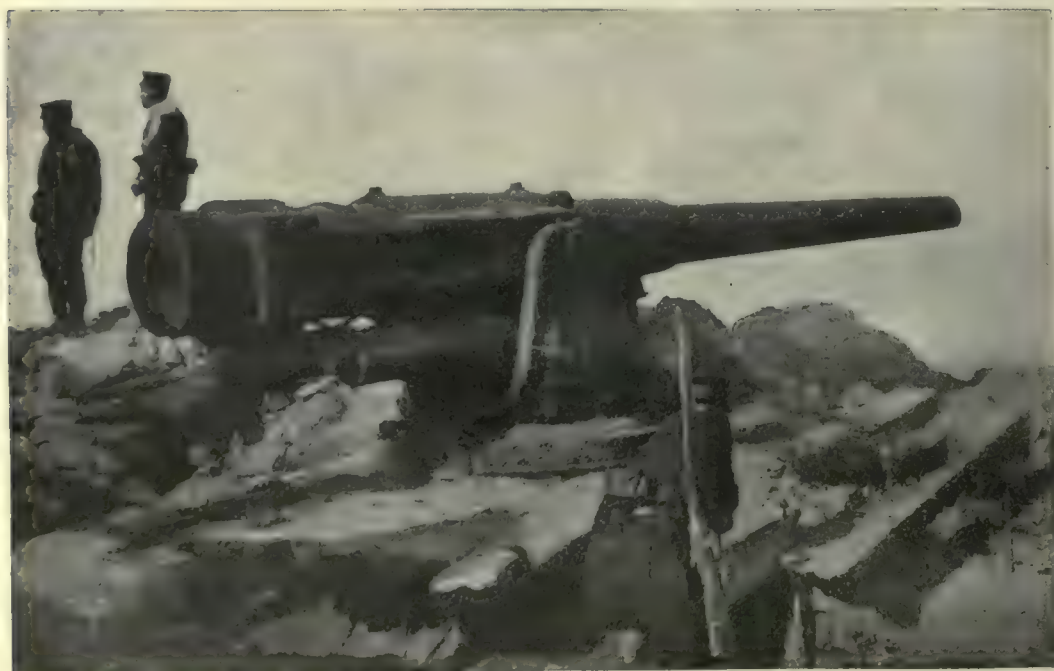
from the 19th and 36th Regiments, both of the 9th Division. At the hour fixed the series of explosions began, succeeding each other at intervals of five seconds. With a continuous heavy rolling sound the top of Erhlung Hill appeared to dissolve in smoke and flying splinters and streams of red flame. All the northern half of the fort was destroyed, but when the Japanese swarmed into it the southern part, consisting of concrete works containing machine-guns, was found to be strongly held. The Japanese rushed the work and threw up a trench close to the concrete casemates under a heavy fire, while their entire artillery bombarded the concrete and strove to shatter it. A mountain-gun was brought up and trained against the concrete walls; but finally the Japanese, by employing hand-grenades freely in the loopholes and blasting openings through the walls, contrived to force a way into the interior of the casemates. The remnant of the Russian garrison were speedily driven out through the windows to the rear of the works, and were covered in their retreat by the fire from the other Russian forts. Before they withdrew they fired the timber supports of the casemates, and the fort burned all the night.

Erhlung, with 37 guns in it, was now in the hands of the Japanese, the second of the permanent forts to fall. Four hundred Russians were killed in it or buried beneath its ruins as the result of the explosion of the mines. A little before daylight of the 29th, the Russian garrison made a last desperate attempt to retake the fort and forced their way into it, but after a cruel struggle hand-to-hand were ejected with heavy loss. A second and third attempt followed, also without success, and at daylight the flag of the Rising Sun flew triumphantly over the work which had so long defied the Japanese army. The Japanese loss was small in view of the greatness of the result—about 1,000 killed and wounded.

Terror within Port Arthur grew at the rapid success of the Japanese. Not a soldier in any of the forts but dreaded each night and each day that the earth would suddenly open beneath his feet and swallow him up in a tempest of smoke and flame. Everywhere the Japanese were at work along the eastern front with pick and spade; all the forts were being methodically undermined. As each was captured the attack upon its successors became easier. Meantime the bombardment of the town was working grievous havoc, destroying the arsenals and magazines, and hourly diminishing the power of resistance.

The mines under Sungshushan were complete, as also were two mines under the Chinese wall. Sungshushan was the next fort to fly into the air. Orders were issued for the explosion to take place at 10 a.m. of the 31st, after which the Japanese were to assault in force. The explosion of the mines was as terrible as that at Erhlung and far more effective. It was almost instantly followed by a terrific explosion

at the back of the fort where the concussion of the Japanese mines had detonated all the ammunition of the garrison. There was little resistance when the Japanese rushed upon the smoking ruins. A few shots were fired from a half-buried casemate; then the Japanese flung a few bombs into it, and from it a white flag went up. One



GUN AT PORT ARTHUR CAPTURED BY THE JAPANESE.



A PYRAMID OF JAPANESE SOLDIERS HELD AT BAY BY A SINGLE RUSSIAN OFFICER.

One of the batteries before Port Arthur was encircled by a high wall, which the Japanese attempted to escalade by forming the human pyramid, an evolution practised by our own troops in a modified form. The story goes that at Port Arthur the Russian Captain Lebedief took his stand, with sword and revolver, on the copingstone of the wall. He repelled three assaults, and killed or wounded twenty-two Japanese. After the third assault, the gallant captain sank down utterly exhausted, and was killed by a shell.



THE MAN WHO MADE TERMS.
Major-General Ijichi was the man appointed by General Nogi to carry out the first negotiations with the Russians in reference to the surrender of Port Arthur.

hundred and fifty-nine living Russians were buried beneath, helpless and in danger of suffocation if the Japanese closed the one remaining opening to the air. They were set free by blasting through the walls and enlarging the opening, and were marched off prisoners.

Inspired by the swift and easy capture of Sungshushan, the storming party attempted to push south from the captured fort and break through the Chinese wall into the city of Port Arthur.

Nearing Port Arthur.

They could not progress far, but from Hashimakayama and the Panlung Forts other parties of Japanese advanced furiously through the openings made in the Chinese wall by the mines, which were now exploded, and rapidly gained ground, fighting every inch of the way with increasing ardour as they saw the great prize now almost within their grasp. They stormed H Battery to the rear of the Chinese wall; they took the New Panlung Batteries near it; they pushed close up to Wangtai Fort itself, and when the first day of the new year dawned the Japanese flag showed well beyond the wall. Messages expressing confidence and the certainty of success went back from the fighting line to the headquarters. From 203 Metre

Hill the western divisions were also fighting their way in with terrible resolution. All the Japanese army was chafing for another—for the final and the greatest—assault which should bring their irresistible masses into the town. Before 8 a.m. the 7th Division had stormed Yahutsun, and reported that it could advance without immoderate difficulty to the harbour itself. The General Staff did not hold back. The 9th and 11th Divisions were ordered to assault and carry Wangtai.

On this fort, the last that remained on the north-eastern front, the whole Japanese artillery turned its tremendous fire. The fort, conspicuous at the summit of a lofty hill, was swathed in flame and smoke.

Wangtai Fort.

Covered by this tempestuous hail of projectiles, the Japanese skirmishers, in the full sight of the whole army, slowly crawled up the hill, and now it could be seen that their progress was accompanied by no heavy loss. Five to six hours passed in the tedious approach. The winter day was drawing to its close, when suddenly the figure of a Japanese officer waving his sword could be seen above the haze of smoke from the bursting bombs. As if swayed by a common impulse to be in at the death, the mass of Japanese on the hill-face rose and swarmed over the parapet of the fort in one magnificent, irresistible rush. As they poured over the rampart, like a sea, a column of smoke went up in the air; the Russians had fired a mine to stop them, and then fled. The Japanese flag rose above the hill as the stormers, now in a temper to be checked by nothing, broke through the smoke and falling débris of the mine and carried the fort.



RUSSIAN WOUNDED PRISONERS TAKEN AT MOTIENLING ARRIVING AT TAKAHAMA.



THE MIKADO SUMMONS PORT ARTHUR TO SURRENDER.

Mr. Villiers, the artist, writes: "The Mikado's message was to the effect that he offered all non-belligerents, women, children, priests, civil servants, and all military and naval attaches, safe conduct through the Japanese lines to Dalny, from which place they would be forwarded to their respective destinations if they left Port Arthur within twenty-four hours of the presentation of his Note. After the lapse of that time a bombardment would commence. Preparations were made by the Japanese to provide the women and children with food and lodging, and all was in readiness for the reception of the refugees; but General Stoessel answered that the time offered was too short for the people to prepare themselves for the journey, and this curt reply was taken as a definite refusal."

Hardly had this great spectacle thrilled the army and drawn a tempest of cheering from every Japanese trench and battery than a white flag appeared by Fort Stoessel in the Swishiyung valley. The

Stoessel's Letter. Japanese troops were moving out in the twilight to take up their positions for the last bloody rush in upon Port Arthur as, about 4.30 p.m., a Russian officer, preceded by a Cossack carrying a large white flag, rode up to the Japanese outpost line. The officer brought a letter to General Nogi sealed with five seals, which ran thus:

"SIR,—Considering the situation at the seat of the war, I am of opinion that further resistance on the part of Port Arthur is useless, and to avoid further loss of life I ask to open with you negotiations to determine the conditions of surrender. If your Excellency accepts this proposal, I ask you to appoint a Commissioner to discuss the terms and conditions of the surrender and to select a place where my Commissioner can meet him. I take this opportunity of assuring you of my sentiments of esteem for you.—GENERAL STOESSEL."



GENERAL STOESSEL ON HIS WAY TO MEET GENERAL NOGI.

The contents of the letter were disclosed by the Russian parlementaire, and from the outpost the news was telephoned to headquarters, where it was kept a profound secret. It was noted that evening that General Nogi's sad, impassive face seemed to have lost its wrinkles and its sorrow, and that the great General appeared magically to have renewed his youth.

General Stoessel had called a conference of leading officers after the fall of Erhlung, on the 29th, and announced his intention of surrendering. The meeting was a stormy one. A second conference was held on January 1, when Admiral Viren rose and denounced General Stoessel as a coward. "Fight to the last!" he implored him. "You have wrecked one Russian fleet; will you also sacrifice Admiral Rojdestvensky?" A Staff officer of the army, however,

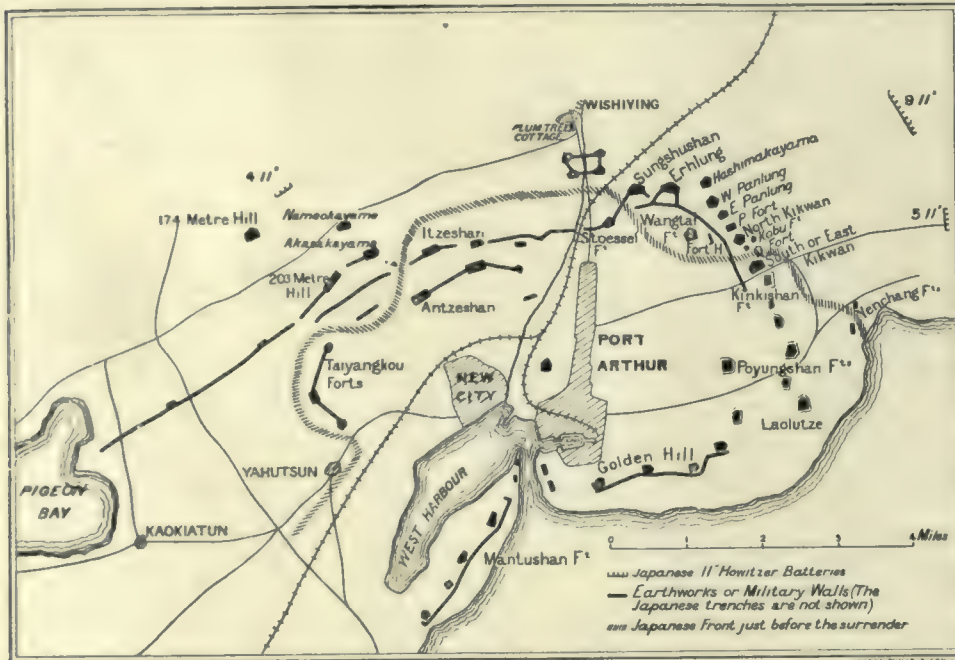
**Stoessel Advises
Surrender.**



THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR. A BRISK MOMENT IN A RUSSIAN BATTERY.

declared that further resistance was out of the question. The hospitals were full; there were no anaesthetics; thousands of men were dying of scurvy, and hundreds of typhoid. * To continue the struggle was hopeless. None the less a majority was against the surrender. Then General Stoessel asserted that a "Higher Power compels me to think first of my brave men. I myself would rather die fighting." Viren, overcome with passion as he heard this speech, broke in upon the General with cries of "You traitor!" and at the sound of that word there was dead silence for some minutes. General and Admiral each seemed upon the point of drawing his sword upon the other, but the incident passed without violence. It became known that Stoessel had already sent a message to the Japanese, and Admiral Viren came out of the conference weeping, to give the last orders for the destruction of the ships, in defiance of General Stoessel, who insisted that when proposals for surrender had been made it was no longer permissible to wreck the ships.

General Stoessel, according to Russian reports, thought for a moment of arresting and shooting Viren, but if he had ever entertained such an intention he speedily abandoned it. In desperate haste the Russian naval officers set to work to injure the battleships as much as possible—a difficult task as the hulls were



sunk; it was now pitch dark, and little time remained to accomplish the work. Mines were laid against the sides, or torpedoes fired at them; heavy charges of gun-cotton were exploded in the turrets. The *Otwayny*, which still remained afloat, notwithstanding the Japanese torpedo attacks, was sunk by a Russian torpedo—the last survivor of the armoured ships at Port Arthur. Then, as the night wore on, the destroyers *Vlastny*, *Serdity*, *Skory*, and

Stratny, with the fast yacht *Arinitoi*, took on board a large number of officers, all the records of the navy, all the compromising papers, and the colours of many of the Russian regiments, and put to sea for Chifu, one by one, with orders to torpedo any Japanese ship that they might meet. They stole through the darkness, seeing nothing of the Japanese, though when they neared Chifu they were chased by a fast cruiser and four Japanese destroyers, from which with difficulty they managed to make their escape. Two other destroyers, the *Sniely* and *Boiki*, escaped to Kiaochau, and were there interned.

During the night the great news of the fall of the fortress had been telegraphed to Japan and thence to Europe, and the world awoke to the intelligence before it was fully known to the Japanese army investing Port Arthur. The winter day was breaking on January 2, when a Japanese officer rode to the Russian outpost line with General Nogi's reply to General Stoessel's letter, fixing the village of Swishiyang as the place of conference where the terms of the surrender were to be determined. As the morning advanced it became clear to all about Port Arthur that something had happened. For the first time since the opening of the siege in August there was neither artillery nor rifle fire. An enchanted silence sat upon the grim hills, and presently great masses of Japanese began to wander curiously about the scene of their late victories.

At noon Major-General Ijichi met Major-General Reiss of the Russian army at Plum-Tree Cottage, a miserable little hovel in Swishiyang. The Japanese terms were brief and peremptory. The forts on the

Nogi's Reply to Stoessel.

western front, still in the hands of the Russians, must be handed over to the Japanese on the 3rd; the fortress and the ships must be surrendered intact, and no further attempt must be made to work destruction; all the military and naval forces within the fortress must become prisoners of war, but officers might retain their swords and give their parole; all stores and ammunition must be surrendered, and maps must be drawn up showing the position of the mines laid and the arrangements of the defences. The Russians were informed that they would be given one hour to consider the terms, but they were warned that these were final and that none of their essentials could be changed.



JAPANESE POSITIONS, NOVEMBER 1.

After an hour's debate, General Reiss informed the Japanese that the flags and ships had been destroyed. He asked that the garrison might be released and not taken prisoners of war to Japan, and that a telegram might be sent to the Czar begging his Majesty to permit the officers to give their parole. Some further unimportant favours were asked, to which the Japanese acceded, but they declined to release the garrison, though they promised to send the telegram to the Czar. The Russians assured them that there were 20,000 wounded in the hospitals, and that there was urgent need of medical assistance. During the discussion a telephone message from the Japanese headquarters reached General Ijichi, informing him that great fires had broken out in Port Arthur, and directing him to break off negotiations in case the destruction of property was not instantly stopped. At 4.30 p.m. the Convention was signed and hostilities were suspended; at 9.30 p.m. copies of the Convention were exchanged between the Russians and Japanese, and Port Arthur had ceased to be a Russian fortress. Meantime from the Japanese camps exultant cheering rang out; the wounded arose from their beds of suffering; fireworks cracked and flared and bonfires glowed on all the hills. The 3rd Army had at last accomplished its terrific task, and by its faith, valour, and persistence had wiped out the dishonour of ten years before, regained for Japan her lost possession, and by so doing achieved for her the mastery of Asia for a century.

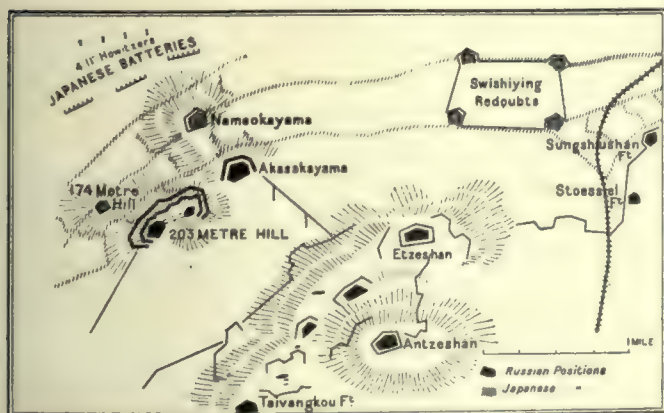
That evening the last of the Russian torpedo craft stole out of Port Arthur, and without any serious difficulty reached Chifu. The same day a melodramatic telegram had been sent to the Czar from Chifu, in

The Convention Signed.

General Stoessel's name, dated January 1, to the effect that he could no longer hold out, that the enemy had carried the Chinese wall, and that the fall of the fortress was inevitable. It closed with the words: "We entreat your Majesty's pardon. We have done all that men could do. I implore your Majesty to take pity on us and to grant your sympathy with our position. The incessant fighting of the last eleven months has exhausted all our energy." A second telegram had been despatched by the Japanese to the Czar on General Stoessel's behalf that evening,

running thus: "I was forced to-day to sign a Convention surrendering Port Arthur. The officers, civil and military, are paroled with honours of war; the garrison are prisoners. I apply to your Majesty to grant permission to accept parole.—STOESSEL." The Czar's reply arrived next day. It was curt and cold: "I permit officers either to return to Russia, giving their parole, or to share the fortunes of their men. I thank you and the brave garrison for a gallant defence."

On the 4th the western forts were handed over to the Japanese, and the two armies fraternised.



THE ATTACK ON 203 METRE HILL.



A RAILWAY TRAIN WRECKED BY SHELLS AT PORT ARTHUR.

On the 5th a meeting between Generals Stoessel and Nogi took place at Plum - Tree Stoessel and Nogi Meet. Cottage. Stoessel

affected to know nothing of General Kuropatkin's defeat on the Shaho. Each General complimented the other on the bravery of his troops, and Stoessel condoled with Nogi on the loss of his two sons. He praised their loyalty and devotion; praised the father who had made so great a sacrifice for his Emperor and country.

Nogi received these words

with a calm face. One of his sons, he said, had died at Nanshan, and the other upon 203 Metre Hill. "These vital positions, admirably defended by your troops," he went on, "were not too dearly bought with the lives of my two only sons." The simple directness and pathos of the words thrilled all who heard them. Moved by the antique splendour of this Japanese soldier's fortitude, Stoessel expressed his amazement. "We can hardly imitate you," he replied. Finally, he asked the Japanese at once to occupy the town to prevent disorder, and begged Nogi's permission to present him with one of his own chargers. This gift the Japanese General was compelled to decline. All spoil of war was the property of the Emperor of Japan, but he promised that the horse should be well cared for. Many astounding statements were made by Stoessel in this interview, which ended at 1.10 p.m., when both Generals rode away.

While they talked the unwounded troops of the garrison were moving out to Yahutsun, where they were to lay down their arms preparatory to marching off to the railway en route for Dalny and Japan. To

Laying Down Arms.

their stupefaction, the Japanese discovered that the Russian stories of the exhaustion of the garrison were quite untrue, and that the unwounded Russians were actually more numerous at the close of the siege than the whole garrison had been supposed to be at the opening of it. 28,000 hale and unwounded officers and men moved by detachments to Yahutsun and there piled their arms. Inside the fortress was immense abundance of food and a fair quantity of ammunition. It was thus quite untrue that General Stoessel had fought to the last gasp, or that, as he claimed, there were less than 10,000 unwounded in the garrison. The real truth seemed to be that he dreaded a Japanese assault in force and the storming of the town, being well aware that such an assault must be accompanied by fighting of desperate savagery, and that he feared the effect on the Japanese troops of the discovery that the thousands of Japanese missing, whom all with General Nogi's army supposed to have been taken prisoners, had been done to death by the Russian troops as they lay wounded on the battlefield.

The occupation of Port Arthur by the Japanese was speedily accomplished. 28,562 Russians made their surrender outside the forts; from 16,000 to 17,000 wounded and sick were in the hospitals. Eight

Japanese Occupy Port Arthur.

Generals and four Admirals were among the prisoners, with 588 combatant officers of the army and 300 combatant officers of the navy. 1,900 horses were found alive and in good condition within the fortress, besides which there were 1,422,000lbs. of flour, 1,375,000lbs. of beans, 132,000lbs. of biscuit, 308,000lbs. of maize, 77,000lbs. of beef, to say nothing of large stores of salt and sugar belonging to the army, after very much had been wantonly destroyed. The navy had 700 tons of flour and 140,000 tons of coal. There were cattle in abundance grazing on the

hills of Laotishan. Of ammunition there were 82,000 rounds for the big guns and 2,266,000 rounds of small arms cartridge, besides which immense quantities of shell and powder had been thrown into the harbour. The wrecks of four battleships, two cruisers, 14 gunboats and destroyers, 12 large steamers, 18 small steamers, and 35 small steam launches of various types fell into the hands of the Japanese, and almost all these ships were found on close examination to have been little damaged in their engines and essential parts, and were afterwards raised and repaired.



[T. Ruddiman Johnston photo.]
RUSSIAN PRISONERS AT PORT ARTHUR BUYING FROM A CHINESE SHOP
UNDER JAPANESE ESCORT.

One last scene had to be enacted before the victorious army marched north from Port Arthur. On January 13th the Japanese troops made their State entry into the fallen fortress, led by General Nogi.

The State Entry. Sections of every regiment and unit took part in that entry. Observers marked the indifferent music of the bands, the indifferent step kept by the troops, the absence of parade show and parade order, and remembered with emotion that this was not some holiday review, but the defile of a fighting army which had accomplished an almost impossible task after incredible losses. The flags as they went past hung tattered from their poles; they were rent with innumerable bullet-holes and stained with human blood, and two of them were missing. First in the place of honour, as befitted its heroic bravery, came the 9th Division, while the 1st with its glorious records of Nanshan and the Swishiyung Forts followed. Then came the 7th, the victors of the awful struggle upon 203 Metre Hill and the real conquerors of Port Arthur. The 11th Division brought up the rear, led by General Samejima in person, whose energy and daring had carried his men in triumph over the parapet of North Kikwan. As the units passed General Nogi and gave him the salute, they swayed inwards towards him as towards a loved father, and some look of emotion gathered in their grave, impassive war-hardened faces as they thought of his personal bereavement and of the recompense that had come to him at last after such sacrifices and such slaughter. The great parade was soon over, and the historic day closed almost without exultation and excitement.

Next day a solemn service of commemoration was held in honour of the Japanese dead. Upon the

heights north of Swishiyung, in full sight of the whole fortress, the Japanese army defiled before a simple altar and paid the last honours according to Shinto rites to the fallen. General Nogi led the way and thus addressed the spirits of the dead:—"For over 210 days you gallantly fought, facing death by fire, and sword, and disease, and gave your lives. I come to tell you that your great sacrifice has not been in



[T. Ruddiman Johnston photo.]
RUSSIAN OFFICERS, PRISONERS AT PORT ARTHUR.

vain. The enemy's fleet has been destroyed; the fortress has surrendered. This glorious victory is but the reward of your courage and self-sacrifice. Like you, I took a solemn oath to conquer or to die. I, alas! all unworthy, survive the victory that you won; I have received the Imperial thanks and seem to monopolise your glory. I beseech you to share it with me. My heart is overcome with sorrow when I think of all you who have paid the price of victory and whose souls are now in the Great Hereafter. Before this altar, raised on consecrated ground, in full sight of the hills, streams, and forts, which were the scene of your last glorious hours, and which you have dyed with your blood, I call upon your spirits to partake of our offerings and to share the glory of our triumph."

**In Honour of the
Dead.**

The bugles sounded the dismissal, and, as the troops filed off, the sun broke suddenly through the clouds of a chill winter day, bathing the valley in sunshine, and seeming to answer this last invocation of the fallen. At nightfall the first trains were already steaming off to the north, bearing away detachments of the 3rd Japanese Army to new battlefields and fresh glories.

The loss of the Japanese army before Port Arthur has never been officially stated, but was probably, including men wounded and temporarily disabled by disease, upwards of 80,000, of whom about 25,000 died in the field or afterwards succumbed to their wounds. The Russian loss is not accurately known, since the facts of the defence were carefully distorted by General Stoessel, to excuse his surrender, but was probably about 28,000 killed, wounded, and sick, the actual killed numbering about 10,000. The strength of the garrison at the opening of the siege was computed by the Japanese, after the fall of the fortress, at from 52,000 to 55,000. 546 guns were handed over in a more or less damaged condition to General Nogi.

The Loss of Life.

Thus ended a historic siege, thereby deciding the issue of the war. For the fall of Port Arthur had a dual effect. It set free 100,000 of the best troops in the Japanese army for service in the north, and it

End of the Siege.

fatally hampered the operations of the Baltic fleet by depriving it of a base and by liberating the Japanese navy from all anxiety as to sorties on the part of the destroyers which at the fall of the fortress still remained intact within the harbour. It added immensely to Japan's prestige and enabled her seamen to turn their whole attention to the Baltic fleet. It was thus the decisive event of the war, the direct cause at once of the victory of Mukden on land and of the splendid triumph of Tsushima at sea. But the fall of the fortress was much more than a mere military triumph. It was the final vindication of the righteousness of history and of the moral laws which sway the universe. That which had been wrested from Japan by force and fraud ten years before, by an alliance of three European Powers, was now regained by her own strength through the discreditable weakness of the Russian Commander.

The Japanese army and navy exchanged congratulations and thanks after this great triumph. Both had loyally co-operated without the slightest friction, and thus together shared the glory. Nogi on land and Togo at sea had proved themselves simple and magnanimous comrades. There had been no recriminations between them and no failures on either's part as in almost every operation attempted in the past by conjoint forces. The navy set to work to clear the harbour, the army to rebuild the forts. The town itself was found to have been but little injured by the bombardment, in absolute contradiction of the reports spread by the Russians, though the arsenals, magazines, and forts had been fearfully wrecked by the huge Japanese shells.

CHAPTER LVI.

THE BATTLE OF HEIKOUTAI OR SANDIPU.

THE Russian 2nd Army, charged with the mission of driving the Japanese back from the Hunho and moving in directly upon Liaoyang, deployed on January 24. Its right was formed by the 1st Siberian Army Corps, under General Stackelberg, which had been transferred to it from the eastern front on account of the high fighting qualities of the Siberian soldiers and the ability of their



JAPANESE ADVANCE GUARD. ENTRY INTO PORT ARTHUR.

General. For, though General Stackelberg had been uniformly unsuccessful in his encounters with the Japanese, he had always fought with credit. The 1st Corps was placed near Santaitze, on the western bank of the Hunho, which river was frozen and thus offered not the slightest obstacle to the troops. In the centre was a mixed corps of the various Rifle Brigades attached to the 2nd Army. This corps fronted Heikoutai. To the left were the 10th and 8th Corps, near Changtan and Suhopu, and to the east of Suhopu General Kaulbars' army deployed in readiness for the battle.

To aid the 2nd Army, General Grippenbergh had the support of the cavalry and Cossacks, under General Mistchenko, who were stationed far out on his flank with orders to break through the Japanese screen of outposts and ride in towards Liaoyang, turning the Japanese left flank. The force under General



JAPANESE INFANTRY MARCHING THROUGH PORT ARTHUR DOING THE GOOSE STEP.

Gripenberg's command has been variously estimated at from 90,000 to 130,000 men, with at least 320 guns, and perhaps so many as 400. The terrain upon which it would have to act was a level plain,

Scene of the Fight. broken here and there by low sand-hills and dotted with Chinese villages. Three of these were of considerable importance in summer, when the snow and frost had vanished, as the junction-points of numerous roads. These were Changtan, on the west bank of the Hunho, the ice on which stream was about three feet thick; Sandipu, almost immediately to the south, four miles from it, a collection of about 100 farmsteads built with walls of sun-dried brick, and easily defensible, with several small groves near it; and Heikoutai, six miles south-west of Changtan. From Changtan to the Shaho River by Sandipu is about 11 miles.

The Japanese line of outposts followed the Shaho to the neighbourhood of Linshipu and then ran west across the plain to the Hunho through Sandipu. Sandipu and Heikoutai were held by small detachments, moderately entrenched in the village buildings. From Heikoutai their line crossed the ice of the Hunho to the village of Chitaitze, where was another moderately fortified outpost. Then it turned due south. It has already been explained that in this quarter of the field for excellent reasons the Japanese Staff had deliberately refrained from constructing strong works, and as the consequence of that decision the Japanese troops stationed there had to face serious risks.

Of what was happening behind the Japanese lines, no one knew except the Japanese Staff. The Russians were quite unacquainted with the Japanese dispositions, and were not even aware where the principal units were stationed. Events proved, however, that no large Japanese force

Japanese Plans. was to the west of the Shaho. At the village of Langtungkou the 8th Division had its headquarters. It was commanded by General Tatsumi, and had not yet fought in the war, having only recently arrived at the front. It was recruited in the Aomori province to the north of Japan, and was composed of men inured to cold, good marchers, stalwart fighters, and almost equal in prowess to the magnificent soldiers of the 2nd and 5th Divisions—the pick of the Japanese army. Along the valley of the Shaho two divisions were disposed so as speedily to be able to march west, if their services should be required. These were the 3rd Division, placed at Tatungshunpu; and the 5th Division, with headquarters at Yentai. The 2nd Division, when the Russians advanced, was temporarily detached from the 1st Japanese Army, and moved to the south of Linshipu, ready to give aid. The main force of the Japanese was thus distant from four to 15 miles from the front. At Liaoyang were strong reserves and depots of all kinds.

The extreme left of the Japanese army was guarded by the cavalry, which had operated with such brilliant determination against General Mistchenko, and which, though cutting a very sorry figure upon parade, performed solidly enough in the field. The morale of the Japanese troops was excellent. They despised their enemy and regarded any Japanese force as fully a match for twice its strength of Russians. They had come to regard themselves as invincible, and each officer and man felt that he would be supported to the last extremity by his comrades and by the Staff. The spirit of the men, already high, had been raised by the recent fall of Port Arthur and by the certainty that the hour was at hand when Nogi's 100,000 seasoned troops would fall into line at their side. Three of the Port Arthur divisions—the 1st, 7th, and 9th—were within reach in case they were wanted, though it was vital for the success of the Japanese plans that they should not show themselves, except in the last resort. The fourth, the 11th Division, was moving east to the extreme Japanese eastern flank, where it was due to make its appearance in another fortnight. The heavy artillery from Port Arthur was on its way to the front, where a large part of it was stationed, late in January, near Putiloff Hill, on the Shaho, bearing upon the railway northwards.

On January 22 a great snowstorm had begun. The weather was intensely cold; a violent gale accompanied the snowfall and blew from the north-west in the faces of the Japanese, so that it was well-nigh impossible to see more than a few paces ahead. The gale and the snow continued almost without intermission for seven days, and only abated on the 28th. The greater part of the battle was thus fought under the most peculiar conditions. No trenches could be raised by either side except in the snow. But the storm greatly hampered the movements of the Russians as the newly fallen snow formed under the hoofs and feet of horses and men and under the wheels of carriages

and cannon into immense balls, which had to be removed every few steps. As the Russians were advancing and the Japanese were falling back, this fact on the whole turned out to Marshal Oyama's advantage.

On the 25th the battle opened. General Stackelberg's columns in overwhelming force rapidly pushed aside the Japanese outposts and crossed the Hunho River, and, as they moved, the 1st Corps began to form front at right angles to the 8th and 10th Corps. The Japanese outposts gave the alarm; about 11 a.m. a cavalry patrol north of Wuchiatze perceived a great force of Cossacks moving in upon that place with 12 guns. The Japanese troopers dismounted, took up their position behind the walls of Wuchiatze village, and when the Cossacks charged received them with such a fire that they fell back. Soon, however, they deployed and attempted to envelope the Japanese, working round their flanks. At this juncture several machine-guns were brought up on the Japanese side,

Battle Begins
Jan. 25, 1905.



THE BURNING OF STORES AT PORT ARTHUR.

and the fire from these protecting the flanks of the cavalry was so effective that for an hour the Russians were held off. Every minute gained was of importance, to give the Japanese main force time to arrive before the enemy had made too great progress. About this time Lieutenant Sakamois, on the right flank, found himself cut off with a small party. He sent to his commanding officer to ask for orders, and the orders sent were "Die!"

At last the Russian artillery came into action. On the outpost line the Japanese had no guns, and the Russians had the firing to themselves. The effect of their cannonade was great. The village was wrecked, the houses set on fire, and heavy loss inflicted on the Japanese. The Cossacks continued their efforts to work to the rear, but the Japanese stood firm, though the small force in the front line had lost most of its officers. Messages from the rear reached the detachment ordering it to retire, as the enemy had worked completely round it and cut it off. The officer in command, Colonel Homda, replied that to retire would be fatal; either he would die with his men in his place, or accomplish his retreat by the process of beating off

the Russians. Repeated attacks upon him failed, and the enemy lost very heavily ; the Cossacks displayed a great want of energy or they would have rushed the village in five minutes from the opening of the attack. But, to the stupefaction of the Japanese, at 4.55 p.m. the Russians retired and abandoned an easy success. The Japanese, though they had lost most of their officers and many of their men, made a show of pursuing, and under cover of this demonstration evacuated the village in the darkness.

Elsewhere, however, while the Japanese had shown the same brilliant tenacity and devotion, affairs had not gone so well for them. The 1st Russian Corps attacked Heikoutai, where the Japanese had a small outpost, early in the morning of the 25th, advancing against it from the west, while other troops of the 1st and 8th Corps attacked it from the north. The Russians threatened to turn the flanks of the Japanese outpost and isolate it, but here as at Wuchiatze they encountered a stubborn resistance, and for hours they could make but little progress. The snow hampered them greatly by limiting the field of vision, and the walls round the village were difficult to attack, while the hardness of the ground prevented the assailants from sapping their way to the Japanese defences. The advance had to be carried out over open ground, involving serious losses ; but when the Russian artillery was brought up, late in the day, an impression was



HOW THE RUSSIAN TROOPS TRAVELLED FROM PORT ARTHUR.

made upon the defence, and in the evening the village was at last carried, though the advance of part of the Japanese 8th Division, which was now fast approaching the field, enabled the Japanese garrison to retire without being surrounded and destroyed. Heikoutai fell into the hands of the Russians, and a distinct success was gained.

The attack of the 8th and 10th Corps upon Sandipu was less fortunate. The importance of Sandipu led the Japanese to make incredible exertions to hold the place and to hurry reinforcements to it when the attack began. The Russian infantry advanced with extreme bravery against the village, in close order, unsupported by their artillery, which, delayed by the snow, had not as yet come up. They were received with sheets of lead from the wall and ditch of the village, and suffered grievous loss. Again and again they were repulsed, but on each occasion reinforcements came up, and they went forward once more. Towards dusk the Russian artillery began a vigorous bombardment of the village, and the difficulties of the Japanese, who were without anything heavier than a machine-gun, grew. Under cover of the bombardment the Russian troops were able to fight their way into the outskirts of the village, and there, all the night of the 25-26th, a furious combat proceeded, each side being continuously fed by reinforcements. On the Japanese side the main part of the 8th Division was now reaching the field, marching through snow and in the teeth of the bitter wind.

On the morning of the 26th the general situation was not unfavourable to the Russians. General Grippenbergh had pushed forward some considerable distance, taken an important village, and had some chance of enveloping and cutting off the whole Japanese 8th Division, which was now moving upon Heikoutai to retake it, thus exposing both flanks to a greatly superior force of Russians. General Grippenbergh had expected General Kuropatkin to support his army either by attacking all along the line and so holding inactive the Japanese divisions which confronted the 1st and 3rd Russian Armies, or by



MEETING BETWEEN GENERALS NOGI AND STOESSEL.



GENERAL STOESSEL AT PORT ARTHUR RAILWAY STATION ON HIS DEPARTURE.

supporting his subordinate with reinforcements, or urging him forward, was sending him orders not to move too far. The Russian commander-in-chief, after the many bitter lessons which the Japanese had read him, seems to have become suspicious of the easy advance of his troops. It began to look to him as though General Gripenberg was walking into a trap instead of winning a battle. A futile bombardment of the Japanese front on the Shaho was all that the 3rd Manchurian Army attempted.

On the morning of the 26th the fight recommenced about Sandipu, where the Russians came on in great force, and made desperate efforts to carry the village. The 8th Japanese Division was ordered to advance against Heikoutai and retake it, assuming the offensive against the Russian right and taking the pressure off Sandipu. Deploying its artillery to the east of Heikoutai, one brigade advanced direct upon Heikoutai from Sumapu and the other moved upon Toupao, in which village the Russians had established themselves in enormous force, till the village walls bristled with machine-guns. At Heikoutai General Gripenberg was present in person, and had there established a great battery of 30 guns. The Japanese troops were compelled to advance over open

**General
Gripenberg
in Command.**

ground, and encountered a very determined opposition. The Japanese artillery poured Shimose shells into Heikoutai and inflicted heavy loss upon the Russians, but, though the infantry of the 8th Division made repeated attacks upon the two villages, it was unable to carry

moving General Kaulbars with the 3rd Army, or a part of it, to his aid. All that Kaulbars had to do was to march with vigour and determination south on Litayentun and the Shaho line. But the early morning wore on and no such move was made. The dull roll of heavy-gun firing was heard from the east, it is true, but the noise never rose to the terrific roar of a great battle. Kaulbars was standing still and looking on while his comrade fought; and General Kuropatkin, far from sup-



[Photo by E. Ashmead Bartlett.

GENERAL NOGI AT THE HEAD OF HIS STAFF MARCHING INTO PORT ARTHUR.

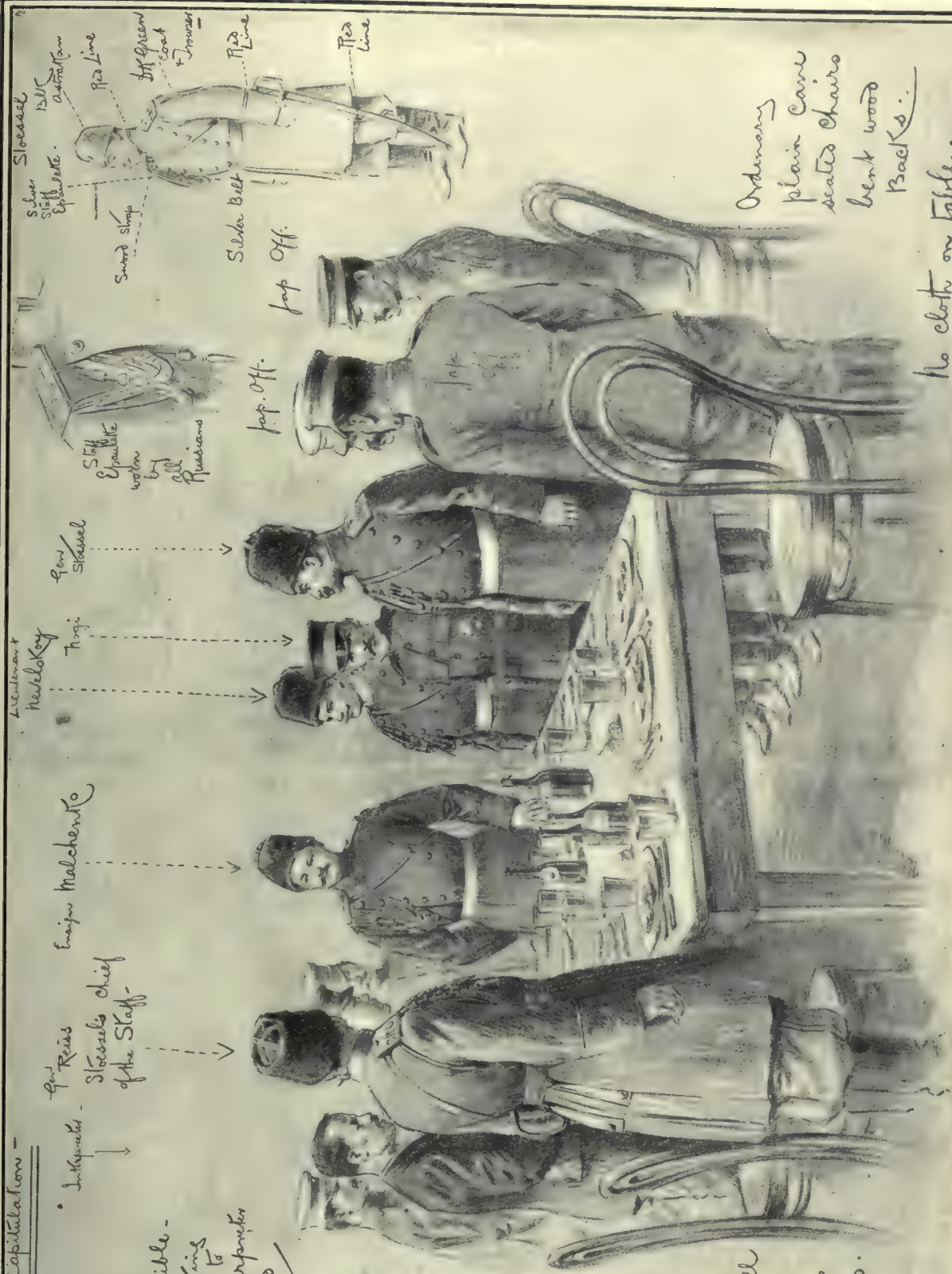
Unraveling the terms of Capitulations -

The meeting between
General Stessel &
General Hope was
as informal as possible -
Neither General speaking
any language known to
both of them. Japanese
has to be requested.

They stood round
the table, not caring
to sit - and on
which the Japanese
has prepared a
light lunch
on aluminum plates,
the food being
ready on each
plate.

his dishes of
food on the Table -

Background small
plain rooms in
Chinese House - no
decoration on walls.



ARRANGING THE CAPITULATION OF PORT ARTHUR.
[Facsimile of a sketch]

ARRANGING THE CAPITULATION OF PORT ARTHUR.

[Facsimile of a sketch by Reginald Cleaver, drawn from materials supplied by General Stoessel.

General Nogi met General Stoessel to arrange the terms of the capitulation of Port Arthur at the only undamaged house in the village of Shuishiying. General Stoessel was accompanied by Colonel Reins.



JAPANESE EXAMINING SIEGE-GUNS AT PORT ARTHUR.

artillery opened with fearful effect on the masses of Russian infantry; and, before they could recover from their surprise or deploy, the two Russian regiments suffered enormous losses. The commander of the division, General Kondratovitch and his chief-of-the-staff were severely wounded, and the whole division was thrown into utter disorder. It recoiled, a mass of fugitives, and but for the determined support which its artillery gave, it would have been annihilated. The fact that it had been badly supported in its onslaught caused the bitterest feeling among the Siberian troops, who saw themselves sacrificed to no purpose.

The night of the 26th closed with the Japanese holding a line from Sandipu through Kuchengtze and Laochiao to Wuchiatze, but their force was still weak, and they were outnumbered, four to one, by the Russians and almost surrounded. A small detachment of the 3rd Division during this day had greatly distinguished itself by holding, in the face of repeated attacks, a fortified farm in the village of Yapatai. The enemy charged up to the walls of the farm and seized the rifles of the Japanese soldiers as they stood up to fire over the mud and brick wall. There were only 38 Japanese against 1,000 Russians, but the Japanese had bombs ready and threw them among their enemies with terrible effect. Taken completely by surprise, for as yet on this flank and in this part of the field such weapons had not been employed, the Russians fled in confusion, leaving 130 dead behind them.

During the afternoon of the 26th, a fresh Japanese division had neared the fighting line. This was the famous 5th, which had spent the day marching from Yentai to Langtungkou in the teeth of the gale and the snow-storm. On the 27th the division continued its advance. One of its brigades marched direct on Heikoutai, to support the 8th Division; the other moved upon

either Toupao or Heikoutai. Yet if it failed in its main object, it succeeded in destroying the morale of the 1st Siberian Corps. The 9th Division of that corps, consisting of the 33rd and 34th Regiments, was advancing through the snowstorm in close order in the neighbourhood of Sumapu, when it suddenly came into contact with a portion of the Japanese 8th Division, whose machine-guns and heavier



[Ruddiman Johnston photo.]

CAPTURED RUSSIAN GUNS AT PORT ARTHUR.

Tatai so as to assist the Japanese detachments which were still determinedly holding Sandipu in the face of incessant attacks. But so unfavourable were the weather conditions that the 5th Division was unable to take part in the battle that day; the gale had risen to a perfect hurricane and the snow fell heavier than ever. The troops were compelled to halt every 10 or 15 minutes to remove the great cakes of snow which collected under the feet of the horses and to cut away the bands of snow from the wheels of the guns and waggons.



[Drawn by L. Sabattier from materials supplied by General Stoessel.]
STOESSEL AND NOGI AFTER ARRANGING THE TERMS FOR THE CAPITULATION OF PORT ARTHUR.

All the 27th the battle continued—a succession of fierce skirmishes in the snow about the villages of Heikoutai, Wuchiatze, and Sandipu. The 8th Division to the south of Heikoutai was still in imminent danger, and, as we have seen, the reinforcements were marching but slowly to its aid.

Skirmishes in the Snow.

It was attacked in all directions by Russian detachments which had worked to the rear of it or turned its flank. As it fronted towards the Russian main force at Heikoutai in the driving snow, it was assailed in the rear at Pahuangtai and in the flank at Niuchu. Its left suffered so grievously that it was forced to fall back to Sanchienpao to avoid destruction. About Sumapu a fierce hand-to-hand struggle raged all the afternoon and far into the night. The position of the division was one of immense danger; it seemed to be isolated in the midst of four to five times its strength of foes. It lost



NEW YEAR'S DAY—JAPANESE AND RUSSIANS FRATERNISING.

heavily, but the approach of the 5th Division enabled it to hold its ground and averted a retreat the consequences of which must have been disastrous.

On the Russian side, General Kuropatkin remained inert all this day, and the 3rd and 1st Manchurian Armies did nothing. The 2nd Army was left to fight its own battle; indeed, fresh pressing injunctions were sent to General Gripenberg not to advance too far, and a little later instructions reached him to retire. A study of the map will show that a determined advance of the Russian forces near Linshipu would have completely severed the Japanese left and placed it in a position where it would have been faced with the alternatives, failing support from the Port Arthur army, of destruction or surrender. But General Kuropatkin threw away this last chance, and with the morning of the 28th affairs began to go against his subordinate.

The sufferings of the troops on either side during the night of the 27-28th were acute. The cold was such that the thermometer fell to 20 degrees below freezing point, giving over 50 degrees of frost. Fires could not be lighted owing to the close proximity of the two armies; the men could not lie down in the freezing snow, and the least surrender to drowsiness meant succumbing to the intense cold. The Japanese passed the dreary night in the open, stamping their feet to keep warm, and watching to see that none of their comrades fell from weariness. For

Suffering of the Troops.

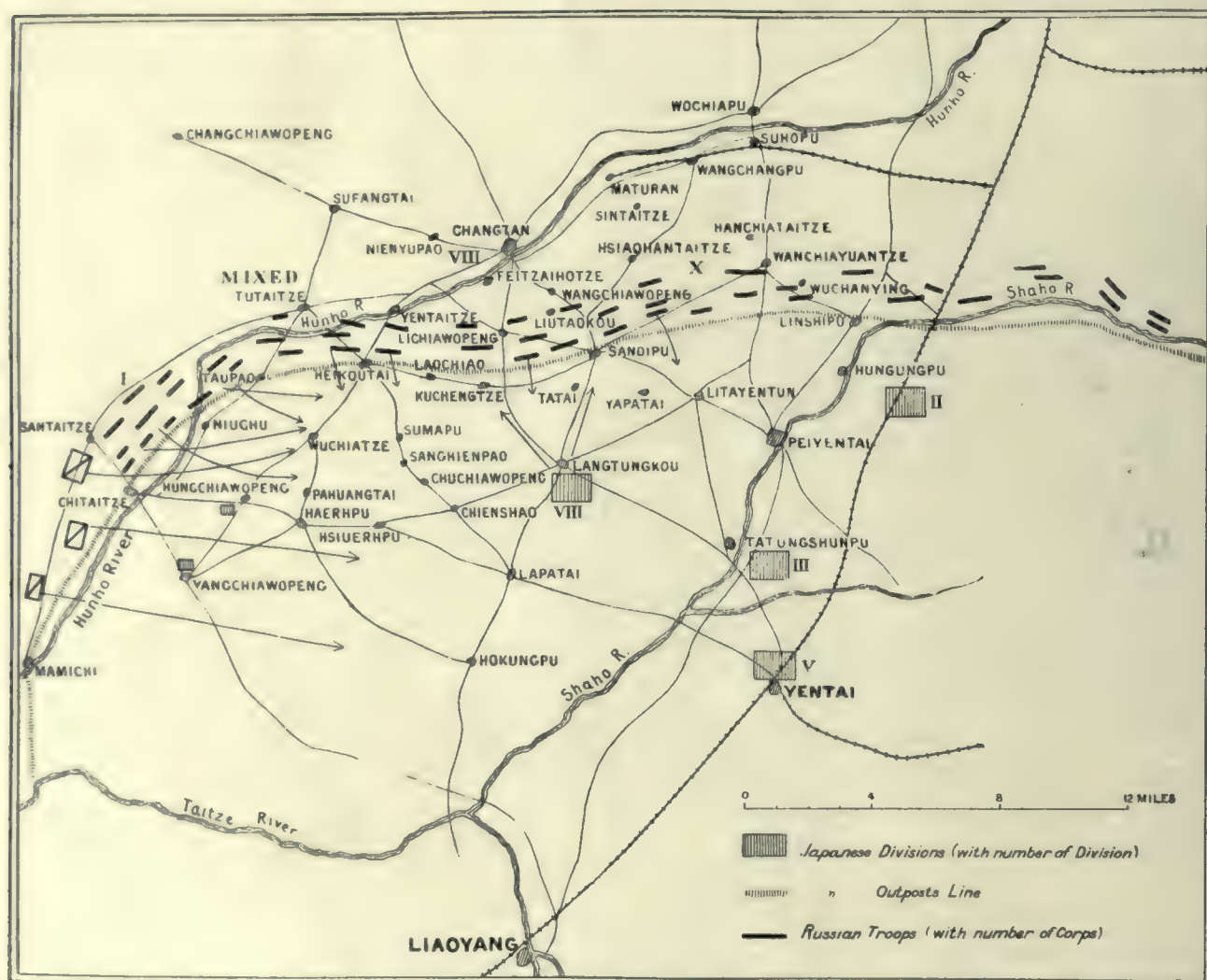
drink they had nothing but lumps of snow which they chewed, for food nothing but dry biscuit. The tortures of the wounded under such conditions were frightful. On the Russian side the ambulances broke down or went astray, and the injured were left for hours lying in the snow, while the Red Cross waggons



GENERAL STOESSEL EXHIBITING HIS CHARGER TO GENERAL NOGI.

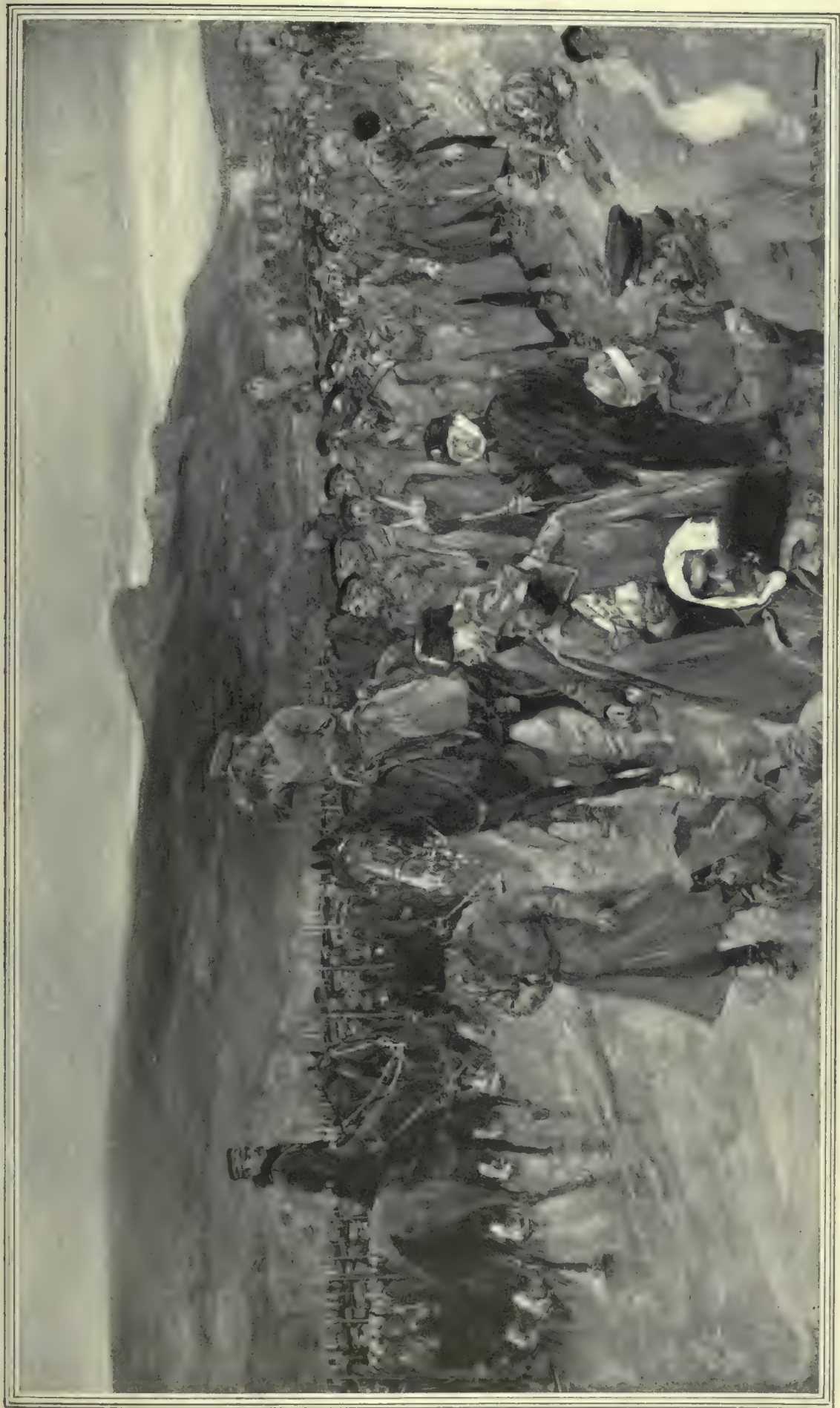
laboured to points where they were not needed. "The frost and snow to which the men were exposed increased the agony caused by their wounds," says Lord Brooke, a correspondent with General Grippenbergs's army. "Indeed, the tortures endured by these men are beyond description—many a soldier who would have recovered in the summer now died of frost-bite."

After its terrible night in the snow and frost the Japanese 5th Division, on the morning of the 28th, advanced with invincible spirit against the Russian columns. Its first proceeding was to beat back the Russian force to the south of Sandipu and to clear the way to that village. Tatai was stormed early in the day; the division fought its way into the village, and then, continuing its advance, carried Liutaokou; another brigade of the same division stormed Lichiaowopeng late in the afternoon. The 8th Division



MAP OF THE BATTLE OF SANDIPU—I.

had simultaneously resumed its attack upon the Russians. It surrounded a small Russian force holding Sumapu and annihilated it; it retook Wuchiatze, and cleared its extreme left, forcing back the Russians in that direction to Hungchiao-wopeng. "We rushed upon the enemy wherever we saw him," writes a non-commissioned officer of this division, "our faces red with anger. We assaulted a height to the east of us, the first defence line of the Russians. I had 15 men under me, and took the lead in the assault. Amid pouring volleys of shot we rushed on, though men kept falling right and left. It was a strange sight. Some men shot in the eyes were rolling in the snow and crying 'Banzai!' for the Emperor; others, bleeding from the breast, were begging their comrades to do the rest of the fighting; others, lying prostrate, were praying for vengeance upon the enemy, while those who were still advancing shouted that they meant to give the enemy a sound thrashing."



THE CAPITULATION OF PORT ARTHUR—THE RUSSIAN GARRISON, LEAVING WHILE THE JAPANESE ENTER.

The artist writes: "The Russians do not seem to have managed the departure of their troops from Port Arthur very well. A large number of men marched out at once when they ought to have waited for orders. Many were quite unfit to walk. Some fainted by the roadside, and there was much unnecessary suffering. The Japanese, as a regiment after regiment passed on its way to Port Arthur, met several bands of these poor stragglers, and, pitiful in such matters, saluted the wounded."



(Copyright photo by J. Rosenthal, of Urbanora.)
GENERAL NOGI INSIDE PORT ARTHUR.

The division advanced to the assault of Heikoutai and found itself under the fire of innumerable Russian machine-guns. Nevertheless, it fought its way into the outskirts of the village, and a great part of the place was in its hands when darkness came on. All through the night the fighting continued in the farms of Heikoutai, and at Litayentun and Liutaokou, and early in the night the Russians once more carried Heikoutai. Late in the night an appeal was made to the Japanese troops to do their utmost, and they were ordered to attack again. Under cover of a terrific bombardment, in the darkness, they advanced to the assault upon Heikoutai, and about 5.30 a.m. the Russians began to give way, in obedience to General Kuropatkin's orders that they should retreat. Hei-

koutai was entered once more; the Japanese carried the whole village soon after daybreak, and now began to push the Russians back all along the line. At Pahuangtai they inflicted heavy loss upon detachments of General Mistchenko's cavalry and the 1st Siberian Corps, and captured some hundreds of prisoners.

The 3rd Japanese Division entered the battle at Litayentun on the 29th, but found the Russian opposition collapsing before it. It attacked Fuchiachwang, to the north of Litayentun, without any decisive result, as it was not permitted to do more than demonstrate in this quarter. The

The Snowstorm Ends.

Japanese Staff had no wish to apply such pressure as would lead the Russians to strengthen their positions to the west of Mukden. The 8th and 5th Divisions, however, moving in pursuit of the Russians in their front, who were now in undisguised retreat, captured Chitaitze.

Huanglahotze, and Tutaitze, and penetrated to Feitzaihotze, thus securing the whole course of the Hunho westward from Changtan. On the night of the 29th the great snowstorm ended at last, and the troops were able to light fires. The close of the battle saw the Japanese in possession of much the same line as they had held before General Grippen-berg's advance, and, though skirmishing continued during the 30th and 31st, the Russians made no further serious



RUSSIAN PRISONERS FROM PORT ARTHUR ARRIVING AT TAKAHAMA, NEAR MATSUYAMA.



THE RUSSIAN GARRISON OF PORT ARTHUR EVACUATING THE FORTRESS.

Photomicrograph
1894



THE JAPANESE SALUTING THE RUSSIAN SOLDIERS DURING THE EVACUATION OF PORT ARTHUR

Of deliberate purpose the Japanese refrained from pursuing the defeated Russians too vigorously. All their moves were dictated by regard for an ulterior purpose; they did not wish to fight a decisive battle till the whole of the Port Arthur army had arrived upon the field. They wished to leave the Russians under the delusion that the Japanese left flank was weakly held and poorly guarded, and to produce the impression that the great Japanese attack would be delivered by the Japanese right or far Eastern army. This, no doubt, was the reason why only just sufficient men to win the battle were brought into action on their side, though the utter inertness of the Russian 3rd and 1st Armies would have permitted them, had they wished to do so, to transfer the divisions from the centre and right, and to fling them upon General Grippenbergh. Actually two divisions of General Kuroki's army



MAP OF THE BATTLE OF SANDIPU—II.

were moved westward, in readiness, but were not needed. It is to be noted that some of the Russians supposed General Nogi to have been present at Sandipu, notwithstanding all the Japanese precautions, and though he was never near this part of the field. Steps had to be taken to correct this impression, and it will be interesting to observe how the Japanese Staff worked with that end in view.

"The battle of Sandipu," says Lord Brooke, who was present with the Russian forces, "had a most deplorable effect on the whole Russian army. The work of three months and more of reorganising the forces since the battle of the Shaho was almost entirely thrown away. Prior to the defeat of Grippenbergh the army had recovered its tone. There were officers more thoughtful and better informed than the majority, who still had misgivings as to the ability of the Russian army to reverse Liaoyang and the Shaho, but they did not affect the general spirit. The men, well-clothed and well-fed, cheered by the presence of new comrades, had enjoyed a long rest, and were full of courage. . . . Then came Sandipu, with its disastrous ending; over 20,000 casualties; the morale of the men greatly weakened; and, worst of all, acute dissension caused in the ranks of the superior officers. All this had a most



(Photo by M. Haynes.

RUSSIAN PRISONERS GOING INTO EXILE. EMBARKING AT DALNY FOR JAPAN

depressing effect, and it is beyond question that the defeat of Sandipu was one of the chief causes of the subsequent rout of the Russians at Mukden."

A fierce quarrel between Generals Kuropatkin and Grippenbergr followed immediately after the battle. General Grippenbergr is alleged to have struck his commander-in-chief after reproaching him bitterly for throwing away a victory and sacrificing the 1st Siberian Corps. Immediately after this

**Russian Generals
Quarrel.**

came the startling news that General Grippenbergr had resigned his command and was on his way home without leave. At the close of the battle he had telegraphed to the

Russian War Office a message to this effect: "I took the fortified positions, but not having been supported

in time, I was compelled to retreat. In the course of my retreat I lost 10,000 men." This telegram was virtually a furious attack upon General Kuropatkin, whom it accused of faulty generalship, and for some hours the St. Petersburg authorities debated whether General Kuropatkin should be called upon to resign. Finally, the Czar decided to give him one more chance and to continue him in the command.

On February 17th the Czar received General Grippenbergr at St. Petersburg and heard his report. The General declared that he had again and again called for reinforcements and begged for orders permitting him to advance, since he had been told that he was not to go beyond a certain definite point. He had with him



RUSSIAN ARTILLERY IN A SNOWSTORM AT THE BATTLE OF HEIKOUTAI.

62 battalions against 120 Japanese (actually there were about 25 Japanese battalions at the opening of the battle and some 50 at its close), yet no reinforcements were sent, and, instead of permission to advance, he received the order to retire. His troops fell back with tears and imprecations. The Czar received his explanations coldly and told him that his Majesty was of General Kuropatkin's opinion.

The recall of Admiral Alexeieff had preceded by only a few weeks the return of General Grippenbergr, and this succession of unfavourable incidents produced a demoralising impression in Russia and still further stimulated the revolutionary party. From the Far East came nothing but tidings of disaster, and it was known that the revolutionary feeling was fast spreading in the Manchurian army, where General Kuropatkin was daily reporting increasing difficulty in holding it in check. It was also known that most of the officers now despaired of victory.



A ROUT OF ASIATIC COSSACKS



A JAPANESE OFFICER'S QUARTERS.

["Collier's Weekly."]

Bilderling, who had a high reputation as a scientific soldier. The 1st Army, under General Linievitch, remain unchanged, which was perhaps the explanation of its better performance in the great trial of strength now fast approaching.

The Japanese had, so far, attempted but little against the railway and the Russian line of communications, and they have been justly censured for failing to make the most of their opportunities.

Destroying a Railway Bridge.

The splendid courage and devotion of the Japanese officers and men peculiarly qualified them for such enterprises. But though one or two gallant officers attempted single-handed to destroy the railway early in the war, nothing serious was undertaken by any organised Japanese force before the opening weeks of 1905. On January 9 a force of 150 picked Japanese cavalry troopers, vowed to death, under the command of Major Naganuma, left Sumapu, which was the scene of so much sanguinary fighting during the battle of Heikoutai, with orders to destroy the important railway bridge south of Changchun and 170 miles north of Mukden. As they rode off they sighted Mistchenko's squadrons, of which we shall read later, on their raid against Newchwang, but, avoiding them, they made their way to the north without misadventure. They had to make an enormous detour to approach their objective without arousing the suspicions of the Russians, and for four weeks they rode steadily in the bitter cold, along unfrequented ways, seeing no Russians. On February 11 they reached the bridge and destroyed a part of it without any difficulty. Turning south to rejoin the Japanese army they found the Cossacks on their track, and on the 14th were attacked by 300 of these horsemen with two guns. The Russians were no match for their enemies, and the force was almost annihilated; one of the guns with it was captured, as also was an ammunition-waggon.

With incredible daring and contempt for their foe, the Japanese took the gun and waggon with them southward, and managed to bring them both into the Japanese lines a



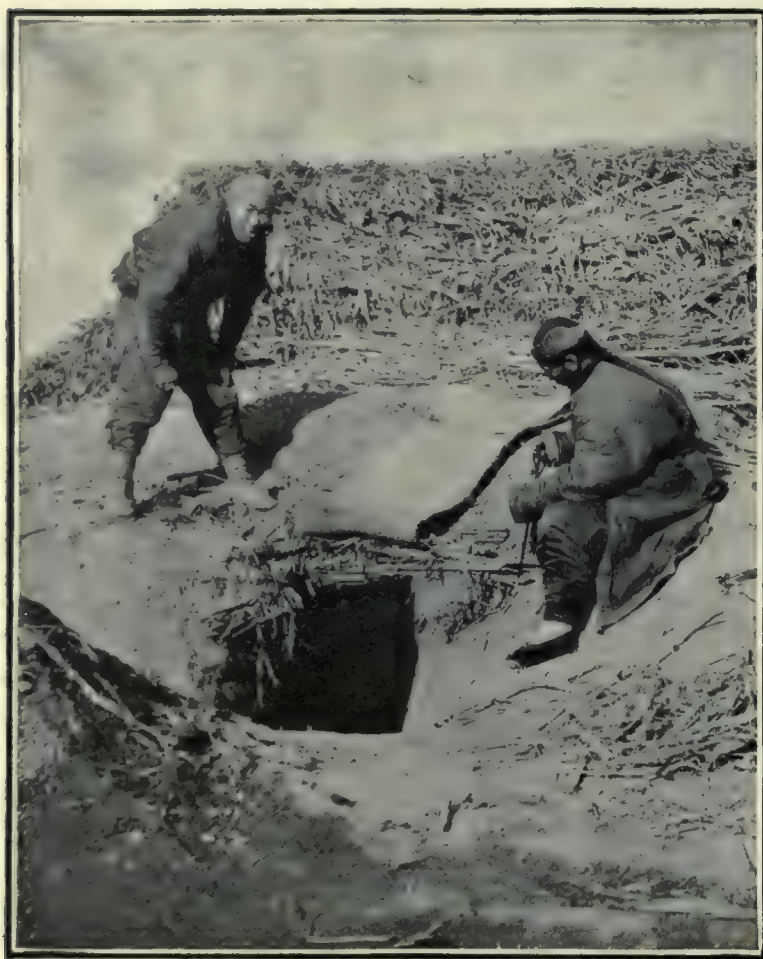
[Copyright, Victor Bulla.]

A DUMB COMBATANT IN LINIEVITCH'S ARMY.



RUSSIAN TROOPS UNDER GENERAL GRIPPENBERG RESISTING AN ATTACK AT SANDIPU.

month later. Meantime their well-timed and vigorous attack caused something approaching panic at the Russian headquarters. Their strength was placed at no fewer than 1,000 cavalry, with 900 infantry, and 2,000 Hunhuses, or about 25 times its real force, and to meet this imaginary column a large force of Russian troops was sent north by rail from before Mukden. Moreover, the appearance of the Japanese in this quarter was taken to prove the existence to the north of the Japanese army, and there were even reports that two Japanese cavalry regiments were close to Harbin, charged with the mission of destroying the hugh bridge over the Sungari. The damage done by the raiders was repaired in a few days, but the moral effect of the raid remained, disquieting General Kuropatkin, filling him with anxiety for his communications, and weakening his force at the front on the eve of a great and decisive battle—the greatest ever fought in the history of mankind.



[Photo, copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
IMPROVISED BOMB-PROOF MADE BY CHINAMEN NEAR YENTAI.

Further reinforcements reached the Russians after the reverse at Sandipu, and many heavy guns arrived from Europe. The casualties were more than made good, as now the Siberian railway was working exceedingly well, notwithstanding strikes and disorders of every kind in Russia. But the losses suffered by the corps which had been longest in the field had been such that their ranks were filled with reservists, married men, with families too often starving in Russia. The hearts of these men were not and could not be in the war, and though they fought with stolid bravery, they were entirely destitute of dash and of élan. Their one daily question was, "When will this war end?"

CHAPTER LVII.

EFFECT OF THE FALL OF PORT ARTHUR ON RUSSIA.—BLOODY SUNDAY AT ST. PETERSBURG.

THE effect of the fall of Port Arthur upon Russia was staggering. All the calculations of the Russian

Staff had assumed that the fortress would hold out till April and delay General Nogi until that date, as General Stoessel had an ample garrison and enormous supplies of food, fuel, and ammunition. By

Effect of Port Arthur's Fall.

April General Kuropatkin would have received powerful reinforcements, and would be able to dispose of 600,000 men, a force, he reported, ample to beat the Japanese. So bitter was the news of the surrender, that for some hours men refused to believe it true. Stoessel, they said, had pledged his solemn word to die rather than hand the fortress over to the Japanese. When the truth was at last realised, a feeling of consternation succeeded the first blind emotion of furious indignation against the soldier who had ignominiously lowered the Russian flag, though the full facts of the surrender were not as yet generally known. A paroxysm of fear at the danger which now threatened General Kuropatkin filled every Russian heart as the certainty that General Nogi with his 100,000 veterans would speedily move to the support of Marshal Oyama was understood. Whether under a bolder and more determined general more could have been done than General Stoessel accomplished is none the less uncertain. The Japanese were the most formidable

assailants a besieged garrison has ever had to encounter, and on January 1 they were ready to rush the town at any cost, and might well have fought their way to the very harbour, notwithstanding all the forts that then remained intact. The Czar rejected the first idea of making peace, and the second of recalling the Baltic fleet and withdrawing General Kuropatkin's army to a position of greater safety. He determined to continue the war, and announced that another grand army, totalling 200,000 men, would be despatched to the aid of his troops in Manchuria. His "inflexible will" was still to be "inflexibly executed." But he left the action of the Japanese out of account in his calculations.



MAP OF THE BATTLE OF SANDIPU—III.

GEORGE PHILIP & SON, LTD.

The first feeling of discouragement in St. Petersburg quickly subsided and men began to hope against hope. Yet on the mass of the Russian people the loss of Port Arthur had a profound and far-reaching effect. Hitherto they had accepted the autocracy because it had brought them success in war and constant aggrandisement. Now they saw that this same Government was unable to defeat the Japanese, and that, through its mismanagement of affairs, it had brought upon Russia calamity after calamity. The fall of Port Arthur had followed upon the disastrous battle on the Shaho, the defeat of Liaoyang, the reverse to the Russian fleet on August 10, the unsuccessful combat upon the Yalu, and the loss inflicted in the Japanese torpedo attack of February 8-9, 1904. The smouldering fire of indignation was fanned to bitter rage, and the first results of the new hostility to the Government were a series of riots, strikes, and dangerous outbreaks in every part of Russia.

Feeling in St. Petersburg.

The reform movement, which had long been gaining strength, and which demanded popular control of the Government, was intensified by the disasters. Instigated by a priest of the name of Gapon, who had been expelled from the Poltava Seminary for revolutionary ideas, the workmen at the great Putiloff Gunworks struck in mid-January, requiring the manager of the works to take back certain men who had been dismissed, and to grant an eight-hours' day. The strike rapidly spread, and its political object was clear when all the works which made cannon or ammunition were compelled to close down, and when even the

great shipbuilding yards on the Neva had to suspend work on the submarines under construction and the cruisers fitting-out for Admiral Rojdestvensky's fleet. A general strike began, and on Saturday, January 21, no newspapers appeared except the Official Gazette, which was printed under military supervision. Three of the most important railways were held up and business in Russia was paralysed.

On the afternoon of the 21st Gapon sent an emissary to the Minister of the Interior urging that the Czar should receive a petition from his people at the Winter Palace on the following day, which was a

Father Gapon.

Sunday. He promised that there should be no violence on the workers' part, and assured the Emperor that there was no cause for fear. Aided by students belonging to the revolutionary party, Gapon had persuaded the workers that all their woes were due to misgovernment, and that an immediate change in the organisation of Russia was necessary and inevitable. The granting of a constitution, he told them, would better the condition of all, and he promised to march at their head to lay their grievances before the Sovereign. Probably he had calculated correctly upon what would

happen, though a patriotic Russian, who saw the lamentable condition into which Russia was rapidly falling as the result of a disastrous war, might well be excused for hoping that at the last moment the Czar's heart would be softened.

The authorities at St. Petersburg, foreseeing trouble, made their preparations. The city was packed with troops and dominated by artillery and machine-guns. A cordon was drawn between the palace and the industrial quarters where the workers lived.

But a great crowd from



RUSSIAN PRISONERS FROM PORT ARTHUR AT TAKAHAMA STATION.

the centre of the city gathered near the Winter Palace, inside the cordon, while vast mobs of workers numbering, as has been computed by eye-witnesses, anything up to 160,000 men assembled outside the cordon. They did this in defiance of notices which covered the walls warning the people not to collect into anything approaching a crowd, as such conduct would lead to action by the military.

About 11 a.m. of the 22nd the first collision with the troops occurred. A crowd of 15,000 workers attempted to pass over one of the bridges on the way from the Putiloff Works to the main part of the city, so as to approach the Palace. They were called upon to stop, but the pressure

**Scenes in
St. Petersburg.**

from behind preventing their obedience, the Cossacks rode at them with the knout and lashed them savagely about the head. The knout alone would not turn them back, and then the glint of sabres was seen in the clear winter sun. The troops, however, were merciful and only employed the flat of their swords. As, even now, the crowd would not give way, the order was issued to load with ball cartridge and to fire. The workers in the front ranks called upon the troops, as "brothers," not to use violence, and protested that they only wished to march to the Palace. The answer was a succession of volleys with the most deadly effect. Forty-three dead were carried away and some 150 left wounded; whereupon, with loud cries for vengeance at the sight of the dying and the dead and the blood-stained snow in the street, the mob gave way and recoiled.



GUARDING THE STREETS OF ST. PETERSBURG AGAINST THE POSSIBLE RISING OF THE WORKERS.

Father Gapon appears to have accompanied the crowd of workers from the Putiloff Works in ordinary clothing, with two priests in their vestments carrying crosses. A number of eikons, or holy pictures, and a portrait of the Emperor were at the head of the procession, and the people marched singing "God save the Czar," "May God grant victory to our orthodox Czar." No respect was shown for Gapon or the pictures by the troops. He is said to have been wounded, though this was afterwards denied, and the pictures and the Emperor's portrait were pierced by numerous bullets. One of the priests in the procession was wounded. Gapon succeeded in escaping to a neighbouring house, and, except for a proclamation next day, little more was heard of him for many months. He quitted Russia, despite all the efforts of the police to find him, and reached Paris in safety.



WOUNDED MEN FROM PORT ARTHUR.

access to the Nicholas Bridge across the Neva. Great crowds assembled outside the cordon, and the pressure on the troops became so serious that, after many appeals to the workers to disperse, the soldiers were ordered to fire. Here again the crowd appealed in vain to the soldiery as brothers, in the hope that the troops would refrain from shooting down the people. The workers were driven back with heavy loss, and proceeded to throw up barricades at various points in the island. These were attacked by the troops and demolished.

On the Schlüsselberg Causeway, in the north-east of the city, another conflict occurred between the military and the crowds. The Cossacks are said to have ridden down and seriously wounded some 30 in the crowd. At the Troitsky Bridge, linking Peterburg Island with the central portion of St. Petersburg, the Cossacks charged a large crowd with their swords and drove it back. Here again the troops fired on the mob and inflicted heavy loss.

About the Winter Palace, within the outer cordon, an enormous crowd assembled, and towards 2 p.m.

The Putiloff workers had therefore completely failed to reach the Winter Palace.

The Putiloff Workers.

They returned to their headquarters, where Gapon's last effort was made in the form of an incendiary proclamation declaring that "There is no Czar now. Innocent blood has flowed between him and the people. Long live the struggle for freedom; to-morrow I shall be with you; to-day I am too busy." Revolutionary tracts were distributed broadcast and large crowds cheered and shouted for the fall of the autocracy, but nothing serious was attempted. For the moment the manifestation in this quarter evaporated in windy talk.

The workers living on Vasilievsky Island were expected to march in force upon the Palace, and precautions were taken to head them off. A considerable force of troops was stationed in the island, holding the streets giving



THE CZAR RECEIVING A DEPUTATION OF WORKMEN AT TSARSKOE SELO AFTER THE RIOTS.

began to assume a threatening attitude. Reinforcements were hurried up to the troops on duty, but the situation was undoubtedly critical, and had the soldiers refused to do their duty, as the crowd expected would be the case, the autocracy might have collapsed that day. The two great thoroughfares, the Morskaia and the Nevsky Prospect, were packed with curious onlookers, with students disguised as workers, and with genuine working-men. Several officers passing down the Nevsky Prospect were attacked and ill-treated, though the report current at the time that a general was torn to pieces by the mob proved to have been a wild invention. The police exhorted the people to disperse and were received with jeers; they drew their swords, but could effect nothing; in an instant there was a terrific uproar, and the whole seething human mass in an infuriated state began to press

**At the
Winter Palace.**



THE LATE GRAND DUKE SERGIUS
ALEXANDROVITCH.

towards the Palace. Then the troops moved. A force of cavalry rode down the Morskaia and endeavoured to clear it. Soon after 4 p.m. a Guards battalion formed across the Nevsky Prospect in two masses, looking up and down the street, and, presenting bayonets, began to force the people back. The rage of the crowd redoubled; shouts of "butchers" were heard, and the officers of the Guards, probably fearing that their men would yield, without sufficiently warning the crowd, gave the order to fire. Victims fell by the dozen, and once more the brown snow of the street was red with blood. Women and children shared the fate of revolutionary agitators. A child of only eight years old lay dead in the snow with its head blown almost to pieces, at such close quarters had the firing taken place. The whole scene was one of unforgettable horror. But the effect was instantaneous. About 60 wounded dragged themselves slowly away, leaving trails of blood behind them; the crowd fled in dismay and collected, with fierce imprecations against the troops, in the side streets, where they were comparatively safe.

Fighting went on in the suburbs all the evening and night, but it was not of a serious nature, nor was artillery

**Fighting in the
Suburbs.**

used. The number of the killed was officially returned at 96, and of the wounded at 333, but there is good

reason for believing that the actual casualties were at least treble, and some estimates represented them as ten times as great. On the 23rd and 24th St. Petersburg remained comparatively quiet, though on the 24th a serious conflict between the troops and a large number of workers from Kolpino took place near Tsarskoe Selo, where the Czar was in residence. Some hundreds of workers were killed or wounded. On the 24th General Trepoff, an officer famous for his merciless determination and readiness to shoot, was given charge of the city, which was placed under the equivalent of martial law. The strikers were ordered to resume work under peril of deportation to distant villages in the event of disobedience. The net result of the severe "lesson" administered to the revolutionary party was that it determined to abstain from active resistance until it had completed its organisation for another and far greater trial of strength later in the year. But throughout Russia anarchy continued, strikes constantly breaking out in centre after centre, and in almost all the large towns there were more or less serious disorders. The effect of these disturbances was to hinder the mobilisation and to impede the despatch of reinforcements to General Kuropatkin.

A terrible revenge was taken upon the Imperial family by the revolutionists. On February 17 the Grand Duke Sergius, the uncle and brother-in-law of the Czar, who was famous for his reactionary violence,



FUNERAL SERVICE IN THE KREMLIN FOR THE GRAND DUKE SERGIUS.

The body of the Grand Duke lay in state in the little church within the Chudoff Monastery. The scene was very impressive, the catafalque being lit by two massive candelabra bearing clusters of candles. The body was guarded by soldiers.

was killed by a bomb which was thrown under his carriage at Moscow. He had frequently been threatened with death, and his life had repeatedly been attempted. It was even reported that the revolutionary party had condemned the Czar himself to death, though in the light of recent evidence this does not appear to have been true. The aim of the revolutionaries seems rather to have been to terrify his Majesty and to cow him into concessions by menacing those nearest and dearest to him.

Death of the Grand Duke.

Thus, with street fighting, slaughter, and assassination at home and utter defeat abroad, opened the year 1905 for Russia. While Russians were fighting amongst themselves and while Russian troops were firing upon Russian mobs, Japan gave to the world an example of a nation absolutely united, bearing with patience her cruel burden, free, progressive, enlightened, and winning by her own prowess freedom for the subjects of the Czar as well as liberty for her own people.

CHAPTER LVIII.

THE VANISHED JAPANESE ARMY—AND THE VAIN SEARCH FOR IT.

AFTER the fall of Port Arthur, for all practical purposes General Nogi's army disappeared. For the next two months no man knew of its whereabouts, and its units were

nowhere definitely located. General Kuropatkin had expected it immediately to appear in his front and was correspondingly puzzled when no sign of it could be discovered. What exactly became of it is to this hour a secret, though it is certain that a large part of the army was railed to some

Nogi Disappears.



WHERE THE GRAND DUKE SERGIUS WAS KILLED IN MOSCOW.

northern destination shortly after the fall of Port Arthur. The Japanese Staff meditated a staggering surprise for the Russians, and to effect that surprise it was vital that General Nogi should fall, as it were, from the sky at the appointed moment.

All the winter the two armies had held their lines on the Shaho, constantly fortifying them. The Japanese had three lines of works, two of which were of immense strength. The first followed the upper course of the Shaho, and then, where that stream bends south, turned towards the Hunho, across the almost level, hard-frozen plain. For various reasons it was not strongly fortified on its western extremity, as the Japanese had observed that wherever they threw up works the Russians, with patient imitateness, did the

same; and they were anxious to have the ground to the west clear of field-works. Inside this outer line was another of great strength about Yentai, following generally the course of the Shiliho; and inside this again was the third and last position about Liaoyang, the strongest and most formidable of all.

The Japanese army was not in very strong force. It had been deemed inadvisable to send up to the front the new troops raised in Japan before the opening of February. The Japanese Staff was as usual exceedingly optimistic, and estimated that, with the strength of about 200,000 men which it possessed on the Shaho and Hunho, it could hold the Russian army at bay. The risks taken were considerable, as reinforcements were constantly reaching General Kuropatkin, and early in January his strength was about 300,000 men, with 2,000 guns. Thus he outnumbered Marshal Oyama by nearly three to two, and had his generalship been of high order, or



TWO ORPHANS FROM PORT ARTHUR.

had the fighting quality of his troops approached that of the Japanese, the Marshal might have had to pay very dearly for his temerity. General Nogi, with the reinforcements which had just reached him, or which were on the way to him, could dispose of 100,000 men, and about 150,000 more troops were landing at Dalny, or other ports along the coast-line, timed to reach the front in mid-February.

In face of the fact that General Nogi was nowhere visible, General Kuropatkin's anxiety grew. It was vital for him to ascertain where the missing Japanese army was and what it was planning. At the same time

Mistchenko's Raid. urgent appeals were made to him from St. Petersburg to attempt something to remove the dismay caused by the fall of Port Arthur. He therefore determined to push a reconnaissance south towards Newchwang to ascertain if General Nogi and his army were in this direction, and to raid one of the Japanese main bases of supplies. Reference has already been made in the chapter on Heikontai to the force charged with this mission—General Mistchenko's cavalry, over 7,000 strong, with numerous horse artillery batteries, stationed on the Russian right or western flank on the Hunho. This

cavalry, though within striking distance of the railway to Liaoyang, had remained almost inactive through the earlier months of the winter. Its exploits were insignificant. On January 1 it attacked the railway between Anshantien and Haicheng with 100 Cossacks, blowing up a small portion of the line and damaging a train, though without capturing or derailing it. Three Cossacks were captured when the Russians retired. On the 7th another attempt was made at about the same point, but resulted in nothing more than the destruction of two telegraph-posts beside the line, which remained intact.

To get at Newchwang without danger to himself, Mistchenko determined to violate Chinese neutrality and to move down the country to the west of the Liao River, where the Japanese as yet maintained no patrols. The Russians had no intention of playing the game fairly; the rules were made for the Japanese

and not for their own observance. It is, however, fairly certain that the Japanese Staff had some inkling of what was intended, and, in view of the future operations which it had planned, was not altogether sorry to see the Russians establishing a precedent which might be conveniently used against themselves. On the 8th Mistchenko assembled his force near Sinminting and then pushed rapidly south through neutral territory to Sanchaho, where he crossed the Liao, as he was now behind the Japanese outpost line. On his way south he came into collision with a force of 500 Hunhuses and inflicted heavy loss upon them without seriously suffering himself. On the 10th he crossed the Liao on the ice and rode towards Old Newchwang, the small Japanese garrison of which place immediately fell back, giving the alarm. He did not enter the town but divided his force into four sections, one of which he ordered to cut the railway near Liaoyang, the second to destroy it at Haicheng,



FATHER GAPON, THE LEADER OF THE STRIKE MOVEMENT IN ST. PETERSBURG.

Standing by the side of the strike leader is General Fullon, the Governor of St. Petersburg, who was replaced by the notorious "policeman," General Trepoff. Father Gapon is of Italian descent, one of his ancestors, Gubbioni, having followed Napoleon I. to Moscow.



BARON KAULBARS.

the third to attack Tashichiao, while the fourth remained with him outside Old Newchwang. On the Japanese side the night was not spent in inactivity. Reinforcements were brought up by railway from north and south and poured into Old Newchwang, which was at once reoccupied while Mistchenko quietly slept. At daybreak he advanced against the town but found that its capture was now out of the question. He had wasted some 12 hours, and in war the waste of even a few minutes is not easily repaired.

Attacking half-heartedly and timidly, he was beaten off. He did not renew his attack, but remained outside Old Newchwang with the bulk

The Raid Fails.

of his force to cover the movements of his other detachments. These failed as discreditably as his main force. The detachment sent southwards split up into two bodies, and one moved against Tashichiao, while the other attacked the Japanese commissariat stores at Niuchiattun, five miles from Newchwang, on the 12th. Japanese reinforcements had, however, already reached Niuchiattun, and the Russians when they rode upon the place, expecting easily to

effect its capture, were received by a battalion of Japanese infantry with a fire which sent them back in utter disorder, inflicting upon them 80 casualties at least, no fewer than 62 dead being left upon the field. A little forage burnt was the only solid result accomplished in return for this punishment. The detachment which rode upon Tashichiao removed a few rails and tore down half-a-dozen telegraph-posts, but all the damage done was repaired in the course of two or three hours by the Japanese. The Russian detachment which was to cut the railway near Liaoyang got as far as Anshantien, but there came into collision with a strong Japanese force which worked to the south of it and cut it off from Newchwang and Mistchenko. The Haicheng force in the same way found the Japanese moving against its rear and line of communications. On the 11th the Japanese attacked the two detachments of Russians near Tangmasai and, after sharp fighting lasting more than three hours, drove them back in confusion, inflicting upon them heavy loss. Strong reinforcements joined the Russians on the night of the 11th, but the Japanese were now moving fast in great force, and at Liuerhpao further losses were inflicted upon the Russians and the disorder in their force greatly increased.

On the 13th the Japanese were prepared to close upon the Russians from three directions—from Newchwang Port, from Haicheng, and from Liuerhpao, driving them back on Chinese territory. Mistchenko was left face to face with the alternatives of ignominiously surrendering to his enemy, or of violating Chinese territory before the very eyes of the Japanese. He chose the second alternative. But on the 14th, before he could get his cavalry and guns across the ice of the Liao, he was attacked by Colonel Tsugawa at Sanchaho and narrowly escaped capture. Heavy loss was inflicted upon him and 300 of his force were killed or wounded, while a large quantity of his material was captured by the Japanese upon the field. During the next two days the Japanese fought several small combats with portions of the Russian force which had gone astray, in every case with success.

The performance of the Cossacks in this raid illustrated their dismal inferiority as fighting men to the Japanese. The damage which they did

Failure of the Cossacks.

was trifling; six Boers would have accomplished infinitely more than this host of 7,000 men. Where they did cut the railway, they only removed a few rails, which it was the simplest possible affair for the Japanese to replace. They never made a serious effort to attack the bridges, because the bridges were held by small Japanese garrisons, and the main effort of the Cossacks seemed to be to avoid any fighting. Napoleon



GENERAL BILDERLING.

declared of the Cossacks that they were quite worthless against steady troops, and this raid a century later justifies his conclusion. Incomparable in the attack upon helpless and unarmed mobs, the Cossacks almost uniformly turned tail before the bayonets and rifles of the calm, intrepid Japanese infantry. Their forte was the slaughter of women and children in the Russian streets, not the combat in the field.



GENERAL GRIPPENBERG COMMANDER OF THE RUSSIAN SECOND ARMY.

Of Mistchenko's conduct it is impossible to speak without contempt. Had he moved with energy and decision he might have inflicted immense damage upon the Japanese. But when fortune smiled upon him he sat down and waited, with the result that he lost chance after chance. By a violation of neutrality he gained an initial advantage; that advantage he was unable to turn to effect. His column was loaded up with pack-horses and encumbered with many guns, but the real fault which characterised it was its timidity. The Japanese, on the other hand, acted with energy and resolution. They rapidly brought up reinforcements and so disposed them as to threaten Mistchenko with total destruction if he did not make the most hurried of retirements. The raid was represented in Europe as a brilliant success, because it was important to influence opinion favourably towards a new Russian loan which was then upon the stocks. But opinion in the Russian army held that

**Mistchenko's
Conduct.**



RUSSIAN PATIENTS FROM PORT ARTHUR AT TAKAYAMA STATION, JAPAN.

the Japanese had no great force to the west of the Hunho, while the flatness of the country in this direction, the abundance of food in the Chinese villages which covered it, and the ease with which it could be traversed now that it was iron-bound with frost and now that all the swamps and rivers afforded the best of going, invited a Russian movement by the west against the weak Japanese left flank.

It was highly characteristic of the Russian want of truthfulness and honesty that on the eve of this double violation of Chinese territory by General Mistchenko the Russian Government should have delivered a menacing

**Russian
Arrogance.**

note to the Chinese Government, accusing it of failing to observe a strict neutrality. But the days had passed when Peking could be terrified by Russian threats. Since the fall of Port Arthur and the victories on the Shaho and at Liaoyang, the Chinese Government had picked up some small modicum of courage and no longer cowered before the Russian Minister. There can be no doubt that the Chinese had done their best honestly to maintain neutrality, but the fact was that the war had been caused by Russia's retention of a Chinese province which she had promised to evacuate and that the Russian army every day violated even the arbitrary line which it had drawn as marking the limit of the area affected by the war. If Japan, as the Russians said, obtained supplies from China, so also did the Russian army; Sinminting, in Chinese territory, was for all practical purposes a Russian depot with a Russian garrison.

Mistchenko's miserable failure caused fresh depression in the Russian army. To fight at once was more and more imperative as each day passed and the whereabouts of the Japanese Port Arthur army still remained uncertain. One fact was sure—that sooner or later it must appear upon the scene; and General Kuropatkin's

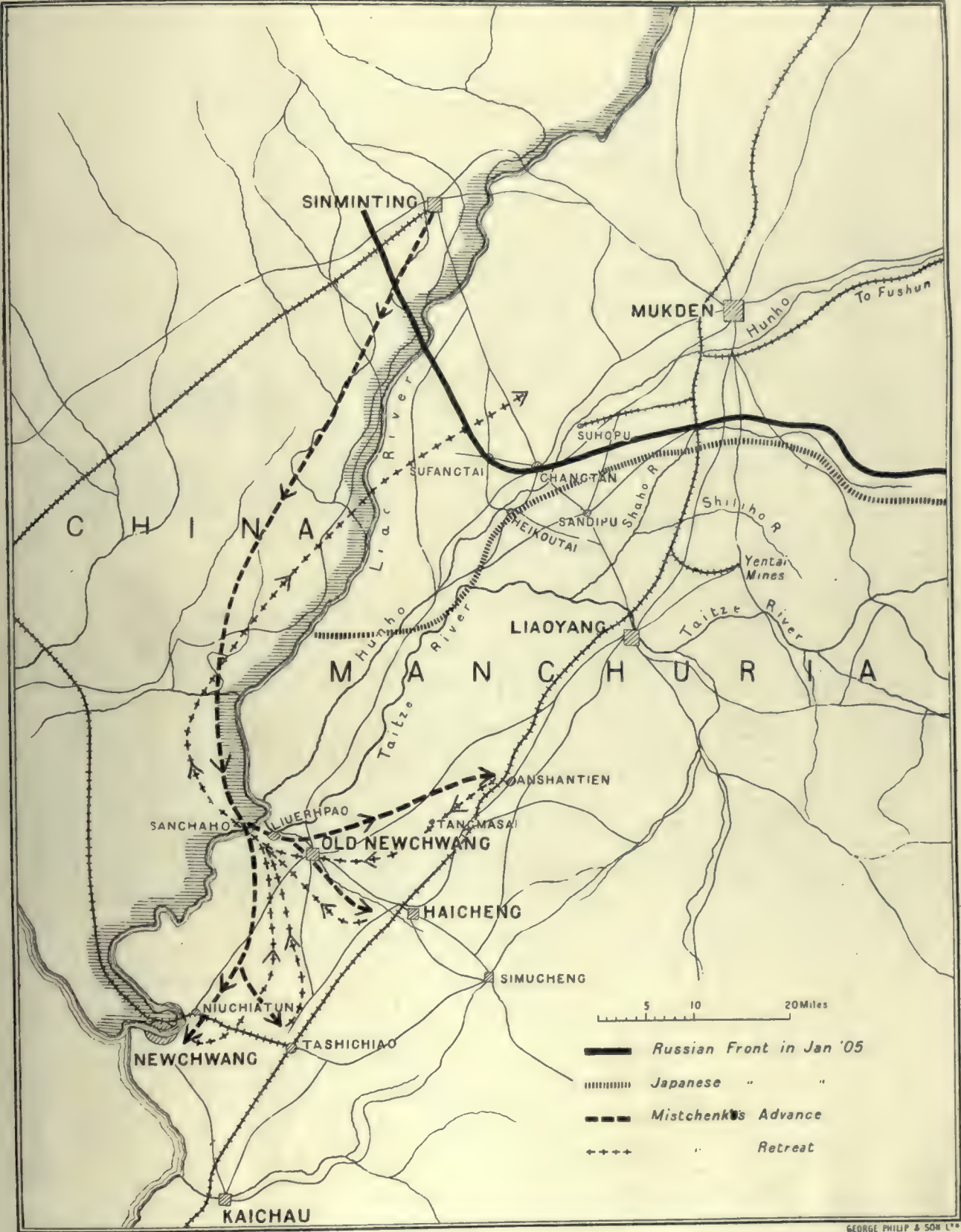
Mistchenko had failed without any real excuse, and that his troops had given proof of the most lamentable incapacity and want of nerve.

The whereabouts of Nogi's force this reconnaissance utterly failed to ascertain. That they were not at Newchwang was certain, nor were any of the units of the Port Arthur army encountered in the subsequent fighting between the Cossacks and the Japanese. It was, however, fairly clear that



[Copyright, "Collier's Weekly."
MAJOR YOKURA, FIRST ADMINISTRATOR OF PORT ARTHUR.

one chance of success was now to strike before it came into line. Activity alone could remove the demoralisation caused by the fall of the great Russian fortress, pronounced so often to be impregnable. With extreme simplicity the Russian Government gave the world full warning of its intentions. On



GEORGE PHILIP & SON LTD

DISTRICT BETWEEN NEWCHWANG AND MUKDEN.

January 17 St. Petersburg was affirming that the hour of action was at hand. The Russian army would take the offensive in the valley of the Hunho with four corps, while the rest of its units assailed the Japanese line at other points. A great victory was within the bounds of possibility—indeed, was to be expected. The Japanese held their tongues, made their dispositions, and waited for these confident predictions to be accomplished.

With the arrival of General Kaulbars from Europe in January and before the battle of Heikoutai, the Russian army had been completely reorganised. It then consisted of three distinct armies under the direction of General Kuropatkin. The 1st Army, under General Linievitch, was stationed on the eastern section of the Russian front, for after the aimless attempt to invade Korea, where small Russian parties were even now infesting the north-east coast, Linievitch had been ordered to take station to the east of Mukden. In the centre was General Kaulbars.

Disposition of the Russian Army.



ARRIVAL AT TAKAHAMA OF RUSSIAN PRISONERS OF WAR FROM PORT ARTHUR.

holding the front immediately to the south of Mukden, with the 3rd Army. On the west, or Russian right, was General Gripenberg, commanding the 2nd Army, with his headquarters well to the south-west of Mukden, at Sufangtai. The following was the composition of the various Russian armies:

1st Army—2nd, 3rd, 4th Siberian Corps, 1st European Corps.

2nd Army—1st Siberian Corps, 8th and 10th European Corps, and mixed rifle brigades.

3rd Army—5th and 6th Siberian Corps, 17th European Corps.

Over and above the ten army corps, each nominally 40,000 men strong, though actually the strength in no case exceeded 30,000 and in some instances fell far short of that number, General Kuropatkin had the 16th Army Corps in reserve near Mukden, a number of rifle brigades, a vast artillery, a large force of cavalry and Cossacks, numerous heavy guns, and technical troops to meet all his requirements. At the close of January the total force facing the Japanese at the Shaho could not be put at much under 330,000, and may have slightly exceeded that figure. The constant arrival of reinforcements.

from Europe had once more raised the morale of the troops, after the first emotion caused by the fall of Port Arthur had subsided, and officers and men were anxious to try conclusions with the Japanese. The Russians imagined that, fighting in severe weather in the level plain of the Hunho, they would have a marked advantage. They argued that hitherto they had been beaten only in the mountains, and failed to draw the correct moral from General Mistchenko's dismal failure, which was that they had no real chance of success in the plains.

The railway system had also been greatly improved.

The Railway System.

A line had been carried east from a point south of the Hunho, near Mukden, to Fushun, where were General Linievitch's headquarters, and this line was now in process of being continued as far north as Tiehling, thus giving the Russians two lines of communication with that place. Towards the west a tram-line had been carried out to Suhopu on the Hunho, to keep General Grippenbergs troops supplied, and its construction to Sufangtai was under discussion in the usual leisurely Russian manner. The hardness of the ground, however, even in the absence of a railway, rendered the work of supplying the army relatively easy. Telegraphs and telephones had been carried in all directions, and now the Russians

in this respect were not one whit behind the Japanese. Immense quantities of stores had been accumulated at Mukden in readiness for the final advance against Marshal Oyama.



(Drawn from a photo) by Arthur Garratt.

ADMIRAL TOGO PLANTING A LAUREL AT TOKIO.

This picture shows the veteran Admiral planting a tree in the Hiboya Park at the public celebration over the fall of Port Arthur. The laurel is used in the East as in the West as a badge of honour.

CHAPTER LIX.

THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN—I.

IN mid-February strong reinforcements from Japan reached the army before Mukden. Six new divisions had been raised and were now despatched to the front, besides which a large number of reserve brigades had been at an earlier date attached to the original 13 divisions in the field. Of the disposition of the Japanese forces the Russian Staff was completely ignorant. The Japanese force confronting General



Copyright, Victor Bulla.
GENERAL STOESEL WITH HIS SON ON HIS WAY
TO SEE THE CZAR AFTER HIS RETURN TO ST.
PETERSBURG.

Kuropatkin consisted, so far as the Russians knew, of only three armies. These were the 1st, under General

The Japanese Armies.

Kuroki, composed of the 12th, 2nd, and Guards Divisions, from left to right, with an additional division now added, stationed on the eastern front from the headwaters of the Shaho to Pensiho; the 4th Army, under General Nodzu, comprising the 6th and 10th Divisions, with one new division, holding the centre from the railway to Makuantze; and the 2nd Army, under General Oku, consisting of the 3rd, 4th, 5th, and one new division, holding the west front from the railway to the Hunho. The 8th Division constituted the reserve of the army, which thus mustered, according to the Russian calculation, 12 divisions.

A 5th Japanese army, under General Kawamura, was known to have been formed in January and to have sailed for the mainland, where the Russians supposed it to be advancing up the east coast of Korea. Actually it had landed at the mouth of the Yalu and marched swiftly up on the Japanese right, where it was joined by the

11th Division detached from the Port Arthur army. It included two of the new divisions in addition, and its presence in Manchuria was altogether unknown to the Russians. The 3rd or Port Arthur army under General Nogi had in mid-February assembled at Shahopeiho, to the west of Liaoyang, with the 1st, 7th, and 9th Divisions, and one of the new divisions. Its presence in this quarter was not even suspected by the Russian Staff, who were inclined to place it on the Japanese right, misled by the capture of one or two soldiers of the 11th Division in the east, who were probably instructed to say that they came from Port Arthur with the whole of the Port Arthur army to that quarter of the field.

To conceal General Nogi's presence to the west, every possible precaution was taken by the Japanese. The whole of the Japanese cavalry was brought over to this flank and so disposed as to form an effective screen. Though the Russian cavalry were only a few miles away, they saw and learnt nothing of this concentration. They had been greatly weakened as the result of General Kuropatkin's dispositions. The Russian commander-in-chief, fearing for his communications, had sent a considerable part of his cavalry north to look after the Japanese column which he supposed to be operating far to his rear, against the railway, and which, as we know, really consisted of Major Naganuma's little detachment. No one, whether soldier or civilian, was allowed to pass the Japanese screen before Shahopeiho, and outward



GENERAL STOESEL IN RUSSIA. MEETING PORT ARTHUR HEROES AT THEODOSIA.



THE RUSSIAN RAID ON THE RAILWAY NEAR NEWCHWANG.

appearances disclosed not the faintest sign of Japanese activity in this direction. Yet 100,000 men, concentrated within an area of a few miles, waited the order to begin their resistless advance which was, so the Japanese hoped, to prove the great surprise and to bring the crowning triumph of the war.

The total Japanese force now probably exceeded 420,000 men and may have reached 500,000. The Russian force consisted of the three great armies, the 1st, under General Linievitch, holding the front from Putiloff Hill eastward to Pienling. Outlying corps and strong detachments were posted at Hwaiyen, Hsingking, and Chinhocheng, places far to the east. The eastern army was exceedingly formidable and contained the very flower of the Russian forces. It lay behind works stronger in nature than those erected by the Russians at Liaoyang—huge redoubts with ditches and wire entanglements—and it drew its supplies from Fushun, whither ran a tramway from Mukden. The central,

The Rival Army.



RUSSIAN PRISONERS OF WAR AT TAKAHAMA.

The guitar is the prisoner's own make.

or 3rd Army, under General Bilderling, had its headquarters at Suchiatun, and held the centre in great force, from Putiloff Hill to a point west of Wuchanying. The right or western army, the 2nd, under General Kaulbars, had its headquarters at Maturan, on the branch railway which ran from the Hunho to Suchiatun. Its front extended from Sufangtai to Wuchanying.

Fearing a turning movement from the west, General Kuropatkin had taken certain precautions. He kept the 16th Corps in reserve, south of Mukden, and he also secretly erected a strong line of works running parallel to the railway, about five miles west of it, from the Hunho River to Tashihchiao on the road from Sinminting to Mukden. A rather strong series of works ran along the north bank of the Hunho, from the neighbourhood of Changtan to Fushun, forming a second line of defence behind the great line of works on the Shaho. These precautions he considered sufficient, though some disquietude was caused to the Russian Staff by the large number of Japanese spies who were arrested in the country west of Mukden. They met death calmly and nobly, without disclosing a single fact, but their presence was alarming. For each one that was taken it was certain that three escaped with important information, and the appearance of so many



GENERAL MISTCHENKO'S COSSACK CHARGE AGAINST THE JAPANESE.



THE SACRED GATE OF THE EMPEROR AT MUKDEN.

his left flank. To the east, then, he directed his main attention, and in that part of the field he concentrated 150,000 men of the 350,000 under his command. The vast, melancholy plain to the west of Mukden was not kept under careful observation; the way was left open for the new Japanese army.

General Kuropatkin, in mid-February, was meditating an offensive move. Fantastic calculations, prepared by his Staff, proved that the Japanese could not have more than 300,000 men in the field, of whom not all were in Manchuria. Giving Marshal Oyama 200,000, the Russians should still have a decided advantage. The Russian generalissimo had been stung by the knowledge which reached him during the winter—that the Japanese both at Liaoyang and at the Shaho had been inferior in strength to his own army. Whereas before he had over-estimated their strength, he now altogether under-estimated it, misled by the deliberately deceptive or merely foolish reasoning of the German military papers. Yet while he wished to assume the offensive, he constantly hesitated. He knew the terrible ardour and fanaticism of the Japanese and felt only too painfully the want of morale in his own troops. It is said that he issued orders for a general movement to begin on February 22, and, at General Kaulbars' suggestion, postponed it till the 25th. But before the 25th came the Japanese had opened the attack and their solid columns were marching towards the sacred city of Manchuria.

During February skirmishing had constantly proceeded along the Shaho line, as each side was eager to feel the strength of the other. The Japanese in their reconnaissance failed to ascertain the full Russian strength to the east; the precautions taken by General Linievitch were such that it was difficult to penetrate his lines of outposts; and the fact that they under-estimated the Russian forces in this quarter was the cause which ultimately prevented the Japanese from accomplishing their purpose of capturing not merely Mukden but also the whole Russian army. On February 20 the Japanese arrangements were complete and their armies were in the assigned positions. The rivers were still frozen—a matter of immense importance—though bridging material was prepared to meet the possibility of a thaw;

secret service agents suggested that a move against the Russian right might form part of the Japanese plan. Yet General Kuropatkin, on the whole, opined that the attack would come from the east. To the east lay the mountains in which the Japanese had so constantly operated, and he imagined that Major Naganuma's little band of raiders was really the vanguard of a Japanese army turning



RUSSIAN OFFICERS WHO SURRENDERED AT PORT ARTHUR. ARRIVAL AT TAKAHAMA.

the plains and mountains were covered with snow and the ground was hard as iron. Hence the troops had to be provided with sand-bags and blocks of wood, to carry with them and use for shelter when delivering their attacks.

The Japanese intended to open the battle with a great movement against the Russian left. The idea was that when General Linievitch came into contact with General Kawamura's army, he would suppose it to be General Nogi's, and with his commander-in-chief would jump to the conclusion that the main turning movement was coming from the east. The Japanese Staff divined the exact effect which the contact with General Kawamura would have upon General Kuropatkin; they argued, quite rightly, that it would lead him to denude his western flank of

The Japanese Scheme.

troops, and to transfer to the east a part of the 2nd Army, thus opening a path for General Nogi and facilitating his movement against Mukden from the north-west. To deliver the final blow, General Nogi's army was chosen, even after its fearful sacrifices before Port Arthur. Upon it would fall the heaviest fighting, the most certain loss. But it was generally known throughout the Japanese army that General Nogi's last and deepest wish was to follow his two sons to the world beyond the grave, accomplishing some supreme act of heroism and sacrifice, and this desire struck a responsive note amongst his men. His four divisions burnt with zeal and ardour and were ready under his leading to die to the last man. That this was no mere rhetorical figure of speech their record at Port Arthur had proved. Greatest of all qualities in the great general is the power to evoke from his troops exultant obedience when he sends them to certain death.

And thus Marshal Oyama, "with his phalanx of stern leaders, closely bound to each other by an almost fanatical sense of duty, with his army of ever-conquering soldiers in the prime of life,

burning with enthusiasm, so accustomed to drive the enemy before them that they never even dreamed of the possibility of defeat, inflamed by a noble pride in their country which led them to accept the most desperate enterprises as the highest honour and the supremest felicity, could give orders which brought victory. The entire army, from its commander-in-chief to the humblest recruit, palpitated with furious enthusiasm. The entire army, unshakable in its position with its threefold lines of communication, by Newchwang, by Dalny, and by Korea, strained to the accomplishment of one common end, in conflict with which there existed no individual aims, no individual aspirations, no individual ambitions, meant to 'Drive back the Russians! Beat the Russians! Crush the Russians utterly!'" And this was the result of Russia's madness in provoking war by chicanery and deceit, in menacing one of the greatest of the world's peoples with utter destruction, and in defying the moral laws of the universe. Against an army, the best that has ever marched to war and by far the most numerous ever assembled on one battlefield, were



THE DEFENDER AND THE HEROINE OF PORT ARTHUR HOMEWARD BOUND.

General and Mdme. Stoessel on board the "St. Nicholas."



GENERAL LINIEVITCH,

[Bolak.

Who succeeded General Kuropatkin in the command of the Russian Army.

Machuntun, dislodging the enemy from the intervening positions and driving in the Russian left wing. The final mission of this army, if it succeeded in its preliminary attacks, was to close in upon Mukden from the north-east, and thus to complete the rout and envelopment of General Kuropatkin's army.

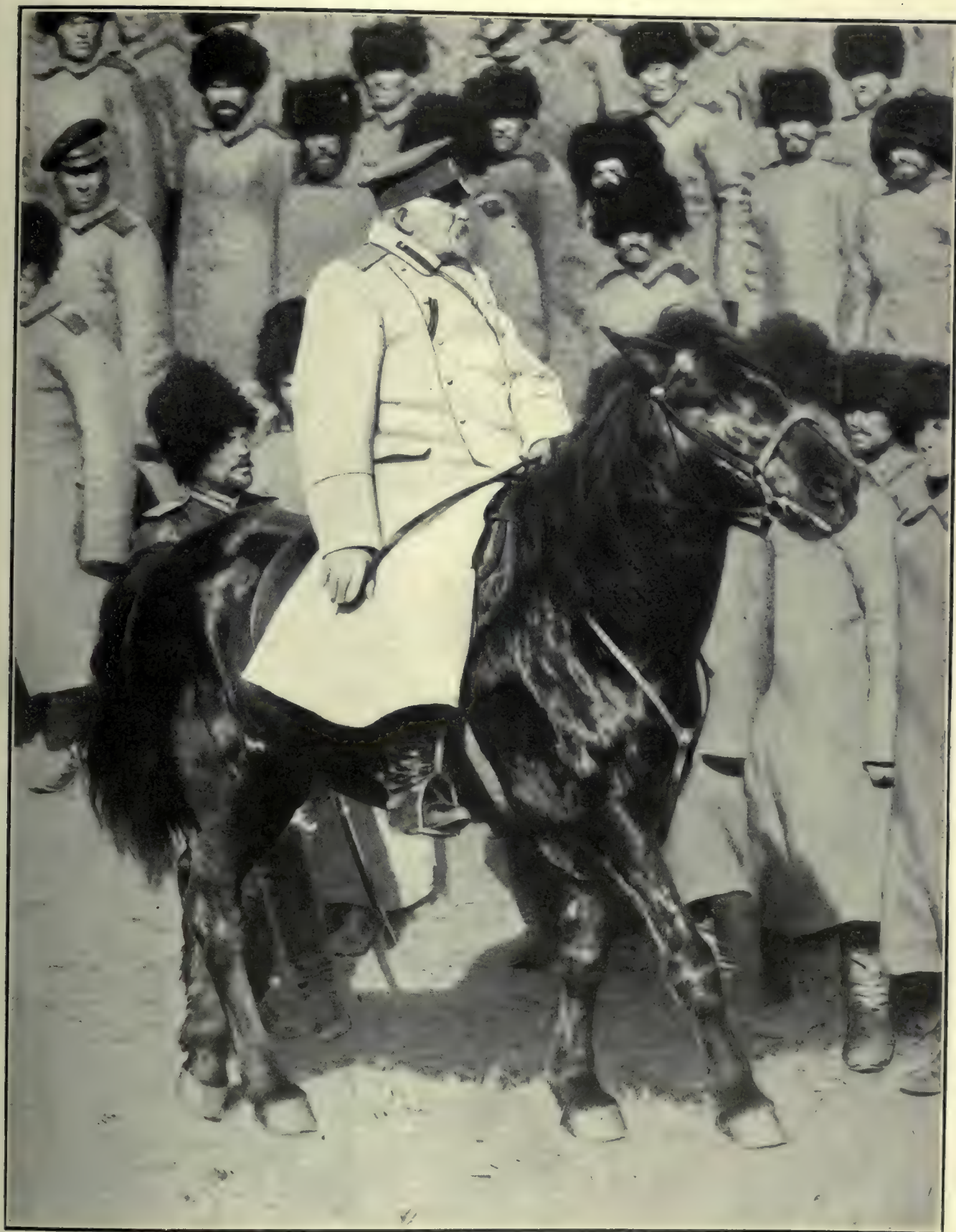
On the 20th and 21st skirmishing between the Russian outposts and the Japanese main columns proceeded, and the Russian outposts were in every direction driven in. The weather was unfavourable, and from time to time snow fell heavily, delaying Kawamura's advance. Much anxiety was caused in the Japanese army by the news that the ice on the Taitze River was showing signs of breaking up. On the 22nd, however, the weather turned colder, and the right of General Kawamura's army succeeded in storming a Russian entrenched position held by 3,000 Russian infantry with eight guns, so that the way to the next Russian position, south of Tita, lay open. Kawamura's left had a harder task; it had to carry the Russian works at Chinhocheng and in the Taling Pass, a difficult defile near Chinhocheng, held by a Russian division with 18 guns, detached from the 3rd Corps, under General Alexeieff's personal orders. A heavy snowstorm was raging when about noon of the 23rd the attack on Chinhocheng began.

the disheartened Russian troops, the demoralised, quarrelling Russian leaders, defeated before battle was joined, and in all that makes an army formidable so inferior to their antagonists that from the first they were predoomed to disaster.

On February 19 the Russians of the 3rd Corps at Chinhocheng, under the orders of General Alexeieff, became aware of strong Japanese columns approaching in all directions from the south. Chinhocheng stands in a tangle of mountains, some 30 miles west of Pensiho, which played so important a part in the battle of the Shaho. So far as the Russian scouts could discover, these troops did not belong to General Kuroki's army, and it was a puzzle for the Russian Staff whence they came. Actually they were the vanguard of General Kawamura's 5th Army, with orders to march in two columns upon Tita and



A RUINED GROCERY SHOP IN PORT ARTHUR OLD TOWN DAMAGED BY SHELL.



GENERAL LINEVITCH, AT THE HEAD OF THE RUSSIAN ARMIES IN MANCHURIA.

Simultaneously by preconcerted arrangement, to hold the Russians along the other sectors of the front, the Japanese demonstrated all along the line, and, in the teeth of a desultory fire from the Russian heavy weapons, Generals Kuroki and Nodzu forced the Russian outposts south of the Shaho back towards the north.

The Russians at Chinhocheng offered a resolute resistance, aided not only by the difficulty of the ground, but also by the strong works which they had thrown up. The Japanese had to advance up precipitous slopes against the Russian redoubts under the fire of heavy guns and machine-guns, and in the

teeth of the huge boulders which the Russians incessantly rolled down upon them. The work of climbing the slopes was one of immense difficulty for heavily-laden infantry, and all the 23rd the Japanese of the 11th Division made but little progress. Night fell with the Russians still in possession of their works, and the Japanese had to bivouac on the battlefield in deep snow, with detachments of skirmishers scattered along the precipices wherever the ground gave any shelter. During the night, however, a small party of Japanese volunteers offered to climb a face of the mountain which looked sheer but up which ran a crack giving good hold to active men. Fifteen were selected for the work, and, carrying hand-grenades tied to their waists, they bade farewell to their comrades and started on their perilous enterprise.

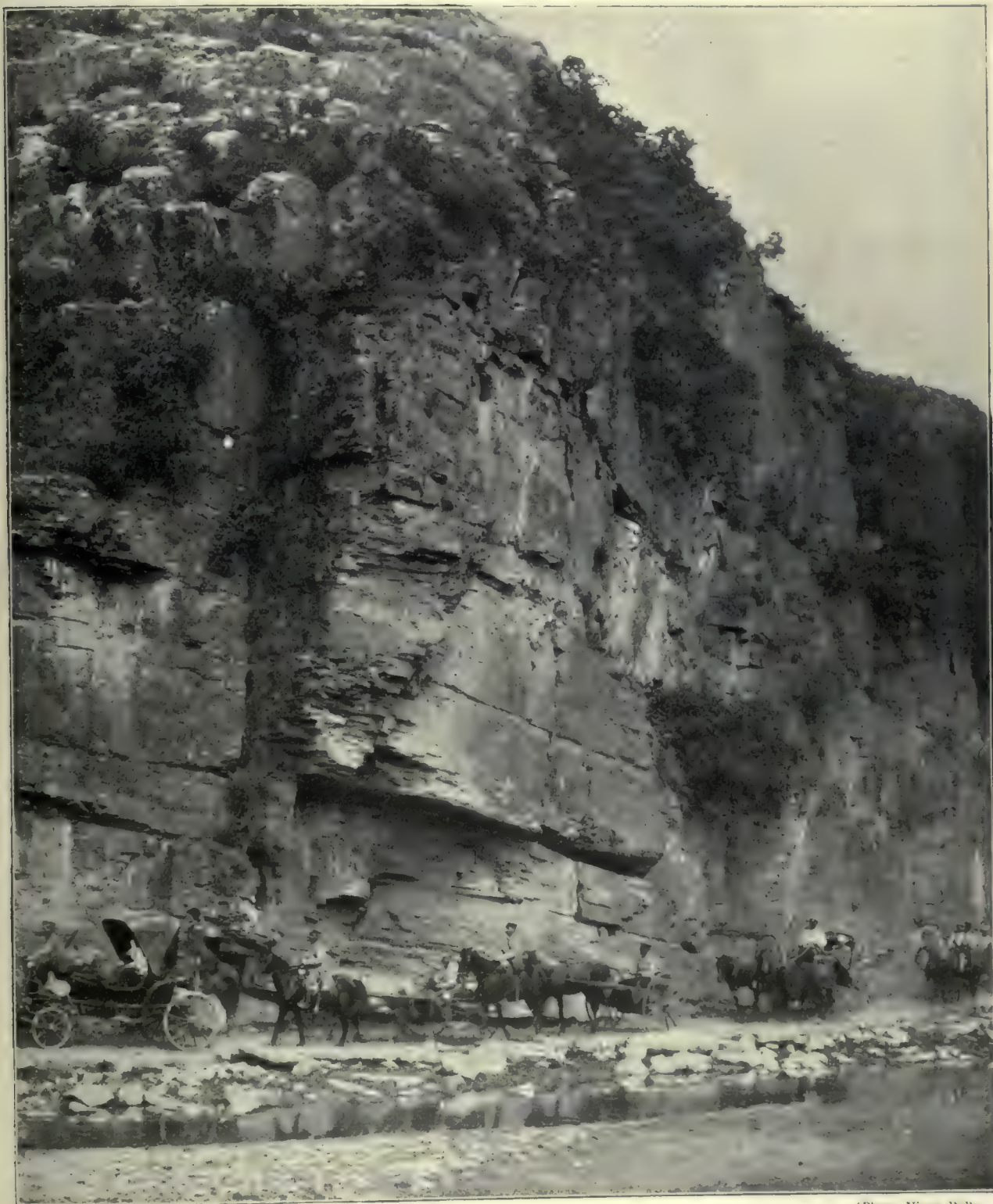


A HASTY RUSSIAN RETREAT

quarter were not keeping a sharp look-out, deeming the approach of an enemy out of the question, and, unseen, the fifteen Japanese managed to force their way up the cliff, and gained a point on the rock above the main Russian trench. From this they flung their bombs among the enemy, who, taken completely by surprise and not knowing how many Japanese had forced their way up, fell into confusion. The main force of stormers, meanwhile, had approached to within a comparatively short distance of the Russian works up the steep slopes, and now broke into a charge. They poured up the face of the hill and fought their way into the Russian works, where a furious struggle raged. More and more Japanese came up till the Russian division fell sullenly back upon its next position, in the Taling Pass, burning Chinhocheng as it retired. It had lost some hundreds of men in the combat.

The Taling Pass was at once attacked by the Japanese, the main force deploying in front of the works

there, while during the night of the 24th a column turned the Russian right, pushing up the precipitous face of the mountains that formed the eastern wall of the defile, and thus working to the rear of their enemy. At daybreak the Russians, while engaged with the main body of the 11th Division to the south of them, suddenly found themselves under fire from the north. Through the carelessness of General Alexeieff, or his subordinates, who ought to have kept a vigilant look-out, yet had failed to place sentries and outposts on the hills to the east, one of the strongest positions on the road from



[Photo, Victor Bulla.

GENERAL KUROPATKIN AND HIS STAFF IN THE NEIGHBOURHOOD OF MUKDEN.

Chinhocheng to Fushun had become untenable. The Russians could do nothing but beat the hastiest of retreats, and suffered seriously in their retirement. In all they lost 1,000 men and three machine-guns in this fighting at Chinhocheng and Taling.

General Kuropatkin was so indignant when the news of the loss of the Taling Pass reached him that he issued immediate orders for General Alexeieff's replacement by General Rennenkampf. To his Staff he spoke most bitterly of the incapacity of his subordinate, showing a passionate indignation which astonished those about him. Alexeieff returned pale and weeping to Mukden and there was sternly received by his generalissimo. But the mischief had been done, and no tears of regret or replacement in his command could undo the work of his carelessness. General Kawamura meantime continued his march towards Machuntun with the 11th Division, while his other division pushed forward towards Tita. His progress



PRESS GANG IN POLAND. HOW RESERVISTS WERE SENT TO THE FRONT.

through the mountains was slow moving in the snow along bad roads; it was not until the morning of the 27th that his two divisions were ready to deliver their next attack, and by this time powerful Russian reinforcements despatched to the eastern flank had appeared upon the field and were able greatly to retard the Japanese advance.

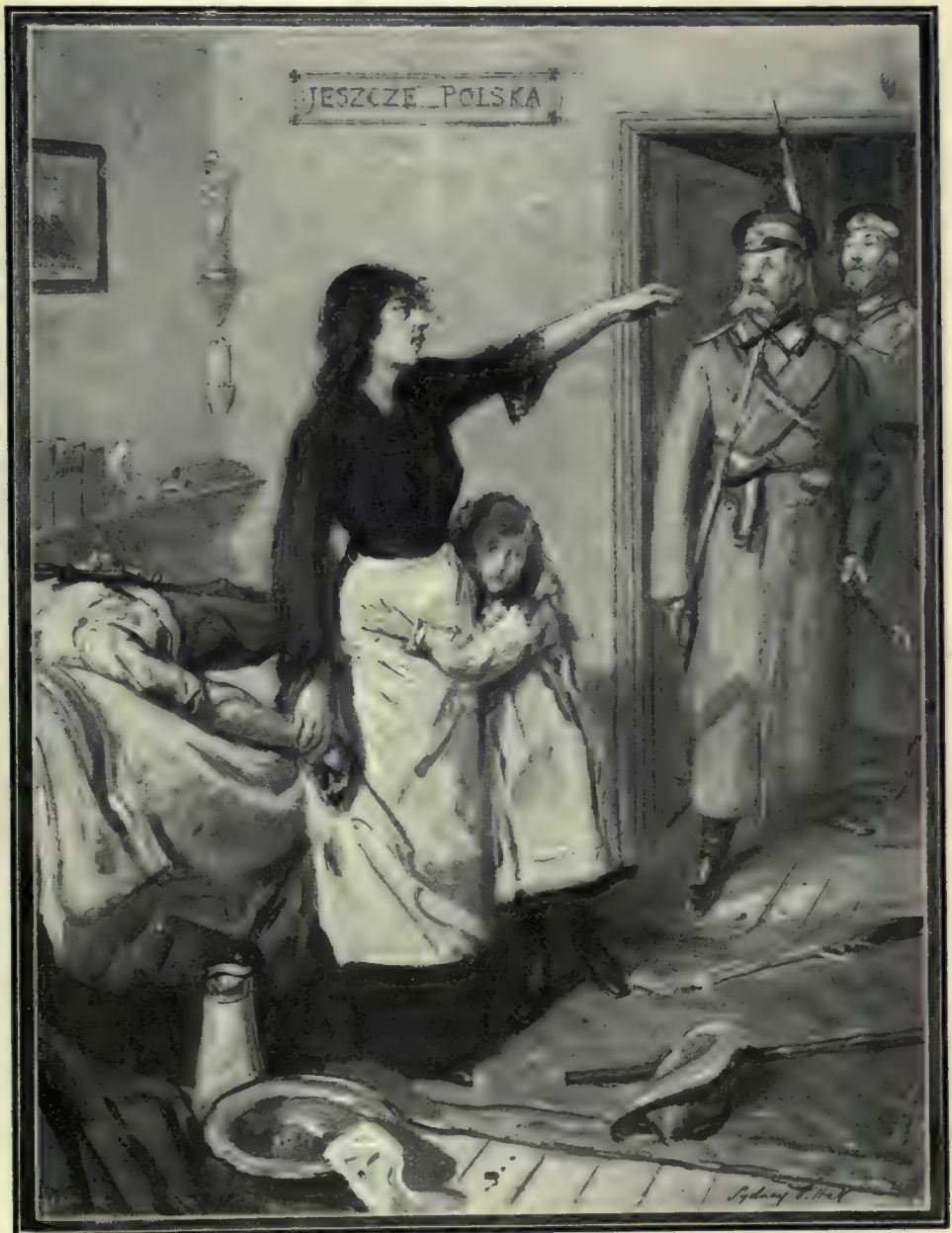
The news that the 11th Japanese Division, which was known to have formed part of the Port Arthur army, was on his extreme left, attacking as part of a large army, led General Kuropatkin, in common with his subordinates, to jump to the premature conclusion that General Nogi's army was present on that flank of the Russian army. The report that the assailants of

A Japanese Ruse. Chinhocheng and the Taling had shouted defiantly in Russian to their enemies that they had come from Port Arthur, and that after their experience against the Russian forts there they held the redoubts and trenches at Chinhocheng of no account, completely misled the Russian Staff, the more so as they knew that none of the cavalry reconnaissances in the direction of Newchwang and the western Japanese flank had detected any sign of Nogi's army. A further indication of the absence of the Port Arthur army from the western flank was afforded, in General Kuropatkin's belief, by the fact that a few days earlier a letter had

been sent by the Japanese to General Rennenkampf, who commanded the Cossacks on that flank during the absence of General Mistchenko, disabled by the wounds which he had received in the battle of Heikoutai. It asked the Russian General to permit some of his officers to meet the Japanese cavalry officers at a picnic on the 20th, "since hostilities did not seem to be imminent." This perfectly justifiable ruse of war might have filled a Napoleon with suspicion; in General Kuropatkin's case, it convinced him that General Nogi was not to the west, and that nothing was to be feared in that direction. And as General Nogi must be somewhere at hand, it followed that he must be to the east. - Of the presence of Kawamura's army the Russians still knew nothing.

To meet the Port Arthur army in equal force and drive it back, General Kuropatkin determined to move strong reinforcements from the west to the east. The 1st Siberian Corps, under General Stackelberg, received orders on the 25th to march from Sufangtai, to the west of the Hunho, eastwards to Fushun. General Rennenkampf, with a portion of his Cossacks, was transferred to the Chinhocheng district. The 16th Army Corps, which formed the reserve of the whole army, was also moved east to Fushun, whither General Kuropatkin followed it from his headquarters at Suchiatun, as he wished to be near at hand to meet what he feared would prove the decisive attack of the Japanese. Thus, at the most critical moment, he weakened his western wing and opened the road for General Nogi, disorganising his system of defence and rendering almost useless his best corps, which spent its time marching backwards and forwards between the two wings.

Meantime General Kuroki had put the 1st Army into action. The mission assigned to him was to drive back the Russian forces from the Beniaputze region, and to open up communications with General Kawamura in front of Machuntun. His right was to march from Pensiho towards Machuntun, through a difficult, mountainous country; his left was to force the Russians



THE POLICE FORESTALLED. AN INCIDENT OF THE WARSAW STRIKE RIOTS.

One of the leaders of the outbreak was wounded, but died before the police came to arrest him.

out of their tremendous system of defences near Beniaputze and then to march on the Chetuling Pass. In all directions the Russians had erected strong redoubts, upon which artillery could make but little impression. In front of the earthworks were wire entanglements and stake-pits, which might have proved insuperable obstacles to any but the ardent and tenacious Japanese infantry. The strength of the Beniaputze position was such that the Japanese opened their operations against it by attempting to turn its flanks. On the 24th Kuroki's right advanced some distance from Pensiho to the north-east, capturing a Russian position at Tungyengling. This advance threatened to isolate a Russian detachment which was stationed at Pienling, and compelled it to fall back towards Kaoling. Kuroki's left could make little progress, in view of the



JAPANESE MOUNTED SCOUTS DRIVING BACK RUSSIAN OUTPOSTS.

resolution with which the Siberian troops clung to Beniaputze and the strength of the works near that place.

On the following day Kuroki's right resumed its advance and captured the Erhmaling position, after skirmishing with a small force of Russian cavalry. The left of the 1st Japanese Army, on the upper Shaho and in front of Beniaputze, however, was unsuccessful in a fresh attempt to advance, and could not fight its way across the Shaho or carry Beniaputze. On the 26th, in a blinding snowstorm which greatly embarrassed the Japanese infantry, a series of furious attacks was delivered by the right of General Kuroki's army upon a formidable line of Russian works guarding the Kaotuling and Wanfuling Passes. The snow outlined the stake-pits before the Russian trenches and rendered them innocuous, but the Russian troops behind their defences met all the Japanese onsets with firmness, and little ground was gained. Only the incomparable tenacity of the Japanese soldiers, who, in the words of a correspondent with the Russian army, "do not retire even when their attacks are repulsed, but cling to every inch of the ground that has been won and fight to the very last," saved the day. Attacking once more on the 27th, the Wanfuling heights were carried with enormous loss, one-third of the assailants falling, but an attempt to follow up this success and storm the Russian second line of trenches and works, further to the

north, failed. At the same time news reached General Kuroki that strong Russian reinforcements were advancing due south from Machuntun and threatening his extreme right. It was necessary to suspend the attack for the moment, and to wait till Kawamura's columns moving upon Machuntun brought sufficient pressure to bear to compel the Russians to retreat.



TWO JAPANESE PRISONERS BROUGHT INTO THE RUSSIAN CAMP BEFORE MUKDEN.

Elsewhere along the vast front, on which wrestled 750,000 men, the 26th and 27th were days of activity. In the centre, on the 26th, the Russian artillery in the neighbourhood of Putiloff Hill began a furious bombardment of the Japanese lines, with what object it was difficult to divine, since their projectiles caused the Japanese but few casualties and the waste of valuable ammunition was immense. It is possible that the Russian commander-in-chief dreamed of replying to the Japanese attack upon his left flank by



SOUTH MANCHURIA. THE POSITION BEFORE THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN.

driving in their centre and breaking through in that direction to LiaoYang, an operation the success of which would have compelled Kawamura and Kuroki to retreat without delay. As an indication that some such intention was entertained, on the night of the 26th the Russian outposts along the Shaho showed considerable activity and sounded the Japanese defences continually.

With the morning of the 27th the Japanese for the first time replied with energy to the Russian heavy guns. All along the Shaho front, but particularly near Putiloff Hill, the big guns thundered, and upon

Putiloff Hill the huge 11-in. shells which had played so important a part in the reduction of

**Firing on
Putiloff Hill.**

Port Arthur began to fall, to the terror of the troops holding that position. The commander

of the garrison on the hill gave orders for one of these shells which did not explode to be conveyed to General Kuropatkin's headquarters, as the Russian Staff expressed incredulity when told that the gigantic howitzers had got to work. A terrific bombardment of the hill was maintained all day, but with no very marked result. The garrison of the hill, after their first alarm at the falling of the great shells, recovered presence of mind when the projectiles proved far less deadly than had been anticipated. Late that night five Russian companies made a sudden movement southward along the railway and rushed a Japanese advanced trench. A hand-to-hand encounter followed, in which the Japanese suffered considerably, but on reinforcements coming up they drove out the Russians and killed some 60 of them. Other night attacks were made all along the line—indications that the Russians were feeling the Japanese strength and preparing some move.

Each side was now under the impression that the other intended an attack in the centre. The Russians had rapidly reinforced the artillery of their 3rd Army when the Japanese bombardment began, but during the 27th and 28th several of their guns were put out of action by the Japanese shells. The Japanese gunners did not get off scathless. The 11-in. howitzers used smoky powder and could thus be located, with the result that a perfect storm of Russian shrapnel was poured upon them and caused heavy loss in the batteries.

On the extreme western front, up to the 27th, Grekoff, who since Rennenkampf's departure commanded the Cossacks doing duty

Nogi's Advance.

on that wing, reported no activity.

He was notoriously fond of his own comfort and paid little attention to the doings of the enemy; his Cossacks were only too pleased to take life easily. Yet, while he was sitting feasting in his lines, General Nogi's advance had already begun. Leaving Shahopeiho early in the morning of the 27th and making a wide detour to avoid the Russian outposts, General Nogi's four divisions marched on a broad front in three columns by three parallel roads northwards between the rivers Hun and Liao with all possible speed and energy. About midday of the



Photo, Victor Bulda.

IN DEFENCE OF MUKDEN. THE QUARTERS OF THE TOMSKY REGIMENT AT KWANSHAN.



LIEUTENANT-GENERAL OKUBO.
Japanese Divisional Commander.

quite possible that Grekoff was also at fault, and that the Japanese force was less than the Cossack general had supposed. The reports from the eastern front indicated quite clearly that the Japanese in that quarter were in great strength and were pressing their attack with the utmost vigour. If he admitted that Nogi's army was the force advancing on his right, he had also to admit that all his dispositions were defective, that the withdrawal of the 1st Army Corps and its despatch to the east had been a disastrous mistake, and that the movement eastwards of his reserves had been rash and premature. He found himself without reinforcements to send to his weakened right, and this at the very moment when General Oku's army showed signs of beginning its advance, to join hands with the unknown force to the west and drive in the Russian front south-west of Mukden.

Under these circumstances General Kuropatkin took no action to meet his new assailants on the west. He waited and hesitated, and not until March 1 did he decide to withdraw from the east the 1st Siberian Army Corps

27th they came into contact with the first Russian detachments, which were weak and therefore easy to drive in. All day they marched across the snow-covered plain, and by nightfall, after an exhausting struggle through the snow, had covered nearly 30 miles. Their front ran across the plain from the Hunho to the Liao, northwards from Shwango. On the western bank of the Liao the Japanese cavalry were massed and employed to cover the flank and protect the movement of the 3rd Army.

It was on the 27th that the first news of the approach of this new force reached General Kuropatkin. It came to him from his cavalry commanders.

Grekoff's Retreat.

General Grekoff was dining when, on the 27th, his officers brought him the astounding intelligence that the Japanese had appeared to the north of him, well to his rear. He saddled in haste and beat a hurried retreat, reporting the advance of powerful columns of Japanese to General Kuropatkin. The predicament of the Russian commander-in-chief was a terrible one. He was still in complete uncertainty as to what this army was, whence it came, or what was its strength.

When so many subordinates had failed him it was



GUNS CAPTURED BY THE JAPANESE NEAR MUKDEN



ATTACK ON THE CHETULING PASS

FRANKLIN



KUROPATKIN'S PRAYER FOR VICTORY. A RELIGIOUS SERVICE ON THE FIELD AT MUKDEN.

which had been sent to General Linievitch's assistance. But as its movement across the Russian front had been completed, great delay occurred in bringing it back to its old position, and some days—these the most critical days of the battle—passed before it could exert any influence upon the fight. Its officers and men were worn out and disheartened by these aimless movements to and fro and by the evidence which they afforded of the want of skill and foresight in the Russian command. The news of the appearance of a new Japanese army to the west, threatening the railway and the retreat of the great Russian army fighting before Mukden, had spread through all ranks in the 2nd and 3rd Armies by March 1, though it seems to have been still unknown in General Linievitch's command.

To the west of the Shaho, where Oku's main force was stationed, the Russians appear to have detected signs of activity on the 26th. They massed artillery in this quarter of the field and vigorously bombarded the Japanese positions near Sandipu and Litayentun while small Russian detachments delivered attacks on the Japanese outposts.

All the 27th General Kawamura's right had been hotly engaged with a brigade of the 3rd Russian Corps near Tita without obtaining any definite result, while its left was still marching upon Machuntun. The mountains lying to the east of the road were strongly held by the Russians, who had to be driven back before Machuntun could be approached, and this could not be accomplished till the 28th, when at last the Japanese were before the Russian entrenchments which formed the main Machuntun position. A fierce attack on the Russian works was repulsed though the energy with which the Japanese threw themselves upon the Russian redoubts, while it failed to bring them victory in that quarter of the field, was yet of service to their cause, as it prevented the Russian 1st Army from sending back the reinforcements which it had received and kept all its corps fully occupied.

On March 1, 1905, the 11th Division renewed its assaults upon Machuntun, suffering terribly in its constant onslaughts. Efforts were

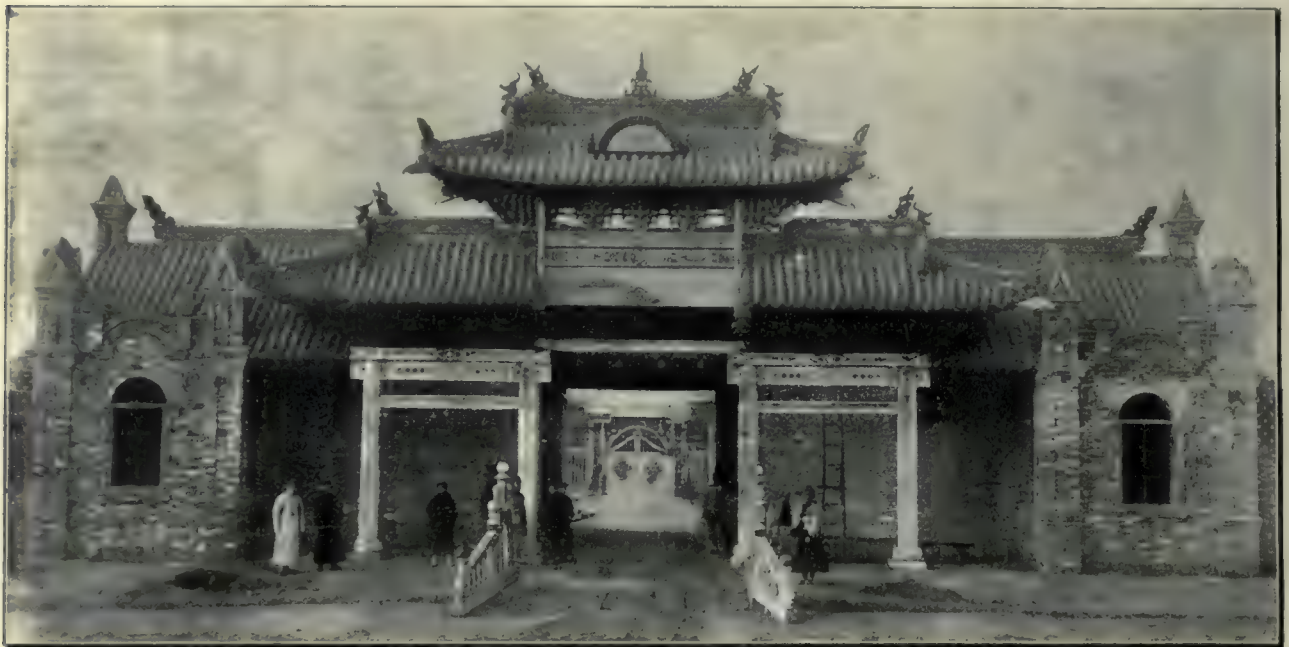
March 1, 1905.

made to join hands with General Kuroki by despatching a column south-westwards through the mountains, in the direction of the Kaotuling and Wutaoling Passes, so as to attack the Russians from the north while General Kuroki assailed them from the south. But the column sent

on this errand found the Russians in great force, with a brigade of the 3rd Corps stationed behind several lines of works, one behind the other, and so could make little or no progress. In front of Tita there was a complete impasse. The Japanese attacks were repulsed, and the rapid increase in the strength of the Russians, as the result of the constant arrival of reinforcements, caused some anxiety for the Japanese right. General Kawamura's flanking movement was, in fact, at a standstill; the Russians to the east were too strong. The only resource was to continue the attacks, without committing too large a force to them, and to wait till the advance of General Nogi's army compelled General Kuropatkin to draw in his left.

On the 28th General Kuroki continued his efforts to push forward, vigorously bombarding the Russian positions in his front. But Beniapatze he could not capture, though his centre gained some ground in the direction of the Chetuling Pass, so that the Japanese had driven a wedge deep into the Russian front. Incessant attacks upon Beniapatze continued the whole day. The strength of the position, fortified by months of patient labour, was such that all the bravery of the Japanese was wasted against it. Thus Kuroki, like Kawamura, had come to a standstill. All

**Kuroki at a
Standstill.**



IMPERIAL CHINESE MINT AT MUKDEN.

March 1 his attacks continued, delivered from two sides, against Beniapatze without the slightest result except to increase his losses. The bravery and persistence of the Japanese astonished even the Russians, who well knew by this time the character of their foe. Amongst the icy valleys and along the precipitous snow-covered mountain crests the struggle raged interminably, under a sullen grey sky, with a thermometer showing many degrees of frost. Here, as at Heikoutai, the tortures of the wounded were indescribable, and the Japanese troops, who often had to bivouac in the snow and ice without fires, with but a scanty supply of food, suffered cruelly. Only their passionate patriotism and robust physique brought them through a trial such as no great army has endured in modern times.

The very vastness of the battle which was now raging along 80 miles of plain and mountain rendered it almost impossible for any except those at the headquarters Staff to know how events were going. The

An 80-Mile Front.

inaction or sacrifice of one division might have been prearranged by the Staff for all the men knew, and might form only one move in the great game that was being played between Marshal Oyama and General Kuropatkin. The influence on the engagement of a local check might, on the other hand, be absolutely disastrous. Thus there was complete uncertainty as to which side was winning through both armies during this initial stage of the contest. To many of the Russians, indeed, it appeared as though the 1st Russian Army was fighting a successful battle. True, it had yielded some ground before the Japanese; it had lost one important position; but in its second line it was still standing firm and inflicting heavy loss upon its undaunted enemy. Further to the west the engagement was only

becoming general on the 28th and March 1, as one after another the Japanese armies, manœuvred with mechanical precision and their movements co-ordinated with marvellous skill, entered the battle and began their death-wrestle with General Kuropatkin's army.



OTSCHANOWSKY.

LOEWENSTAM.

(Photo, Victor Bulla.

RUSSIAN STAFF ON THE STEPS OF ONE OF THE IMPERIAL TOMBS AT MUKDEN.

THE VALHALLA.—All the experts are agreed that Mukden stands in the Chinese mind as the symbol for the mastery of Manchuria, for there the tombs of the Imperial Manchu race are to be found. The Russians adopted elaborate methods of defence for the safety of this mighty Valhalla of the East. The officers shown in this picture are General Loewenstam, General Otschanowsky, Staff-Colonel Paloyren, and the Staff of the Second Siberian Infantry Division.



RUSSIAN ENTRENCHMENTS EAST OF MUKDEN.

(Photo, Victor Bulla.)

All the 28th there was heavy firing from the Japanese batteries along the Shaho, the object being to damage the Russian works, keep the 3rd Russian Army busy, and pave the way for an assault. Great damage was done to the earthworks, but they were not rendered untenable. The vigour of the Japanese fire was one of the reasons which kept the Russian 3rd Army, holding the centre, from advancing, though that army was actually faced by an inferior force of

Japanese. Marshal Oyama, however, knew that he could trust the 6th and 10th Divisions, which composed General Nodzu's force, to fight to the last, and therefore calmly faced the danger of General Kuropatkin replying to the flank movements of Kawamura and Nogi by a desperate attempt to beat in the Japanese centre. The day passed without any such attempt, and with each hour of Russian inactivity the danger diminished. To the west of the railway Oku's troops were waiting all day for the order to advance, but before they moved Nogi was to work well to the north-west of them and this he had not done as yet. They passed the 28th in inactivity, hearing the distant roar of firing from the east, but, beyond carrying on an artillery duel with the Russian batteries, taking little part in the fight.

All the 28th Nogi's columns continued their northward march. The Japanese cavalry were well ahead of the infantry and at nightfall were a little to the south of Tamintun. The infantry moved on a front stretching across the plain between the two rivers Hun and Liao, and at the close of the day held a line from Sanchiakou, near Sufangtai, to Chentzekang on the Liao. They were at last in contact with the Russian right. Hitherto they had seen only small bodies of Russian troops, which had uniformly retired before them. They had now to take in the rear the enemy whom Oku would next day attack in the front.

On March 1 the Japanese cavalry seized Tamintun without difficulty, and riding fast to the north a regiment entered Sinminting, the base from which the Russian army drew a large part of its supplies, its appearance in this quarter causing simply consternation. Innumerable waggons laden with food for the Manchurian army were seized in and about the place and vast stores belonging to the Russian Government fell into the hands of the enterprising horsemen. Though Sinminting by a polite Russian fiction had been designated as neutral territory, the Japanese were not surprised to find Russian officials installed there, who fled in frantic haste at their approach.

Further to the south General Oku was moving against Changtan and the series of Russian works which protected it. Aided by two divisions of General Nogi's army, which moved upon Sufangtai, he drove in the Russian right in that direction, but his attack upon the enemy's lines between Lichiawopeng and Wangchiawopeng failed completely. "Here, as usual," writes a Japanese officer, "the Russians held a position of great natural strength, supplemented with every device known to the military engineer. Barbed-wire entanglements, abattis, pits, all complete, and all that could be seen were the muzzles of the rifles out of the solid masonry of the walls. We advanced very slowly, step by step, through a shower of bullets, rifles and maxims making a continuous sing-song like the singing of a thousand thrushes. Now a man

on my right goes down, now one on my left; then a fellow is blown to pieces before one's eyes; his flesh is scattered, and some of it comes upon one's face." The repulse of the Japanese was instantly followed by a vigorous counter-attack delivered by the Russians of the 8th Corps, and only with extreme difficulty was this beaten back. The day closed without success on Oku's front. But Nogi had now taken up a line at right angles to the Russian front, from Sufangtai to Tamintun and Sinminting, and was thus in a position to bring such pressure to bear upon the Russian right that it must either retire or surrender.

CHAPTER LX.

THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN.—II.

BY the night of March 1 the Japanese army attacking Mukden had driven in both the Russian wings so that the Russian front from being concave had become convex, sweeping in a vast semi-circle from Sinminting on the west to a point beyond Tita on the east. But the work of driving in that front still further till it became circular, till the Japanese armies surrounded the Russian force on every side, had still to be accomplished. And the task was certain to prove stupendous. The Russian armies were still undefeated, if outnumbered and worsted in the preliminary manœuvres; they had the support of their formidable earthworks and miles of entrenchments; and reinforcements at the close of the day were at last being moved to the western wing which was in the greatest danger. General Kuropatkin, indeed, recovering from his first alarm, had begun to dream of cutting off the unknown Japanese western army by breaking through the hostile line at the point where the Japanese front turned north. He still altogether underrated Nogi's force, placing it at only 10,000 men, and from his conversation might almost at times have seemed to be under the impression that the Japanese on the west were marching into a trap; that they could without excessive difficulty be surrounded and destroyed.

During the 2nd and 3rd no ground was gained by Kawamura's army to the east. It still lay in front of the Tita and Machuntun positions, unable to carry them, while the Russian forces in its front steadily increased. Kuroki's army was in much the same predicament in front of the **The Chetuling Pass.** Russian positions in the Chetuling Pass. Both generals were ready to risk a desperate attack, and believed that such an attack might have succeeded, though at enormous cost in life. But as yet these two armies were not permitted to play the last card; they were instructed to continue feeling the Russian positions, so as to prevent the withdrawal of any large part of Linievitch's troops and to detect the weak points in the Russian line; they were to wait the order for the final attack from headquarters. On the 2nd Kuroki carried the first Russian position at the Chetuling Pass with heavy sacrifice of life, but a second position to the rear of the first brought him up completely.

Between Beniapatze and the Chetuling Pass runs a long valley, bordered on either side by sombre



RUSSIAN ENTRENCHMENTS EAST OF MUKDEN.

[Photo, Victor Bulla]

precipitous mountains, the western ridge of which was held by the Russians. Up this valley the Japanese had to move in their attacks, along roads swept by the constant fire of the Russian guns. Day after

day and night after night this defile, baptised by the two armies the "Valley of the Shadow of Death," was the scene of terrific combats between Russian and Japanese detachments, which passed almost unrecorded and unnoticed, dwarfed by the greater events and more Titanic engagements raging about Mukden. Here for whole days upon the frozen soil, with scanty rations, one of Kuroki's divisions fought and bivouacked, gaining ground inch by inch, though the valley bottom was one great heap of dead and breastworks were built of corpses. In these isolated combats no quarter was given by either side. A small party of 20 Russians dashed into a Japanese trench, bayoneting all whom they saw. The Japanese supports hurried up and surrounded them, but the Russians fought to the last, rushing upon their enemies with rifle-butts and bayonets, until all had perished. In admiration for their valour the Japanese paid them special military honours at their burial. The ground gained by Kuroki



IN THE HOSPITAL AT MUKDEN.

[Photo, Victor Bulla.]

to the flank of the Beniapatze position rendered the situation of the Russian forces in that direction precarious, but they contrived to cling to their redoubts and beat back every attack, though their retreat was now menaced both from east and west.

On the Shaho line one of Kuroki's divisions, during the night of the 1st-2nd, repulsed a Russian attack near Makuantze, and when day came began a determined attack upon the Russian positions in its front with

the object of driving the enemy back across the Shaho. Simultaneously, General

456 Russian Guns.

Nodzu's troops advanced to the assault of Putiloff Hill, about the works of which a terrific struggle began and raged without intermission for three days. Again and again the Japanese infantry assaulted; again and again the enormous works and hundred guns which covered the hill vomited death upon the Mikado's soldiers, while the Japanese 11-in. shells fell steadily upon the ridge, changing its appearance and killing hundreds of the garrison, but failing to crush the resistance of the stubborn Russian troops or to render the works untenable. Further west Nodzu could gain no ground, nor was he expected to do so: north of Linshipu were massed 250 Russian guns in a gigantic battery, supported by the whole 17th Russian Corps, and in the face of such a force advance was as yet out of the question. The Russian artillery force at this point was slowly increased, till a little later in the battle 57 Russian batteries were in line, representing a total of 456 guns, the largest number ever marshalled in one battery on any field, covering a front of six miles and extending almost to Maturan. It was under the fire of this great battery that General Oku's veterans had to carry out their advance, across a plain torn by projectiles, storming one by one the villages held by the Russians.

During the night Oku's troops had been addressed by their officers and ordered to take the positions in their front at whatever cost. "If

The Lichiwopeng Line. unsuccessful," they were told, "there is one thing that you can do—die." Officers and men responded with cheers, "Banzai! let us do or die!" Then came the orders, "Anyone firing without orders will be court-martialled; use your bayonets; officers will attend to the enemy's leaders; do not expect to return." At 2 a.m. of the 2nd, the long lines of infantry advanced against Lichiwopeng, Wangchiawopeng, and the Russian lines of defences south of Changtan, covered by a terrific shrapnel fire, and almost instantly encountered a storm of projectiles from the Russian guns and rifles. Though the night was pitch dark—so dark that it was difficult for the Japanese to maintain their direction—at close quarters the Russian fire told grievously. Man after man in the Japanese lines went down, yet remembering their orders the dying and wounded uttered never a single cry. The Japanese broke through the Russian entanglements in perfect silence, without firing a shot, and turned on the Russian garrison in the darkness with the cold steel. In half an hour the fight was over; the Russians were killed, prisoners, or in flight, and about daybreak the Japanese were in full possession of the Lichiwopeng line. The Russians in alarm began to entrain their heavy artillery at Maturan, and to send it back towards Suchiatun. Upon Maturan fled a host of weary and dispirited Russian soldiers of the 8th, 10th, and the Mixed Corps, crying that no human effort could withstand the Japanese. "They kept coming on like ants, five times, six times," they told each other, until the officers said, "Children, we cannot stay here any longer; we must retire." Along the branch railway thousands of wounded were being transported, and wild disorder prevailed. From west and south rose the roar of battle—the continuous crackling roll of rifle fire, drowned at moments by the peals of heavy prolonged thunder from the artillery.

The Japanese right-carried Changtan almost at the moment when their left stormed Lichiwopeng, and

Oku's Men. both right and left pushed rapidly forward across the plain, driving the Mixed and 10th Corps before them. At Tutaitze there was a determined struggle between Oku's men and a Russian regiment of the 10th Corps. "Hell was let loose; common shell tore up the ground;



Copyright, Victor Holt.
GENERAL LINEVITCH INSPECTING TROOPS AT ENDACAU, TWENTY-FIVE MILES EAST OF MUKDEN, BEFORE THE FIGHT

showers of shrapnel hopped on the road like hailstones . . . the sky is overcast; the officers are remarkably affable, but nobody cares to look anyone else straight in the eye lest it be found that his own eye is rolling unsteadily in its socket, like a ship in a tempest, and that his cheeks are flushed and his manner is slightly exaggerated," writes an American correspondent present with the 10th Corps. "Suddenly a small, excited man rides towards us. . . . He is provided with brandy-flask, binoculars, compass, all complete. He is also in a state of undisguised 'funk.' Terror is writ large in his face and in every movement of his body. . . . He points to little clouds of shrapnel north and north-east. 'They are getting round us,' he blubbers, his fat face working like the face of a baby that is going to cry, 'and the Cossacks tell me they have been along the bank of the Hun and are now near Mukden.' . . . A circle of fire seems to be closing slowly in around us. A ring of shrapnel, looking clearer and more dreadful in the gathering night, is bursting round nine-tenths of a circle; the little gap may be closed at any moment. . . . I count six villages burning on the horizon. The darkness is rendered more confusing by reason of the tremendous glare from the burning villages. Vast columns of smoke rise up to heaven. There is a red glow in the sky overhead. Sharp, continuous explosions proceed from the burning houses. . . . During lulls in



TRESTLE PONTOON BRIDGE NEAR MUKDEN.

[Photo, Victor Bulla.]

this storm of noise there comes to us a faint ripple of sound like the hum of a distant grasshopper. It comes from away beyond Shahopu and the railway where the stern Nodzu is vainly hurling his Kumamoto men against Putiloff Hill."

In the darkness Oku's ever-victorious army advanced with furious determination and unsurpassed élan upon the shaken Russian troops. Maturan, but lately General Kaulbars' headquarters, was stormed and given to the flames. Immense stores of all kinds were taken or burnt. "In the silvery white background," writes a Japanese officer with the 8th Division, "with here and there a red conflagration, march the men in khaki, their knapsacks packed, their great-coats flung away, with the badge of white round their arms, officers in front with drawn swords, the bluish-white gleam of bayonets clearly discernible against the snow; straight and steady charged the soldiers of Japan. . . . Shells shrieked and thumped and exploded with an awful splendour which we had never before so realised. . . . Before this determined attack of the Japanese the Russians faltered and broke. . . . Doubling and at our fastest pace we reached a position along the line of the enemy's retreat. I shall always be trying to efface the scene that followed from my memory, but never shall I be able to do so.

"When I gave the word, every rifle in my company spoke at 20 yards distance. . . . Under the steady sectional fire Russians went down in heaps, and the flying enemy actually walked, or rather raced,

along over their dead and dying comrades. . . . We lay in the snow the whole night, sniping, sniping mechanically; the next day, biscuits and snow-water and pursuit without seeing a shadow of the Russians."

The Japanese had now carried their advance up to the terminus of the Russian field-railway. Beyond the Hun General Nogi's divisions were pushing forward, but with increasing caution, since with each mile of their advance reinforcements were joining their enemy and the resistance was increasing.

A Vigorous Attack. The four divisions formed a line almost at right angles to General Oku's front, with their extreme left resting upon the Sinminting road. They worked steadily to the north so as to come in upon the railway and General Kuropatkin's communications some miles north of Mukden. The two divisions of the Russian 16th Corps, which had been sent east by General Kuropatkin and then had been hurriedly recalled, were now nearing the exposed flank of the Russian army, but the 1st Siberian Corps, which had got as far as Fushun in its movement to support General Linievitch, was still unavailable, though it also was moving west.

The fighting of the 1st and 2nd had thrown the 2nd Russian army into grievous disorder. Already



A SCENE IN THE HOSPITAL AT MUKDEN.

(Photo, Victor Bulla.)

"Blessed are the dead slain outright in battle," wrote a Russian officer, "for hell torments await the wounded." Hours often pass before assistance arrives, and when it does "the wounded often beseech the assistants to put an end to their lives." Such pictures as these, however, show that once in the hospital at Mukden the wounded were well cared for.

its three corps were much disorganised; units were intermingled, and what had been a powerful force of disciplined men was fast degenerating into something very like an armed mob. But as yet the 3rd and 1st Russian Armies were practically intact; they had held their own and generally maintained an impenetrable defence. They were now to be more vigorously pressed, as General Kuropatkin gave indications of concentrating a large force against General Oku and breaking through the Japanese line at the point to the south-west where it made a sharp angle. Though the most propitious moment for such an undertaking had passed, the evident intention of the Russian commander created uneasiness in the Japanese Staff, and to hold the enemy everywhere he was attacked all along the line.

March 3 opened with heavy fighting at Tita and Machuntun, but the Russian positions were not carried. Further to the west Kuroki gained some ground in the neighbourhood of Makuantze and captured Tungchiatun, north of the Shaho, which rendered the Russian position near Beniaputze more and more precarious. The Russians had now withdrawn to a second series of works a little north of Beniaputze, which was of prodigious strength. Here they still held firm and could not be dislodged, though the Japanese Guards during the day delivered 13 furious attacks. Near Fengchiapu the Russians made four determined

efforts to expel the Japanese from the positions captured by Kuroki to the north of the Shaho, but on each occasion were hurled back with heavy loss.

In the centre General Nodzu continued his attacks upon Putiloff Hill, without capturing that eminence. His orders were to press the Russians, but not as yet to force them from their lines. The longer the

**The Stampede at
Shahopu.**

Russians remained to the south of the Hunho in force, the greater the probability that the enveloping movement of General Nogi's columns would result in a heavy capture of prisoners. But at the point where his front touched General Oku's army, Nodzu's troops began to push forward, so as to help in clearing the country between Linshipu and the Russian branch railway to Maturan. The plain hereabouts was covered with villages, strongly fortified, and was swept by the powerful artillery massed near Linshipu. Through the streets of the villages the Japanese infantry slowly fought their way with bomb and bayonet in a series of savage encounters man to man. They carried Shahopu; they took Linshipu, and surged into Mentapu with the force of an irresistible inundation; they pressed upon Wuchanying, and before them there fled or retired an enormous host of



GENERAL LINIEVITCH'S PREPARATIONS EAST OF MUKDEN TO MEET THE JAPANESE.

The General going a round of inspection at the village of Houde, two miles from the Japanese lines.

demoralised Russian troops. Along the branch railway the retiring Russians marched in three great columns. At Suhopu the fugitives and wounded pillaged the vast store of food and vodka. Barrels of spirit were hacked open with swords and bayonets till the ground ran with the liquid, and men strove to scoop it up in their caps. Over all the scene of riot and violence hung a dense pall of smoke from the burning stores, and from the south came incessantly the heavy roar of battle, ever drawing nearer. From time to time fresh bands of terror-maddened fugitives appeared shrieking the "Japanese are coming; they fight with magic; there is no standing against them!" And at that moment the roll of firing sounded clearly from the north, where Nogi was advancing, and the Russian soldiers told one another in wild alarm that they were cut off.

In vain the Russian officers strove to restore order. All discipline had vanished for the moment. With a growing sense of awe correspondents watched this tremendous scene, this debacle of the 2nd Army,

**The Final
Armageddon.**

"as when one sees the small but unmistakable beginning of earth-moving events, the first miracle of Christ, the crossing of the Rubicon, the landing of the Mayflower, the march upon Versailles." It was the beginning of the downfall of Russia, "the first fatal unmistakable sign of disintegration and decay in a great military body that had awed Europe and Asia for 50 years." It was the reversal of the direction of the world's revolution, the renaissance of Asia, the

first premonition of the collapse of European schemes of aggression and conquest, the end of the supremacy of the white races on this earth. And the surroundings were in keeping with the gigantic importance of the events. The measureless, melancholy plain, snow-covered, strewn with countless dead below; right and left innumerable blazing villages and vast heaps of smouldering stores; a pall of smoke overhead veiling the grey wintry sky; on all sides the din of such a battle as never human ears before had heard; the thunder of 3,000 cannon; the crash of firing from 700,000 men; the incessant procession of wounded; the immense columns of army corps advancing and fugitives seeking the rear, till the land was black with men—all were in keeping with the issues that hung upon this final armageddon of the war on land.

To the south and to the west the long khaki-clad lines of small men advanced incessantly. Oku was in hot pursuit of the beaten Russians; Nodzu was coming up from the Shaho, pivoting on Linshipu; the 5th and 17th Russian Corps were being drawn into the conflict. Already Oku was moving his divisions north of the Hun, a work of much difficulty, as the ice on the river was weak. Kuropatkin had now arrived to direct the battle in the west and centre, realising that this was the vital point, and all his reinforcements despatched to the east were hurrying back by forced marches, some to meet Nogi, others to the line of fortifications



JAPANESE GENERAL STUDYING HIS MAP DURING THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN.

that ran from Tashihchiao through Machiapu to Paitapu and thence to Putiloff Hill. It was upon the north-western end of this line of works that Oku had now to throw himself. Late in the night of the 3rd he had taken Suhopu, driving out the last Russian stragglers or capturing them, and making immense seizures of material and railway rolling-stock. His preparations for the attack occupied some time.

All March 3 General Nogi's army had been working to the north and moving in upon the railway, to which his front was now almost parallel. The 16th Army Corps was moving against him to meet him and hold him off, for General Kuropatkin believed that two Russian divisions could hold their own against the Japanese, behind the strong works which he had constructed. He was still unaware that his enemy in this quarter mustered four strong divisions,

Russian Defeat at Changyitien.

flushed with victory and led by the most determined soldier that the war had produced on the Japanese side. The 41st Russian Division, under General Birger, marching in column from Mukden towards Changyitien over the frost-bound plain, suddenly came into view of the Japanese right. The Japanese instantly deployed and took up their battle formation; the Russians were slower in forming line, and were attacked by the Japanese in superior force before their dispositions were completed. After a fierce engagement, in which the Russians suffered heavily, they were driven back in utter disorder away from Mukden towards the north. The events of the afternoon were not less disastrous for General Kuropatkin's army than those of the morning had been. Another brigade of the 16th Corps came into contact with General Nogi's troops, and having received no warning from the fugitives of the 41st Division who had fled towards Tashihchiao, instead of falling back on the rest of their corps, was surprised in the same way and

shared the same fate. It was furiously attacked by the Port Arthur battalions, which rushed upon it with a spirit that would not be denied, and it fell back routed to the north. 3,000 dead were left upon the field by the Russians, while their wounded must have numbered not far short of 5,000. The want of skill displayed by the Russian soldiers, many of whom were raw recruits or ill-trained reservists, was the subject of much comment from the Japanese, who lost only about 1,000 men in these two combats. At nightfall they held a line running through Lamuh, distant only eleven miles from the Mukden



PREPARATIONS MADE BY GENERAL LINIEVITCH TO MEET THE JAPANESE.
Sharpshooters drilling.

(Copyright, Victor Bulla.)

railway-station. On the 4th Kawamura's right once more attacked Tita, but not seriously, since it had detached a considerable part of its force towards Machuntun to co-operate with the 11th Division. The Russians, on the other hand, had been reinforced, and, observing the weakening of the Japanese, they delivered a fierce counter-attack upon Kawamura's men, which was only repulsed with difficulty. At Machuntun little ground was gained that day, but reinforcements were now coming up from both east and west, as Kuroki had despatched a detachment from the Kaotuling Pass which pushed up the road to Wuchiatze, driving the Russians back. Elsewhere Kuroki thought that he detected some signs of the Russians weakening, but as both Kawamura and Nodzu were at a standstill, he was doubtful whether to press his attack. He telegraphed to Marshal Oyama to this effect, and received this brief message: "Attack, at whatever cost of life, without the slightest intermission." At once he put his forces into the assault and began the bloodiest fighting of the whole battle, specially concentrating his efforts upon the position to the north of Beniapatze. Late in the night of the 4th-5th he carried the first Russian position, but only with enormous loss, over walls of dead. On the Shaho Nodzu's right still demonstrated against Putiloff Hill, while his left continued its advance to the west of the main railway-line.

Precipitate Russian Flight.

Into this narrow angle between the railway and the Hunho the Russians were pouring troops. Crowded into it were portions of the 10th, 8th, Mixed, and 5th Corps, all the units much intermingled and disorganised, so that soldiers of three or four different corps would be fighting in the same regiment. Many Russian officers had fallen, and the troops no longer responded to appeals made to them to charge, though they were willing stubbornly to hold their

ground and await the Japanese attack. Kaulbars had taken up his headquarters at Mukden after his flight from Maturan, the better to be able to meet Nogi and Oku's movements. General Tserpitsky of the 10th Corps was in charge on the actual front. Riding among his men as the day fell, with the glare of six great conflagrations raging in the villages to the south full in view, and the terrifying tumult of battle drawing ever nearer, he strove to encourage his men to attack. They crowded about him "like frightened children about their father," and finally, restoring confidence by his indomitable valour, he induced them to make one more effort. Advancing in line through the darkness over a terrain strewn with thousands of tins of meats and preserves plundered from the Russian stores, they drew near to the glare of a village and saw silhouetted against it hundreds of figures with skin collars showing in the glow. A roar of fire told them that these were the Japanese, whereupon the whole force turned tail in wild precipitate flight.



GENERAL KASHTALINSKY.

Another Russian regiment was induced to charge by the general ordering its colonel to give each man a rouble, but its efforts were not prolonged and, meeting a hurricane of bullets and Shimose shells, it also broke and fell back. The attempt to take the offensive failed, yet on the defence the Russian troops still gave enormous trouble.

North of the Hunho, Oku was not as yet ready to advance with vigour, though his troops were hard at work in the villages, striving to beat the Russians back. The head of the 1st Siberian Corps, marching west from Fushun, whither it had been sent on a wild goose chase, was at last beginning to arrive, but its men were tired out and dispirited. They were flung into the combat at once. "Once a Russian line began to work its way forward at one end of a village and a Japanese line at the other end," writes the "Times" correspondent with the Japanese army; "there

Oku North of
the Hunho.



GENERAL LINIEVITCH, THE COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF OF THE RUSSIAN ARMIES IN MANCHURIA.

General Linievitch is here shown in his working-room at Khabarovsk. It will be remembered that he succeeded General Kuropatkin in the command-in-chief. He is sixty-five years of age. He saw a good deal of fighting in the Russo-Turkish War of 1877-78, and took part in the expedition to China in 1900. Before succeeding General Kuropatkin, General Linievitch was first in command of the Siberian Army Corps operations, and, later, of the First Manchurian Army. Our photograph is by Sergej Smirnov.

was a bloody game of hide-and-seek. Warfare reverted to a primeval scrimmage where brute bravery and fox-like cunning on the part of individuals, or groups, won the day. Both sides avoided the open thoroughfares as they would a live wire. The antagonists hugged the street walls as they crept forward, or broke through the walls of houses in order to get into the next compound, where Russian fired and lunged at Japanese and Japanese fired and lunged at Russian." Nogi this day pushed his left up to Tashinchiao after continual fighting, while his right touched Oku before Likwanpu. His troops carried the outskirts of that village, but there found themselves brought up sharply by the series of Russian works which defended the country west of Mukden.

March 5 and 6 were the most critical days of the whole battle for the Japanese. Both wings were practically at a standstill, while terrific fighting proceeded between Shahopu and Likwanpu. Kawamura's

Two Critical Days.

army made no headway against

Tita, though before Machuntun the heights to the north-west of Paitzekai were carried. The Russians showed themselves in considerable force to the east of Tita, moving south-eastwards from Yingpan, and threatening the flank of the Japanese army. Still further to the east, in the wild forest country between Singking and the Korean frontier, the Japanese gained an important success. A division, detached from Kawamura's army, which was slowly moving northwards through this difficult and inhospitable region, drove the Russians out of



[Photo by Victor Bulla.]

RUSSIANS ERECTING WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS.

Hwaiyen and occupied it on the 6th. On Kuroki's front assaults continued all the 5th, but little progress was made. His right, co-operating with Kawamura, carried the Russian lines north of Tungkuling, and rendered untenable the position of a Russian detachment which was stationed well to the south of that point and which appears to have retired in the night through the maze of mountain ridges and difficult defiles amidst which the Eastern armies struggled. His centre forced back the Russians still further on the upper Shaho line and held the ground which it had gained, in spite of numerous counter-attacks delivered by the Russians in great force during the night. On the 6th his right pushed back the Russians to Tutaokou, and towards the afternoon signs of a Russian intention to retire were detected. Their force was seemingly weakening in his front, and he reported to that effect to Marshal Oyama, with the result that he immediately received orders to attack with renewed vigour on the following days.

As for Nodzu, his right remained stationary along the Shaho line and at Putiloff Hill, steadily pressing and watching the Russians, as a cat watches a mouse, for any sign of movement or retreat. Kuropatkin reported the situation in this direction as being "calm." As the Japanese flank movement to the west of Mukden developed, Marshal Oyama expected the Russians along the Shaho to retire, for the purpose of concentrating and falling upon General Nogi.



MUKDEN IMPERIAL ARSENAL, FORMERLY OCCUPIED BY THE RUSSIANS.

The real centre of the battle during these two critical days was to the front of Oku and Nogi. At daybreak of the 5th a fearful artillery duel began between the Russian and Japanese guns forming two enormous batteries confronting each other between Machiapu and Likwanpu. "We were like insects living in a drum which was getting a tremendous whack on each side every few minutes," writes an American correspondent with General Tserpitsky between the two lines of fire. Shells fell in the house which the general had made his headquarters, and he was compelled to beat a somewhat hurried retirement to Tapu, south of the Mukden railway-station. As seen from this point, the Russian position looked hopeless. In a wide arc from south to north Japanese shells were bursting all along the Russian front, and they even began to fall upon the goods yard and station itself. But the Japanese advance had for the moment come to a standstill. Two furious attacks, delivered in the early hours of the morning, upon Yangshihtun had failed, and in the teeth of the Russian artillery and the heavy reinforcements which were constantly arriving on the western front General Oku found his task one of extreme and increasing difficulty. The Russians were plainly massing their forces near Machiapu and Likwanpu to break through between his army and Nogi's. Thirty-two heavy Russian howitzers were brought up to Machiapu, whence they poured a terrific fire on the Japanese, who were also employing a great array of long-range heavy guns in their attack.

At this moment the spectacle was a most impressive one. "From the Hun Bridge the long line of battle, stretching in both directions as far as the eye can see north-west towards Tashihchiao and eastwards along the Shaho, is marked by a line of bursting shells," telegraphed a correspondent with the Russian army. As night approached, the Japanese, reinforced and employing all the reserves of the army, began once more to make headway, though their progress was still slow. Nodzu's force west of the railway succeeded in gaining ground and captured the villages in the angle between the main-line and the branch to Maturan. Suchiatun and all the stores there were set on fire by the Russians. In the Japanese advance several Russian 6-inch howitzers were taken.

Working towards the north, Nogi's army, on the 5th, held a line well to the north-west of Mukden, from Tashihchiao northwards, along which it was hotly engaged with a large



EXECUTION OF CHUNCHUSES BY RUSSIANS AT MUKDEN.

force of Russian troops who were endeavouring to drive it back. It held its ground, however, and repulsed several Russian attacks, inflicting heavy loss upon its enemy. The Russians complained of the new and strange uses of war adopted by the Japanese; they asserted that a regiment of Japanese troops faced round and marched towards the Japanese army, and was apparently received by the Japanese with a heavy fire, when it feigned to recoil, and, retreating in the dim light, gained the Russian entanglements unmolested. The Russians, about to receive their supposed comrades, were suddenly attacked by this force, which poured in upon them a murderous fusillade at the closest quarters. This and other wild tales of Japanese prowess and stratagem greatly discouraged the Russian troops.

**Nogi North-West
of Mukden.**

While Nogi was thus slowly nearing the railway some eight miles north of Mukden, General Kuropatkin



[Copyright, Victor Bulla.]

GENERAL SARUBAJEFF INSPECTING THE REDOUBTS OF
THE OMSKY REGIMENT.

was already beginning the evacuation of the city. The Russo-Chinese Bank removed its treasures and closed. Train after train, freighted with heavy artillery and stores, was steaming off northwards along the line, under the Japanese shells, and the sight of these trains stirred the Japanese troops to yet more arduous exertions. In places they delivered no fewer than 10 or 11 successive assaults, but notwithstanding all their courage they still failed to beat in the resistance of the mass of Russian troops south-west and west of Mukden.

On the 6th the battle was renewed from Machiapu to Pinglopu, some six miles west of the railway. "The

Dogged Russians. doggedness of that Russian resistance!" writes a Japanese officer

in the 8th Division which was attacking about Yang-shihtun. "Heavy guns and light guns, handy mountain guns and little dynamite guns, all joined in the bombardment of their positions, while the heroic Russian gunners replied shot for shot and shell for shell. Attacks and counter-attacks succeeded each other like the figures on a fairy lantern. We fought with rifles, we fought with bayonets, then with grenades and with shovels and with picks and even with fists." Whole battalions on either side were annihilated. The

streets were piled with dead, many torn to pieces by the cruel hand-grenades, which both sides freely used. Five or six times the Russians in superior force charged the Japanese lines at this point, and penetrated them. But those who fought their way through the gaps never returned; the Japanese reserves met them and killed them or captured them to a man. Still on this day the Japanese front gained no ground at this vital point, but, if anything, receded.

With nightfall the Japanese, reinforced by the fresh troops which were daily arriving, began a series of desperate efforts to storm the Russian positions. In the 8th Division, "men came to their officers and

Japanese Heroism.

begged them to let them go and fill up the trenches with their corpses, so that others, following them, might walk over their bodies into the defences. At the men's earnest request a deputation of officers and men was sent to the divisional commander, who gave them the required permission, not without some hesitation." "All the unwounded of our company," writes a Japanese officer, "offered themselves to a man; in fact, they all offered themselves, but we were compelled to take only the unwounded. The party devoted to death formed up in a square, each man with a tumbler full of water, to drink to the long parting. General Tashimi uncorked some wine and himself poured just a drop into each man's glass, shaking hands with each. Holding his glass aloft, he said: 'Gentlemen, I have not much to



DISORDER IN WARSAW. PILLAGING A BOOT SHOP

say to you to-night. You well know the desperate nature of the undertaking in which your success is not certain. You know, too, how small are your chances of returning alive to tell the tale. I can only wish you God-speed. Go, do your best. I do not command it of you, comrades, but only cherish the hope that your resolution and ardour may bear the fruit of victory. Farewell, farewell! Long live the Emperor!" But the heroic attack was in vain. The Japanese rushed into the Russian works, overbearing all obstacles in face of a terrific fire, but very few of them came back. They died almost to a man, and their eyes closed upon defeat.

The Russians displayed equal bravery, but not equal skill and dash. The 1st Siberian Infantry Regiment was annihilated at Likwanpu. Its colonel and almost all its officers were among the dead, while the 1st Siberian Rifle Division to which it belonged left more than half its strength upon the field, losing over 5,000 men, and this on the top of its terrible roll of casualties at Heikoutai. In the village of Likwanpu and along Oku's front alone 8,000 Russian corpses were counted by the Japanese on the morning



MAJOR-GENERAL PRINCE KANIN.
President of the Japanese Red Cross Society.



[Copyright, Victor Bulla.
RUSSIAN GENERAL EXAMINING THE TRENCHES AT
ENDAGAU.

of the 7th. At Yangshihtun the fighting was as desperate as that at Likwanpu. The only quarter where progress was made on the 6th was where Nodzu's men were fighting the retreating Russians south of the Hunho and to the west of the railway-line. Here they beat back the Russian front some distance with heavy loss and prodigious effort.

As for Nogi, he was hard put to it all the 6th to maintain his ground. Kuropatkin had moved against

him the whole force of the 16th

Nogi's Position.

Corps, which, though already once defeated by his troops, had been reorganised and displayed the traditional stubbornness of Russian troops. Several other reserve units had also been sent north, to the Tashihchiao road. Nogi, in the morning, had to fight a fierce combat with a division of Russians, supported by 70 guns, which flung itself upon his men in a desperate bayonet charge. The Port Arthur troops were equal to the emergency, and met with courage and coolness the onslaught of the Russians, inflicting heavy loss upon the Russian battalions which maintained a far too close formation. The Russians succeeded, however, in storming one



GENERAL RENNENKAMPF COVERING KUROPATKIN'S RETREAT AT THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN.
No. LV



RUSSIAN PRISONERS AT MUKDEN EN ROUTE TO JAPAN.

men must fight every inch of their way before they reached the railway and cut the communications of General Kuropatkin's army.

end of the village of Tashichiao and in holding it against all the Japanese attacks that day. Working further to the north-east, Nogi encountered the most determined opposition, as the Russian strength in his front grew, but by nightfall he had established the division which formed his extreme left and the left of the whole Japanese army near Pinglopu, where he was confronted by a Russian force not far short of his strength in numbers. At Pinglopu he was nine miles north of Mukden, and close to the railway, but before him stretched the usual line of fortified villages, through which his

CHAPTER LXI.

THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN—III. ROUT OF THE RUSSIAN ARMY.

MARCH 7 dawned not more propitious for the Japanese than March 6. The Russians still held their own all along the line, and in places took the offensive with considerable success. In front of Tita and Machuntun there was as yet no marked advance; though Kuroki's army, attacking furiously, made a little progress before Machuntun, where his men were co-operating with Kawamura, but he could gain no ground at the Chetuling Pass or before Tungchiatun. On Nodzu's right the Japanese were engaged in beating off the Russian counter-attacks near

March 7, 1905. Putiloff Hill with forces considerably weakened by the absence of units which had been despatched to strengthen the armies fighting to the west of the railway. To the west of the line, however, Nodzu's left was going forward, though very slowly. All the night a fearful hand-to-hand combat had surged up and down the street of the little village of Hanchengpu, and about 11 a.m. the struggle issued in the



RUSSIAN PRISONERS AT MUKDEN AT TEA.

capture of the village by the Japanese. At the same time they pushed their front up to Machiapu and were now in close contact with the second Russian line of defences to the west of the railway. Repeated counter-attacks delivered by the Russians failed to force them back or to regain the ground that had been lost by General Kuropatkin's army.

North of the Hunho the struggle was still bloody and indecisive. Large reinforcements had reached the Japanese, but the Russians had been almost equally strengthened by the arrival of troops from Tiehling and Harbin, by the



INFORMATION BUREAU OF THE JAPANESE IMPERIAL GUARD.



THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN.
Retreat of ammunition and supply waggons.

approach of the forces which General Kuropatkin had so prematurely despatched to his eastern flank, and by various units drawn from his centre. The Russians, it must be remembered, in this part of the field were able to use the strong works which had been previously constructed, while the Japanese were always attacking over frozen ground, so that it was impossible for them to entrench. The fiercest fighting raged between Machiapu and Likwanpu, where General Oku had his hands full. He had to bear the brunt of the attack of a much superior Russian force endeavouring to drive an opening between his army and General Nogi's. Disaster in this quarter was only averted by the vigour with which the Japanese Staff, on learning of Oku's difficulties, pushed Nogi in upon the railway,



THE 2ND FIELD HOSPITAL OF THE 5TH DIVISION OF THE JAPANESE ARMY
AT MUKDEN.

This was formerly the Russian Red Cross Hospital.
The Russian inscription remains over the door.

men who had fought so gallantly at Nanshan and in the bloody assault upon Shushanpu at the battle of Liaoyang. The various units holding the village for the Russians were driven back to the eastern end of the place, where they still stubbornly held their ground. Presently powerful reinforcements reached them, and in the afternoon they began to advance in great force, about a division strong. The Japanese regiment had been ordered to hold the place to the last, and it faithfully obeyed. Surrounded, isolated, amidst an overwhelming number of Russians, it continued a



SOME JAPANESE SPOILS.



CHINESE HOUSES AT MUKDEN WHICH WERE USED BY THE RUSSIANS
AS HOSPITALS.

menacing the retreat of the Russian army. One division of Oku's troops was sent to Nogi's aid, but this left Oku in a perilous plight.

Attacks and counter-attacks succeeded each other all the day.

Struggle at Likwanpu. The Russian front could not

be beaten in between Machiapu and Yangshihtun. Likwanpu, however, after changing hands several times, was stormed once more by the 33rd Regiment of the Japanese 3rd Division—the

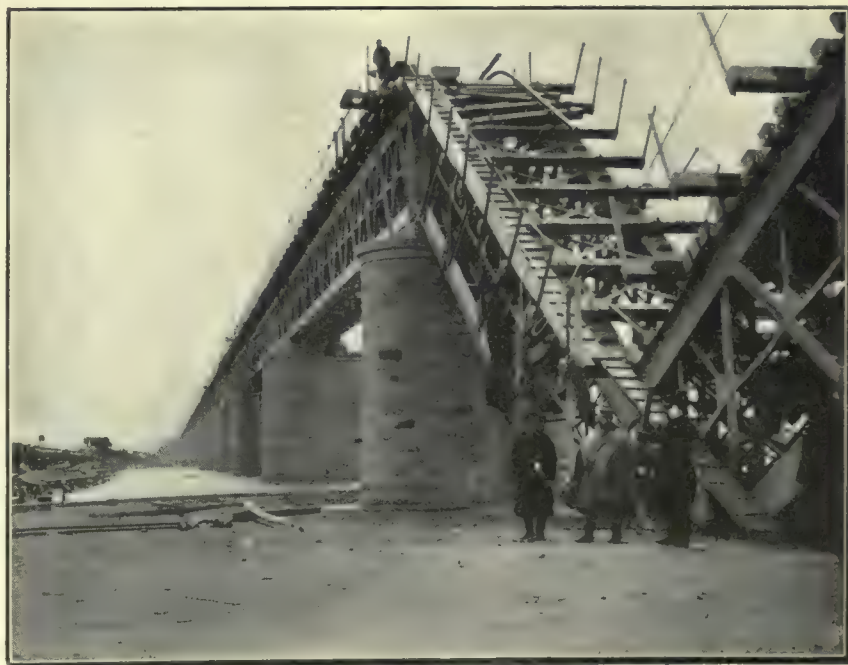
desperate resistance till late into the evening. Then at last its struggles ended as there were no Japanese left to fight. Under an avalanche of shells and attacked incessantly the regiment perished almost to the last man, the last surviving officer, a major, committing suicide after he had been grievously wounded by a shell splinter. Likwanpu was in the hands of the Russians, but at fearful cost.

This act of heroism and self-sacrifice, however, served its



SERVICE AT A BARN IMPROVISED AS A CHURCH FOR THE 146TH CZARINA'S REGIMENT (LINIEVITCH'S ARMY).
[Copyright, Victor Bulla.]

purpose; it was the crowning deed that brought Japan victory. For while the masses of Russians were hurling themselves upon this small force of determined Japanese, while the Russian attention was concentrated upon this point of the battlefield, Nogi had resumed his swift and terrible advance. The Port Arthur divisions, carrying everything before them, after halting for nearly three days on a line between Tashihchiao and Pinglopu, suddenly began to sweep in directly upon Mukden and the railway. The effect upon the Russians was prodigious. An American correspondent with the headquarters of the Russian 10th Army Corps tells us that on the morning of the 7th he was awakened by the roar of 240 Russian guns, near Tapu, and heard "an excited voice calling madly into a telephone. That voice shouted, raved, then mastered itself, and spoke again with great distinctness, repeating again and again the same thing and being always evidently misunderstood. And yet it should have been easy for anyone to grasp what it said, which simply was that the Japanese were advancing against Wanchiatun." Wanchiatun is a station on the railway about seven miles north of Mukden; it thus lay upon the Russian line of retreat. The



DAMAGED BRIDGE OVER THE HUN, NEAR MUKDEN.
[D. Fraser photo.]



LIEUTENANT-GENERAL OSEKO,
Japanese Divisional Commander.

daring onset had produced the calculated effect upon General Kuropatkin. That day the Russian generalissimo issued orders to the 1st Army, under General Linievitch, to withdraw during the following night from its advanced positions at Tita, at Machuntun, and near Beniaputze, to the line of the river Hun. At the same time the 3rd Army, under General Bilderling, was ordered to retire to the south of Mukden, abandoning Putiloff Hill and the Shaho line. The generals in command of the 1st and 3rd Armies received these orders with tears and consternation. They imagined themselves to have been fighting a winning battle; they knew that they had held back the Japanese, inflicting upon them heavy loss, and in private conversation they bitterly complained of General Kuropatkin's passion for retreats at the very moment of victory. As at Liaoyang, as on the Shaho, they said, he was giving ground just when the battle had been won. Not knowing the full strength of General Nogi's army, they altogether under-estimated the menace to their communications of its rapid march upon Wanchiatun.

agonised voice added "that this was the commencement of the final general advance of the Japanese." The great masses of men struggling about Likwanpu and Machiapu, where the Russian leaders seem still to have imagined that Nogi was engaged, were now threatened with complete envelopment and utter disaster. Nogi was elsewhere, moving in upon the railway, and it was doubtful if the Russian forces in his front were strong enough to hold him off.

Nogi's main force, meantime, had fought its way through village after village and taken up a position from Chwanwanchiao to Chanchiatai, in close proximity to the Chinese Imperial tombs at Peiling, north-west of Mukden. Hence it could bombard the Russian city of Mukden from the north and shell the railway, along which passed a constant procession of heavily-laden Russian trains, bearing stores and heavy artillery off to Tiehling. Despite all his efforts, in the face of the increasing strength of the Russians, Nogi could not complete his task and take up a position astride of the line. But his swift and



LIEUTENANT-GENERAL TASHIMI,
Japanese Divisional Commander.

March 9, 1905.

FLEEING TO THE HUNHO

1307

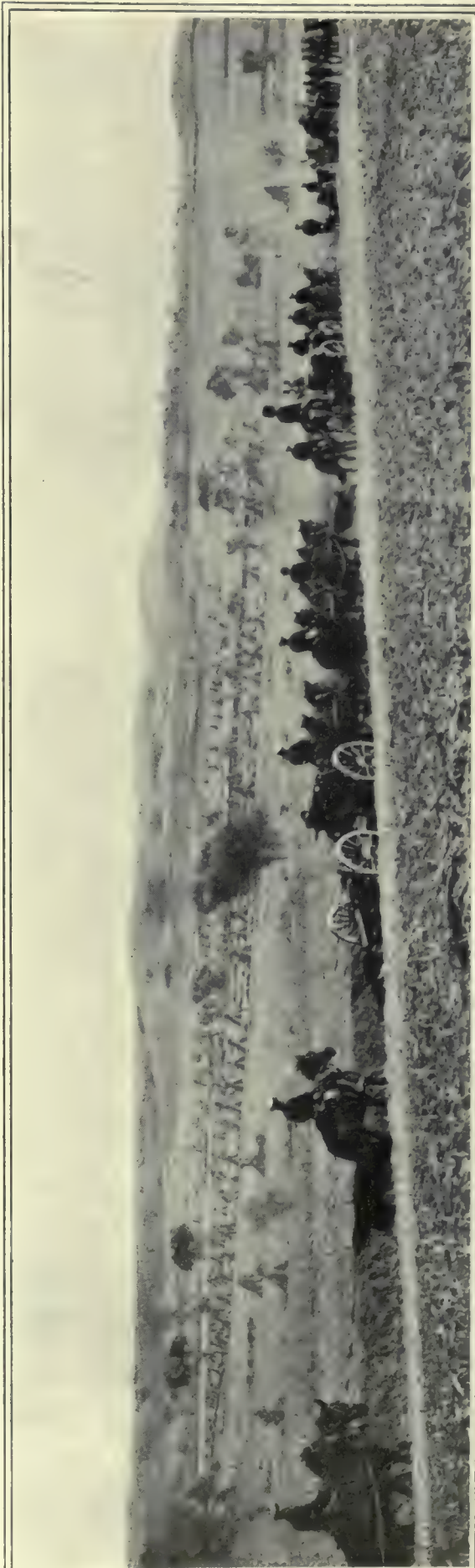
The battle, indeed, was now irretrievably lost. The best that General Kuropatkin could hope for was to bring the greater part of his army off the field. To cover its retreat he planned a determined attack which was to be executed by no fewer than 90 battalions, under his personal command, drawn from the 1st and 3rd Russian Armies, upon the Japanese to the immediate west of Mukden.

The warning that a Russian retreat was to be expected was sent by the Japanese Staff to the various generals along the Japanese line. At daylight the attack upon Tita was

Russian Retreat Expected.

resumed by Kawamura and pressed with vigour, as it was now found that only a Russian rearguard remained before the Japanese 5th Army. Nevertheless, not till the following day were the strong positions at Tita in the hands of the Japanese. At Machuntun their success was marked and immediate. They rushed into the Russian works and found the Russians gone; rapidly following up the retreating army, they advanced some distance beyond Yaoling. Kuroki's divisions had as easy a task. Kuroki himself was writing the order for his troops to advance, when he received the news that his left had entered the Russian positions on the north bank of the Shaho and that the Russian force was not even in sight. He changed his order to advance by substituting for "advance" the word "pursue." The Japanese pressed swiftly upon the retiring Russians, but did not overtake the enemy's rearguard till it had reached a point eight miles from the Shaho line, on the further side of the Chetuling defile. From this point the Japanese followed the Russians closely as far as the Hunho, which they struck very early in the morning of the 9th, marching along the tracks which led through the mountains to Kinglungtien and Chiuchang.

Nodzu, learning that the Russians were weakening in his front and clearly understanding the vital necessity of holding the 3rd Russian Army so as to prevent it concentrating against and crushing General Nogi, felt the Russian positions about Putiloff Hill incessantly during the night of the 7th-8th. At 2 a.m. his outposts discovered that the Russians were gone. Without an instant's delay his divisions rushed the Shaho line and began a rapid movement northwards to the Hun. Racing forward, his men caught up the Russian columns immediately to the



[Copyright, Victor Bulla.]

SOME OF THE ARTILLERY WITH GENERAL LINEVITCH'S ARMY.



JAPANESE TRANSPORTING 28-cm. SHELLS.

The Russian corps of the centre and eastern armies took post in a line along the Hun; the 3rd Corps forming the extreme eastern flank at Fushun, after which came in succession the 2nd, 4th, and 1st European Corps. The 6th Corps of the 3rd Army was posted immediately to the south-east of Mukden; the 17th Corps was stationed astride of the main road from Mukden to

south of the Hun, between Niang-niangsai and Paitzetai, and, attacking them at once, drove them back in disorder upon the river, without giving them time to halt and hold the branch railway which ran between Suchiatun and Fushun, on which originally the 3rd Army had intended to rally. The morale of the 3rd Army suffered seriously during this precipitate retreat, and its units which had hitherto well maintained their organisation became much intermingled.



RUSSIAN DEAD—AFTER THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN.



MAIN STREET OF MUKDEN AFTER ITS CAPTURE BY THE JAPANESE.

Liaoyang; and the 5th Corps held the railway. A confused mass of troops of the 5th, 10th, 8th, Mixed Rifle Corps, 1st Siberian Corps, and 16th Corps held the western front and opposed the eight Japanese divisions under Generals Oku and Nogi, which were now attacking with renewed energy and fury in a final effort to fight their way in upon the railway and complete the Russian overthrow.

The fight was hottest from Yangshihtun north to Tasintun, where the Japanese were advancing all along the line.



THE ADVANCED RIFLEMEN OF THE RUSSIAN ARMY IN A RIFLE-PIT.

[Copyright, Victor Bulla.]

About 11 a.m. there were signs that the Russians were weakening preparatory to a withdrawal to the north. The 8th Division rushed Yangshihtun with irresistible élan, the 3rd Division finally carried Likwanpu, and both divisions moved in towards Mukden Station, fighting every inch of the way with the dispirited Russian soldiery. Large numbers of Russians abandoned the conflict, worn out with fatigue, or demoralised by the fearful losses

Retreating on Mukden Station. which they had suffered, and the Japanese made many hundreds of prisoners almost without resistance. To the north, where Oku's left and Nogi's main army were engaged, about Pachiatze, a correspondent with the Russian army thus describes the situation: "There was the usual long grey plain, with the usual Russian soldiers advancing over it in loose formation. The usual Russian batteries were covering the advance and the usual Japanese shrapnel and Shimose were trying to impede it." The Russians all seemed tired and dispirited. They knew that they had been driven back from village after village, and the shadow of defeat was upon them. . . . A column of smoke burst from the hamlet of Pachiatze, and a few little khaki-clad figures flitted underneath the trees. The broken-remnant of a Russian regiment was seen retreating



SPOILS TAKEN AT MUKDEN RAILWAY-STATION BY THE JAPANESE.



as best it could to the north-east.
 . . . A Japanese machine-gun opened fire on an adjoining party of Russians, and the stream of bullets which issued from it could be easily traced by a long line formed of puffs of dust which rose from every prominence of the ploughed field over which it passed. This line swung backwards and forwards in an angle like the hand of a compass, or like a searchlight."

A WALL NEAR
 MUKDEN
 DAMAGED BY
 JAPANESE
 FIRE.

Pressing their attacks con-



[Victor Bulla photo.]

THE RUSSIAN ARMY TWENTY-FIVE MILES
 EAST OF MUKDEN.

tinuously, the Japanese of the Port Arthur army stormed the southern of the two Santaitzes, took Liutaotun, and reached the precincts of the Imperial tombs at Peiling. The tombs, "save for the roar of the batteries which re-echoed through them, were peaceful as the grave. There was not a soul in that great shady quadrangle; not a visitor in the reposeful, ancient temples"; the Manchu Emperors slept their last sleep undisturbed by the roar of battle between the two great armies wrestling over their graves. Each side respected the tombs; they were as an oasis of



JAPANESE FIELD POST.

The notice signifies that newspapers may be read within by the troops.



THE LAST DAYS OF RUSSIA IN MUKDEN.

The confusion was enormous. The army was in flight, and Chinese refugees struggled towards the gates.



(D. Fraser photo.)
RETURNING A JAPANESE GUN USED AT MUKDEN TO DALNY.
It was too heavy for field work.

its destruction. The rails were severed and removed, the telegraphs were cut, but the Japanese detachment was weak, and was speedily assailed by a brigade of Cossacks who drove it back after a savage encounter, inflicting heavy loss upon it. Nevertheless telegraphic communication was not restored for some hours and railway communication was not opened again till the evening. Russian reinforcements were hurried to the threatened spot to prevent a catastrophe, and a division of fresh troops took post near Wanchiatun, with orders to hold out to the last and cover the retreat.

General Kuropatkin's plan of collecting 90 battalions and dealing a heavy counterstroke at the Japanese left-centre was never carried out. The Russian generalissimo found that his gigantic army had so dwindled and

Russians Retreat North.



ABANDONED RUSSIAN SHELLS FOUND ON
THE BATTLEFIELD.



CHINESE FORTUNE-TELLER AT KINCHOW.

rest in the desert created by the crowning conflict of the war. Working steadily eastwards towards the railway, a Japanese company of engineers, covered by a detachment of infantry, reached the line and began

lost cohesion under the incessant attacks to which it had been subjected for a fortnight that only 16 battalions could be assembled. Such a force was much too weak for so desperate an enterprise, and nothing remained but to strain every nerve to hold the positions to the west of the railway while the army was withdrawn northwards. Early in the afternoon Russian columns were seen by the Japanese streaming north, to the east of the railway, and upon them as they fell back Nogi's army directed an incessant long-range fire, which caused the enemy many casualties. It was still,



SURGEON-GENERAL SANYOSHI,
Of the Japanese Army.

surprised by Nodzu's movement. He fell upon the Russian corps with fury. Planting his heavier guns upon an eminence to the south of the river, whence their fire could sweep the whole country northwards as far as Mukden, he rushed the last Russian positions south of the Hun after a hand-to-hand engagement in which bomb and bayonet were freely used. When day came and the 80,000 Russians in his front retreated across the ice of the river, his guns shelled them with terrible effect, and his victorious battalions pressed forward and occupied the southern bank of the stream.

Further to the east Kuroki had displayed equal energy and zeal. His regiments, without his order, acting on the

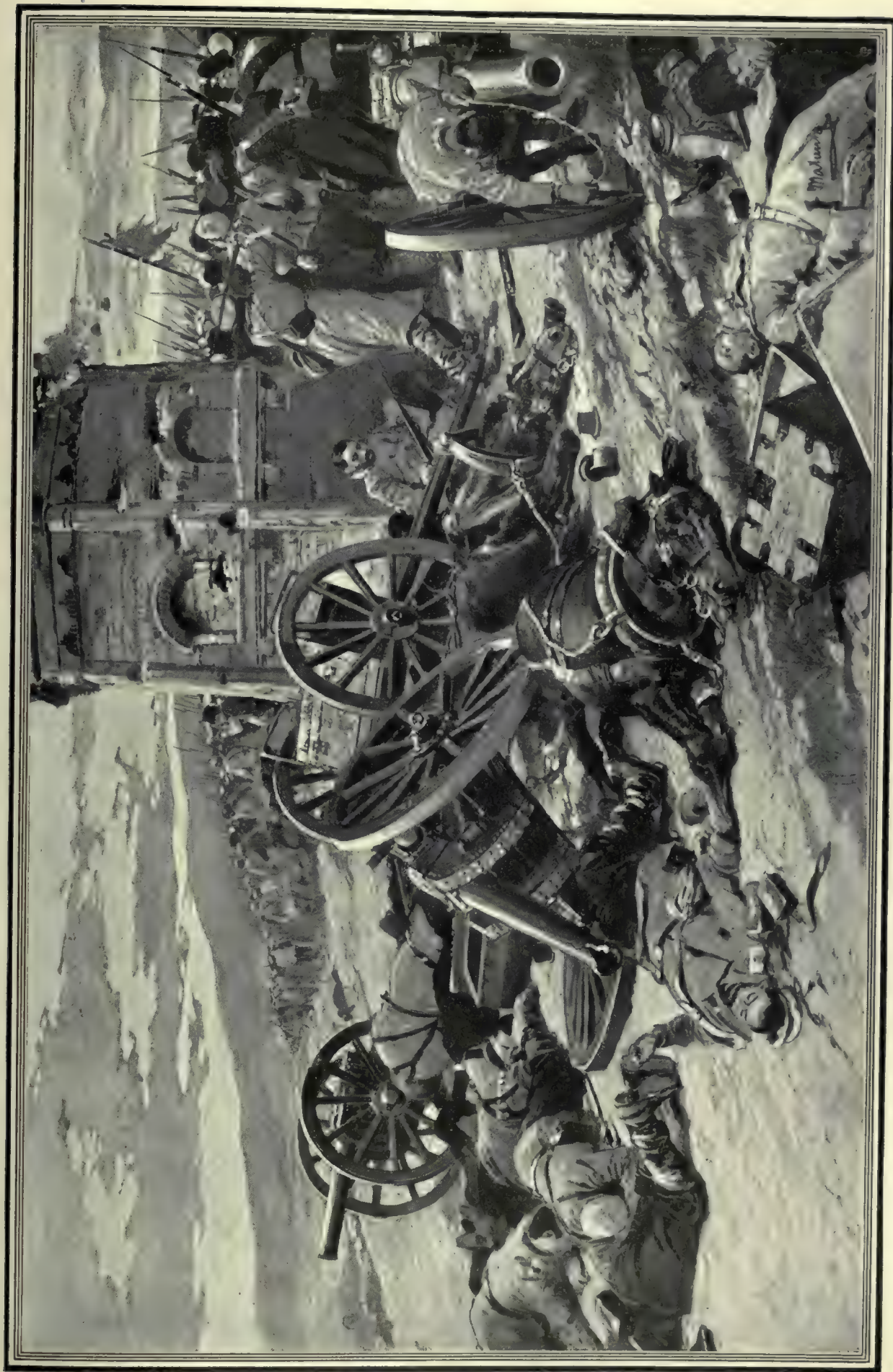
Kuroki's Energy. initiative of their officers, were crossing the Hun at Chiuchang and marching northwards towards the railway well to the rear of Mukden. All the night the tireless Japanese battalions were pressing forward, through the slush and ice, driving away to the east the 4th Russian Corps. On Kuroki's right Kawamura was as active; his divisions had hurried north from Machuntun to the Hun, and from Tita were racing towards Fushun. Thus all along the

however, just possible for the Russians to repeat their manœuvre at Liaoyang and to retire to the north, leaving the Japanese only an empty town and some hundreds or thousands of wounded and of dead. To prevent such an ending to the battle, the Japanese general strained every nerve.

At midnight of the 8th-9th the crowds of fugitives, officers, and correspondents in Mukden heard the roar of heavy firing at the very gates of the city. Nodzu and Kuroki were both moving swiftly in upon the Russians. Above the roll of rifle-firing came at measured intervals the boom of a large gun, sounding like a funeral bell, the parting note of Russian domination in Manchuria. It rang out time after time, and time after time its echo rolled away into the hills, or was lost in the tumult of a fierce infantry engagement. Moving in the darkness with unexpected energy Nodzu's infantry were attacking the Russian positions south of the Hun, near Yangkwantun. The Russian 3rd Army was



MAJOR-GENERAL FUKUSHIMA
Of the Japanese Army.



AN EPISODE OF THE RETREAT FROM MUKDEN.



GENERAL COUNT NODZU.

utter disaster. On all sides rose about it the roar of firing; the Japanese were everywhere—east, west, north, and south. Incessantly there blew from the north a furious icy wind, carrying with it such dense clouds of dust that it was impossible to see more than a few feet ahead. The sky was grey and dark; the fleeing Russians were covered from head to foot by the grey dust; the cold was so intense that wounded men fell right and left and never rose again. Even the hale and strong felt that icy blast through the thickest furs; it lashed the face like a whip and numbed the hands; it hampered progress so that the sturdiest troops could only cover a few miles by incredible exertions. But if it punished the Russians cruelly, it checked the Japanese. They were marching against it, and whenever the Russians made a stand it blew upon the backs of the Russians and in the faces of the Japanese. To keep off Nogi's army during the retirement, the Russians steadily massed all their regiments which had some fight left in them in the direction of Tasintun, and during the day succeeded in effecting their purpose. Their strength was such that the Japanese could make no headway, having now nearly one-third of the Russian army against them. A part of Tasintun was carried by the Russians under General Kuropatkin's command and held till the following day. Southward the Russians held the railway-line to the Hun Bridge, whence their front ran along the River Hun as

Russian centre and eastern flank the Japanese had broken through. The position was a terrible one for the Russians. In the great loop formed by the Japanese front about Mukden remained thousands of disorganised Russian troops, the greater part of the 3rd Russian Army, and innumerable batteries of artillery. All the night General Kuropatkin was busy withdrawing his shattered forces to the north, but the work was very far from complete when the 9th dawned. On that day Mukden was ablaze. The Russians had fired their stores and their granaries, and a dense column of smoke and flame rose from the Russian town about the railway-station.

To the north through the night, in a condition of panic-terror, there poured steadily forth a vast stream of fugitives, regiments of infantry broken and in wild disorder, intermingled with waggons and guns. The plain was still hard, so that the flying army was not compelled to keep to the roads, a fact which saved a large part of it from



SURGEON-GENERAL HASHIMOTO.

Of the Japanese Army.

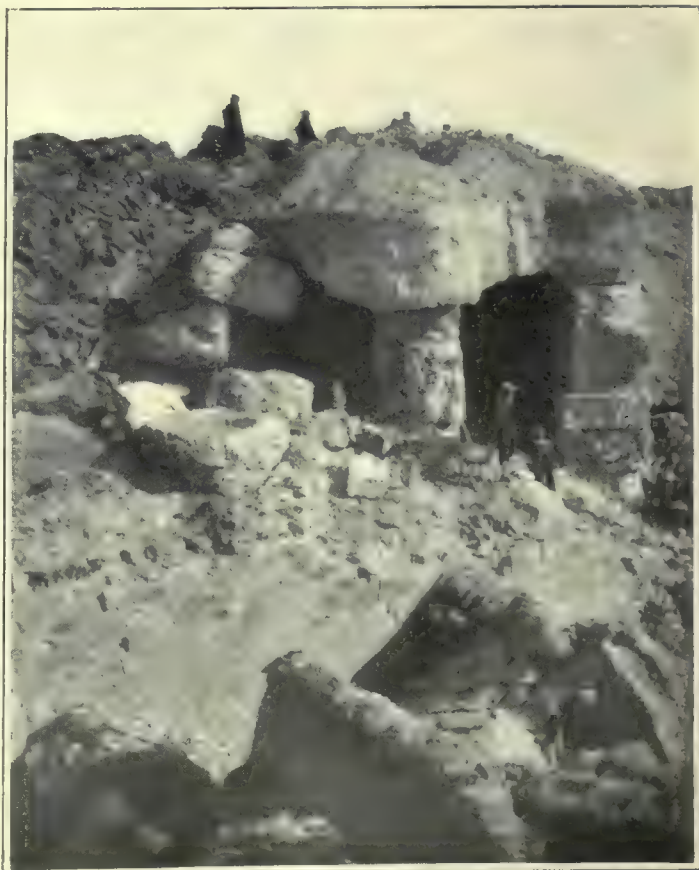


THE PORT ARTHUR VOLUNTEER CORPS.

far as Fuling. At this point it was driven in by Kuroki's force, which had by the evening of the 9th established itself well to the north-east of Mukden. Finally, to the east, Linievitch held Fushun in great force with a good line of retreat northwards, avoiding Tiehling, and still faced Kawamura's army with three corps. The 1st Corps belonging to his army had been forced back into the 3rd Russian Army about Mukden.

At 10 p.m. on the night of the 9th-10th the 3rd Russian Army along the Hun received by telephone the order to retire and to fall back as rapidly as possible to the north by two parallel roads east of the railway. It

Mukden Occupied. It was then in the act of preparing a desperate counter-attack upon Nodzu's army, and at first the instructions from headquarters were not credited. As the troops were striking their camp, Nodzu's army began to cross the Hunho, from the railway-bridge to Yangkwantun, and pressed up to the very gates of Mukden before day dawned, occupying the town a few hours later. The Japanese were only just in time. The ice upon the Hun was weakening and was covered by two inches of slush, in which the gun-wheels made deep ruts. Pushing forward in the rear of the Russians, constantly harassing them and shelling their convoys which had fallen into incredible disorder, about 11 a.m. of the 10th this army reached Wangchiakou and came into line with General Kuroki's men. In every direction there was evidence of Russian disorganisation. The ground was covered with arms and accoutrements which had been



JAPANESE TUNNELLING UNDER ERHLUNGSHAN FORT.



BARON KODAMA.

careless Russian fashion, to give directions to men who were too frightened to listen to them." To the east of the railway and under the lee of the embankment lay a division of Russian troops covering the retreat, amidst a host of dead. Some of the fugitives asserted that there was no longer any hope of escape. "The Japanese are on all sides of us; we shall all be slaughtered; let us surrender; let us return to Mukden and hand ourselves over to the Japanese," they cried. What most appalled officers and men alike was the danger of falling into the hands of the bands of Hunhuses, who hung around the Russian army in its flight, and tortured to death those whom they took. Hosts of wounded men were to be seen. One soldier attracted the "Herald" correspondent's attention. He had been shot in the face and blinded, and ran wailing after his comrades, beseeching them not to desert him. In the countenances of the flying host was an unspeakable look of fear—such a look as those who survived the dreadful retreat of the French army from Moscow declared that Napoleon's soldiers wore. Night fell upon a plain covered with maddened fugitives; but the burning villages far and wide upon the horizon and the lurid glare from Mukden, now left well to the south, lighted up the dismal scene. Still the retreating host

thrown away, with unexpended ammunition, stores, carts, overturned waggons, dead horses, bodies, and living men either unable to resist the drowsiness which comes with extreme fatigue after incredible exertion or prostrated by their wounds and by their potations of vodka. All the way north from the neighbourhood of Wanchiatai to Puho the Japanese held the hills to the right of the roads and unmercifully shelled the vast torrent of fugitives as it passed. Nogi, to the west, did not as yet close in, as he was pushing his force north to attack the Russians once more at Tieling and so could not bring the full weight of his army to bear. But the Japanese troops to the east of the railway were strong enough and well-placed enough to complete the Russian disaster.

Thousands of the Russians altogether lost heart. "We are surrounded, we are surrounded,"

The Russian Rout. shouted one Russian officer to the "New York Herald's"

correspondent. "I have a recollection," states this correspondent, "of frenzied soldiers flogging on cart-horses, and infantrymen running like hares, and officers calmly stopping, after the

MARQUIS SAIONJI
The New Japanese Premier.

dared not halt. About it on every side ran the crackling of rifle-fire, with at times the heavy crashing of artillery. The wounded prone on the ground grew more numerous; their agonised entreaties for help tried to the utmost the nerve of the fugitives, but no help could be given. All the carts were crammed, and those who were flying afoot for dear life could not or would not tarry.

The Russian troops were utterly disorganised. Corps, divisions, brigades, and even regiments and companies, were intermingled in one great mass. All the night, with brief intervals of rest for a few minutes, during which hundreds fell asleep and were left behind, the weary host struggled on. An intolerable



VICTORIOUS JAPANESE IN PURSUIT OF THE RUSSIANS NORTH OF MUKDEN.



THE CHINESE EMPERORS' TOMB AT MUKDEN.

of the scythe of Death. A couple of Japanese shots were sufficient to accelerate this "sauve-qui-peut" of demoralised and outworn men from a funeral pace to a frantic rush.

Dawn of the 11th came suddenly upon the fugitives to the south of Puho. Some 5,000 Russians in a body, most of them unmounted, as the mounted men had hurried on in front, with few guns, but a sprinkling

Capture of Russians.

of gunners riding horses, the gun-traces of which had been cut or trailed on the ground, were caught in a mass. The Japanese had closed in upon them and shut the trap. From the north came volley after volley of bullets upon them, whereupon the men broke forth "into a wild, uncanny, inarticulate, lugubrious wail, which rose and fell like the keen at an old Irish funeral or the blood-curdling lamentations of the banshee." Shrapnel began to fall and cut bloody

thirst began to consume the flying army; the land was frozen and the streams were coated thick with ice, but the soldiers cut the ice with their bayonets and thus, at the price of some minutes delay, satisfied their yearning for water. Always the fugitives strove to avoid the dreadful glare of a Japanese searchlight which beamed to the north, and which, whenever it struck a line of moving men, brought down upon them a hail of shrapnel, so that the Russians feared its sweep as the sweep

VICE-ADMIRAL IJUI.
Assistant Chief of the Naval Board.

RUSSIAN PRISONERS SURVEYING THE BURIAL OF THEIR FRIENDS AT MUKDEN.

furrows through the Russians; all desire of fight or hope of resistance was dead. Most of the officers remained upright, while the men threw themselves to the ground; the officers were killed or wounded. Then some of the men raised their caps on the point of their bayonets in token that they surrendered. The Japanese, not understanding this signal, redoubled their fire. The shrapnel burst right

GENERAL PLESCHKOFF.

GENERAL LEVENSTAM.



(Victor Bulla photo.)

GENERALS PLESCHKOFF AND LEVENSTAM MASSING THEIR MEN BEFORE THE FIGHT AT THE DOLINSKY HEIGHTS.



A RUSSIAN CANET GUN IN SUNGSHUSHAN FORT AFTER ITS CAPTURE.

and left, and seeing this, without any order from their few surviving officers, the Russian soldiers began to wave anything white that they possessed. A man shouted to the bugler to blow the "Cease fire!" and prone on the ground he blew with white lips as loud and clear as he could. Others who had kept their arms now threw them away, but still the Japanese, a long way off, did not see and continued their fire. Some men began to weep and cry hysterically, and a shriek of "Oh! oh! oh!" went up from the ranks as the Russians imagined in their terror that the Japanese were determined to give no quarter, but to kill them to a man.

Then suddenly two lines of men in regular order with glinting bayonets, moving rapidly towards the Russians, appeared as if by magic in the quarter from which the fire had come. They advanced with perfect evenness, with miraculous order, unfaltering, resolute, invincible, as they had come on at Yangshihtun, at Likwanpu, at Machiapu, and all along the 100 miles of front. As they drew nearer they did not fire, but showed their set white teeth. They were the Japanese infantry. In a moment they realised what had happened and were close up to the Russians, who now were frantically waving handkerchiefs and throwing away rifles and bayonets. The Japanese closed with the Russians and fraternised with them, exchanging little treasures with them, and shaking hands. The trials of the fugitives were over; they had fallen, not into the clutches of the merciless Hunhuses, but of soldiers who acted upon the Western code of arms. The Russian rifles were gathered up; the officers' swords were handed over; and the remnant of 5,000 Russians became Japanese prisoners. Yet in the eyes of the Japanese was a shade of contempt for men who had surrendered without fighting to the last, of astonishment at the delight with which the Russians welcomed them and exulted in the prisoner's lot. The Japanese troops formed part of the Guards' Division of Kuroki's army, and had that morning fought their way to the railway near Puho.

To the east Kawamura's army, reinforced by strong detachments from Kuroki's command, on the 10th carried the Russian positions south of Fushun, and crossed the river in the night, when



WRECKED RUSSIAN GUN IN FORT ERHLUNGSHAN



AFTER THE BATTLE OF MUKDEN. THE RETREAT OF THE RUSSIANS ALONG THE RAILWAY.

The Japanese pursued the retreating army resistlessly; and inflicted severe punishment on the thoroughly demoralised Russians.



STOP THE WAR RIOTS IN MOSCOW.

Linievitch retired before them. On the 11th Kawamura occupied Yingpan. The whole Japanese army continued its advance on the 12th, 13th, and 14th, though its progress was now slower as a strong Russian rearguard, composed of picked troops, compelled it to deploy time after time and so gained time for the fugitives. On the 16th the Japanese reached Tiehling, where a strenuous resistance had been anticipated. The Russians had constructed immense fortifications and accumulated prodigious supplies at that place, intending to make it their base in case they should be compelled to evacuate Mukden. But a turning movement on the part of General Nogi's army compelled the three divisions which had been stationed there to fall back precipitately after setting fire to the stores and to the Russian buildings in the town. On the 13th the Japanese eastern army occupied Singking.

The Russian losses in this, the last and greatest battle of the war on land, were appalling. Of the great force which General Kuropatkin had collected at Mukden, nearly one-half was placed hors de combat. The Russian Losses. The prisoners taken by the Japanese numbered about 40,000, a larger total than that which surrendered at Port Arthur. Among them was one major-general, Nakhimoff, and a large number of officers. The killed left on the field numbered 26,500; the wounded were estimated by the Japanese at from 90,000 to 100,000. Thus no fewer than 156,000 men at the lowest estimate were temporarily or permanently lost to the Russian army out of the 350,000 men with whom General Kuropatkin had opened the battle. In addition to the loss of men the Russian army suffered enormous losses of material. Very much property had been destroyed or removed before the Japanese entered Mukden, but even so the captures included 66 guns, 62,000 rifles, 450 ammunition waggons, 1,000 transport waggons, 227,000 rounds of ammunition for guns and 26,000,000 for rifles; 300 railway waggons, 45 miles of light railway; an immense quantity of maps, entrenching tools, cattle, telegraph material, timber, accoutrements, bread, wheat, fuel, and fodder. These were secured in the Mukden district. At Fushun Kawamura took large quantities of food, salt, meat, bean-cake, and fuel.

Inscription inserted in each of the Japanese 200,000 Gospels, stating that it was presented by the British and Foreign Bible Society and the National Bible Society of Scotland.

明治三十七年一月二十日印刷
明治三十七年一月廿三日發行

發行所 印刷者 發行所 印刷所

兵庫縣神戶市東町二十四番地
 英國
 工、フ、バ、ロ、ツ、ト
 神戶川崎鐵道市本町五丁目八十七番地
 村岡平吉
 兵庫縣神戶市東町二十四番地
 大英國
 聖書會社
 神戶川崎鐵道市山下町八十一番地
 福音印刷合資會社

This shows the size of these miniature Gospels. The same inscription was inserted in each of the New Testaments prepared for and presented to the Japanese officers.



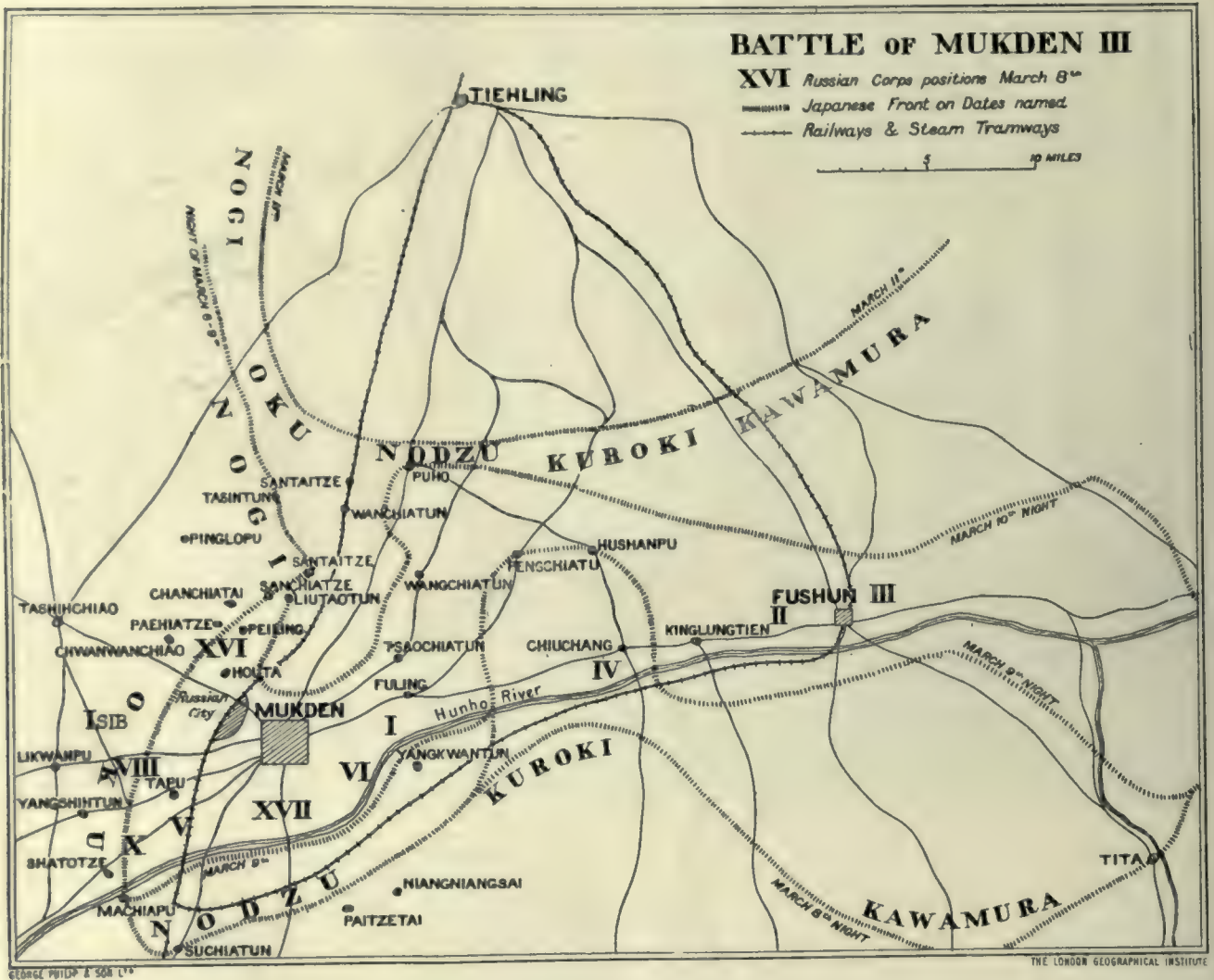
RUSSO-CHINESE BANK AT PORT ARTHUR.
Showing the effects of shell fire.

At Singking, 3,000 entrenching tools, 33 miles of light railway, 4,500 railway waggons, and further quantities of ammunition for guns and rifles were captured. At Tiehling, though two-thirds of the huge depots there had been destroyed by fire, great stores of food, fodder, fuel, and railway material fell into the hands of the Japanese, who thus by this great blow deprived the Russian army of its accumulated supplies for the spring and summer campaign. Though the Russian army saved its heavy artillery and most of its wounded, its loss of material was such that it was left in a crippled condition, while every corps in the 2nd and 3rd Armies had suffered fearfully and lost heavily in officers and men. The 1st Army alone emerged from the wreck with its formation still unbroken; only one of its corps, the 1st, was entangled in the rout of the 3rd Army and suffered accordingly.

The Japanese losses were officially returned at 41,222 from February 26 to March 12. But as heavy loss was inflicted upon the Japanese in the fighting before the 26th, the actual losses in the battle were certainly in excess of this figure.



M. KUBOTA,
Japanese Minister of Education.



Probably 50,000 would be about the correct total, though some of those with the Japanese army or in the Russian army have placed the Japanese losses as high as 80,000. The real truth will only be known when the full official reports on the war are published by the Emperor of Japan's Government. There were good reasons for withholding the truth while the war continued which have passed away since the conclusion of peace. At



MUKDEN AFTER ITS OCCUPATION BY THE JAPANESE.

The Japanese Losses.

certain points the Japanese suffered grievously, notably at Likwanpu, at Yangshihtun, at Machuntun, and at Tita, where they delivered numerous unsuccessful attacks before the flank movement achieved its purpose. But their losses were certainly much smaller than the Russian, even when prisoners are deducted, as very heavy punishment was dealt out to the flying Russians during the pursuit, and the roads taken by the 3rd Russian Army were



A WRECKED VODKA SHOP AT PORT ARTHUR.

covered with corpses. The battle was not only remarkable for the enormous forces engaged upon either side, dwarfing all previous records in this respect, it also covered a far longer front than any previous struggle, and lasted a longer time. From February 20 to March 11, for a space of 20 days, there was continuous fighting on some part of the 100-mile front. Mukden, in real fact, was a series of great battles, but the unity of aim and intimate co-operation of the five Japanese armies in the field make of it a single engagement. The greatest battle recorded in military history before the war in the Far East was that of Leipzig, yet at Leipzig the combatants only numbered 471,000 men, as against the 700,000 to 800,000 who fought at Mukden. The losses at Leipzig were small in comparison with those at Mukden. Napoleon's army had 45,000 of its strength killed or wounded and another 15,000 taken prisoners, while the Allies opposed to Napoleon lost 48,000 men. At Mukden, as we have seen, the Russian losses totalled at least 156,000 and the Japanese not less than 50,000. Compared with this terrific struggle, the battles of the nineteenth century shrink into comparative insignificance. At Borodino only 250,000 men fought on both sides; at Sadowa but 435,000; and at Sedan only 244,000, though Sedan was a victory in most ways even more complete than Mukden, since it issued in the destruction of the whole French army.

MAJOR-GENERAL MURAKI,
Chief A.D.C. to the Japanese Prince Imperial.

The Japanese up to this point had been reproached by European critics with a want of daring in their strategy. The reproach was not justified, as nothing could have been bolder or more venturesome than their

Japanese Strategy. assault with an inferior force upon a great Russian army in strong positions at Liaoyang.

But at Mukden they displayed a boldness of conception which has never been surpassed. The swift and sudden movement northwards of Nogi to strike the Russian line of communications was such a blow as Napoleon would have loved. It involved enormous risks for Nogi, how great the Japanese Staff alone knows, as had General Kuropatkin been a cool, cautious leader of the type of Lee, the Russians might have thrown themselves with practically their entire force upon this army and have destroyed it. If Mukden did not accomplish the utter destruction of the Russian army, it must be remembered that with the great increase in the size of modern armies the difficulty of executing such enveloping movements as



THE WRECKED INTERIOR OF THE "NOVI KRAI" OFFICE DURING THE SIEGE OF PORT ARTHUR.

those of Ulm and Sedan has immeasurably increased. The size of the forces fighting, the scale of the field of battle was so gigantic that new difficulties of every kind arose, and the supply of ammunition and food for these numberless hosts of men taxed organisation, foresight, and ingenuity to the utmost.

It must be observed that the Japanese could gain no decided success until they had placed in the field an army superior in numbers to the Russians. From the opening of the war the Japanese soldier had been superior in courage, in skill, in initiative, to his antagonist, and had been directed by an incomparably better Staff. But all these advantages did not bring decisive victory. It

**Lessons of the
Battle.**

remains true in the war of the 20th century as in the war of the 19th, that "only numbers can annihilate," and the army which is "few but fit" which is not part of the nation and the embodiment of the manhood of the nation is doomed to inevitable failure in a great war. No force fighting for wages can in the long run hope to hold its own against, much less to defeat, a national army service which is based upon the ideal of duty to the State. It is here that Mukden has its grave lessons

for the British people—lessons which have hitherto been blindly shirked and overlooked.

But the great and decisive importance of the battle was that it ended finally and for ever the Russian dreams of expansion in Asia and the vague hope of gradually assembling a huge Russian army in Manchuria and thus at last defeating the Japanese. After Mukden it was certain that the Japanese would always be able to meet any army that the Russians could collect. The war on Russia's part from this moment became a hopeless one, and had the Czar possessed the moral courage of a great ruler, he would have recalled the Baltic fleet and made peace forthwith. But, like Pharaoh of old, he hardened his heart beneath the blow. The disappearance of half his Manchurian army, the ruin of all his hopes, the steady advance of the Japanese, failed to teach him the needed lesson. And thus he prepared the way for the last and greatest catastrophe of the war, that Japan's power in the Far East might be firmly established and the eternal justice of history finally vindicated.



VICE-ADMIRAL SHIBAYAMA
Of the Japanese Navy.

CHAPTER LXII.

LAST DAYS OF THE BALTIC FLEET. BATTLE OF THE JAPAN SEA—I.

THROUGHOUT January and February Admiral Rojdestvensky remained on the Madagascar coast, enjoying the hospitality of the French Government, making use of the French telegraphs, and obtaining all the provisions that he required from French territory. Early in January he had moved his own division round from St. Marie to Passandava Bay, where Admiral Folkersam's ships were lying



THE "GILYAK" SUNK IN PORT ARTHUR.



WRECKED PHOTOGRAPHIC STUDIO AT PORT ARTHUR.

His proceedings were watched with languid interest in Japan, now that Port Arthur had fallen, as it was not generally supposed that he would be permitted to make use of neutral bases in the East, and

without the help of such bases it was not thought probable that he would attempt the voyage to Vladivostock. His interminable delays and hesitations suggested that his mission was not serious.

Voyage of the Baltic Fleet.

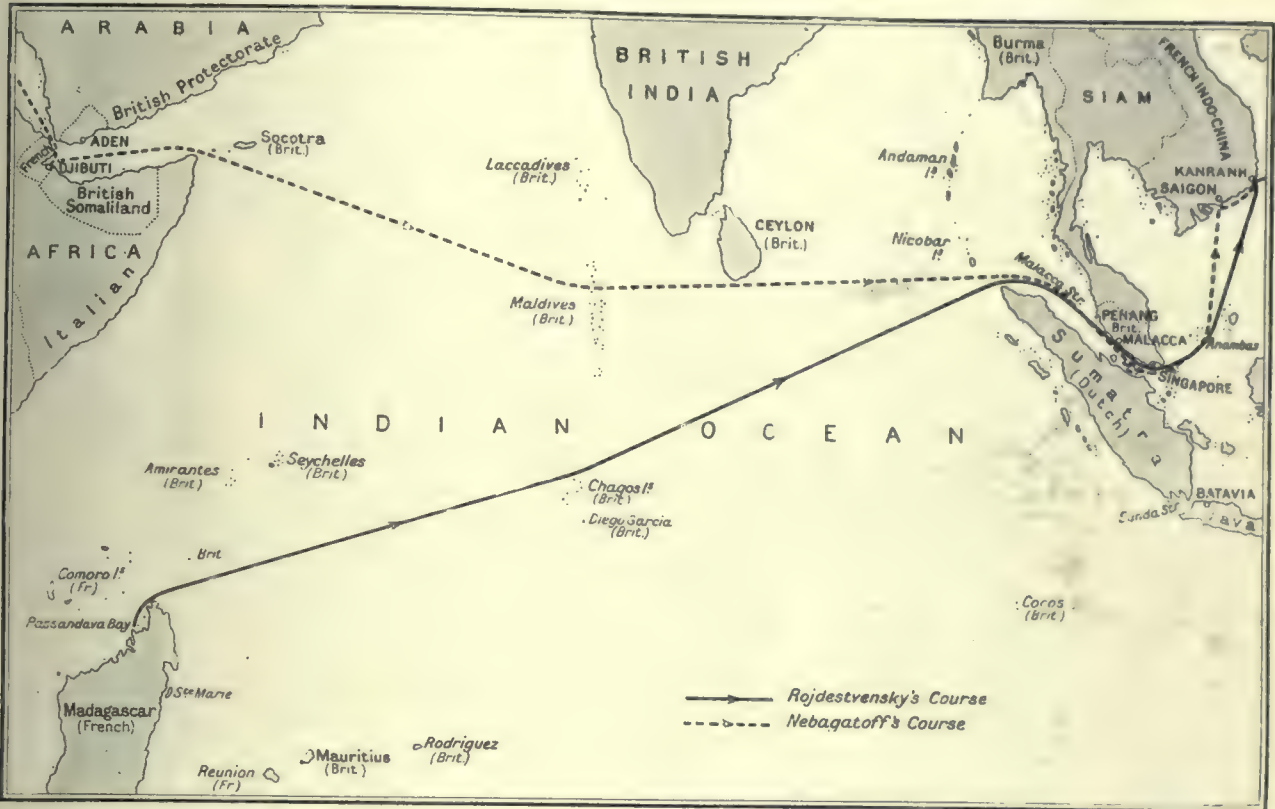
Nevertheless the Japanese took no risks. All their armoured warships were docked, overhauled, and refitted. Their worn heavy guns

The Japanese Plan. were replaced and many improvements introduced which the fighting of 1904 had shown to be advisable. After prolonged and careful consideration, the Naval Staff decided not to attack the Russian fleet until it neared Japanese waters. The advantages of such a course were obvious. The Japanese ships would enter battle in a perfect state of preparedness, with abundant ammunition, to which a part of their coal could be sacrificed, with clean bottoms, with crews fresh and in good health, and would fight in seas which the Japanese seamen knew to perfection. Damaged vessels would have all the resources of Japanese dockyards close at hand. The whole Japanese torpedo flotilla could be utilised to the best effect. Any Russian prizes taken—and there was certain to be a large haul if the battle went well—could be easily carried into Japanese ports and repaired.



BARON KUJOURA,
Japanese Minister of Agriculture and Commerce

Remembering its failure to annihilate the Port Arthur



MAP TO SHOW ROUTE OF BALTIC FLEET ACROSS THE INDIAN OCEAN.

fleet and the enormous loss which that failure had brought upon General Nogi's army, the Japanese navy was determined that if it did meet the Baltic fleet one or other of the two forces should go to the bottom. The hesitating long-range tactics of the earlier period of the war were to be finally abandoned; the Japanese armour-clads would close to short range and either sink their enemies or sink themselves.



FIRE AT PORT ARTHUR BY THE JAPANESE GUNS.



CAPTAIN ASADA
Of the Japanese Navy.

There were constant reports of Japanese cruisers in the Indian Ocean, which, as we now know, rested on nothing more substantial than imagination. At Mauritius mysterious wireless signals floated through the air and were taken to have come from Japanese transmitters. The rumoured approach of the Japanese was the cause of more than one panic in the Baltic fleet at Passandava Bay, but as the weeks passed without any clear sign of the presence of the Japanese off the coast, Admiral Rojdestvensky's men recovered equanimity.

Early in March a small Japanese squadron, under Admiral Dewa, made its appearance in

the Malay Archipelago. It consisted of the two fast cruisers KASAGI and CHITOSE, with the two auxiliary cruisers YAMATA and AMERICA and a squadron of torpedo craft. The torpedo boats came no further than the coast of French Indo-China, but the larger ships showed themselves near Saigon on March 12, put in to Singapore on the 15th, and three days later were off Labuan. Their arrival in these waters caused

The too rapid fire of the earlier battles had exhausted the Japanese ammunition before the Japanese ships had worked complete destruction; on this occasion, coal would be removed to make room and weight for extra ammunition, and the fire was to be more deliberate. Every conceivable move was studied and plans were prepared which every officer in the Japanese fleet understood and upon which all were ready to act. The tactics of each class of vessel were settled. On February 14 Admiral Togo with his fleet left for an unknown destination and for three entire months passed out of human sight.

It was vital that the Russians should not have the faintest idea of the Japanese intentions, and no one who could not be perfectly trusted was allowed to know what course had been adopted. Many Western observers, indeed, assumed that the Japanese fleet would steam to meet the Russians. To impress the Russian admiral and alarm the host of neutral auxiliaries which in defiance of the true laws of neutrality accompanied the Russians, Japanese squadrons were instructed to show themselves in Malay waters.



VICE-ADMIRAL AINOURA,
Commander of the Japanese Naval Station.



11 Drawn by H. C. Seppings Wright while Admiral Togo's guest on board the "Mikasa."

AN ARTIST'S INTERVIEW WITH ADMIRAL TOGO.

During one of the engagements before Port Arthur the nearer of the two shells burst on board the "Mikasa," and almost cost Admiral Togo his life. The fragments were collected and pieced together as far as possible with cement, and the shell now stands in the Admiral's cabin. Close beside it is a chilled-steel shot, which also came on board the "Mikasa," but did little damage. The shot itself is slightly broken at the point. The Admiral keeps on his table two beautiful little dwarf trees, many hundred years old, which were presented to him by Count Okuma. Beside them is the inevitable smoking-box, in which a little piece of charcoal is always glowing. The drawings at the Admiral's right hand are a picture and a plan of the battle of August 10, sketched by the ship's steward. The flowers on the mantelpiece had been sent from Kobe. Beside the trees lies the Admiral's album, in which he invited Mr. Wright to make a sketch.

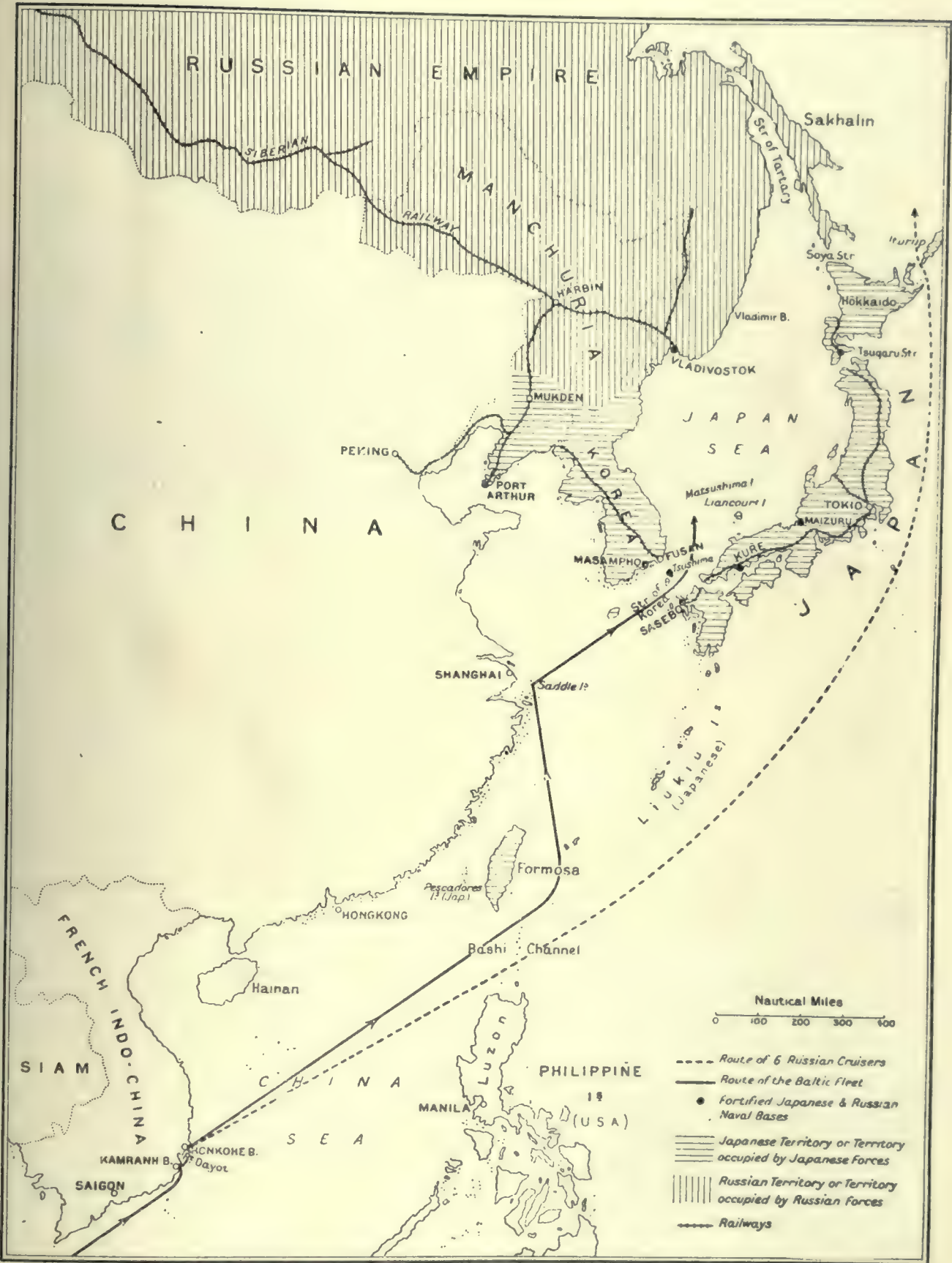
great alarm among the German colliers which had been sent ahead to wait for the Russian admiral, and seemed to some to indicate the approach of the main Japanese fleet which was reported to have been sighted on the average twice a week in the southern China Sea always "steaming at full speed with lights out, cleared for battle." Japanese cruisers, or ships which were taken for Japanese cruisers, showed themselves in Philippine waters, and prodigious tales were told of gigantic fortifications erected by the Japanese on the coast of Formosa, and of the gathering of an enormous Japanese fleet in the harbour of the Pescadores, a little group of islands between Formosa and China belonging to Japan. Most of these reports were mere fairy tales, generated by the intense suspense with which the world awaited the clash of the two navies.

Suddenly, about March 19, it became known to the Japanese that Admiral Rojdestvsky with all the



EXPLOSION OF A MAGAZINE AT PORT ARTHUR.

ships of the first two divisions of the Baltic fleet had left Madagascar. At that date Admiral Nebogatoff, with his reinforcing squadron, was nearing Port Said. It was reported by French journals that the Russian fleet was returning to Djibuti, on its way home, having abandoned as hopeless the voyage to the Far East. Actually, however, Rojdestvsky had quitted Madagascar on March 16, and the news of his sailing was withheld by the French authorities for some days. He was crossing the Indian Ocean and moving towards Japan. On March 19 the Russian fleet was sighted well out in the Indian Ocean; a week later it was seen far to the east of Ceylon by a British ship and duly reported. No possible doubt could now remain as to its purpose. On April 8 it was sighted passing Singapore. All its units were counted, presenting a magnificent array. For four miles battleships, cruisers, destroyers, and auxiliary ships covered the water. Seven battleships, two armoured cruisers, five protected cruisers, three auxiliary cruisers, seven destroyers, seventeen steamers, one hospital ship, and one tug were made out plainly, though false reports were circulated at first to the effect that four of the best battleships were missing. These reports came from Russian sources and were unquestionably



MAP SHOWING ROUTE OF THE BALTIC FLEET TO THE JAPAN SEA.

GEORGE PHILIP & SONS LTD

"Yakuma." "Tokiwa." "Chinyen." "Chitose."



"Iwate." "Shikishima." "Idzumo." "Asahi." "Asama." "Mikasa."
THE JAPANESE FLEET UNDER ADMIRAL TOGO WHICH ATTACKED ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY.

intended to mislead the Japanese. The truth, however, was known at once to Britain's allies, who had their own excellent agents on the spot.

The Russian fleet communicated with the Russian Consul, but he could give no information as to the whereabouts of the Japanese fleet. All that he knew was that it was being daily reported in every possible direction. The Armada proceeded unmolested to the Anamba Islands, north-east of Singapore, and there coaled, when Dutch warships appeared and ordered Admiral Rojdestvensky off. There were the usual reports that the Japanese had also put in an appearance, and Dutch rumours represented a battle as raging on the 12th. Actually, however, not a Japanese ship was within some hundreds of miles. Admiral Togo waited in his concealment the arrival of his enemy at his own gates. On April 14 the Russians anchored in Kamrauh Bay in Indo-China, and for a month made French territory once more their base, aided in every possible respect by the French authorities, who stopped British and Japanese telegrams or altered them, while forwarding all Russian messages. The French Governor of the Colony was in thorough sympathy with the Russians; his proclivities in that direction were well known, and on the outbreak of the war the French Government had at first recalled him for this reason, and then changed its mind and permitted him to remain.



(Rees photo.)
THE "EXMOUTH," ON WHICH TOGO WAS TRAINED.

The Russian Government had reached a perfect understanding with him; he was to order the Russians to

Conduct of the French.

leave when the Japanese protests became too vigorous, and then the fleet was to put into another French port on the coast. The object of the Russians was to gain time for the arrival of the reinforcing fleet, under Admiral Nebogatoff, to promote friction with England, and to obtain the perfect security which a neutral port afforded. Such conduct was the gravest possible injury to Japan. Never had Japanese self-control been more severely tested; never had the nation of the Far East showed her steadiness and sobriety of judgment better. In



"Yashima." "Fuji." "Takasago" "Kasuga." "Nisshin." "Suma."
THE JAPANESE FLEET UNDER ADMIRAL TOGO WHICH ATTACKED ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY.

England the action of the French Governor produced deep indignation, as men realised that a powerless fleet was being made powerful through the help granted by a neutral in flat defiance of neutrality. Yet, as a matter of fact the Baltic fleet was being helped to its doom; Japan was being aided by this misconduct; the result of it was to strengthen her navy and enormously to enhance her prestige.

On April 18 Japan began a whole series of protests, which were received with polite and evasive assurances by the French Government. On April 7 Nebogattoff had left Djibuti, and was now moving across the Indian Ocean as fast as the worn-out engines of his older ships would permit, in Rojdestvsky's wake. Meantime Rojdestvsky, with the connivance of the French authorities, was playing a game of hide-and-seek on the coast of Indo-China, when ordered to leave Kamranh Bay putting in to Port Dayot, and when ordered out of Port Dayot resorting to Honkohe Bay. On May 4 Admiral Nebogattoff, with the four small battleships of his squadron, the old cruiser *Vladimir Monomach*, two auxiliary ships and two destroyers belonging to Rojdestvsky's section of the fleet, passed Singapore. Four days later Nebogattoff made his junction with Rojdestvsky off the coast of Indo-China, and the Baltic Armada was at last complete and concentrated. The whole force steamed to Honkohe Bay, which had never been quitted by several of the Russian ships, and there coaled, took on board provisions, and completed its refit after its long voyage. It made ready for its leap into the dark and for the final encounter with the terrible Togo and his invincible Japanese seamen.

Rumour had again been busy with the Japanese fleet. On May 8 reports were current in Paris that it was cruising in the Formosa Straits and that the battleship MIKASA had struck a reef and gone aground. It was said that she was in a hopeless condition. Tales of other casualties



CAPT. ISHIBASHI OF THE "TAKASAGO."



THE RUSSIAN DESTROYER WHICH RAN THE BLOCKADE AT PORT ARTHUR. The Russian torpedo-boat destroyer "Rastoropny" managed to leave the harbour at Port Arthur and reach Chifu. The object of the daring enterprise was to carry despatches. The destroyer left at night in a snowstorm. She was sighted by Japanese destroyers and pursued, but she soon outdistanced the enemy. After her arrival at Chifu, the vessel was blown up and sunk by order of her commander.

abundance of misleading information, from which it was impossible to disentangle the truth. The Japanese Press remained perfectly silent; the Japanese Government held its tongue; the Japanese nation showed the utmost patience, though its anxiety was visibly increasing, and never divulged the secret which was common property. The fact was that Togo with his whole fleet was lying ready in Chinhai Bay, which forms a part of Masanpho Harbour, on the Straits of Korea. The Japanese force was concentrated—it was concentrated in the right place.

The judgment of the admiral who in such a hour makes the right choice between numerous alternatives will always appeal to those who know the doubts and hazards of naval war. For success in battle is really gained by the foresight which before battle places all available force in the correct position and which exactly anticipates and provides for the behaviour and movements of the enemy. When the clash comes the

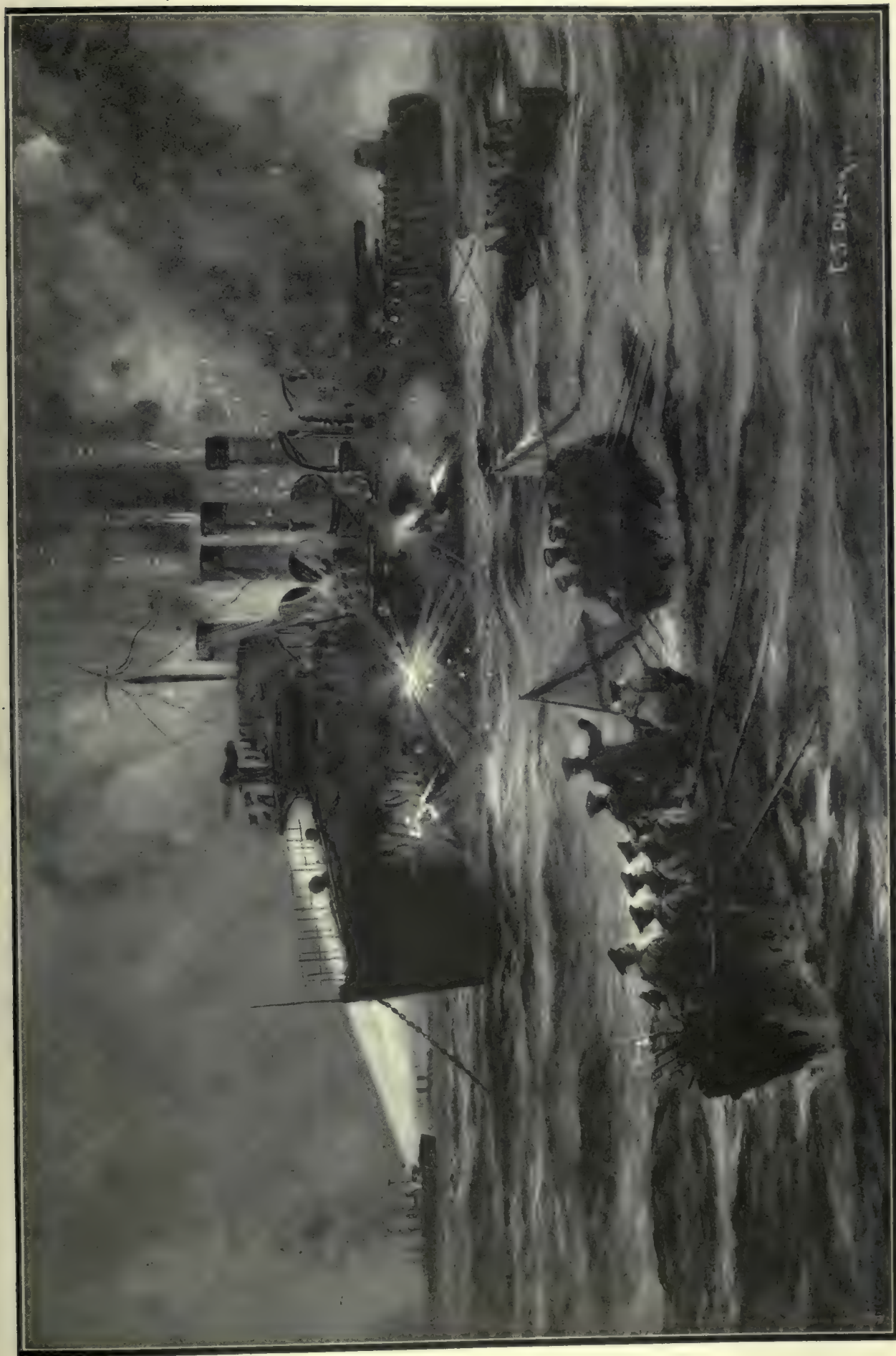
to Japanese ships were also circulated, and some went so far as to write both Togo's Rendezvous. the ASAMA and the ASAHİ off the Japanese fighting list, while there was a general consensus of opinion that the YASHIMA was lost. This we now know to have been the case, but nothing had happened to the other ships. There were also rumours that Togo was not in the Formosa Straits, but had moved northwards to the Tsugaru Straits, dividing his fleet. Thus the Russian Intelligence Department had an embarrassing



ALL THAT WAS LEFT OF A RUSSIAN TORPEDO-BOAT AT CHIFU.

The Russian torpedo-boat destroyer "Rastoropny" managed to escape from Port Arthur at night in a snowstorm. She was sighted by Japanese destroyers, which pursued her, but she outdistanced them and reached Chifu in safety with the despatches she was carrying. Subsequently, by order of her commanding officer, she was blown up.

She was sighted by Japanese destroyers. Subsequently, by order of her commanding officer, she was blown up.



BLOWING UP OF THE RUSSIAN TORPEDO-DESTROYER "RASTOROPNY" AT CHIFU.



VICE-ADMIRAL SAMEJIMA
Of the Japanese Navy.

later destroyed the *MIKASA*, might have placed her at a fatal disadvantage, chance began to run the other way, and by a concurrence of seeming accidents to render possible the greatest Japanese success of the whole war.

There were four distinct alternatives between which the Russian fleet might choose. Three of those alternatives involved

The Russian Alternatives. a voyage to Vladivostock ;

the fourth involved the seizure of a base by the Russian Armada. Nothing in Admiral Rojdestvensky's career suggested that he would dare to seize one of the Japanese harbours on the Formosa coast or in the Pescadores, but he might have laid violent hands upon some base on the littoral of that weakest of all neutrals, China, and the Russian circulars charging China with violations of neutrality seemed to point to some such intention. Had he adopted this course, he would have caused Japan great trouble, but his final overthrow was reasonably certain. If he steered for Vladivostock and defeated or evaded the Japanese fleet, he would reach a Russian naval port with excellent docks and repairing facilities, and would be in the closest touch with the

anxieties and doubts are forgotten, and the action of the victor has all the appearance of inevitability. Perhaps at this stage of the war we see emerging from the surge of event a higher and deeper purpose which governs the action of mankind, the power which some men call chance, but which others name Providence, and which now begins in the same mysterious irresistible manner to work for Japan as in the Trafalgar campaign it worked for England, and as in the Greek struggle for freedom it worked for Greece against barbarism. Chance so far had worked against Japan. The torpedoes which missed in the first great night attack upon the Port Arthur fleet ; the failure of the Japanese ammunition at the close of the battle of August 10, 1904 ; the sudden and cruel destruction of two of the best Japanese battleships by Russian mines—all these accidents might be cited. But now, when a stroke of chance against Japan might well have changed the world's history, when a sudden conflagration, such as a few months



ADMIRAL VISCOUNT ITO,
Chief of the Naval Board of Command

Russian army. Japan must then undertake a prolonged and difficult campaign against the Russian naval base, and repeat all the desperate efforts of the siege of Port Arthur. Therefore, the Russian Admiral chose Vladivostock as his ultimate goal. He could reach it by passing through the Straits of Korea, which was the nearest way, or by passing up the east coast of Japan and running through the Tsugaru Straits,



[Drawn by S. Begg.

ADMIRAL TOGO ON HIS BRIDGE IN HEAVY WEATHER.

or by standing still further to the north and passing through the Straits of Soya, to the north of the Japanese island of Hokkaido. The Tsugaru Straits, however, were reported to be mined and to be guarded by the great bulk of Togo's fleet, while the Soya Straits were so remote and in such stormy seas that he did not care to risk his heavily-laden ships and coast-defence vessels with a low coal supply on the voyage to them. He therefore determined to move direct through the Straits of Korea, and exactly fulfilled Admiral Togo's anticipations. But even now he halted between two minds. He had not decided, he never did decide, whether he should first seek out and defeat the Japanese fleet, or strive to reach Vladivostock, avoiding battle. He had two opposite aims which at one and the same time he was striving to fulfil, and those two aims could not both be prosecuted with success at the same



THE JAPANESE CRUISER "SAIYŌ," SUNK BY A RUSSIAN MINE, NOVEMBER 30, 1904.

This vessel was captured from the Chinese.

moment. The Japanese fleet, on the other hand, had but one aim, but a single purpose—at whatever cost to destroy the Russian fleet.

A division of his forces would almost certainly have enabled Admiral Rojdestvensky to reach Vladivostock with a large part of his fleet, and it was such a division that the Japanese most feared. He might have taken his five modern battleships and his best cruisers through the Tsugaru Straits while sending his older and weaker vessels through the Straits of Korea. But in that case he could not hope to defeat the Japanese fleet, and catastrophe was almost certain to be the fate of the ships sent through the Korean Straits. So he strove to attain both aims in the same breath, and in so doing failed signally.

On May 14 the combined Russian fleets left Honkohe Bay, though the news of their departure was suppressed for two days. On the 16th the Russian fleet was sighted well out at sea; on the 19th it passed through the Bashi Channel, to the north of the Philippines, and was sighted and reported. It seized the British steamer Oldhamia for no reason, and sent her to Sakhalin in charge of a prize crew, for which act no satisfaction was ever given by the Russian Government. This, however, was the last outrage upon the British flag which the Russian

Russian Fleet in the Straits of Korea.

Admiral was fated to commit; his hour of punishment was fast approaching. Coaling at sea to the north of the Philippines, the Russian main fleet steamed some distance out into the Pacific. On May 25 six Russian vessels, probably ships previously detached by Admiral Rojdestvensky belonging to his auxiliary cruiser squadron, were sighted in the extreme north of Japan, off the island of Iturup. It was a diversion to draw Admiral Togo north. Late that same day 17 Russian colliers and auxiliaries anchored off the mouth of the Yangtze, and it became known that on the previous day a British vessel had sighted the Russian fleet coaling several miles outside Chinese waters. It became increasingly probable that Rojdestvensky was going through the Straits of Korea.

On the 26th the Russian fleet was again sighted by a neutral vessel to the south-west of Quelpart, with Japanese cruisers close at hand, and with a thrill of anxiety the

The Japanese Spirit. world knew that the two great navies were at last almost in contact. Japan's weary months of waiting were over; now it remained to be seen whether her navy was worthy of the immense trust reposed in it—whether it could conquer against odds which seemed to many hopeless. Of the spirit of the Japanese seamen, a letter written by a Japanese torpedo-

boat
com-
mander
during



VICE-ADMIRAL KOTAOKA
Of the Japanese Navy.

the period of suspense gives an admirable idea. "We are waiting, waiting, and waiting for the enemy. Will he never come? If you do not hear from me when a meeting has taken place, take this as my farewell. I do not expect to see you again in this life, except perhaps in your dreams. When my boat goes down I shall go too, and a Russian ship with us. It takes her weight in shells to sink a torpedo-boat. . . . I have seen . . . and I know. With six compartments in the boat we ought to be able to close in within 20 yards of the target before we are sunk. If we hit we shall go down with the Russians; if we are hit, the Russians shall come with us, for the last man alive will steer the spare torpedo in the water. What is life but a dream of summer's night? Can one choose more glorious an exit than to die fighting for one's country and for an Emperor who is a leader and ruler worthy of the nation's heart? . . . By going down with them we shall in a measure pay the debt we owe for the slaughter of these poor innocent peasants. They, too, are fighting for their country, so shall Bushi honour Bushi. . . .



VICE-ADMIRAL HIDAKA
Of the Japanese Navy.

Father Togo, now grey-haired, walks quietly to and fro on the bridge of the MIKASA, so all will go well."

In this stern spirit the Japanese seamen waited the fateful hour. They well knew the vast issues depending on victory or defeat. Defeat meant for Japan, even now, after the Battle of Mukden, complete failure in the war, the loss of her army, peace dictated by the Russians in Tokio, the end of her freedom and independence. Victory meant peace, and peace not greatly delayed. For this was the Czar's last throw; there remained after the Baltic fleet no other card for Russia to play; she must stand or fall by the result of the now imminent engagement.

The material odds, on the whole, were against Japan, so far as heavy guns carried behind thick armour were in question, but, calculating by a system of points they were distinctly in her favour (143 Japanese points to 93 Russian points), when allowance was made for her protected cruisers and her great torpedo flotilla. The strength and numbers of the two fleets in their fighting organisation were as follows:



TROOPS COLLECTING THE DEAD ON THE DAY AFTER THE FIGHT IN WARSAW.

JAPANESE FLEET.

Battleship Division—ADMIRAL TOGO.

MIKASA, 4 12-in., 14 6-in. guns; 14-in. steel on barbettes, 9-in. waterline; sea-speed, 17 knots.
 SHIKISHIMA, 4 12-in., 14 6-in. guns; 14-in. steel on barbettes, 9-in. waterline; sea-speed, 17 knots.
 FUJI, 4 12-in., 10 6-in. guns; 14-in. steel on barbettes, 18-in. waterline; sea-speed, 16 knots.
 ASAHI, 4 12-in., 14 6-in. guns; 14-in. steel on barbettes, 9-in. waterline; sea-speed, 17 knots.
 KASUGA, 1 10-in., 2 8-in., 14 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 6-in. waterline; sea-speed, 18 knots.
 NISSHIN, 4 8-in., 14 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 6-in. waterline; sea-speed, 18 knots.

Armoured Cruiser Division—ADMIRAL KAMIMURA.

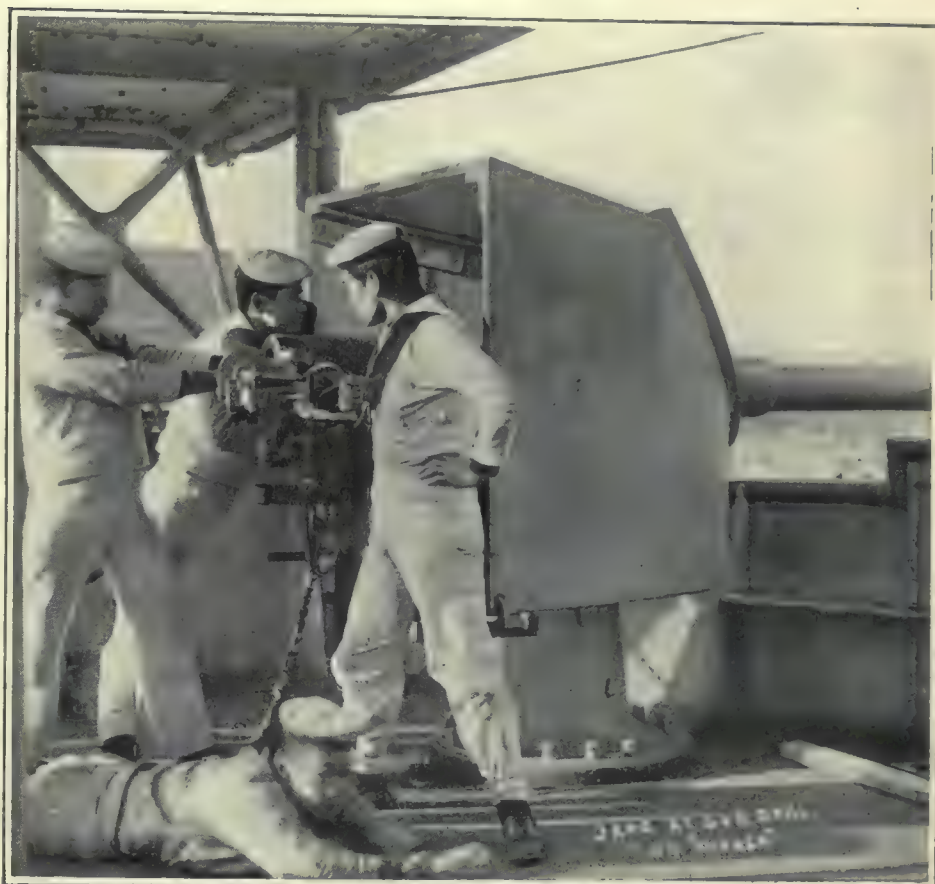
IDZUMO, 4 8-in., 14 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 7-in. waterline; sea-speed, 19 knots.
 IWATE, 4 8-in., 14 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 7-in. waterline; sea-speed, 19 knots.
 YAKUMO, 4 8-in., 12 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 7-in. waterline; sea-speed, 18 knots.

ADZUMA, 4 8-in., 12 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 7-in. waterline; sea-speed, 19 knots.

ASAMA, 4 8-in., 12 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 7-in. waterline; sea-speed, 18 knots.

TOKIWA, 4 8-in., 12 6-in. guns; 6-in. steel on barbettes, 7-in. waterline; sea-speed, 19 knots.

The above twelve ships, all of modern construction and of 17 knots and upwards, formed the main battle squadron of the Japanese. Besides them the Japanese had, under the orders of Admirals Kotoaka, Dewa, Uriu, and the younger Togo, the following older ships or small cruisers:



JAPANESE AT GUN DRILL ON THE "MIKASA"

[Cribb photo.]

Protected Cruiser Division—ADMIRALS KOTAOKA, DEWA, URIU, AND TOGO (YOUNGER).

CHITOSE, 2 8-in., 10 4'7-in. guns; 20 knots.

NANIWA, 2 10-in., 6 6-in. guns; 16 knots.

TSUSHIMA, 6 6-in. guns; 18 knots.

NIITAKA, 6 6-in. guns; 18 knots.

SUMA, 2 6-in., 6 4'7-in. guns; 18 knots.

KASAGI, 2 8-in., 10 4'7-in. guns; 20 knots.

TAKACHIHO, 2 10-in., 6 6-in. guns; 16 knots.

OTAWA, 2 6-in., 6 4'7-in. guns; 19 knots.

AKASHI, 2 6-in., 6 4'7-in. guns; 18 knots.

CHIVODA, 10 4'7-in. guns; 16 knots.



JAPANESE BATTLESHIP "ASAHI" ASHORE OFF SOUTHSEA.

[Cribb photo.]

AKITSUSHIMA, 4 6-in., 6 4·7-in. guns ; 16 knots. MATSUSHIMA, 1 12·6-in., 12 4·7-in. guns ; 15 knots. ITSUKUSHIMA, 1 12·6-in., 11 4·7-in. guns ; 15 knots. HASHIDATE, 1 12·6-in., 11 4·7-in. guns ; 15 knots. -IZUMI, 2 6-in., 6 4·7-in. guns ; 16 knots. YAEYAMA, 3 4·7-in. guns ; 17 knots. CHIHAYA, 2 4·7-in. guns ; 19 knots. CHINYEN, 4 12-in., 4 6-in. guns ; 14-in. steel on turrets, 14-in. waterline ; 13 knots. Twenty destroyers formed in six squadrons. Sixty torpedo boats formed in ten squadrons. A number of armed steamers for scouting purposes.

RUSSIAN FLEET.

Port Division—ADMIRAL FOLKERSAM.

Oslabia, 4 10-in., 11 6-in. guns ; 10-in. steel on turrets, 9-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 16 knots.



THE RUSSIAN FLEET IN PORT ARTHUR JUST BEFORE ITS CAPTURE.

Sissoi Veliki, 4 12-in., 6 6-in. guns ; 12-in. steel on turrets, 15-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 14 knots. *Navarin*, 4 12-in., 6 6-in. guns ; 12-in. steel on turrets, 12-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 13 knots. *Admiral Nakhimoff*, 8 6-in., 10 4·7-in. guns ; 8-in. steel on turrets, 8-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 16 knots.

Starboard Division—ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY.

Suvaroff, *Alexander III.*, *Borodino*, and *Orel*, each 4 12-in., 12 6-in. guns ; 10-in. steel on turrets, 8-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 16 knots.

3rd Division—ADMIRAL NEBOGATOFF.

Nicolai I., 2 12-in., 4 9-in., 8 6-in. guns ; 10-in. steel on turrets, 14-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 13 knots. *Apraxin*, 3 10-in., 4 6-in. guns ; 8-in. steel on turrets, 10-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 13 knots. *Seniavin*, 4 9-in., 4 6-in. guns ; 8-in. steel on turrets, 10-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 13 knots. *Ushakoff*, 4 9-in., 4 6-in. guns ; 8-in. steel on turrets, 10-in. waterline ; sea-speed, 13 knots.

1st Cruiser Division —ADMIRAL ENQUIST.

Oleg, 12 6-in. guns ; sea-speed, 21 knots.

Aurora, 8 6-in. guns ; sea-speed, 17 knots.

Dmitri Donskoi, 6 6-in., 10 4·7-in. guns ; 7-in. armour on waterline ; sea-speed, 13 knots.

Vladimir Monomach, 5 6-in., 6 4·7-in. guns ; 10-in. armour on waterline ; sea-speed, 12½ knots.

2nd Cruiser Division.

Almaz, 6 4·7-in. guns ; sea-speed, 17 knots.

Svietlana, 6 6-in. guns ; sea-speed, 18 knots.

Izumrud, 6 4·7-in. guns ; sea-speed, 21 knots.

Jemtchug, 6 4·7-in. guns ; sea-speed, 21 knots.

Auxiliary cruisers and ships, 9: *Anadyr*, *Irtish*, *Kamschatka*, *Korea*, *Russ*, *Sver*, *Ural*, *Orel*, *Kostrema*.

Destroyers, 9: *Bravy*, *Biedovy*, *Blestiashty*, *Bodry*, *Boiny*, *Bystry*, *Bezupretshny*, *Gromky*, *Grosny*.

The following figures give a classified comparison of the two fleets :



REAR-ADMIRAL SAKAMOTO,
Chief of the Japanese Naval College.

ARMoured SHIPS CARRYING HEAVY GUNS.

			Battleships.				Armoured			Total.	
			1st class.	2nd class.	3rd class.	Cruisers.					
Russia	5	...	3	...	3	...	0	...	11
Japan	4	...	0	...	1	...	8	...	13

OTHER CRUISERS AND TORPEDO CRAFT.

		With Heavy Guns.				Cruisers Without Heavy Guns.		Destroyers.		Torpedo Boats.	
				Fast.	Slow.						
Russia	...	0	...	3	...	5	...	9	...	0	...
Japan	...	7	...	0	...	10	...	20	...	60	...

HEAVY GUNS.

		HEAVY GUNS.					MEDIUM.		TOTAL.	
		12·6-in.	12-in.	10-in.	9-in.	8-in.	6-in.	Heavy.	All kinds.	
Russia	...	0	...	26	...	7	...	12	...	0
Japan	...	3	...	20	...	5	...	0	...	34

DISPLACEMENT.

		Armoured Tonnage.		Protected Tonnage.		Torpedo Craft Tonnage.		Total Tonnage.	
Russia	...	126,900	...	26,700	...	3,150	...	156,750	...
Japan	...	138,450	...	54,100	...	12,000	...	204,650	...

The Japanese fleet was incontestably much weaker than the Russian in the heaviest class of gun, for of the Japanese heavy guns three 12·6-in., four 12-in., and four 10-in. were of old pattern and weaker than they appear on paper. The Russians were also greatly superior in battleships as they had eight of the first



A JAPANESE DESTROYER.

[Cribb photo.]

and second class to the four Japanese. So weak were the Japanese in this all-important type of ship that Admiral Togo was compelled to place in his division of battleships the two armoured cruisers purchased in Italy on the eve of war—a very risky proceeding.

The Japanese fleet was carefully organised. Ships of one type and speed were kept together. In the Russian fleet this precaution was not observed. Old and new vessels, battleships of the most modern type

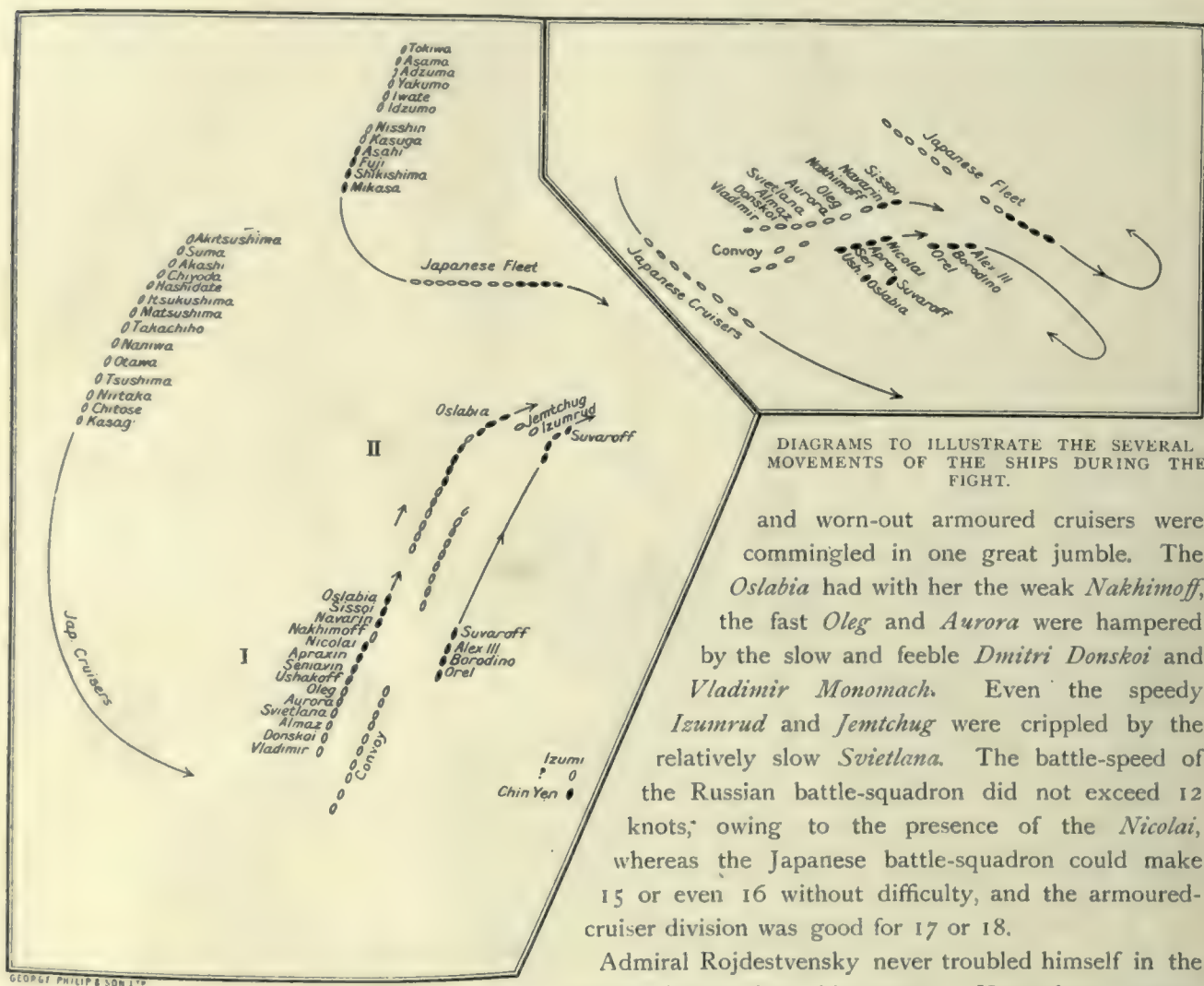


JAPANESE SAILORS ON BOARD THE "SHIKISHIMA."

[Cribb photo]



COMMITTING THE BODY OF THE COMMANDER OF THE RUSSIAN CRUISER "OREL" TO THE SEA.



and worn-out armoured cruisers were commingled in one great jumble. The *Oslabia* had with her the weak *Nakhimoff*, the fast *Oleg* and *Aurora* were hampered by the slow and feeble *Dmitri Donskoi* and *Vladimir Monomach*. Even the speedy *Izumrud* and *Jemtchug* were crippled by the relatively slow *Svietlana*. The battle-speed of the Russian battle-squadron did not exceed 12 knots, owing to the presence of the *Nicolai*, whereas the Japanese battle-squadron could make 15 or even 16 without difficulty, and the armoured-cruiser division was good for 17 or 18.

Admiral Rojdestvensky never troubled himself in the smallest degree about his enemy. He took no precau-

tions, he sent no cruisers ahead to reconnoitre the Straits of Korea. He did not even order the three powerful Russian cruisers at Vladivostock to examine the Straits of Tsugaru and ascertain whether the

Rojdestvensky's Carelessness.

Japanese fleet was really there. His proceedings from first to last were an exact reproduction of the careless, negligent strategy pursued by the Port Arthur fleet. Not a single cruiser from his fleet was detached to Kiaochau to pick up news of the Japanese, and as he approached the Straits of Korea he did not form his ships in fighting order. That anything was good enough to beat the Japanese seems to have been his real belief and the belief of his officers. On the night of May 26 he was steaming at 10 knots, all his ships deeply laden with coal and thereby much reduced in speed, in four columns. On the right-centre or inner starboard column were the four battleships of the *Suvaroff* class and the auxiliary ships. On the left-centre or port inner column were the two divisions under Admirals Fokersam and Nebogattoff. The outermost columns were—to starboard the *Jemtchug*, followed by four or five destroyers and the 1st Cruiser Division; and to port the *Izumrud*, followed by the other destroyers. The rear was brought up by the *Almaz* and *Svietlana*. Rojdestvensky had prepared no plan, or if he had his captains knew nothing of it, and even his subordinate admirals had not the faintest idea of his intentions. It is said that his ships were not properly prepared for battle, and incredible though this sounds, it is in keeping with the shameful negligence which at every other point he displayed.

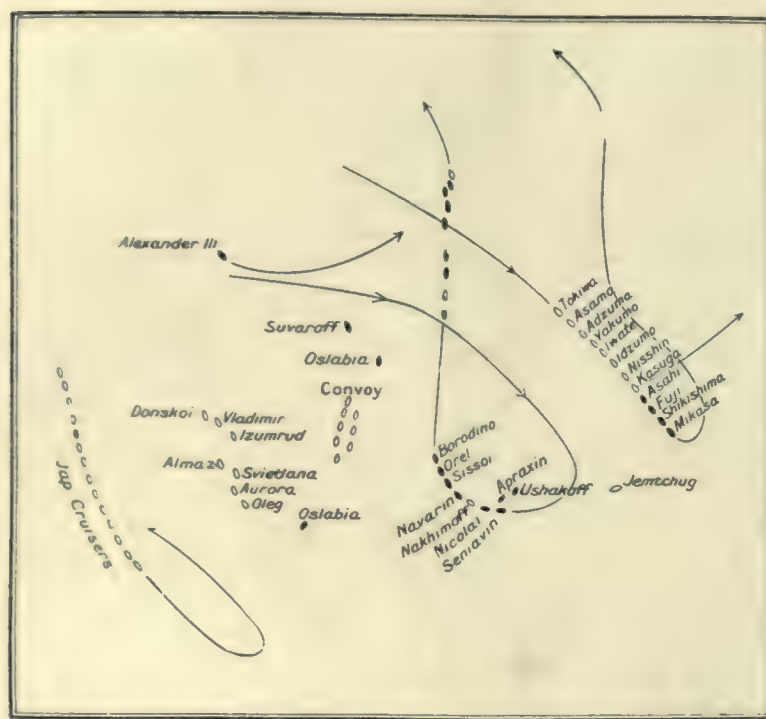
The Japanese watched the approaches to the Korean Straits with extreme vigilance. There was no disregard of wise precautions on their side. An advanced squadron of auxiliary cruisers, which had the appearance of harmless merchant steamers, incessantly patrolled the waters off Quelpart Island, aided by a

division of the fastest destroyers in the Navy. On Quelpart Island there was a signal-station and also, it would seem, batteries protecting the station. All ships passing were questioned by the Japanese cruisers, which endeavoured in this manner to obtain information. Yet as day after day passed and there was no sign of the Russian fleet, anxiety increased. Careful calculations, based on the date of Rojdestvensky's departure from Honkohe Bay, suggested that the Russian fleet ought to be near the Korean Straits on the evening of May 24 or 25, even allowing a reasonable margin for



MAP SHOWING SCENE OF BATTLE IN JAPAN SEA.

GEORGE PHILIP & SON LTD.



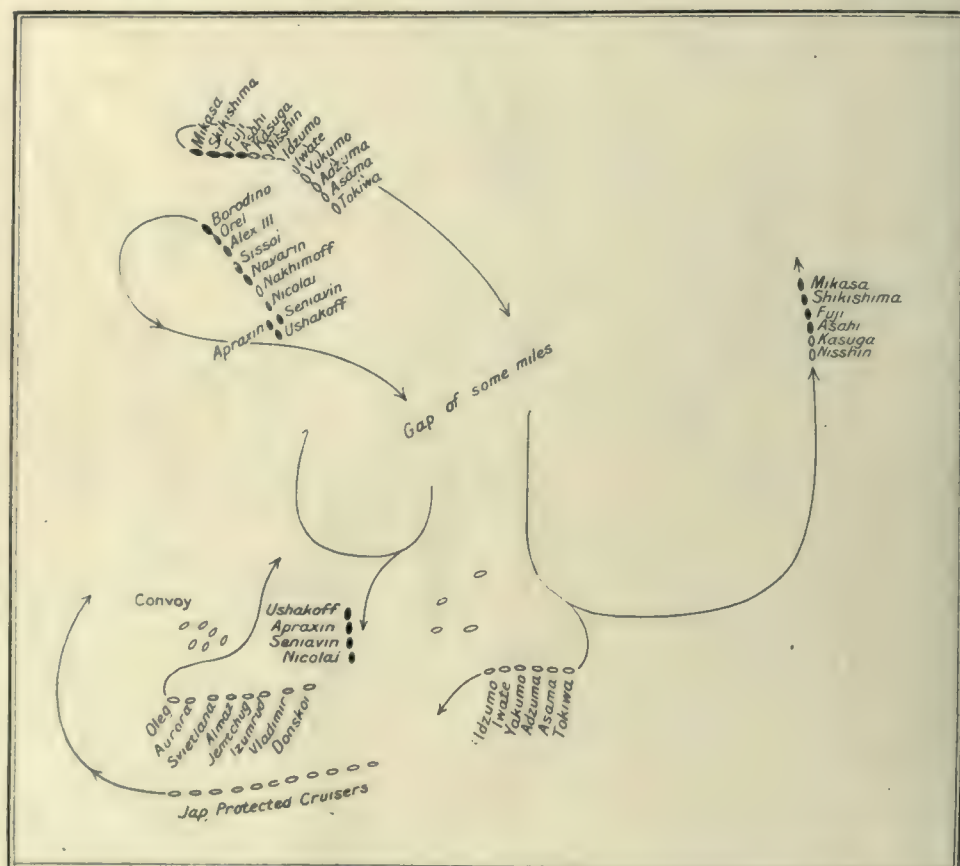
HOW THE SHIPS MANŒUVRED DURING THE FIGHT.

yet quite uncertain whether the fleet included all the important fighting units under the Russian admiral's command. The leading officers of the Japanese navy were at once summoned on board the MIKASA to a council of war. They met in Admiral Togo's cabin. The admirals first conferred, exchanging remarks in a low tone. Then orders were issued to the captains of ships and commanders of divisions. A number of the older cruisers, the CHINYEN, and one destroyer division were to approach the Russians as they neared the Straits on the following morning, and to draw them into the eastern channel, by delivering attacks which were not to be vigorously pressed. When the Russians were well into the eastern channel and north of Iki Island, Admiral Togo with his main fleet would move in to the attack. The protected cruisers were to envelop the enemy's rear and to operate independently of the main squadron.

As the evening of the 26th advanced, the

accidental delays. But the 24th and 25th passed with no indication of the Russians. The morning and afternoon of the 26th went by and still Rojdestvensky did not come. It was not till 4 p.m. of the 26th that the first glimpse of his fleet was obtained by a Japanese cruiser in the outermost line, a little to the south-east of Quelpart and about 220 miles from the Korean Straits. Dense columns of smoke were seen, and presently a great array of ships was made out, though how many there were, or what were their types and classes, could not as yet be accurately determined.

The news that a fleet was approaching was transmitted back to Togo's base and reached him before sunset of the 26th. It was clear from the first that this force could be no other than Admiral Rojdestvensky's, but it was as

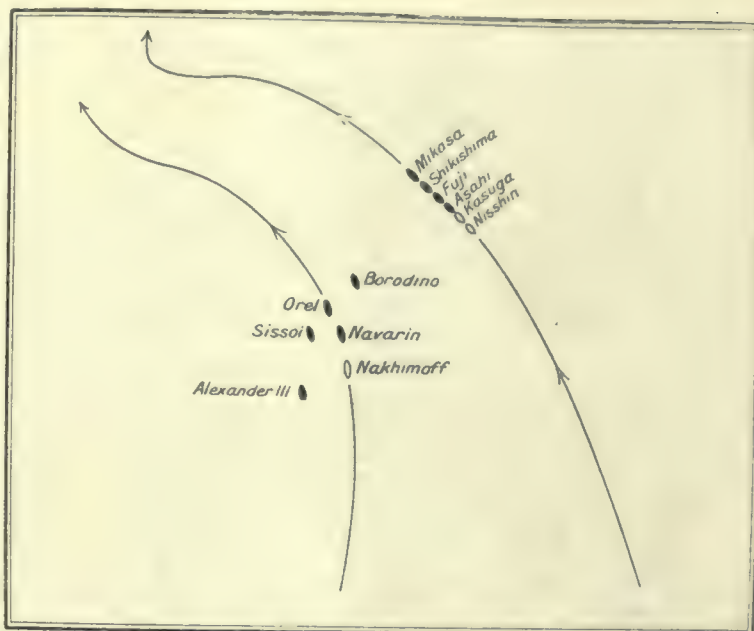


HOW THE SHIPS MANŒUVRED DURING THE FIGHT.

Japanese scouts closed on the Russian fleet, though still keeping well out of range, hidden in the haze which veiled the horizon. The Russians sighted.

The haze deepened into fog, yet out of the night came incessantly the waves of electricity from the Japanese wireless instruments and rapped steadily upon the Russian recorders. But still Admiral Rojdestvensky and his seamen voyaged carelessly towards the waters that were to be the grave of so many of their number, paying no heed to the invisible warnings and in no way disconcerted by this uncanny surveillance. As the fleet neared the Straits, the sea in that great meeting-place of the waters began to run high, and the long lines of ships rolled heavily upon the rising waves, showing their bottoms. Soon after dawn, in the grey light of a misty spring morning, one of the Japanese scouts, the SHINANO MARU, sighted a large ship brilliantly lighted up. From her build the stranger was an auxiliary cruiser. Steaming towards her, the SHINANO made out astern of her the mass of Russian battleships and cruisers, still indistinct and indistinguishable. Drawing off at full speed, she transmitted the news to Admiral Togo and the Japanese advanced squadrons.

All night the Japanese main fleet had remained in readiness at its base, screened by its advanced line of cruisers, waiting definite intelligence that the Russians were coming up the Korean Straits. The fact that Rojdestvensky had been sighted off Quelpart did not definitely prove his intentions; it was just possible that he might turn east and pass round the south of Japan, making for the Tsugaru Straits, after showing himself in the direction of the Korean Straits, to put his adversaries off their guard. But the news from the SHINANO left no room for doubt as to the Russian intentions. The enemy were coming to fight, and that day would decide Japan's destiny. Without haste or precipitation, for hours must elapse before the predetermined point of battle was reached by the Russians, the Japanese main fleet got under way; one by one its ships steamed, cleared for action and fully prepared for battle, out of Chinhaï Bay in magnificent procession, keeping perfect station. Togo's orders of the previous night had been communicated



POSITION OF THE RIVAL FLEETS.

GEORGE PHILIP & SON L^{td}



THE JAPANESE SAILORS WHO WERE WOUNDED IN ROUTING THE BALTIC FLEET.

These men were the first to return home after the naval battle when Rojdestvensky's fleet was routed. The picture shows them arriving at Shimbashi Station, Tokio. The Japanese when wounded go back to the kimono of their ancestors, though they fight in the uniforms of the West.



M. HATANO,
Japanese Minister of Justice.

The Straits of Korea were veiled with fog. This was all in favour of the Japanese, as it would hide their presence from the enemy, and enable them to accomplish their intended surprise. The clouds lay low about the great cone of Tsushima ; through the Straits swelled a turbulent sea, which was once more in favour of the Japanese, whose well-trained seamen would be perfectly at home under such conditions, while the Russians, many of whom were mere peasants or reservists, unaccustomed to rough weather, would be certain to shoot indifferently. It is true that the sea was so rough as to hamper torpedo craft, of which the Japanese had a very large number, but this was no serious disadvantage provided the sea fell during the day, as the main torpedo attack was not to begin until the night.

The first signal announcing the coming of the Russians was in itself to Japanese minds a presage of victory. It ran : "The Enemy in 203." "The enemy are in 203!" for the map had been plotted up into squares and each square numbered. As 203 Metre Hill had brought the doom of Port Arthur, so those about

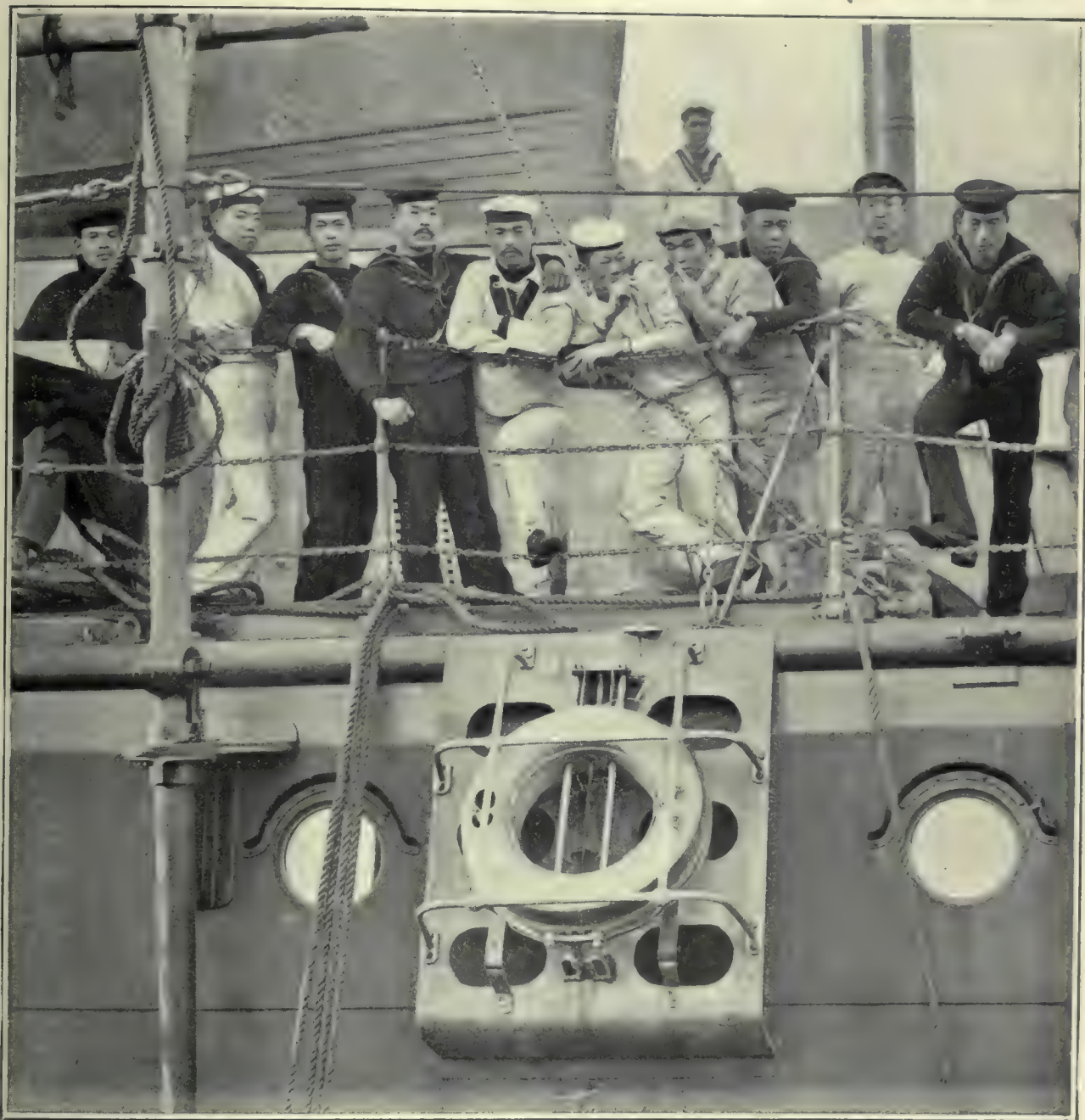
to the officers and men, as also his inspiring reminder that those who fell on such a day and for such a cause were to be envied rather than pitied and would always be held in loving memory by the nation.

The war-worn veterans of the Japanese fleet showed no trepidation during this long and trying interval. The crews were given what is known in the British navy as a "stand-easy," and it was noted at the time as a sign of their complete equanimity that most of them went to sleep. All had been ordered to wash most thoroughly and carefully, so as to diminish the risk of infected wounds, to put on clean clothing, and to dress in woollen clothes, which would protect the limbs and body against burns. In some of the ships the officers gave entertainments, playing the guitar, as the line of cruisers and battleships made slowly for the eastern channel. The funnels emitted no smoke ; the fleet was burning the best Welsh coal, provided for this day and for this occasion ; and therefore there would be no sign of the presence of a great fleet at a distance.



M. SONE,
Japanese Minister of Finance.

Admiral Togo felt that square 203 brought the doom of the Baltic fleet. The enthusiasm of the Japanese seamen was at its height. Admiral Togo had placed his fleet in the right place and solved the first part of the difficult problem set him. The *SHINANO*'S message further told that the Russians "seemed to be steering for the eastern channel" of the two into which the island group of Tsushima divides the Straits. But it still remained to be ascertained whether all the Russian fleet were there.



JAPANESE BLUEJACKETS ON THE "MIKASA."

[Cribb photo]

During the morning, in the fog, the Japanese cruisers did redoubtable service to their cause. About 7 a.m. the *IZUMI*, a miserably small and weak Japanese warship, closed on the Russian fleet, observed its formation and movements, and then vanished in the mist, and the fast and powerful Russian cruisers never attempted to give chase. Again she appeared and closed, and for four hours she steamed alongside, finally transmitting to Togo the invaluable intelligence that all the Russian fleet was at hand, with full details of its formation. Only about 11 a.m. did Rojdestvensky awaken from his lethargy and order the *Vladimir* to chase the daring little vessel off.



THE RUSSIAN DESTROYER "BIEDOVY," ON BOARD WHICH ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY WAS CAPTURED.

The *Vladimir* opened fire — the first shots of the great

The First Shots. battle — and steamed to-

wards the *IZUMI*, which at once retired, returning the shots. Following the Japanese cruiser, the *Vladimir* suddenly found before her the 2nd Japanese Torpedo Division, led by the *SAZANAMI*, which, in accordance with orders, dashed at her. The *SAZANAMI* closed to about 300 yards and fired two torpedoes, one of which

is said to have hit the *Vladimir* and caused her serious damage. The *SAZANAMI* did not escape scatheless: she was struck several times by Russian projectiles, but though she suffered some loss in her personnel, she sustained no material injury. The torpedo flotilla withdrew behind the Japanese cruisers, and was presently ordered to retire to Tsushima and wait till the coming of night before repeating its attack. As the *Vladimir* limped back to the Russian line, three Japanese cruisers of the *MATSUSHIMA* class hove in sight to starboard, while the *CHITOSE*, *KASAGI*, *TSUSHIMA*, and *NIITAKA* appeared to port and resumed the tireless surveillance. The Japanese wireless messages were rapping on the Russian recorders, but Admiral Rojdestvensky did not even take the trouble to make confusing signals with his instruments, and for an hour the Japanese ships steamed alongside, till at last, about noon, they closed so much that shots were fired at them by the battleships, when they made off. The old Japanese battleship *CHINYEN* was also seen by the Russians and permitted tranquilly to steam some distance off their columns. All these ships were busy transmitting to Admiral Togo details of the Russian movements and dispositions, so that the Japanese Admiral had ample time to revise his plans

The Russian Admiral had, however, noted that all the Japanese ships seen were of old and weak type. Hence he drew the conclusion that the main strength of the Japanese fleet was not at hand and that his

only trouble would be with the inferior ships. About 11 the Russians slightly altered their formation, the cruisers taking up a position in the port line. To the rear of this

The Russian Formation.

line

were the *Dmitri Donskoi* and *Vladimir Monomach*. It was 14 ships long and covered a great extent of water. To its right, or starboard, somewhat to the rear, were the ships of the convoy. Admiral Rojdestvensky with his four powerful battleships still formed the starboard battleship line, the *Suvaroff* steaming abreast and to the right of the *Oslabia*.



THE DESTROYER THAT CAPTURED ROJDESTVENSKY: THE YARROW-BUILT "SAZANAMI."

British workmanship in Japanese service served to capture the Admiral of the Baltic fleet after the battle of the Sea of Japan. The "Sazanami" is one of eight similar vessels built at Poplar by Messrs. Yarrow & Co. The photograph here reproduced was taken when the vessel was running the measured mile at a speed of 31½ knots. Her engines are designed on the Yarrow, Schlick, and Tweedy system for minimising vibration.

This was the order, when about 1.45 p.m., as the Russian fleet was nearing Okinoshima Island, the fog suddenly lifted a little and showed far away to the north 12 Japanese ships in single line ahead, with the MIKASA leading, upon the port bow of the Russians, moving rapidly to meet them. The presence



ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY WOUNDED.

of the *MIKASA* in the Japanese line had a very dispiriting effect upon the Russians. They had counted her as lost, and on their lists of the Japanese fleet captured in the battle her name was found to have been struck out. Moreover, the *ASAHI* and *ASAMA*, both of which had been supposed, though more doubtfully, to be *hors de combat*, were also plainly visible in the Japanese line. On the other hand, the *YASHIMA* was not there; she was the only absentee among the doubtful ships.

As Admiral Togo neared the Russian fleet, he made to his fleet a signal which recalls the famous appeal of Nelson to his crews at the Battle of Trafalgar. "The fate of our Empire," he signalled, "depends upon our efforts; let every man do his utmost." To carry messages, in case his wireless instruments or his masts were shot away, he had in attendance upon him a number of fast torpedo craft, which kept abreast of his flagship, on the side away from the enemy. He now headed directly towards the enemy, with all his crews at quarters and all his guns laid on the leading Russian ship,

Togo's Signal.

our efforts; let every man do his utmost." To carry messages, in case his wireless instruments or his masts were shot away, he had in attendance upon him a number of



RUSSIAN VESSELS WHICH ESCAPED FROM PORT ARTHUR JUST BEFORE ITS CAPTURE, AND DISARMED BY THE CHINESE AT CHIFU.

The white crosses show where the guns were before disarmament.

the *Oslabia*. Closing in rapidly at a speed of 15 knots, as if he intended to pass the Russian fleet upon its left or port side, fighting line to line, he suddenly executed the famous manœuvre of "crossing the T," or passing with his line across the head of the Russian column. To do this he turned sharply eastwards, closing in upon his enemy, and as he closed, with a loud roar, two shots rang out from the *Oslabia's* fore-turret, and immediately afterwards the head ships of the two Russian lines opened, at 2.8 p.m., upon the Japanese ships a rapid fire from all their heavy guns, at a range of about 9,000 yards. At the same time the Russian fleet slightly altered course to the east, so as if possible to keep at a distance from the Japanese and to maintain a long-range battle.

This was one of the most critical moments of the battle, for if the Russians had headed north with determination the Japanese must have sheered off or risked the perils of a "mix-up." The turn east was a turn away from the goal, Vladivostock, away from the objective, the Japanese fleet; an indication



THE NAVAL BATTLE OF THE SEA OF JAPAN.

John Strong
1895



JAPANESE BATTLESHIP ASAHI.

[Cribb photo.]

that, despite his advantage in heavy-armoured ships and heavy guns, Admiral Rojdestvensky feared a close encounter. It was the instinctive effort of a timid admiral who does not trust his captains or

A Critical Moment.

understand the tactics of battle to get out of the enemy's way. In the Japanese fleet it was taken—and taken rightly—as a sign that the Russian leading was inferior in will, energy, and determination to the Japanese, and that the moral superiority of the Japanese was established. As the Russian battleships began to alter course, Togo might have exclaimed, and perhaps did exclaim, "The day is ours." The great danger had passed—the danger that the Russians might push north, hurtling through the rear of the Japanese line.

The Japanese were now fast coming down to battle, and passing across the front of the Russian lines. Rojdestvensky is said to have previously attempted to form single line ahead, so as to meet his foe upon an equal footing, but if he really made the attempt it was essayed too late. Clouds of smoke were already gathering about the Russian

The 30-Minutes' Battle.

ships; the swift, decided movements of their enemy seemed to paralyse the Russian officers. The *Oslabia* kept her position abreast of the *Suvaroff*, and thus she was rapidly nearing the Japanese. Suddenly, at 6,000 yards, the Japanese in quick succession fired three sighting shots from their 12-in. guns to get the range, training their guns upon the *Oslabia*. According to



RUSSIAN SHIP "AMUR" IN THE GRAVING DOCK AT PORT ARTHUR. [Ruddiman Johnston photo.]



From left to right :

"Orel"
(captured).

"Nicholas I."
(captured).

"Horoosino"
(sunk).

"Vladimir Monomach"
(sunk).

"Dmitri Donskoi"
(sunk).

"Admiral Nakhimoff"
(sunk).

"Alexander III."
(sunk).

"Kniaz Suvaroff"
(sunk).

"Admiral Ussakov"
(sunk).

"Admiral Ussakov"
(sunk).

"Admiral Ussakov"
(sunk).

"Admiral Ussakov"
(sunk).

"Jemichug"
(sunk).

"Admiral Senjavin"
(captured).

"Admiral Apraxin"
(captured).

"Kamschatka"
(sunk).

"Irtessin"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

"Svietlana"
(sunk).

ROJDESTVENSKY'S LOST FLEET.

[Drawn by Norman Wilkinson.

Russian accounts, the first shot struck the *Oslabia's* conning-tower and killed Admiral Folkersam instantly. Then the 12 armoured Japanese ships opened a slow and careful fire, first upon the *Oslabia*, as they defiled across her bows, and then upon the *Suvoroff*. The greater part of the Russian battle-squadron to the rear of these two ships found its fire blanketed and could not bring its guns into action, whereas every Japanese gun that could bear on the broadside was engaged. In consequence the Russians, notwithstanding their great superiority in heavy guns, were outnumbered and outclassed. Togo had not only



JAPANESE BLUEJACKETS ON BOARD THE "MIKASA."

[Cribb photo.]

placed his fleet in the right position by his strategy, but also by his tactics had atoned for his numerical weakness in battleships.

All the ships rolled and pitched heavily in the tumultuous sea that was running, and in an instant it was seen that most of the Russian projectiles were passing well above the Japanese ships or splashing short of them into the sea. The Russian fleet, on the other hand, was enveloped in smoke and flame from the bursting Japanese shells. The *Oslabia*, receiving terrific punishment, incessantly smitten by 12-in., by 8-in., and by 6-in. shells, which hammered upon her armour and tore down her unarmoured works as though the



ON BOARD THE "OREL" DURING THE FIGHT.

sheet steel had been paper, by an instinctive movement to avoid the infernal fire turned yet more to the right, away from the Japanese. Dense columns of smoke rose from her, and it was quickly seen that she was on fire. Next the whirlwind of Japanese shells caught the *Suvaroff*, which smoked under the impact of the projectiles, and, like the *Oslabia*, turned a little to the right to get away from the Japanese. The two leading battleships had now fallen out of the two Russian columns, though the fight was not 20 minutes' old; both were burning furiously, and, though they still fired their guns, for all practical purposes they had ceased to play a part in the battle. It was next the turn of the *Alexander III*. When the *Suvaroff* had dropped out, the *Alexander* caught the full fury of the Japanese fire, which, as the Japanese were closing steadily to 4,000 yards, became increasingly effective, almost every shot telling. On the Japanese side there was some damage. The *ASAMA* was struck in quick succession by three heavy Russian shells in the stern. Her steering gear no longer worked; she was leaking heavily. She dropped astern to make repairs. Two Russian ships were out of the battle and one Japanese.

The Russians headed more and more eastwards, so as to steam parallel to the Japanese, but this change of course brought the three weak ships *Sissoi*, *Navarin*, and *Nakhimoff* close to the Japanese line and between the rear of the Japanese line and the Russian main battleship division. The other Russian ships



THE DISABLED RUSSIAN CRUISER "AURORA" AT MANILA.

[Photo, H. L. Knight,

The "Aurora," one of the few vessels that escaped the terrible battle of the Sea of Japan, made her way to Manila, where she was interned. The "Aurora" was Admiral Enquist's flagship. The marks of Togo's shells are indicated on the hull by crosses.

had attached themselves to the starboard line, and were now being assailed by the older Japanese ships and the Japanese protected cruisers, which had moved against the Russian rear while Togo with the 12 armoured ships attacked the van. At 2.45 the *Alexander III*. broke into flames, and the *Sissoi* was also burning. The Russian fire had lost its effectiveness; the accuracy of the Japanese shooting increased. All order was vanishing in the Russian Armada; the ships no longer preserved their distances, and the formation varied from moment to moment. The battle was already won, in 30 minutes from the moment when the Japanese had opened fire. By wireless telegraphy the glad news was sent to Tokio. But it still remained to encompass "not victory but annihilation."

CHAPTER LXIII.

BATTLE OF THE JAPAN SEA—II. ANNIHILATION OF THE RUSSIAN FLEET.

AT 2.45 of the 27th the Russian battleships at last managed to form single-line ahead, led by the *Alexander III*., which was still burning furiously. The Japanese battle-line increased speed so as to gain a position slightly ahead of the Russian fleet, on its port side, and compelled the Russians to turn round and round constantly, threatening to cross their bows and rake them. Almost at once the *Alexander III*. was obliged to quit the Russian line, while the Japanese armoured cruiser *KASUGA* had three



ADMIRAL TOGO ON HIS FLAGSHIP.

of her 8-in. guns placed *hors de combat*. Meantime, the Japanese cruiser-squadron was attacking the Russians on the starboard side of their column, and cannonading at long range the jumble of auxiliary

May 27, 1905.

ships and cruisers to the rear of their line. The Russians were between two fires, and the *Oslabia*, which now had a heavy list, the *Suvaroff*, both of whose funnels and one of whose masts had disappeared, and the *Alexander III.*, which was steaming slowly with a pronounced list, lay between the main Russian column and the Japanese protected cruisers and received the fire of the latter.



THE "MIKASA," JAPAN'S LARGEST WARSHIP.

The photograph, taken in Portsmouth's largest dock, shows the big ram of this mammoth vessel.

[Cribb photo.]

At 3 the Japanese were once more across the bows of the Russians, and were now heading south-east. The surface of the sea was covered with smoke and obscured with fog, so that accurate firing became increasingly difficult. The Japanese ships for the most part suspended their fire, and their line about this time was rejoined by the *ASAMA*, which had effected temporary repairs. Under cover of the smoke and fog the Russian column, now headed by the *Borodino*, suddenly turned first west and then north-west, whereupon the Japanese fleet immediately reversed its course, bringing the *NISSHIN* to the head of the Japanese line, and again increased speed to

Sinking of the
"Oslabia."



"Mikasa."

Scouts coming in

ADMIRAL TOGO'S FLEET AND FLAGSHIP ON THE ACTUAL SCENE OF THE GREAT ENGAGEMENT OFF TSUSHIMA ISLAND.

The "Mikasa's" bridge and more exposed portions are swathed with rope mantlets for protection against shell-fire. She is shown without fighting-tops, which Admiral Togo entirely discarded, believing that they only afforded a mark to the enemy and often cost a ship her masts during long-range firing. The "Mikasa" is here shown with her torpedo-nets half lowered. Note on the bridge the searchlight, and on the side the life-buoy which can be thrown automatically into the water by a single touch. Admiral Togo's modifications made the "Mikasa" a very different-looking vessel from what she was at the beginning of the war.



VICE-ADMIRAL BEZOBRAZOFF

about 15 knots to take up a position on the Russian column's bow. Fire was reopened as the Japanese closed once more. The *Jemtchug*, making a sudden dash across the Japanese rear, received three shells from the Japanese armoured cruisers and was driven back at once. At 3.10 the first Russian ship sank—the *Oslabia*—having been hit by several more shells as she lay, with a heavy list, astern of her line. An officer on board her gives this account of her loss: "A shell bursting in our foremost compartment filled the two forward compartments with dense smoke. Supposing that fire had broken out, we set the pumps to work. There was, however, no fire; the water was rushing in through a hole in the side, and soon began to affect the ship's trim. She heeled more and more; from minute to minute I received reports that first this and then that magazine was flooded. At last orders were issued to shut the magazines down on the port side and use the starboard magazines. Finally, the water began to pour on board in torrents. I entered the battery and saw that all was over. We had to stop the ammunition hoists and dynamos. Then I ordered the crew to abandon ship and went myself to report to the captain. At this moment the heel was so great that it was impossible to stand up without support.

The heavy objects, guns, boats, began to slide across the deck. Then the left side of the bridge touched the water; the deck rose vertically and the water mounted up it. That was the last I knew." Other spectators of this terrible scene recounted that, as the great ship went down, her after-turret guns were fired in one final defiance of the Japanese. About 400 of the crew were rescued by the Russian destroyers; some 370 perished with the ship.

At the opening of the battle Togo had ordered his torpedo flotillas to take shelter at Tsushima till the close of the fight. Two divisions of destroyers, however, attached to the protected cruisers, were not sent into port and remained on the flank of the Russians, well away from the main Japanese fleet. They kept near the two contending fleets, notwithstanding the heavy seas which swept their decks. At 3.40, during a momentary lull in the fight, they sighted the

The Torpedo Flotillas.

Suvaroff, lying disabled, and dashed at her. She received them with a vigorous fire, proving that her power of resistance was not yet overcome, and succeeded in repulsing their attack, aided by other Russian vessels near at hand. The destroyer *SHIRANUI* was hit and seriously injured, but managed to effect repairs without retiring from the battle. It was now that Admiral Rojdestvensky, with several members of his Staff, was transferred to the destroyer *Boiny*. The Admiral had sustained three serious wounds and was barely conscious. The *Boiny* steamed to the *Nicolai*, when Nebogatoff was informed of the fact that the command was transferred to



ADMIRAL URIU.



CAPTAIN NASHIBA.



THE SHOT-RIDDLED "OREL," LOOKING FORWARD FROM THE HURRICANE DECK.

Some idea of the destructive force of the modern naval gun can be gained from the photograph here shown, the first taken after the battle.

him. About this time the *Alexander III.* got the fire on board under and recovered her trim. She rejoined the Russian line, which Nebogatoff was now reforming, though she was still in a very damaged condition. The leading ship in the Russian line, the *Borodino*, was showing a pronounced list forward, and her bows were slowly sinking deeper and deeper into the sea.

At 4.45, when the smoke and fog had again compelled the Japanese for some minutes to suspend their fire, Commander Suzuki, with a Japanese torpedo flotilla, made another attack upon the *Suvaroff*. It was

The "*Suvaroff*"
Disabled.

fiercely pressed, the destroyers rushing in till the Russian guns could not be sufficiently depressed to bear upon them, and a torpedo hit the *Suvaroff* on the port side, exploding with a loud report, and causing the Russian flagship to heel 10 degrees. Henceforth the *Suvaroff* lay upon the sea a helpless target, and the Japanese troubled themselves no more about her. Two Russian battleships were now sunk or disabled. The Japanese destroyer ASASHIHO was badly hit, and for some minutes was in danger of foundering, but in the end she managed to effect repairs.



A LECTURE ON THE WAR TO FOREIGN MILITARY ATTACHES AND CORRESPONDENTS AT THE FRONT.

The fog thickened, and, profiting by it, the Russian fleet essayed a bold stroke to make its escape, as victory was now out of the question. It had been steaming south-east, now it turned and steamed due south, and then, when the Japanese armoured ships were lost to view in the smoke and fog, turned yet again and headed north-east once more towards Vladivostock. On its loop to the south the *Nicolai* and the three coast-defence ships, under Admiral Nebogatoff, left the other armoured ships and proceeded further to the south to assist the Russian cruisers and destroyers, which were hotly engaged with the Japanese cruisers under Admirals Dewa and Uriu. Here the Japanese were carrying out against the Russian cruisers precisely the same tactics as those employed by Admiral Togo against the Russian battle-squadron. Togo had also turned south, but, losing the Russians completely after he had steamed some eight miles, he turned north again with his battleships, sending Kamimura with the six armoured cruisers to the south-west to destroy the Russian cruisers. On his southward loop he shelled the Russian cruisers and fired upon all the auxiliary ships that he saw.

May 27, 1905.

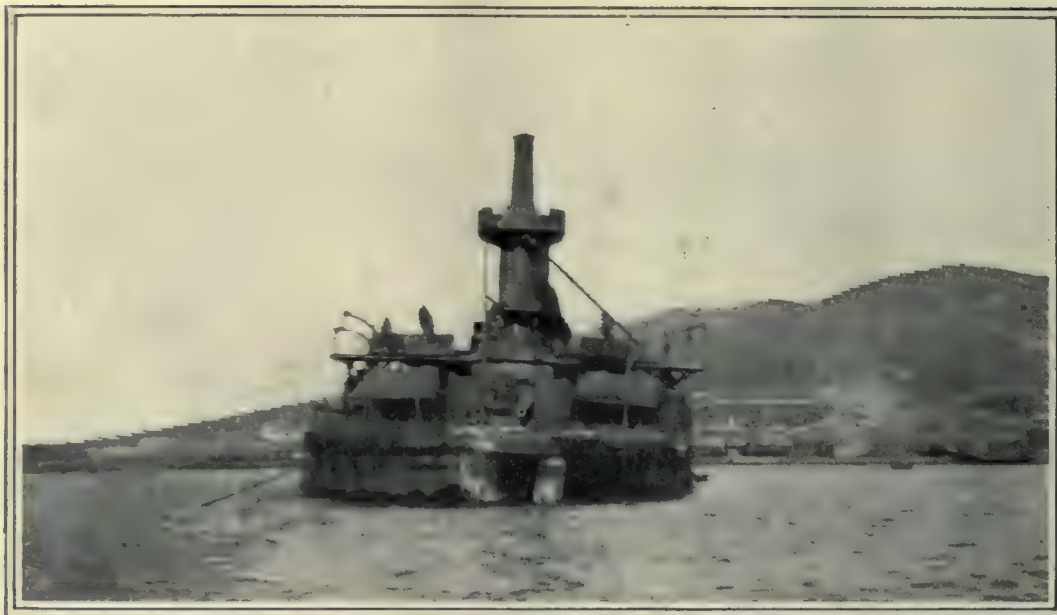
CHASING THE RUSSIAN REMNANT.

1371

At about 5.40, after he had turned north, his battleships suddenly made out the Russian special service ship *Ural*, steaming about lost in the fog and smoke, and attacked her with vigour. A few shells sent her to the bottom, but the greater part of her crew were rescued by the *Anadyr* and *Sver* which were close at



FOUNDERING OF THE BATTLESHIP "KNIAZ SUVAROFF"—FLAGSHIP OF ROJDESTVENSKY.



THE "PERESVIET" DISABLED AT PORT ARTHUR.

hand. Twenty minutes later he

The "Ural" Sunk.

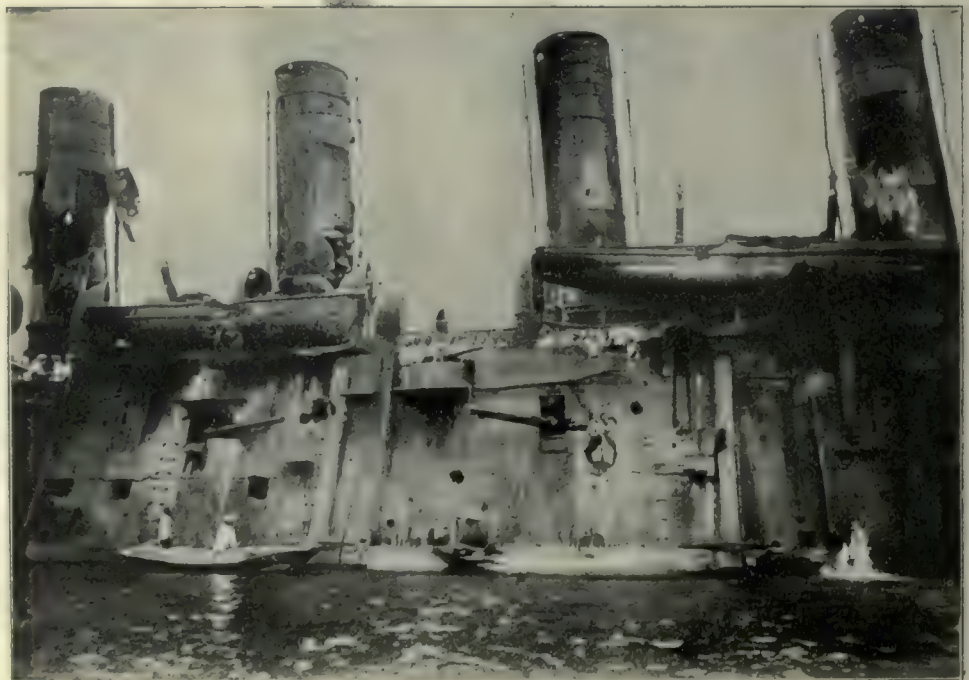
sighted the ships of which he was in search. The *Borodino*, *Orel*, *Alexander III*, *Sissoi*, *Navarin*, and *Nakhimoff* were discovered steaming north-east, and he at once closed with them to 3,000 yards, and, steer-

ing a parallel course till he had worked ahead of them with his six ships, opened upon them a slow but deadly fire, to which they made but a feeble reply. The *Alexander III*, almost at once was compelled to drop out of the Russian line with a pronounced list, very low in the water, and fell to the rear. About 6.40 the *Borodino* burst into flames and also fell out of the line, and at 7.23 a great cloud of smoke and flame rose from her as the result of the explosion of her magazines, and she was seen no more. The other Russian battleships received terrific punishment, the *Orel's* upper works being torn to splinters, while the *Sissoi* and *Navarin* were much shattered and the *Nakhimoff* was beginning to leak. The continuous thunder of shells upon the armour loosened the bolts and started leaks in all directions, even where the projectiles did not perforate; while the explosion of the Shimose charges in the shells set fire to the woodwork and to the paint upon the iron and steel, so that the Russian battleships blazed furiously. All the Russian ships had trouble with fire.

While Admiral Togo was pounding the remnant

The Cruisers' Russian Duel.

of the battle-squadron to the north, a sharp action was proceeding to the south between the Japanese cruisers and the Russian cruisers. In the earlier part of the fight considerable damage had been inflicted upon all the Russian ships and their formation had been thrown into disorder. But no decisive success was gained, though two attempts to break the Japanese line, one made by the *Aurora* and the



THE RUSSIAN "GROMOBOI" AT VLADIVOSTOCK.
Examination showed that the Japanese concentrated fire on vital parts.



TOGO—THE JAPANESE NELSON.



A QUIET DAY'S FISHING DURING THE WAR.

would probably have gone down. It was not till after 6 p.m. that the CHITOSE, with Admiral Dewa on board, was able to leave her and proceed north.

The Japanese cruiser squadron, thus weakened by two of its best ships, was in the very act of shelling and sinking the *Irtish*, when Nebogatoff delivered his attack. The NANIWA, with the flag of Admiral Uriu,

Kamimura's Timely Aid.

who was now in command of this part of the field, was hit astern below the water-line, and soon after 5 p.m. was compelled to withdraw to Japanese waters to repair her damage.

Matters were not going well for the Japanese cruisers, when a welcome reinforcement arrived to their aid in the shape of Admiral Kamimura with six of the fine Japanese armoured cruisers. He attacked the Russians on the south, while the protected cruisers assailed them on the north. Taken between two fires, the Russians now had the worst of matters, and the *Aurora* about this time was hit on the conning-tower and her captain killed, while fires repeatedly broke out in the *Oleg*. The four Russian battleships,

other by three Russian destroyers, were easily foiled. About 4.20 the Japanese cruisers sank a Russian special service ship, probably the *Russ*, and were preparing to make an end of the Russian division by closing to short range, when Admiral Nebogatoff suddenly appeared on the scene through the fog with the *Nicolai*, *Apraxin*, *Seniavin*, and *Ushakoff*. These four armoured ships had so far suffered but little in the battle, since the Japanese battleships and armoured cruisers had concentrated all their fire upon the more powerful Russian units. Consequently their presence changed the conditions of the fight. Already the Japanese had suffered some loss. The KASAGI, Admiral Dewa's flagship, had been hit below the water-line on the port side and was leaking so badly that she was in danger. She therefore withdrew from the Japanese line, and, escorted by the CHITOSE, succeeded in reaching smooth and shallow water in Aburatami Bay, where her repairs were begun, occupying some 20 hours. But for the proximity of the Japanese coast she



THE ENGELHARDT 87-MM. QUICK-FIRING FIELD-GUN.

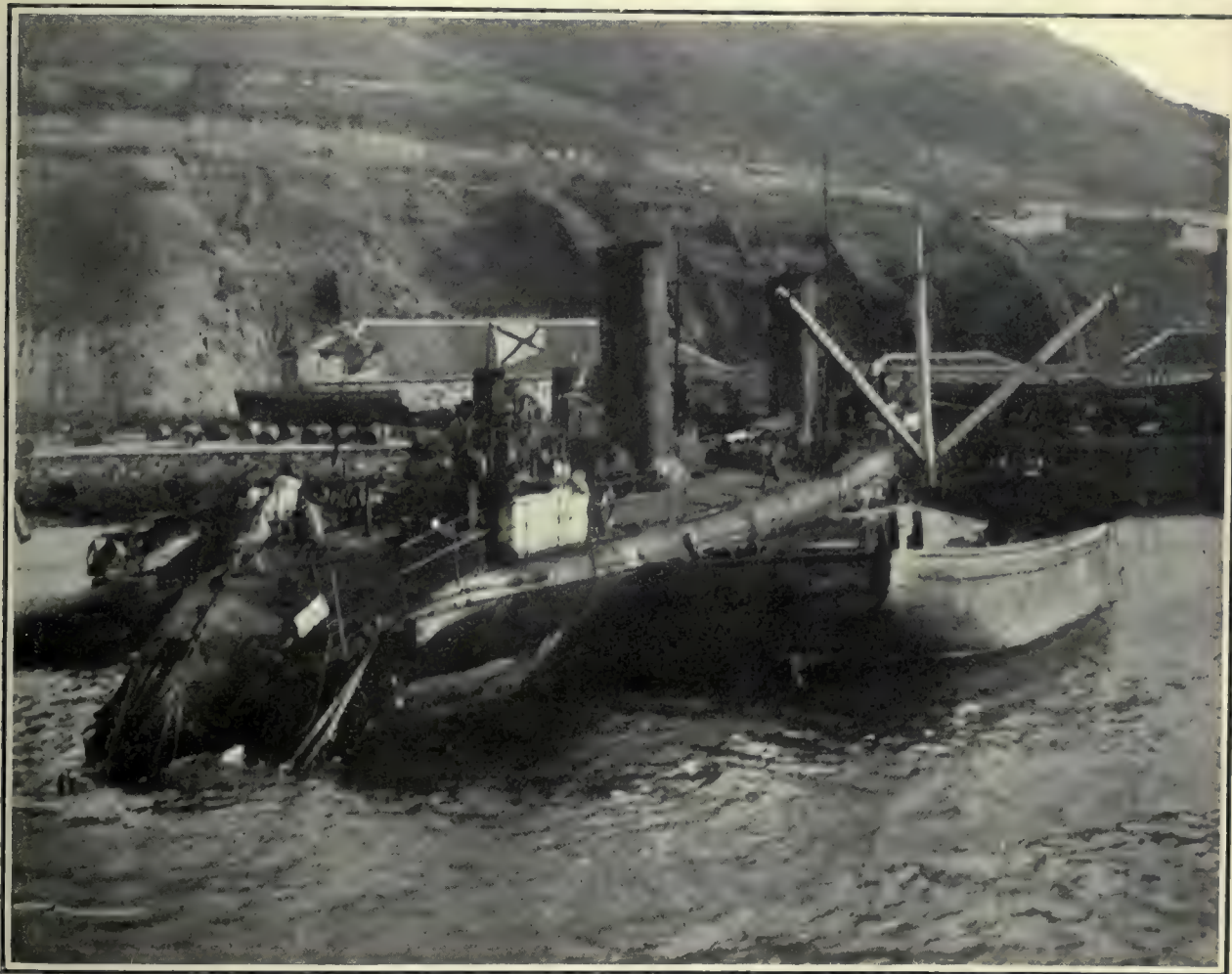
May 27, 1905.

FLIGHT OF RUSSIAN CRUISERS.

1375

however, suffered most, as Kamimura mainly directed upon them his fire. Finally, the whole Russian force broke up into groups and fled northwards, closely pursued by the Japanese. The Russian ships drew ahead and were permitted to make off, while the Japanese cruisers concentrated to destroy the *Suvaroff* and *Kamschatka* which they met on their course.

Upon the *Suvaroff* a heavy fire was directed by the cruisers, and she was also attacked by a torpedo flotilla under Captain Fujimoto. The battleship, though now she was almost on her beam ends, resisted gallantly, and used the only gun which she could bring to bear. But the Japanese boats this time did their work well. Closing in upon her they fired torpedo after torpedo at her. The *HARUSAME* struck the fatal blows. One torpedo exploded under the Russian flagship's stern; a second, fired from the *HARUSAME*, hit her abreast of the engine-room, and blew her side in. At 7.25 she sank, and the men were seen leaping from



[Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

WRECK OF A RUSSIAN TORPEDO-BOAT WHICH DID GOOD SERVICE AT PORT ARTHUR. TAKEN DURING THE SIEGE.

her decks into the sea as she slowly turned turtle and took her last plunge to the bottom of the sea. A little earlier the *Alexander III.* was seen to capsize, so that four Russian battleships were gone.

While most of the Japanese cruisers and their accompanying destroyers were busy finishing off the *Suvaroff*, others had fallen upon the *Kamschatka*. The Russian repair-ship was beset on every side and

Flight of the Russian Cruisers.

heavily shelled; in a few minutes she began to sink. Her boilers exploded as she went to the bottom, and many of her crew perished. The Russian cruisers abandoned her and fled north, and while steaming northwards encountered the destroyer *Boiny*. Her

crew shouted the news that Admiral Rojdestvensky was on board wounded, whereupon panic seems to have seized the cruiser squadron. Admiral Enquist's division, composed of the *Oleg*, *Aurora*, and *Jemtchug*, after a perfunctory attempt to push north, turned their helms and stood south, out of the battle. The *Izumrud*, *Svietlana*, *Dmitri Donskoi*, and *Vladimir* followed Nebogatoff's division and steered north-west.

The *Almaz* made what speed she could to the north. None of these vessels had so far suffered any disabling injury, though on board all ammunition was running low and the upper works were much battered. The remaining storeships and destroyers either bolted for safety to the south or stood north, in the dim hope of reaching Vladivostock, and for the moment found themselves unmolested. The Japanese heavy ships were withdrawing from the field of battle to leave the waters of the Korean Straits clear for the Japanese torpedo craft, and were steaming towards a rendezvous south of Matsushima Island, some 200 miles to the north, on the line of retreat from the Straits of Korea to Vladivostock. Thus the Russian cruisers *Aurora*,

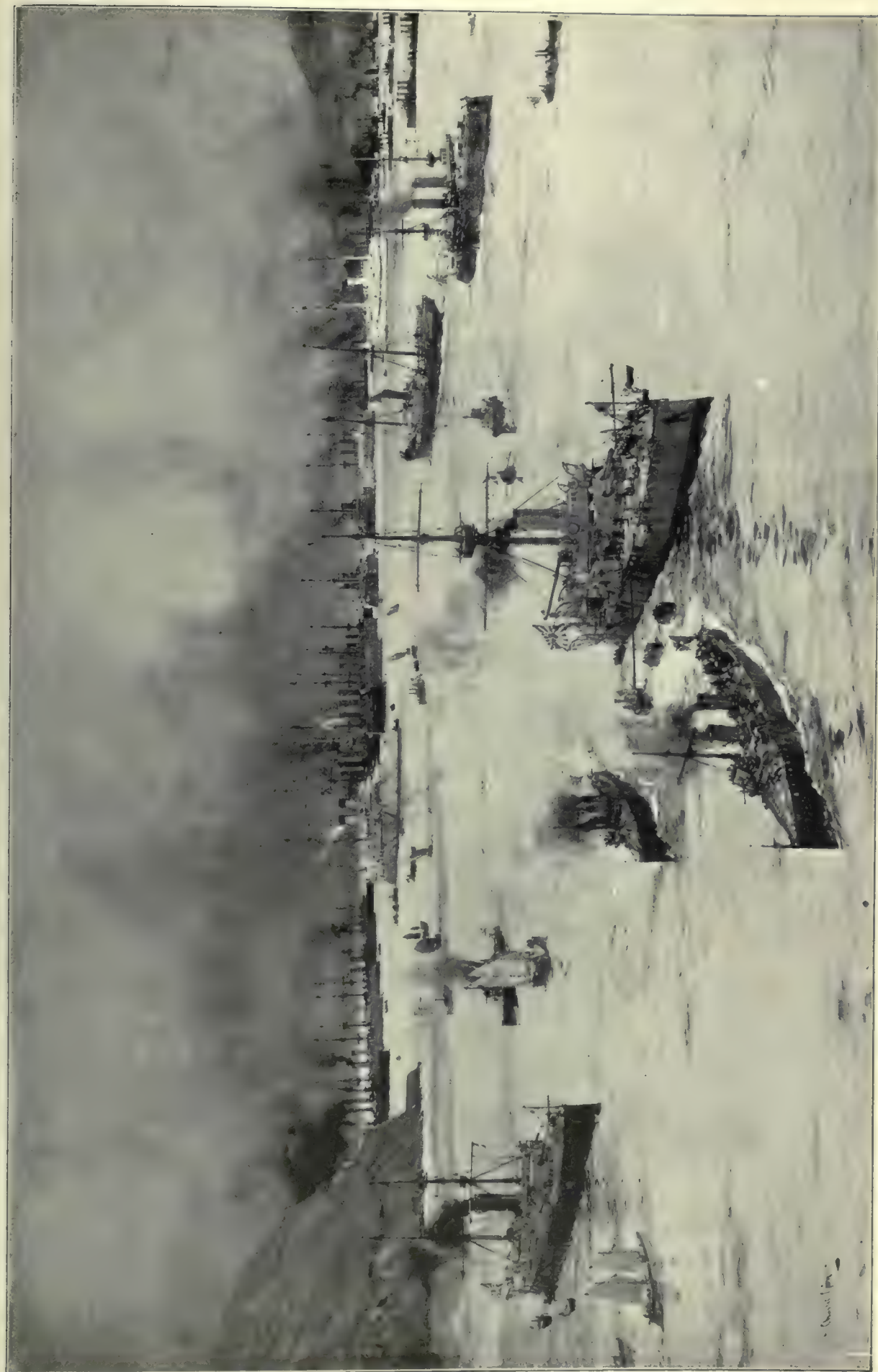


(Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.)
AN EXPLOSION OF A RUSSIAN MINE (600 LBS. OF POWDER) IN THE SIEGE LINE NEAR ANTESHAN FORT.

Oleg, and *Jemtchug*, as they fled through the mist and darkness southward with all lights out, found no enemy in their path other than the Japanese torpedo-boats, which flitted like shadows through the night, but which could not achieve any effective hits against these fast vessels.

In accordance with the plan prepared by the Japanese Staff, at 8.15 p.m. the Japanese torpedo flotillas got to work. The six flotillas of destroyers and the ten flotillas of torpedo-boats issued forth from the harbours in which most of them had been peacefully lying during the afternoon battle. The sea was now falling, and it was sufficiently calm to permit them to use their terrible weapons. One destroyer squadron attacked from the north, two from the north-east, one from the east, and one from the south-east. From the south four flotillas of torpedo-boats were to attack, while one flotilla of destroyers and six of torpedo-boats were to follow and destroy detached squadrons or isolated Russian ships. The way had been prepared for them by the fire of the heavy Japanese battleships and cruisers, which had disabled most of the smaller guns on board the Russian ships, shattered three-quarters of the searchlights, and deranged steering-gear, telephones, and voice-pipes. Even if the

Japanese Torpedoes at Work.



THE JAPANESE NAVAL BASE IN THE ELLIOTT ISLANDS.

Panorama as seen from the "Manchu Maru."



A FUNERAL SERVICE AT PORT ARTHUR.

Japanese attacks had no actual result, they must impose a grievous strain upon the Russian personnel and help to exhaust the Russian ammunition.

The Russians had re-formed in the darkness, under Nebogatoff, with sadly diminished numbers. Of the battleships, the *Nicolai*, *Orel*, *Apraxin*, *Seniavin*, *Ushakoff*, *Sissoi*, and *Navarin* were left; of the cruisers only the *Izumrud*, *Nakhimoff*, *Dmitri Donskoi*, and *Vladimir*, with six or seven destroyers. The *Orel* and *Sissoi* were both much damaged. The armour and framing of the *Sissoi* had been so shaken by the Japanese projectiles that she was leaking badly, and probably the fleet could not steam much over 9 or 10 knots. Just as the Russians had regained some approach to order, the Japanese torpedo craft appeared on the scene, and a series of furious attacks began. At first the Russians used their searchlights with effect, but their enemies were on all sides of them, and seemed innumerable. The Russians headed south-west to escape these hornets of the sea; then, yielding before the attacks which came from the south, they turned east. Gradually the Russian units scattered and lost each other in the turmoil and confusion. They fired upon each other and turned their searchlights upon one another, while in between them were the Japanese boats constantly discharging torpedoes and closing up till the boats actually gained the dead angle, under the very hulls of the Russian ships.

During the night the



JAPANESE TROOPS RESTING.



THE GREAT NAVAL BATTLE. ON BOARD THE "BORODINO."



THE EFFECT OF A SECOND SHELL, FROM THE "KNIAZ POTEMKIN," THE BATTLESHIP WHICH MUTINIED AT ODESSA.

The damage to the house of Feldman.

Apraxin, *Seniavin*, and *Ushakoff*, the cruisers *Svietlana*, *Almaz* (now well on her way to Vladivostock), *Izumrud*, and *Dmitri Donskoi*, and the destroyers *Boiny*, *Gromky*, *Bystry*, *Biedovy*, *Bezupretshny*, *Grosny*, and *Bravy*. The destroyers were much scattered, and, with the exception of the group of five ships under Admiral Nebogatoff's command, composed of the *Nicolai*, *Orel*, *Seniavin*, *Apraxin*, and *Izumrud*, there was no coherence in these shattered fragments of the great armada. At 5.30 a.m., off the island of Tsushima, the Japanese destroyer SHIRANUI and the auxiliary cruiser SADO MARU (the same vessel which in these very same waters the Vladivostock fleet a year earlier had torpedoed and left in a sinking condition) found the *Nakhimoff* and *Vladimir* both water-logged, floating on the sea, and were taking possession of them when the two Russian ships sank. Most of their crews were saved. Three other Japanese auxiliary cruisers found the *Sissoi* in a hopeless condition, slowly foundering, and removed her crew. Soon after 10 a.m. the destroyer *Gromky* was seen steering south and was instantly chased by the SHIRANUI. She turned northwards, but was speedily overtaken near the Korean coast, and was compelled by the SHIRANUI, with the aid of Torpedo-boat No. 63, to strike her flag in a battered condition. She sank an hour after her capture.

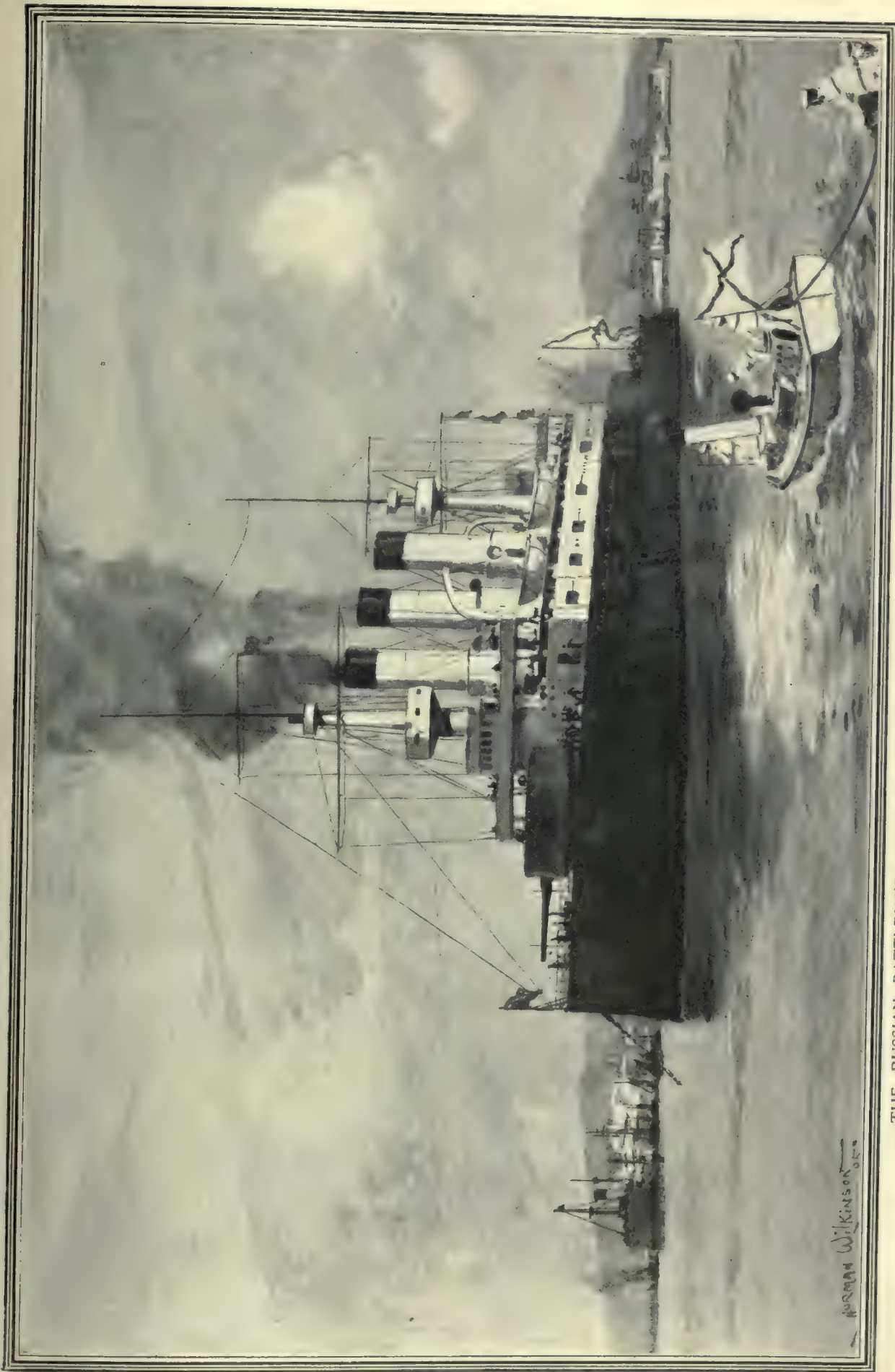
On the way north to the rendezvous the Japanese cruiser CHITOSE saw a Russian destroyer, probably the *Bezupretshny*, and, opening fire upon it, sank it. About 7 a.m. the OTAWA and NIITAKA sighted two Russian vessels near the Korean coast and, chasing them, found them to be the *Svietlana* and *Bystry*. The *Svietlana* was at once shelled, when her captain sank her in a very damaged state off the Korean coast. Meantime, the NIITAKA pursued the *Bystry*, calling up to her aid by wireless telegraphy the destroyer MURAKUMO. These two vessels drove the Russian destroyer ashore on the Korean coast, where her crew blew her up. There now remained of the large ships only the *Orel*, *Nicolai*, *Apraxin*, *Seniavin*, *Izumrud*, *Ushakoff*, and *Dmitri* to be accounted for. The first five at dawn

Sissoi and *Navarin* were cut off. The *Sissoi* was twice torpedoed and so damaged that she could only steam at the rate of 3 or 4 knots. The inrush of water carried up the oil fuel in her double-bottom to the furnaces and caused a most dangerous fire. The *Nakhimoff* was caught by the torpedo-boats, and a torpedo struck her on her engine-room, blowing it in, so that she was left water-logged and in a sinking condition. At 2 a.m. the *Navarin* was sighted by a destroyer flotilla, which attacked her fiercely, four times torpedoed her, and sent her to the bottom. About the same time the *Vladimir Monomach* was struck by a torpedo and disabled. The *Ushakoff* was driven away from the rest of Nebogatoff's fleet and was again and again assailed, but without any hits being effected. Before midnight the formation of the Russian fleet was completely dissolved.

At daybreak of the 28th the only Russian ships left in a fighting condition north of the Straits of Korea were the battleships *Orel*, *Nicolai*, the coast-defence ships



WRECKED BY THE "KNIAZ POTEMKIN'S" FIRE AT ODESSA. Effect of a shell on the south side of Strepetoff's house.



THE RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP "KNAZ POTEKIN," WHICH MUTINIED IN ODESSA HARBOUR.

The "Kniaz Potemkin," the crew of which mutinied because of the shooting of one of their number by an officer, is one of the finest and best-armed vessels remaining to the Russian Navy. She was launched in 1900, and is of 12,500 tons displacement. She carries 600 men. Her chief armament consists of four 12-in. Obouchoff guns, sixteen 6-in. quick-firers, fourteen 3-in. quick-firers, and twenty 1-pounder quick-firers. She has five torpedo-tubes, three of which are submerged. Her armour is Krupp.

were 90 miles south of Liancourt Rocks, fancying themselves at last free from the pursuit of the Japanese, when their wireless instruments indicated the approach of strange ships. What had happened was this. At 5.20 a.m., just as Admiral Togo was extending his fleet 20 miles south of Matsushima to search for fugitives, the armoured cruiser squadron, which was 60 miles further to the south of him, reported streaks of smoke to the east, and steering towards the smoke discovered that it proceeded from Nebogatoff's ships. Another vessel was seen far to the south, which was probably the *Dmitri*, but she made off. The Japanese fleet rapidly closed round the Russian ships. To the south of Nebogatoff were the protected cruisers of



[From stereograph, copyright by James Ricalton, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
THE "PERESVIET" AT LOW TIDE AT PORT ARTHUR.

the younger Togo's and Uriu's squadrons. To the east and north were the Japanese battleships and armoured cruisers in overwhelming force. Finally, the *Orel*, *Nicolai*, *Apraxin*, and *Seniavin* were completely surrounded.

The *Izumrud*, using all her speed, broke away to the south, and then, being headed off by the younger Togo's ships, ran north again, hotly pursued. The other four ships were subjected to a terrible fire. Their plight was an absolutely hopeless one. They had little ammunition left, and their crews were in a state of nervous prostration after the prolonged agony of the battle of the 27th and the night attacks of the 27th-28th. The *Orel* was so battered that she was incapable of fast steaming. Officers and men were worn out and dispirited, yet the alternative, if they refused to hoist the white flag, was to endure the Japanese fire for some minutes or hours longer and then to face the peril of death by drowning. If they scuttled their ships, the Japanese had, by the customs of

**Nebogatoff's
Surrender.**

May 28, 1905.

NEBOGATOFF SURRENDERS.

1383

naval warfare, a perfect right to refuse them quarter. Against the Russians were 27 intact Japanese warships flushed with victory. Finally, Nebogatoff determined to surrender, and the white flag was hoisted over his four ships about 2 p.m. Japanese prize-crews at once proceeded on board them; many of the Russian



LANDING THE DEAD FROM THE "KNIAZ POTEMKIN."



GENERAL KUROKI AND PRINCE KININOMIYA INSPECTING CAPTURED RUSSIAN GUNS.

prisoners were removed, and the *Orel*, *Nicolai*, *Apraxin*, and *Seniavin* were ordered south to Japanese ports under the Japanese flag.

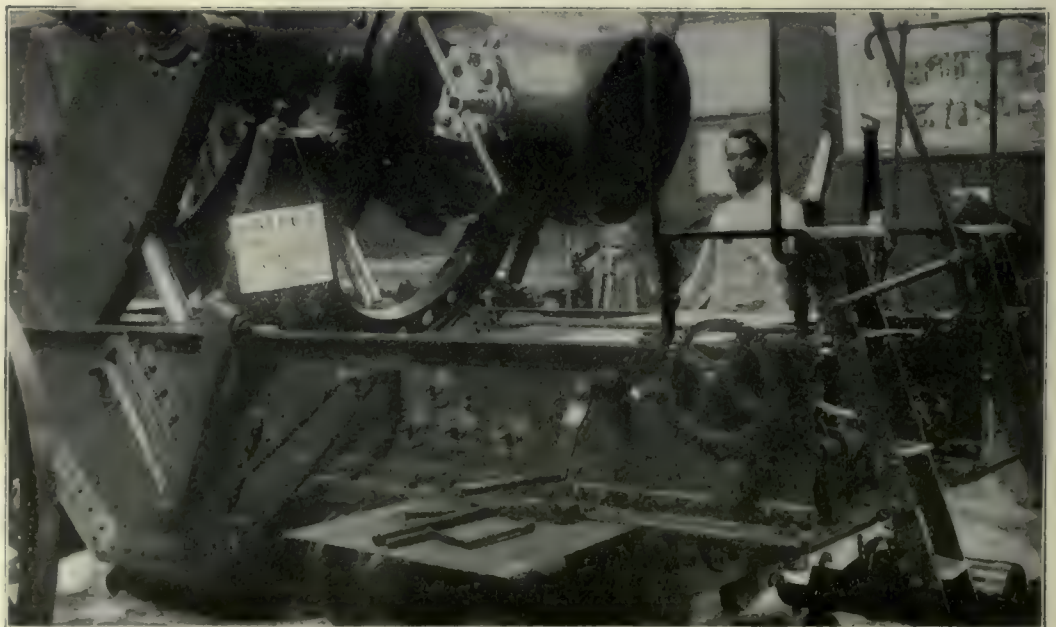
Soon after their surrender, while the transfer of prisoners was taking place, smoke was sighted to the south, and the Japanese armoured cruisers **IWATE** and

TOKIWA steamed towards it. It came from the Russian coast-defence ship *Ushakoff*, which was endeavouring to retire northwards. The Japanese cruisers speedily overtook her, signalled to her to surrender, and, when she made no reply to their signal, other than to open fire, attacked her with their heavy guns. In a few minutes the fight, if it deserved such a name, was over. The *Ushakoff* was badly hit and in a disabled condition, she opened her Kingston valves, and went to the bottom. Of her crew of 422 men, 342 were saved by the Japanese. The rescued men were many of them in a condition of frenzy from the sufferings which they had experienced.

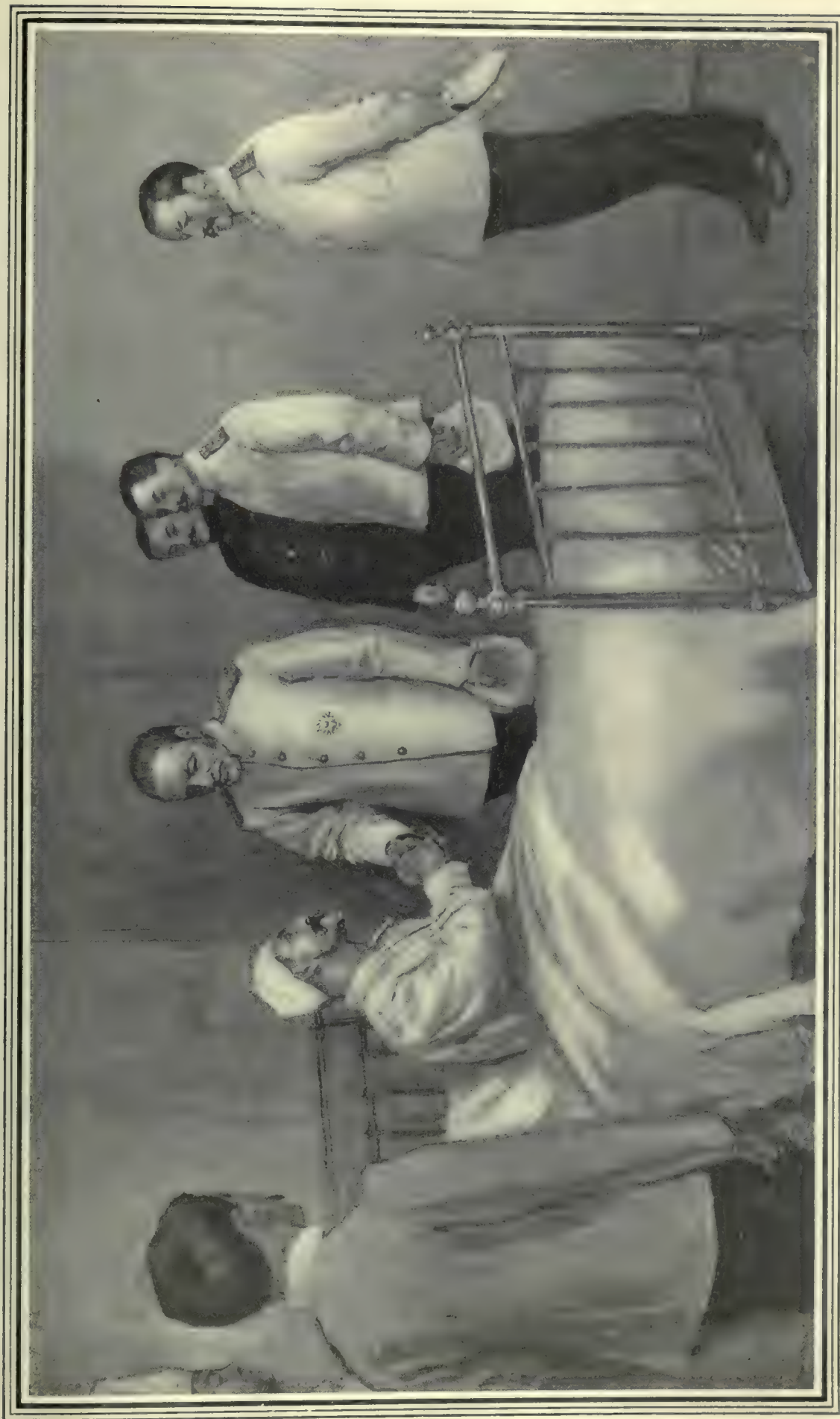
At 10 a.m. the Japanese destroyers **SAZANAMI** and **KAGERO**, while searching the sea for Russian ships, sighted two columns of smoke, and, putting on full speed, early in the afternoon overtook two Russian destroyers, the *Biedovy* and *Grosny*. The *Grosny* made off at great speed towards the north, and, though hotly chased by the **KAGERO**, could not be overtaken, and finally succeeded in making good her escape. The other Russian destroyer, the

Rojdestvensky Captured.

Biedovy, had Admiral Rojdestvensky and his Staff on board. They had been transferred to her from the *Boiny*, which had suffered damage to her machinery and had been sunk by her crew during the early morning. The *Biedovy* was so heavily laden and so crippled that she could make nothing of a fight against the **SAZANAMI**. She hauled down her flag at the first shot. A Japanese boarding-party of 20 well-armed



9-INCH GUN AT PORT ARTHUR WITH DISAPPEARING AND RECOVERING MACHINERY.



ADMIRAL TOGO PAYING A VISIT OF CONDOLENCE TO ADMIRAL ROJDESTVENSKY.

Very shortly after the famous Battle of the Sea of Japan Admiral Togo visited Admiral Rojdestvensky in the naval hospital at Sasebo. Alluding to the Russian Admiral's wounds, Admiral Togo expressed his sincere sympathy, and praised the desperately courageous fight which the Russians had offered, adding that he hoped Admiral Rojdestvensky would soon be able to return to Russia. Admiral Rojdestvensky deeply moved, thanked his visitor and congratulated Japan upon the courage and patriotism of her sailors, saying that it lessened his regret and sorrow at the defeat to know the high character of the victors.

men, under Lieutenant-Commander Aiba, dashed on board her to take possession. Going below, Commander Aiba found that the little ward-room had been turned into a hospital. Beds had been improvised, and upon these lay half-a-dozen officers, many of them terribly wounded. The Russian commander of the boat led him between two beds to a door in the bulkhead which gave access to an inner cabin. Here lay an officer with grey beard and bandaged face, ghastly white, and motionless but for the slow heaving of his chest. The Russian whispered "Admiral Rojdestvensky," to the stupefaction of the Japanese, who had looked for no such prize, and informed him that the Admiral was dangerously wounded in three places, one of his wounds being in the head. So grave was his condition that it was dangerous to move him.

With their invariable generosity and chivalry, the Japanese sent all necessary help to the Russian



GENERAL KUROPATKIN'S HEADQUARTERS.

Cossack Regiment at Liaoyang.

wounded, and decided that none of them should be transferred to the *SAZANAMI*. The *Biedovy*, which was damaged in her machinery, was taken in tow, and both boats proceeded towards the nearest Japanese port. Yet the captors felt some anxiety as to their position. They were out of touch of the rest of the Japanese fleet and were unaware how complete a victory had already been won; at any moment a powerful Russian vessel might appear in sight and oblige them to relinquish their capture. Not till the Japanese cruiser *AKASHI* came steaming towards them with the news of the complete victory was this anxiety laid to rest. Admiral Rojdestvensky was then taken to the naval hospital at Sasebo, where, after some weeks of suffering, he recovered his health, though not perhaps his reason.

The *Dmitri Donskoi* had for some time steamed in company of the *Biedovy* and *Grosny* during the night of the 27th-28th and early morning of the 28th, but parting from them was nearing Matsushima Island when, about 5 p.m. of the 28th, she was sighted by Admiral Uriu with the cruiser *TAKACHIMO*, some other unarmoured vessels, and four destroyers. They chased her north for two hours. At 7 p.m. another Japanese force, composed of the *NIITAKA*, *OTAWA*, and three destroyers, suddenly appeared ahead of her.



"Admiral Apraksin."

Admiral Seniavin."

JAPANESE SPOILS OF WAR.

The Russian vessels "Admiral Apraksin" and "Seniavin" were brought as captives into Sasebo Harbour.

Both detachments opened fire upon the Russian ship at long range, and the destroyers repeatedly attacked her but without torpedoing her. At daybreak of the 29th she was still intact, but, despairing of escape, her captain sank her in deep water close to Matsushima Island, and with his crew took refuge upon the island. This was the last Russian vessel to be destroyed in the two days' battle, though on the 30th, owing to the timidity of her captain, the *Izumrud* which had fled northward, avoiding Vladivostock Harbour in the belief that it was blockaded, ran aground in Vladimir Bay, 150 miles to the north, and was blown up by her crew.

The Japanese had thus annihilated the great Russian Armada. Of all that proud array of ships there



LIFE IN SAKHALIN. THE GOVERNOR RECEIVING THE EVENING REPORT OF THE WARDERS AT KORSAKOVSK.

This island, which lies opposite the mouth of the Amur, has a Russian population chiefly composed of convicts and exiles. One of the chief military posts on the island is Korsakovsk. In our illustration the Governor (who is much respected as a kind-hearted man) is receiving the evening report of the military warders after certain of the convicts, whose punishment is for serious crime, have been locked up for the night.

escaped only the small cruiser *Almaz* and the destroyers *Bravy* and *Grosny* to Vladivostock; the cruisers *Aurora*, *Oleg*, and *Jemtchug* to Manila; the destroyer *Blestiashty* to Shanghai, taking on board on the way the crew of the *Bodry*, which destroyer sank in the China Sea owing to her injuries. The auxiliary cruisers *Korea* and *Sver* escaped to Shanghai, and the *Anadyr* to Madagascar, where she appeared a month after the battle. The rest of the fleet was thus accounted for:

**Russia's Armada
Annihilated.**

Battleships, or Coast-Defence Ships—Seven sunk: *Suvaroff*, *Alexander III.*, *Borodino*, *Oslabia*, *Sissoi*, *Navarin*, *Ushakoff*. Four captured: *Orel*, *Nicolai*, *Apraxin*, *Seniavin*.

Cruisers—Five sunk: *Nakhimoff*, *Vladimir*, *Dmitri Donskoi*, *Svietlana*, *Izumrud*.

Auxiliary Cruisers—Four sunk: *Irtish*, *Kamschatka*, *Russ*, *Ural*. One captured: *Kostroma*.

Destroyers—Four sunk: *Bystry*, *Bezupretshny*, *Gromky*, *Boiny*. One captured: *Biedovy*.

Thus 26 of the 38 ships which had passed the Straits of Korea were taken or sunk by the Japanese. Even these figures fail to represent the completeness of the victory. Every single armoured ship in the Russian Armada was taken or sent to the bottom, and the units which escaped were of negligible fighting value. On the Japanese side the sacrifice was trifling. Torpedo-boats Nos. 34, 35, and 69 were sunk; Nos. 33 and 68 and the destroyers HARUSAME, IKAZUCHI, and YUGIRO sustained more or less serious injury. Not a single large Japanese ship was so damaged as to require heavy repairs, and, generally

speaking, throughout the Japanese fleet the injuries sustained were much less serious than those suffered in the battle of August 10 against a Russian fleet which was less numerous and incomparably less powerful.

Admiral Rojdestvensky proved himself as a leader even more incapable than Admirals Vitgeft and Ukhtomsky, and than this nothing worse can be said. He and his captains played throughout a passive part and gave no indication of energy or initiative. In not one single case did they use their ships or their weapons to advantage. The Russian cruisers remained for the most critical stage of the battle huddled up with the battleships; the destroyers steamed, as far as they could, under the lee of the big ships, and all allowed the Japanese to do what they liked. From the first moment the Russian fleet appeared to be paralysed by the Japanese attack, and almost from the first shot lost heart.

**A
Discreditable Defeat.**



CONVICTS OF THE ALEXANDROVSK PRISON, SAKHALIN, AT WORK UNDER A RUSSIAN GUARD.



RUSSIAN TROOPS CAPTURING SUPPLIES.

Never has there been a more signal and discreditable defeat; never before in human history has so enormous a force been destroyed with so little effort or loss on the victors' side. The Japanese themselves were stupefied at the swiftness and ease of their own success. They had anticipated three months of prolonged fighting in the Japan Sea; they had never hoped to make a complete end of the Russian fleet, though none of them doubted that final victory would fall to the lot of their Navy. Not for one single hour after the joining of battle was the issue in doubt. Rojdestvensky repeated and surpassed

all the blunders of the Port Arthur fleet, while the Japanese, profiting by bitter experience, avoided their previous errors. They took care to close to decisive range, instead of throwing away ammunition at a great distance. Their fire was slow and deliberate, and was constantly suspended when the range increased or the shape of the Russians was lost in the smoke and fog. On August 10, 1904, they had drawn off without pursuit and suffered the beaten Russian fleet to return to Port Arthur; on this occasion there was such a pursuit as has never before been known in naval war. Their tactics were as good as their strategy and were carried out with a courage and coolness which made them invincible.

The only charitable conclusion with regard to the Russian Admiral was that he was suffering from delusions or insanity. He brought his fleet to the Korean Straits by the help which neutrals gave him. This achievement has been much lauded, yet it is a simple matter, if neutral coaling-stations are open, to take a fleet anywhere. But the real trial began when he encountered the Japanese and had no longer to deal with weak or unarmed neutrals. His dispositions were bad, his strategy was obvious, his tactics were those of the nursery and rendered the fine material under his orders worthless. Nor did he hesitate after his terrible defeat to blame the Power whose flag he had so repeatedly outraged with complete impunity for his undoing. The catastrophe which befell him was not unmerited, and stands in the world's history as one more proof that Providence deals forth no favours to those who violate the eternal ordinances of morality.



JAPANESE CYCLIST CORPS.



A SURRENDER OF RUSSIANS TO JAPANESE.



VISCOUNT TANAKA,
Minister of the Japanese Household Department.

the outset made three hits to the Russian one, and thus in the initial stage of the battle completely annulled the Russian advantage in weight of metal. Moreover, owing to Togo's excellent tactics, all the Japanese guns were brought to bear, while half the Russian guns were not. The following estimate gives the average number of guns in action during the first half-hour of battle on either side:

**CAUSES OF THE
DEFEAT.**

JAPANESE HEAVY GUNS:
16 12-in. ... 1 10-in. ... 31 8-in.

RUSSIAN HEAVY GUNS:
20 12-in. ... 4 10-in. ... 0 8-in.

When allowance is made for the superior hitting power of the Japanese, the mathematical preponderance increases to a figure of 48 12-in., 3 10-in., and 93 8-in. guns for the Japanese, while the Russian figure remains the same. Before the Russians altered their formation, the mischief had been done; three Russian battleships were practically disabled in the first half-hour, and thenceforward could effect but little. And as the Japanese gunners damaged ship after ship, the accuracy of

The loss of the Russians in officers and men was appalling. Of 15,200 officers and men who manned the great Armada,

Losses. 7,282 were taken prisoners, and 4,000 were drowned or killed in the battle. Only about 4,000 escaped unhurt in the vessels which succeeded in eluding the vigilance of the Japanese. The Japanese losses were insignificant in view of the immensity of the results obtained; 113 officers and men were killed and 424 wounded. The heaviest loss was suffered by the MIKASA, which lost 8 killed and 55 wounded. Next to her came the ASAHI and ADZUMA, with 39 casualties apiece. The torpedo flotillas lost only 22 killed and 65 wounded, despite the daring nature of their attacks. The ITSUKUSHIMA and CHINYEN escaped without a single casualty. Of the protected cruisers, the OTAWA, with 26 casualties, suffered most; of the destroyers, the SHIRANUI with 13 casualties. Seven Japanese officers were killed; 15 seriously wounded, and 45 slightly wounded, among the latter being Vice-Admiral Misu.

The main tactical cause of the defeat was the defective Russian gunnery. The Japanese at



A JAPANESE DUG-OUT NEAR PORT ARTHUR.

their fire increased with their confidence, while the accuracy of the Russian gunners' aim diminished till the Russians were making only one hit to the Japanese six with each gun. The Japanese superiority thus momentarily grew and was never a fixed quantity.

All the Russian accounts lay emphasis upon the terrifying hail of projectiles which hit their ships as the Japanese closed in to 4,000 yards, and of the difficulty of seeing the Japanese who had the sun behind them. The crews in the Russian turrets and batteries had their nerves shaken by the infernal din, by the blast of heavy explosives, by the constant fires which broke out in all directions and which rendered the heat intolerable, by the poisonous gases, and by the showers of splinters which drove them down to the lower part of the ships. Yet the loss of life directly caused on board the Russian battleships by the Japanese fire was relatively small. The *Orel*, for example, showed 40 hits from the heavy Japanese guns. She had the muzzle of one of her 12-in. guns shot off or blown away; two of her turrets plated with 6-in. steel and containing each a pair of 6-in. guns were disabled by Japanese shells which struck them about the base.



JAPANESE LANDING OPERATIONS CARRIED OUT AT NIGHT.

The whole upper part of the ship was wrecked. Shattered portions of machinery strewed her decks and passages, and in all directions there were traces of fire, as fires broke out several times on board. But the portions of the ship protected by armour had sustained no grave injury, and of her crew 637 survived the battle; only 18 officers and men were killed and 50 wounded. Less than 10 per cent. of her crew were thus placed *hors de combat* by the Japanese fire.

The smallness of the loss was probably due to the fact that the crew kept behind armour, or went below to the store-rooms, instead of fighting the ship. The loss on the *Nicolai*, *Apraxin*, and *Seniavin* was insignificant for much the same reason. The *Nicolai* had most of her small guns on the port side disabled, a large part of one of her funnels shot off, and a breach in her unarmoured side just above the water-line, but otherwise was not much damaged. Of the cruisers which escaped, the *Oleg* was little damaged, and lost 13 killed and 30 wounded; the *Aurora* lost 21 killed and 86 wounded; and the *Jemchug* 14 killed and 31 wounded. The *Izumrud* in the battle had only 10 men wounded; the *Almaz* 4 killed and 10 wounded; and the *Bravy* 9 killed and 5 wounded. These figures conclusively prove the small loss of life caused by the Japanese fire. Most of the Russians who perished were carried down with the ships which foundered.



RUSSIAN TROOPS ON THE TRANS-SIBERIAN RAILWAY.

The victory was won by the gun and by the gun alone. The torpedo only completed the work which the gun had begun. The *Oslabia* was sunk by gun-fire alone breaching the compartments near the water-line the *Alexander III.* is believed to have foundered through the blows on her armour starting the plates and setting up serious leakage; the *Borodino* was set on fire by gun-fire, and the fire reached her magazine; the *Suvaroff* was disabled by gun-fire before she was torpedoed. The *Sissoi* and *Navarin*, according to accounts given by survivors, had both been much damaged by gun-fire before the Japanese torpedoed them. Though finally hit by two torpedoes, the *Sissoi* sank from the effects of shell-fire rather than from the injuries caused by the torpedoes. The *Nakhimoff* also suffered very serious injuries from Japanese shells before she was torpedoed. As for the *Vladimir*, it is known that she was seriously damaged before she was finally torpedoed. Thus terrible though the Japanese torpedo attacks were, it is doubtful whether even without them the losses would not have been the same. The most useful purpose which they served was to exhaust the Russian crews and scatter the last remnant of the Russian fleet.

The foundering of so many battleships as the result of gun-fire alone was a surprise to the naval world and a reversal of the apparent teaching of the battle of August 10, 1904. The *Oslabia*, *Borodino*, and *Alexander III.* were all battleships of the latest design, superior in some respects to, though not quite so well protected as, the *Tzarevitch*, which successfully faced the concentrated Japanese fire on August 10. But they all went to the bottom,



RUSSIAN GUN CAPTURED AT NANSHAN USED TO BOMBARD LIAOYANG RAILWAY-STATION.

the *Oslabia* foundering in little more than an hour from the first shot. It is possible that their loss in this rapid manner was due to the fact that they were too heavily laden. In preparation for the voyage to Vladivostock, all their bunkers had been filled with coal, and a quantity of coal is said to have been carried on their decks. There was also a large quantity of stores on board. This extra load not only interfered with their stability, but also brought the level of their armour-belt down closer to the water-line than it should have been. The *Oslabia* had no armour on her bows, so that there was nothing to resist



RUSSIAN ARTILLERY AT SAKHALIN.



RUSSIAN SOLDIERS AT SAKHALIN.

the Japanese projectiles. So far as can be learnt from the evidence which has been given to the world by the Japanese or Russians, there was no example of the thick armour on board any of the ships engaged being pierced. Neither submarines nor mines were employed by the Japanese. The secret of the brilliant Japanese victory is to be found in good strategy, good tactics, and good gunnery. According to Russian witnesses, the Japanese "corrected and organised their fire, firing according to a pre-determined plan, and concentrating the projectiles of all their guns upon a single Russian ship, transferring their attack to another as soon as decisive results had been obtained. Thus it was that they disabled first the *Oslabia*, then the *Suvaroff*, and then the *Alexander III*. Our fire was astonishingly bad and inferior to the Japanese. For seven months our gunners had carried out no battle-firing; this name could not be given to the fleet practice executed on the Madagascar coast, at short range, when only three shots from each ship's 12-in. guns were discharged."



RUSSIAN TROOPS AT SAKHALIN.



LIEUTENANT-GENERAL OSHIMA,
Japanese Divisional Commander.

vensky, and remained inactive in the harbour, waiting the appearance of the Russian fleet. All May 28 and

The Vladivostock Cruisers.

29 intense excitement prevailed at Vladivostock, as it was known that the Russian and Japanese fleets were engaged, and hope ran very high. Late on the 29th a cruiser was seen approaching, and at 6 p.m. she entered the harbour and was received with tumultuous cheers. But when her captain told his story it removed all hope. The *Almaz* had seen four of the best Russian battleships placed *hors de combat*, and had fled when the Japanese torpedo attacks were still in progress. Her arrival brought dismay, not relief, and when the *Grosny* and *Bravy* struggled in, hours later, the terrible truth was understood that the whole Russian fleet had been destroyed.

On the return of the Russian auxiliary cruisers which had not accompanied Rojdestvensky through the Straits of Korea, two further outrages were committed on the British flag. The *Dnieper*, on June 5, seized and sank the British steamer *St. Kilda*, removing her crew and treating them as prisoners of war. They were only surrendered at Port Said on the British armoured cruiser *Lancaster* threatening to remove them by force. The

Finally, the Japanese ships were painted grey, and were almost invisible against the foggy horizon; the Russian ships were painted black, with yellow funnels, and made perfect targets. According to Captain Klado, the whole Russian personnel "had grown up in an atmosphere of self-satisfaction; contempt for the teaching of war and even of science. . . . Admirals and captains had never profoundly studied modern naval war, strategy, or naval tactics."

After the battle a Japanese squadron proceeded to Shanghai for the purpose of securing the internment and disarmament of the Russian vessels there present. This was effected without difficulty. The Russian cruisers at Manila were also interned by the American authorities.

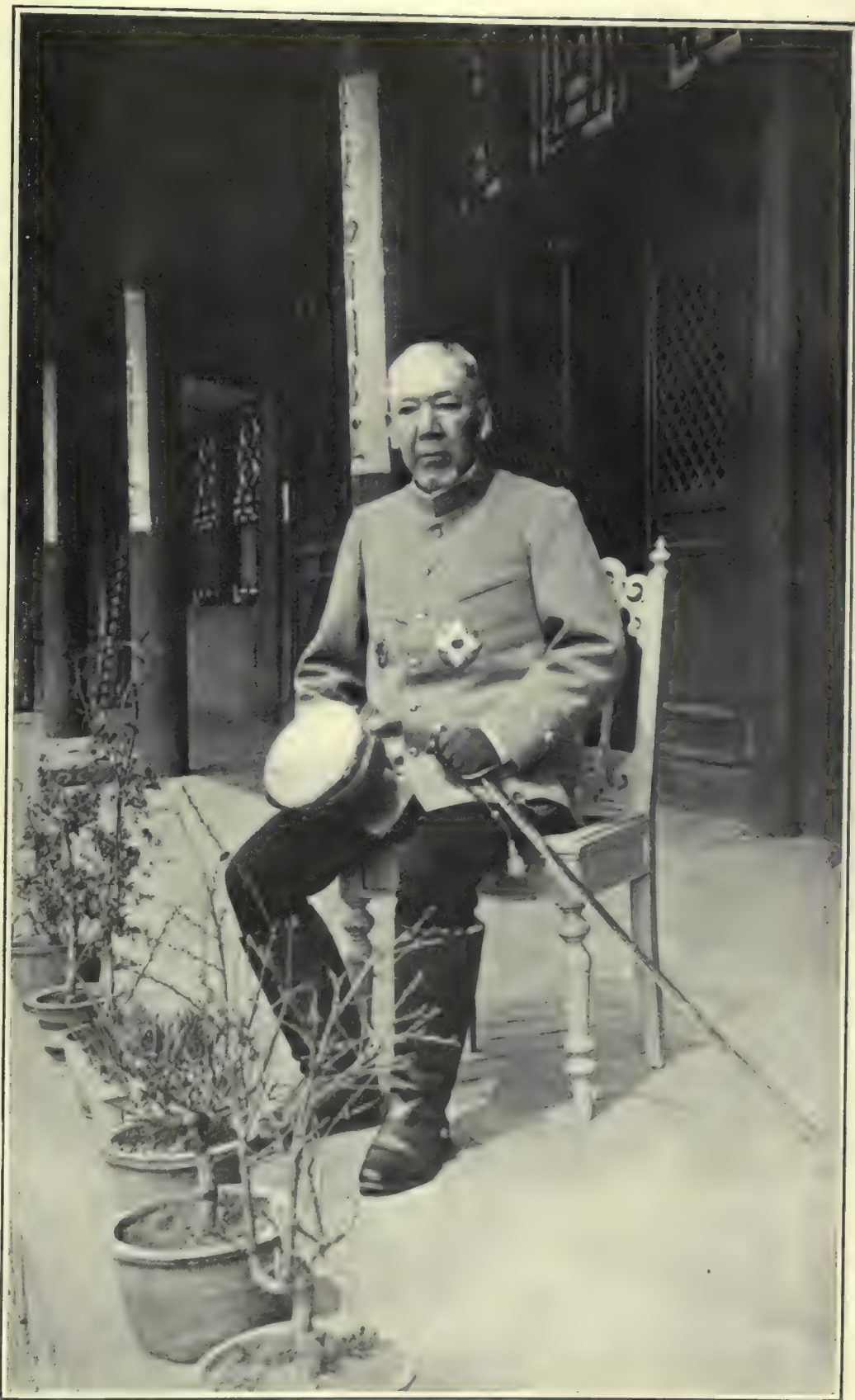
As for the Vladivostock cruisers, they did not attempt to co-operate with Admiral Rojdest-



JAPANESE TROOPS RESTING BY THE WAY.

Terek, about the same date, seized and sank the steamer *Ikhosa*. For these outrages no satisfaction has ever been accorded by the Russian Government. They closed the long and painful series of Russian attacks upon the British flag passively endured.

More fortunate than Nelson, Admiral Togo passed through the battle unharmed, and this though his ship was the target of the Russian fire at the opening of the engagement, when the Russian aim was most accurate. Yet the Admiral had several very narrow escapes. A shell splinter wounded an officer at his side, as in the battle of August 10. As a sign of the coolness of the Japanese seamen, it was noted during the battle that scarcely anyone went to the tubs of drinking water which had been provided, though usually in action great thirst is experienced by the men fighting—a sign of nervous strain. The officers in some of the Japanese ships sent



[Stereograph copyright. Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
FIELD-MARSHAL OYAMA.
Taken after the Battle of Mukden.



SAKHALIN.

down for champagne towards the evening of the 27th to celebrate the defeat of the Russians, and Admiral Shimamura drank his country's health in the conning-tower of the ADZUMA while the guns were still in action, firing at the Russians. The only difficulty was to find glasses, as nearly all had been shattered by the violent concussion of the battle. Many of the Japanese officers commanding turrets refused to shelter inside during the battle and stood outside, so as to gain a better view of the enemy.

CHAPTER LXIV.

CONCLUSION OF THE WAR IN MANCHURIA.

CONQUEST OF SAKHALIN.

THE news of the defeat of the Russian army at Mukden was received with consternation by the military authorities at St. Petersburg. While the battle was still raging a Council of War was held under the presidency of General Dragomiroff, at

which the deposition of General Kuropatkin from the supreme command was virtually decided, and the determination was hurriedly reached to send another 400,000 men to Manchuria. The appointment

After Mukden.

of the Grand Duke Nicholas Nicolaievitch as General Kuropatkin's successor was considered. On March 13 the War Council gave orders for the mobilisation of three divisions of Grenadiers and two fresh Army Corps, as General Kuropatkin complained that his defeats had been due to the insufficiency of his force, and added that it was hopeless to dream of success unless overwhelming numbers were concentrated in Manchuria. But how to obtain these overwhelming numbers was the problem.

It was by this time well known to the Russian Staff that the German estimates, which placed Japan's available army at less than 500,000 men, were fantastic and utterly wrong; indeed, warning reached St. Petersburg from the Far East that Japan was



THE "VAROSLAVI" LEAVING YOKOHAMA WITH THE FIRST INSTALMENT OF RUSSIAN PRISONERS AFTER PEACE.



MUTINEERS FROM THE RUSSIAN BATTLESHIP "KNAZ POTEMKIN" BREAKFASTING IN A ROUMANIAN HOTEL.

A correspondent in Braila, Roumania, writes: "I beg to send you the accompanying photograph of sailors of the revolted Russian battleship 'Kniaz Potemkin.' As is known, this vessel, under the command of the mutineers, was recently forced, for want of coal and provisions, to surrender to the Roumanian Government, which received the sailors as deserters and as such not liable for extradition. Already several local authorities have provided situations for many of them, and the others are being assisted in obtaining situations elsewhere in the country. Here in Braila there are twenty-five of them staying in this hotel while looking for employment. The photograph I send you represents some of them at breakfast. They have by no means the appearance of violent and desperate characters, but of simple, quiet, and well-behaved men. The story they tell is as follows: 'Complaints from them that the meat supplied to them was putrid and contained maggots remaining unheeded, they ceased to eat it. The captain called them together and treated this as a breach of discipline. Some of the men he asked individually whether they would or would not eat the maggoty meat. These from fear declared that they would, until one more bold than the rest was asked and declared that he would not. Whereupon the captain took a rifle and shot him dead. The result was revolt and mutiny of the men, who overcame the officers and took command of the ship.'



RUSSIAN PRISONERS EMBARKING ON THE VOLUNTEER STEAMER "VAROVLAVI" AT YOKOHAMA.

been suspended. Twenty-four military trains were running daily, but even that number was inadequate to move to the front the host of men which the Russian War Office proposed to send. The train service could not be indefinitely increased without doubling the line, which would have required the expenditure of millions of money, and added to the congested traffic further trains carrying rails, sleepers, and food for the workers employed on the railway.

Thus the practical difficulties of the Russian Government were very great indeed. By the use of steamer transport along the rivers the pressure upon the Siberian railway might be in some degree diminished, but the rivers would not be navigable till the break-up and melting of the ice a month later. The sea route was available for the despatch of ammunition and supplies to Vladivostock, so long as the Japanese navy did not close the avenues of approach through the Tsugaru and Soya Straits, and enormous shipments were made during March and the succeeding months to the last Russian naval base remaining in the Far East. But the problem remained insoluble. Under no conditions could Russia hope to accumulate an army large enough to hold its own against the Japanese. Had General Kuropatkin known the truth or told it, he must have informed his Government that at Liaoyang, the Shaho, and Heikoutai his armies had been superior in number to the Japanese, and yet, notwithstanding their superiority, had been compelled to accept defeat. Meantime, the Japanese advance northwards was somewhat delayed by the destruction of the great railway bridges across the rivers. As the Russian army retired, all the bridges were wrecked, the rails torn up, all stores burnt, and as much damage done as possible. Thus the vigour of the Japanese pursuit was checked, a fact which probably alone saved the Russian army from total destruction.

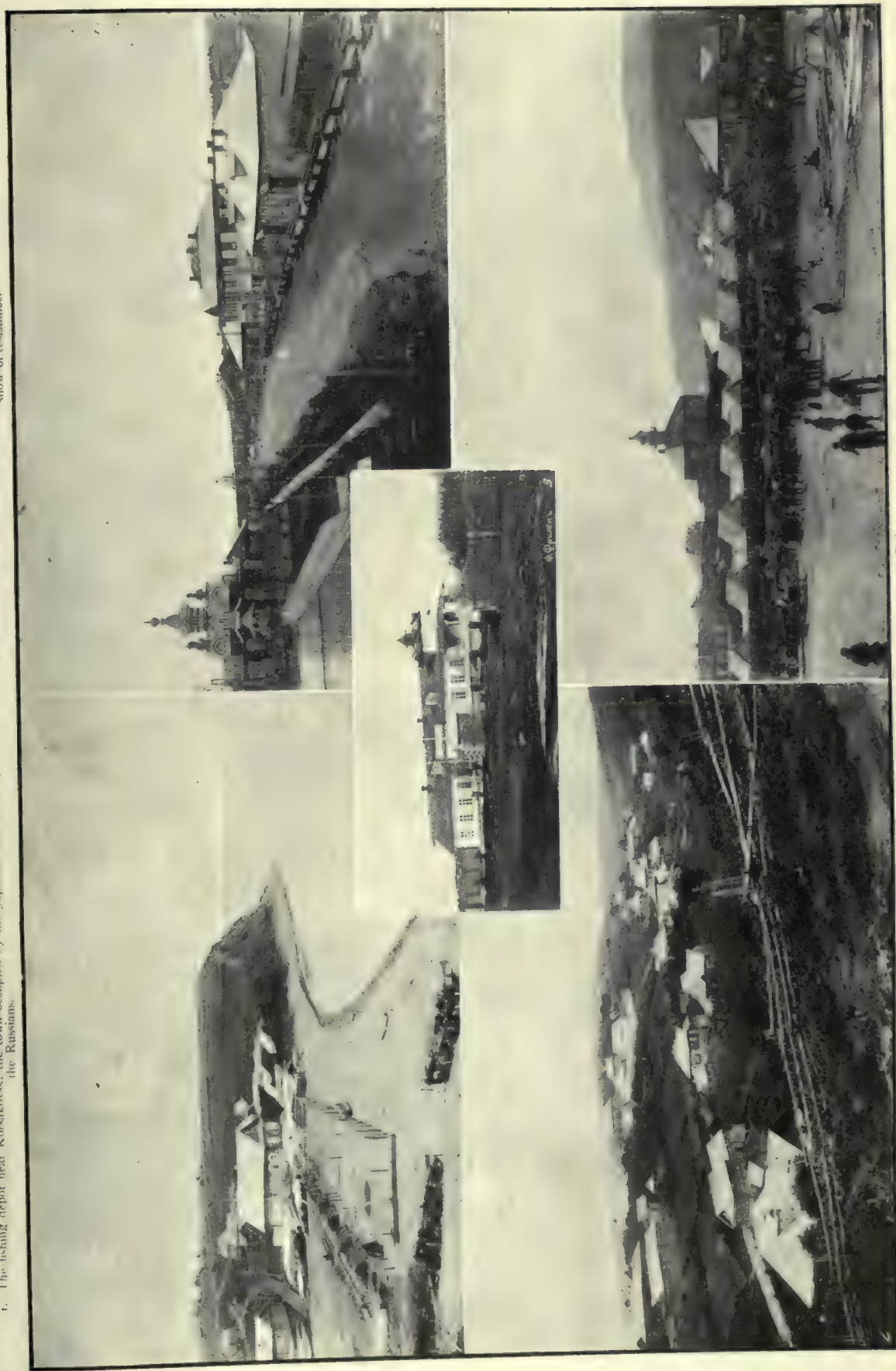
preparing to place a million men in the field, and that the strength of her forces was growing every day. The Siberian railway, though it had been admirably managed by Prince Khilkoff, was incapable of transporting to the Far East an unlimited force. Already the whole stretch of line from Samara to Zlatoust was blocked with loaded vans and trucks, and the passage of trains westward-bound returning from Manchuria had



RUSSIAN COLONEL IN COMMAND OF RETURNING PRISONERS AT YOKOHAMA WHARF.

1. The fishing depot near Korsakov, the town occupied by the Japanese and burnt by the Russians.

2. The main street in Alexandrovsk, or Dui, one of the only two places in Sakhalin that could offer a show of resistance.



3. The Governor's house, Alexandrovsk, or Dui.
4. A general view of Korsakov, burnt by the Russians and captured by the Japanese.
5. The Murders Market Place, Sakhalin, situated in a district containing numerous houses at which stolen goods are received.

SCENES IN THE CONVICT ISLAND OF SAKHALIN.



THE RUSSIAN VOLUNTEER STEAMER "YAROSLAVI" AT YOKOHAMA WHARF WAITING TO TAKE THE RUSSIAN PRISONERS HOME.

The first Russian vessel to visit Japan after the war.

On March 17 the announcement was published that **Kuropatkin Superseded.** General Kuropatkin had been superseded. The Grand Dukes who from the first had been bitterly hostile to him had at last succeeded in wresting from the Czar his humiliation. They objected to his persistent retreats, not understanding that if he had held his ground at Liaoyang and Mukden his army would probably have met

the fate which overtook the French armies under Marshal Bazaine at Metz and under Marshal Macmahon at Sedan. General Linievitch, who had commanded the 1st Manchurian Army, was appointed as his successor. But on General Kuropatkin expressing his desire to serve his country at the front, even in a subordinate position, he was appointed to the post which General Linievitch had held prior to the change in command. Thus the two Russian generals exchanged positions.

General Linievitch was a brave and determined veteran of little education, admirable as a divisional or corps commander, but without the organising power needed to direct an enormous army. He had shown great lack of foresight on the outbreak of war. Asking a foreign friend, who knew something of the Japanese, how long the war would last and how many men Russia would need to beat Japan, he received the answer, "Three years and half a million men," which was certainly far below the truth. With peals of laughter, he replied that when he had 300,000 men he would crush the Japanese flat, "flat as the Liao plain." And now he found himself compelled to retreat before this despised enemy, though he had a total force at his disposal probably much exceeding 400,000 men, even when allowance had been made for the Russian losses. He was unable to hold the enormously strong fortifications of Tiehling and was filled with fear for the safety of Vladivostock itself, which might at any

moment be attacked by the Japanese as Port Arthur had been. Though General Linievitch was not severely tried by events, as he never had to fight a great battle, all the indications point to the probability that he would have done no better than General Kuropatkin. What hampered the Russian army was the state of indiscipline prevalent, the disobedience of junior officers and of generals, and the

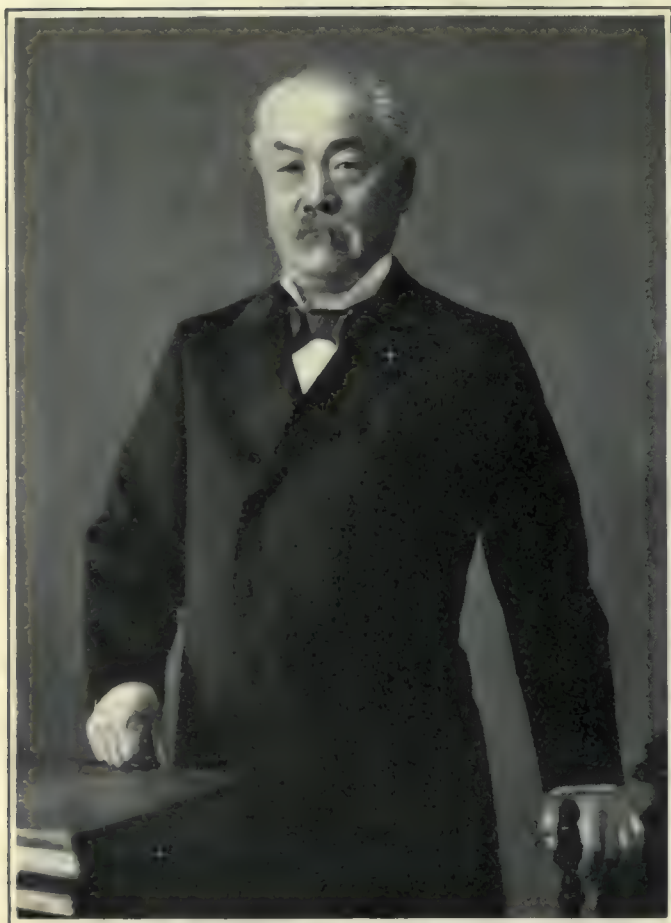


RUSSIAN PRISONERS RETURNING FROM YOKOHAMA.



AN INTERRUPTED TEA-PARTY—BAD NEWS FROM THE FRONT.

The scene here shown is the garden of a temple in Manchuria. Seated round the table is a group of Russian officers enjoying an al fresco tea. All their gaiety is suddenly quenched by the arrival of a message from the front telling of another reverse to Russian arms.



COUNT MATSUKATA,
Ex-Prime Minister of Japan.

want of a really efficient Staff. Thousands of officers had deserted their units and calmly retired to the rear, where they did what they liked. Lists of absentees were, indeed, posted up at certain railway-stations on the line, with notices requesting the absentees to return to their duty. But no one paid any attention to this mild command, and obedience was not rigorously enforced by punishment.

The rank-and-file of the army were infected with the indiscipline of the officers. The

Russian Lack of Discipline.

common soldier did not see why he should be sacrificed when his leaders stayed at the rear. Mutiny began to show itself, and the morale of the force suffered seriously. It is said that there were numerous executions in the army, though this does not agree with the gentle manner in which the officers were treated; and the revolutionists, who were both numerous and active, began to push their propaganda with renewed energy. Great though the recuperative power of the Russian soldier was, the prospects before the Russian commander-in-chief were by no means brilliant. His hope was that the Japanese would not advance rapidly and would give Russia time to recover from the staggering blow.

The Japanese, however, moved with great expedition. On March 19 they occupied Kaiyuan, 45 miles north of Mukden on the railway, a really wonderful performance in view of the fact that the thaw was setting in, that travelling was bad, the roads degenerating into quagmires, and the railway unavailable, as repairs had not yet been completed. Moreover, while the

Japanese 58 Miles North of Mukden.

Russians were retiring upon their supplies and consuming all the food in the territory through which they passed, the Japanese were advancing away from their reserve depots and marching through villages which had already been sucked dry. On March 21 the head of the Japanese army reached Changtu, an important Manchurian city 58 miles north of Mukden. Here the pursuit of the beaten army ended, and active operations had for the time to be suspended till the country dried after the thaw and the railway was repaired. The Russian headquarters were established at Kuntuling,



RUSSIAN PRISONERS ON THE EVE OF RELEASE.

120 miles north-east of Mukden and a little to the south of the point at which the branch line to Kirin diverges from the main Siberian Railway.

Upon Kirin a large part of the Russian army had retired after Mukden, finding the direct route north threatened by the Japanese. The Russian forces from the Singking and Hwaiyen districts had fallen back



RETURNING THANKS FOR PEACE IN ST. PETERSBURG.

through the mountainous country north-east of Mukden towards Hailungcheng, slowly, contesting every inch of the way. There was general fear of a Japanese turning movement by way of Kirin, cutting the Russian army off from Vladivostock. Correspondents present with the Russian headquarters described the situation in the most pessimistic terms. They expected to see the Japanese at Harbin in April, and declared that unless 200,000 fresh troops were at once despatched to General Linievitch, he might have to withdraw altogether from Manchuria. General Kawamura was believed to be marching direct upon Kirin.

At the end of March the Russian War Office prepared fresh plans for the summer campaign—plans destined never to be carried out and possibly only intended to impose upon the Japanese. The Grand Duke

Russian Fresh Plans. Nicholas was to take the supreme command, and under him there were to be four armies in two groups, one commanded by General Linievitch and the other by General Kuropatkin. Kuropatkin's army would operate in the Sungari valley, while Linievitch held the railway. A total of 600,000 Russian troops was to take the field. On second thoughts yet a fresh plan was evolved—the very multiplicity of these plans indicates the embarrassment at Russian headquarters. In view of the spread of the revolutionary movement in Russia, under this new plan no very large force was to be mobilised and sent East, but General Linievitch was to adopt Fabian tactics, retiring before the enemy when the Japanese advanced in force, devastating the country, and merely attempting to delay their advance and wear them out. The Russian difficulty of obtaining money was already becoming serious. Foreign loans could no longer be floated, and internal loans were not much more successful. Russia was fast approaching the stage of utter exhaustion. But still the Russian Government blundered on and refused to acknowledge defeat.

Early in April the Japanese outposts were some 20 miles north of Changtu on the railway. Both armies had now been greatly reinforced, for Russian troops were arriving at the rate of from 1,000 to 2,000 a day, and fresh units and reserves to fill the gaps were constantly leaving Japan and reaching the Japanese front. Daily skirmishes between the outposts occurred. Meantime, the Japanese were beginning to push forward in Korea. Hitherto the extreme north-eastern corner of that country had been in the hands of a Russian force, which had been left alone as it could achieve nothing of importance. But now, in view of an attack on Vladivostock, it was necessary for the Japanese to eject the Russians from Korea and to force the passage of the River Tumen. Two divisions, forming a new army—the 6th—under the orders of General Hasegawa, advanced slowly along the coast from Songchin and in April were near Kilju. This army formed the extreme right of the Japanese front, and was intended to link up with General Kawamura's force in the mountains to the west. It not only menaced Vladivostock but also Kirin, towards which city a difficult pass leads through lofty mountains from the valley of the lower Tumen.

At the close of April the Japanese had repaired the Mukden railway-bridge and had nearly completed the repair of the other bridges broken down by the Russians. They had established a complete administration in Southern Manchuria, replacing with civilian governors the military governors and prefects who had taken over the control of the country after its conquest by the Japanese army. Under their control the revenues were already rapidly expanding and trade growing by leaps and bounds. Thousands of Japanese settlers entered Manchuria from Japan, intending to make the country their permanent home.

The resumption of active operations after the thaw was prevented by the spring rains, which were heavier and more persistent than usual, and rendered the movement of troops and stores along the roads

exceedingly difficult. In May the Russian army was strengthened by the arrival of
Fresh Troops. the 4th Corps from Europe, which, however, was composed mainly of recruits and indifferently trained material, so that it did not add greatly to the fighting power of General Linievitch's command. About the same date 80,000 fresh troops joined the Japanese armies, bringing their forces in Manchuria up to about 550,000 men. In view of the approach of the Baltic fleet, the Japanese were busy accumulating vast supplies and reserves of every kind of store and ammunition, as the authorities at Tokio had to face the grave possibility of seeing the communications between Japan and Manchuria interrupted for weeks, and perhaps for months. Thus the Baltic fleet exercised a certain influence on the land campaign, leading the Japanese to adopt a cautious and waiting policy, when but for the fleet they might have struck boldly. It is also probable that the approach of Admiral Rojdestvensky was the real reason why

May 19, 1905.

MISTCHENKO'S RAID.

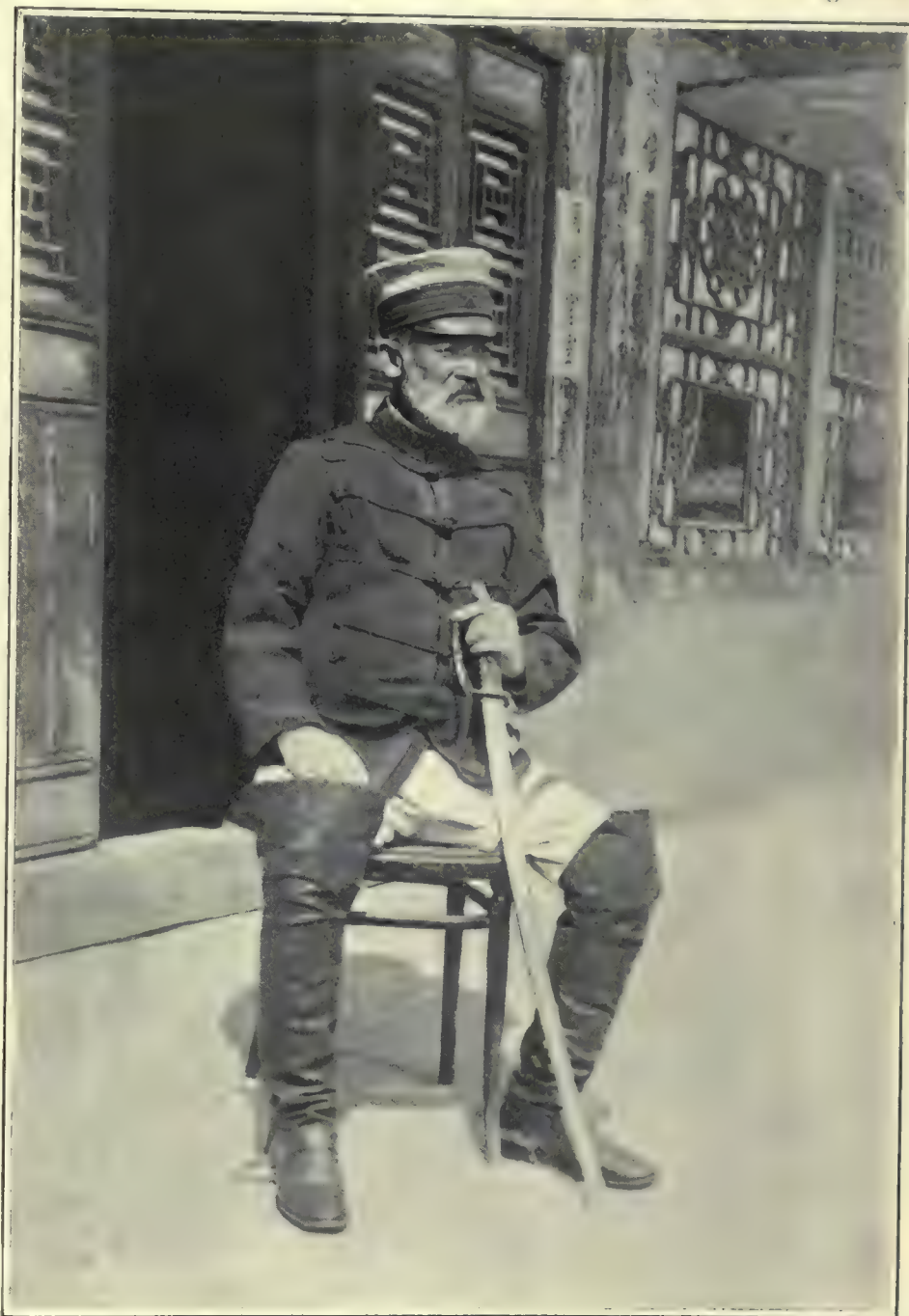
1407

Vladivostock was not attacked. If the Russian fleet were destroyed or defeated, there was no reason for losing life in desperate assaults upon the Russian naval base; while, if it defeated the Japanese navy, or even held its own, the position of a besieging army must become exceedingly precarious.

In mid-May the Cossacks, who had hitherto achieved nothing with the exception of the insignificant and unimportant raid towards Newchwang on the eve of Heikoutai, were ordered to move south, making a wide detour, and attack the Japanese depots near Fakumen. Under the orders of General Mistchenko they reached a point south of Fakumen on May 19, without apparently effecting anything of greater military importance than the capture of a cash-box, containing £375. from the Japanese. They found themselves in a very perilous position, faced in front by a strong force of Japanese infantry, and threatened to the rear by other bodies of Japanese. The Russians on this occasion moved through neutral or Chinese territory, but their violation of neutrality was of little service. They had difficulty in effecting a safe retreat through the Japanese lines. If the real object was to ascertain the whereabouts of the Japanese left, this expedition was as completely unsuccessful as the preceding one which had failed to reveal General Nogi's position.

At the same time it was announced from St. Petersburg that the Russian armies found it necessary to operate in Mongolia, which was nominally Chinese, but this intimation was received with comparative indifference in Japan, as Japan lost nothing by an extension of the area of operations.

The destruction of the Baltic fleet relieved the Japanese of all anxiety as to their position in Manchuria. But once again, when they were preparing to resume the offensive on a great scale, the weather came to the assistance of the Russians and again rendered the country impassable. If the



[Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
GENERAL NOGI—THE CAPTOR OF PORT ARTHUR.

rain, however, hampered operations in Manchuria, it added to the great volume of water in the Siberian rivers, and now that the Russian navy had ceased to exist, opened up a fresh line of advance to the

The Amur.

Japanese. Hitherto they had moved against the Russians from the south; now the great River Amur offered them a line of operation from the north-east. Flowing into the Straits of Tartary, opposite the northern end of the Island of Sakhalin and 800 miles to the north of Vladivostock, it is navigable with ease when the stream is full for more than a thousand miles. There was nothing to prevent Japanese gunboats ascending the river and directing raids against the Russian

communications. The Russian army was therefore compelled to station detachments along the river to guard against this peril.

Probably the Japanese contemplated such an attack seriously, as

their fleet, after under-

going repairs, appeared at various points in the Sea of Okhotsk and the Gulf of Tartary. The first step towards an attack by way of the Amur was to obtain control of the Island of Sakhalin. The conquest of that island had been one of the objects upon which from the beginning of hostilities the Japanese people had fixed its attention. The 8th Division had been told off for this purpose before the Battle of the Shaho, but for various reasons, of which the principal one was that owing to the prolonged resistance of Port Arthur its presence had been needed in Manchuria, it had been finally despatched to Marshal Oyama. In the spring of 1905 fresh preparations were made for the attack on Sakhalin, which were suspended when it became certain that the Baltic fleet really meant fighting and



[Photo, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

FILLING GREAT SHELLS WITH POWDER IN THE SIEGE LINE—PORT ARTHUR.

was coming east. With this large fleet in the field, it was obviously dangerous to risk detaching ships for the capture of an island which had but little military importance, and which would drop into the mouths of the Japanese like an over-ripe fruit when once they had secured the undisputed command of the sea.

Sakhalin lies to the north of Hokkaido, the most northerly island in the Japanese Archipelago proper, and had at one time formed part of the Japanese Empire. Its area of 29,336 square miles is about the same as that of Ireland; its Russian population numbered 30,000. It had been used by the Russian Government as a penal settlement, to which abandoned criminals were sent from Russia. Its climate is raw, cold, and inhospitable, and it lies in seas which are subject to constant fogs. But its forests and its coal mines, which in Russian hands were but imperfectly exploited, rendered it of considerable value, while

a glance at the map will show its strategical importance as masking Vladivostock and the Russian ports on the Amur. It had not been attacked by the Japanese forces earlier in the war, as Japan did not wish to risk any diversion of her strength from the main objectives until she was certain of victory on land and at sea. But after the two decisive battles of Mukden and the Japan Sea, there was no longer any danger of



[Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
A FASHIONABLE RESTAURANT INSIDE PORT ARTHUR DURING THE SIEGE.
Showing the damage done by a Japanese shell.

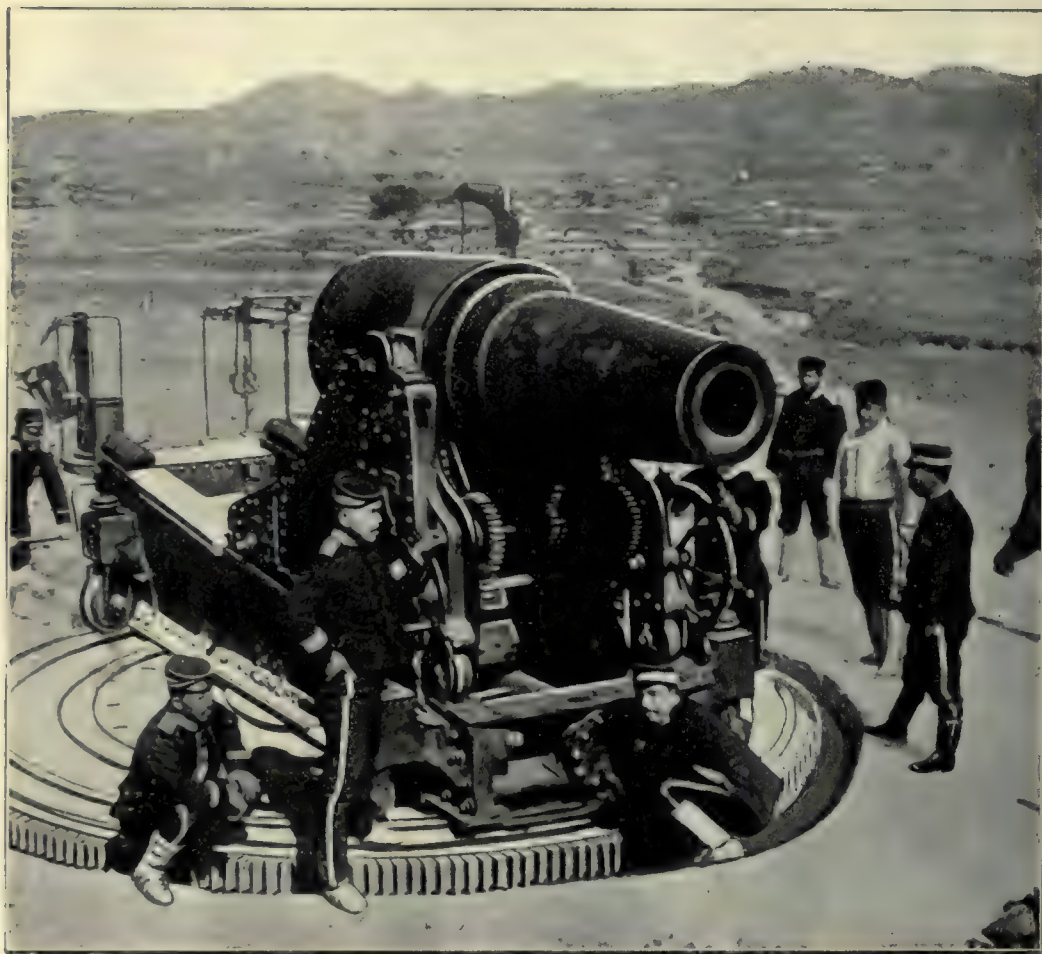
incurring loss in more important directions, while the island lay entirely at the mercy of the combined Japanese forces.

In the early years of the 19th century the Russians had attacked the Japanese settlements in Sakhalin without any great success. In the second decade of the century Russian settlers were despatched to the island and instructed to seize the northern part of it. By 1846 the north of Sakhalin had virtually become a Russian province, but not until 1859 was it formally annexed to the Russian Empire, in the teeth of protests from Japan. In those days the Japanese Government was too weak to meet force with force. Japan could only resort to diplomacy, but the Embassy which she sent to St. Petersburg in 1862 was dismissed by Russia with contempt, and a second mission in 1867 could only obtain from the Russian Government the promise to share the island with Japan. Even

The Struggle for Sakhalin.

this promise was not honourably observed. In 1875, under military and naval pressure from Russia, Japan was compelled to surrender the southern half of the island in return for the Kurile Archipelago. As Japan was the real owner of the Kuriles, as that group had never by right belonged to Russia, this was practically adding insult to injury. It was the action of Russia with regard to Sakhalin that first awakened Japanese alarm and aroused the feeling which finally brought upon Russia the terrible chastisement of 1904-5. Knowing her weakness, Japan could only wait a propitious moment for recovering what had been wrested from her by guile and violence. The moment came in 1905, just thirty years after the loss of her province.

After the complete defeat of Admiral Rojdestvensky's Armada, all observers expected an immediate



[Photo, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York
HUGE SIEGE-GUN BEFORE PORT ARTHUR.

expedition against Sakhalin. It was known that the island was poorly garrisoned, as the total strength of the Russian forces, under the command of the Governor, General Lipunoff, did not exceed 7,000 men. There were, in addition, a certain number of armed convicts, who could not be trusted. On June 24 a large fleet of warships, under the command of Admirals Kataoka and Dewa, with numerous transports anchored at Yokohama. At the same time one of the newly-raised

divisions, commanded by General Haraguchi, marched into the great Japanese port and embarked on board the transports with the usual Japanese order, celerity, and secresy. The combined force proceeded from Yokohama to Aomori, in the north of Japan, and for several days nothing more was heard of it. Secresy was important, as there still remained at Vladivostock the Russian warships *Gromovoi*, *Rossia*, *Bogatyr*, which had now been repaired, and *Almaz*, with numerous torpedo-boats. A raid on their part was always possible, though since their grievous defeat by Kamimura in August, 1904, the Russians in this direction had shown no energy or activity.

On July 7 the Russian look-outs at Korsakoff, a town at the southern end of Sakhalin, reported the appearance of nine large Japanese warships, three gunboats, and a number of destroyers and torpedo craft. The smaller Japanese vessels examined an anchorage and landing-place 12 miles distant from the town, dragging carefully for mines, with which it was supposed that the waters off Korsakoff had been sown. But, possibly because the Baltic fleet had intended to use the port as a base, no mines were found. The Japanese warships reported the coast clear, and the transports steamed into the bay. A strong force of

July 7, 1905.

RUSSIANS SURPRISED AT KORSAKOFF.

1411

Japanese seamen was landed to take up a covering position while the troops went ashore, and the disembarkation began. The Russians had never anticipated a Japanese landing at this point, and had made all their preparations in other directions. There were no fortifications, and no sufficient force could be concentrated to offer any resistance to the landing.

While the troops were being rapidly transferred from the ships to the land, the smaller warships steamed in towards the town of Korsakoff. Here the Russians had constructed a battery and armed it with four of the guns taken from the wreck of the *Novik*, the cruiser destroyed by the Japanese in the bay in 1904. These guns opened fire on the destroyers, but with little effect. The Japanese vessels replied with their small guns; the larger vessels also directed a vigorous fire upon the Russian works, and succeeded in silencing them without the loss of a single man. The Japanese troops were already marching towards the town, and the Russian garrison, despairing of successful resistance, set fire to the place and evacuated it. On the 8th it was occupied by the Japanese.



(From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

WRECK OF A RUSSIAN CHURCH INSIDE PORT ARTHUR DURING THE SIEGE

who also took possession of the lighthouse on the Soya Strait and captured the four heavy guns from the *Norik*.

The presence of the Japanese warships with their powerful batteries rendered it hopeless for the Russians to fight near the coast. They fell back some distance from Korsakoff to a prepared position near Soloitka, which lies about seven miles north of Korsakoff. But here they were in a very unpleasant predicament. They could only retreat northwards by a single road which ran along the eastern coast of Sakhalin, everywhere close to the sea. The small Japanese warships and gunboats, after the capture of Korsakoff, had steamed round to the east coast and taken up positions where their fire swept the road. The Russians were therefore isolated and without any line of communication. They could not make their way through the dense tangled forest which covers the southern half of Sakhalin, because there were no tracks, no villages, and no means of subsistence. That they could long withstand the Japanese troops was not probable, as the force disembarked was far stronger than the weak Russian detachments which had been assigned the duty of defending Korsakoff. The peculiar difficulty experienced by a Power which has not the command of the sea in defending an island against the attacks of an army and a navy possessing that command, is admirably illustrated by these operations in Sakhalin.

The Japanese attacked the Russian position at Soloitka on July 8, carried it without any serious difficulty, and forced the Russian troops back into the forest country 25 miles north of Korsakoff, where

Soloitka Carried. another position had been prepared for defence, armed with six 4.7-in. guns, six 3-pounders, and a number of machine-guns. The total Russian strength was about 1,500 men of all arms. On July 11 the Japanese attacked and drove in the Russian outposts and assaulted the Russian works. No success was gained during the day, but at dawn of the 12th a determined charge of the Japanese infantry stormed the position and sent the Russian infantry flying through the forest, abandoning five guns, and leaving 160 dead on the field. One party of Russians retired north along the east coast, only to find that the Japanese warships were in a position to prevent its retreat; the other party fled to the west coast and seems to have dispersed. A few days later Colonel Alexeieff, the commandant of Korsakoff, made his formal surrender to the Japanese with 250 of his men, bringing up the total of prisoners captured in these operations to 461 officers and men. With his surrender all organised resistance to the Japanese invasion in the south of the island collapsed, though a few unimportant posts, garrisoned by Russian troops, still remained. The troops holding these points were eventually compelled to surrender by want of food and supplies.

While this Japanese expedition was taking possession of southern Sakhalin, a second expedition had moved against the northern portion of the island, and Alexandrovsk, its chief town, which lies on the shore of the Gulf of Tartary, and is connected by a submarine cable with another town of the same name on the Siberian coast. This expedition appears to have sailed from Sapporo, a port in the Japanese island of Hokkaido; it appeared off Alexandrovsk about June 23, when the smaller Japanese warships at once carried out a search for mines. None were found, and the disembarkation began at three points 20 miles apart, two to the north of Alexandrovsk, and the third at Alexandrovsk itself. A brigade of troops was landed with extraordinary rapidity, about 8,000 men disembarking in one hour, to such a pitch of perfection had the Japanese carried their arrangements. The Russians, in the face of the heavy guns mounted on board the warships and the large force disembarked, could offer no effective resistance. They were more than 2,000 strong and had thrown up entrenchments in which four guns were mounted, but they were compelled to retire, and this without inflicting a single casualty upon the Japanese. Alexandrovsk was occupied without any difficulty, and 40,000 tons of coal with the material for a light railway were captured at the little port of Dui, close to Alexandrovsk. On July 25 the Russians, who still retained a strong position near Alexandrovsk, were attacked and expelled from the neighbourhood. The garrison of Dui was also attacked and defeated on the 25th, when 200 Russian prisoners were taken. It had been the intention of the Russians to burn both Dui and Alexandrovsk, but the Japanese were too quick for them, and secured both places intact.

The Japanese moved with amazing speed in pursuit of the beaten Russians and gave them little time to recover. They marched swiftly upon Rykovsk, in the interior of the island, some 40 miles from



A BUN FOR THE LIFE-THINKERS ATTACKING AN OFFER IN THE COUNTRIES OF THE DEERHOUND



CAPTURED RUSSIAN GUNS.

Alexandrovsk. This was the last point at which the Russians could make a stand; here the roads terminated, and eastwards lay desolate highlands or wild forest country. Some 4,000 Russian troops, under

Russian Surrenders. General Lipunoff, took up their position at Rykovsk, and the attack upon them began

on the 27th. They had eight field-guns and four machine-guns, and included in their strength was a battalion which had been detached by General Linievitch for the defence of the island, sent down the Amur, and transported to Sakhalin in small steamers. A Japanese cavalry force, on the 26th, rode into Rykovsk, but, on the Russians offering a vigorous resistance, it was compelled to retire. On the 27th, however, the Japanese directed an enveloping attack against the town and fought their way into the outskirts of it early in the morning, cutting off a Russian detachment of 800 men, which attempted to escape south through the forest country, but was surrounded by the Japanese. After 200 Russians had been shot down, 500 surrendered. The other hundred scattered in the woods. The rest of the Russian force had retired south in advance of this unlucky detachment. It was hotly pursued and overtaken by



JAPANESE TROOPS IN REVIEW ORDER AT PORT ARTHUR.

July 30, 1905.

LIPUNOFF SURRENDERS.

1415

the Japanese, who fell upon the Russians, captured two field-guns and much ammunition, and drove them to the forest country. Here there was nothing left but surrender. The sufferings of the Russian wounded were great, and little or nothing could be done for them by the Russian Governor. On July 30 a Russian officer, with a white flag, rode into the Japanese lines with a despatch from General Lipunoff requesting a cessation of the fighting "for humanity's sake," as he was unable to attend to his wounded. The Japanese commander replied by demanding the surrender of all Government property and war material



[Stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
A RUSSIAN ENTANGLEMENT FORMING PART OF THE CIRCLE OF FORTIFICATIONS ROUND PORT ARTHUR.

intact and the transfer to the Japanese of the Russian archives. If these demands were complied with, fighting should stop forthwith; if not, it should recommence on the 31st.

There was no course open to the Russians but acceptance of the Japanese terms. On the 31st a Russian emissary informed the Japanese that the Russian forces were ready to surrender, and a few hours later General Lipunoff, with 70 officers and 3,200 rank and file, became Japanese prisoners. With this surrender the war in Sakhalin ended. No other Russian detachments of any military importance remained, and the island became for a time a Japanese province.

The Japanese navy, during the operations in Northern Sakhalin, had entered Castries Bay, on which stands the Siberian Alexandrovsk, on July 24. A detachment of seamen was landed at the lighthouse at the entrance to the bay and occupied it. Proceeding towards the Siberian Alexandrovsk, the squadron was fired on by a battery of four guns near the town. The fire was returned with great effect, and conflagrations were seen in the town itself, whether due to the action of the Russians in setting fire to the place or to the Japanese projectiles is uncertain. The Japanese appear to have temporarily occupied the town. The next step taken by the Japanese navy was to assert its command of the Sea of Okhotsk, to the north of Sakhalin, and to secure the important points on the coast-line. Japanese warships seized the Russian transports *Australia* (at Petropavlovsk on August 13) and *Montara* (off the western coast of Kamschatka on August 16), and about the same date effected landings at the small ports of Okhotsk and Ayan. A close blockade of the mouth of the River Amur, up which a considerable quantity of supplies and ammunition had been transported to Vladivostock, was established. Between the Amur and Vladivostock the Russian coast was kept under constant surveillance, and, to hinder traffic in contraband, the Japanese seized the lighthouse on Cape Nicholas, which lies some distance to the south of Castries Bay. All these movements foreshadowed a landing in the Amur region, but for unknown reasons that landing was postponed and was never accomplished.

Towards the middle of June the Japanese armies in Manchuria once more began to advance, but slowly, as they were impeded by the state of the roads. The rains continued, embarrassing both armies;

Advance in Manchuria.

indeed, the weather of 1905 in Manchuria was exceptionally wet, a fact which again and again saved the Russians from severe defeat, as after each period of heavy rain extensive movements of troops had to be suspended. The Russians employed their respite in constructing immense field-works about Kuntuling, which place began to wear the appearance of a fortress. The Japanese, with equal thoroughness, constructed fortified lines at Changtu and Kaiyuan. On July 25 a report made by General Linievitch to the Russian Emperor was published, probably with the object of abating the Japanese terms of peace. The general said, or was made to say, that "our army has never been in a dangerous position. Our flanks have never been turned. . . . Although the Japanese have attempted several times to approach nearer to us, their attempts have met with no success. I report to your Majesty that the bearing of the troops inspires me with complete confidence."

Early in August the Japanese 6th Army in Korea reached the southern bank of the Tumen, where a considerable Russian force had concentrated to dispute the passage of the river. Slowly the Russians had been driven back and compelled to evacuate all the north-eastern portion of the Hermit Kingdom. Preparations were made for a great battle to clear the way into Russian territory, but the conclusion of peace prevented the battle from being fought.

The last month of the war in Manchuria was a month of inaction. The Japanese had to wait for the country to dry after the abnormal rains, which only ceased early in August. The Liao valley, even in mid-August, was still an immense swamp, in which military operations were out of the question. And though all was ready for a final advance against the Russians, though the Japanese armies were in an excellent position to win a decisive victory and the Japanese Staff was absolutely confident of success, peace was concluded before Marshal Oyama could measure himself against General Linievitch. At the moment of peace the Japanese front had reached a point on the railway a little south of Kuntuling, while Japanese armies were nearing Kirin and threatening the Russian right from Mongolia. The Japanese strength at the end of August was estimated by a correspondent present with the headquarters at about 750,000 men, while the Russians are believed to have had some 450,000 men in the field. Probably the



AN IMPROMPTU CONCERT BY JAPANESE PRISONERS AT MEDVIED.

Photo by S. Smirnov.

Japanese figure includes the armies in Sakhalin and Korea as well as those in Manchuria, but, even so, it gives remarkable evidence of organising power.

CHAPTER LXV.

THE PEACE NEGOTIATIONS AND THE TREATY OF PORTSMOUTH.

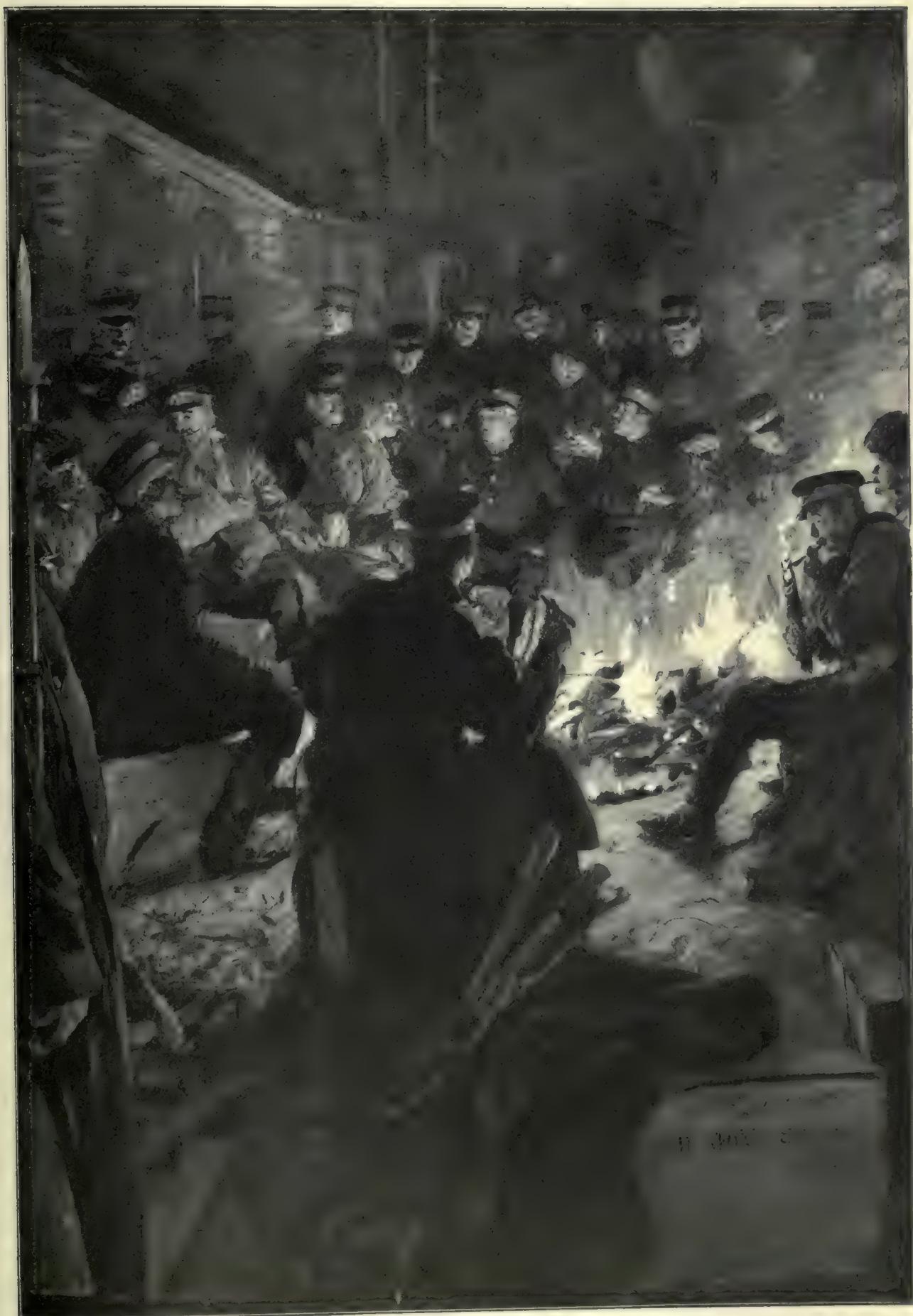
AFTER the Battle of the Japan Sea it became obvious to all impartial observers that Russia's position in the Far East was hopeless. Without a fleet, whatever the strength of her army in Manchuria, she could never hope to recapture Port Arthur or to invade Korea with success. Nor had she any reasonable prospect of defeating the Japanese armies in Northern Manchuria. From the opening of the war seven great battles had been fought on land, the Yalu, Nanshan, Telisse, Liaoyang, the Shaho, Heikoutai, and Mukden, in all of which the Russians had been beaten, though in at least two of these battles, and possibly in three of them, they had the numerical advantage. The prolongation of the war could only have one result—to exhaust completely both the combatants and to give the Japanese the entire possession of the boundless resources of Manchuria. It was possibly the fear of this last contingency that led the American Government in June, 1905, to tender its good offices. After the Battle of Mukden there had been vague reports that President Roosevelt was ready to mediate, but nothing had come of this unofficial intimation. Russia had determined to stake the Baltic fleet before she admitted defeat.

On June 8, however, after the Battle of the Japan Sea, President Roosevelt took action by sending an identical note to the Emperor of Japan and to the Czar. In this he stated that he felt the time had come when, in the interests of all mankind, "he must endeavour to see if it is not possible to bring to an end the terrible and lamentable conflict which is now being waged." He therefore suggested that Japan and Russia should open direct negotiations and that Japanese and Russian plenipotentiaries should meet to discuss terms of peace. He offered his services to make the preliminary arrangements. His offer was accepted by both Powers a few days later, and on June 15 it was decided that the plenipotentiaries of the two nations should meet at some place in the United States. On the Japanese side, Baron Komura and M. Takahira were nominated to act at the Conference; on the Russian side, M. Witte and Baron Rosen, who had before the war been Russian Minister at Tokio. Some weeks elapsed before they could reach the small American seaport of Portsmouth in New Hampshire, which had finally been selected as the place of meeting, and during those weeks the Japanese captured Sakhalin, established a close blockade of the Siberian coast-line on the Japan Sea and Sea of Okhotsk, and threatened an attack upon the Amur region.

On August 9 the negotiations began at Portsmouth, and were prolonged during 20 sittings, occupying the rest of August and the early days of September. The Japanese demands in their extremest form were understood to be as follows:

The Japanese Demands.

1. The cession to Japan of Port Arthur and Liaotung.
2. The cession of the whole of the Island of Sakhalin.
3. The surrender to Japan of the main line of the Siberian Railway in Manchuria, with all its rights and concessions.
4. The complete evacuation of Manchuria and restoration of that province to China by Russia, without making any kind of reserves.
5. The recognition by Russia of Japan's complete authority over Korea.
6. The concession by Russia of fishing rights to Japanese subjects on the Russian coast in the Pacific and Sea of Okhotsk.
7. The disarmament of Vladivostock, which was to cease to be a fortified port.
8. The surrender to Japan of all the interned Russian ships in neutral ports.
9. The limitation of the fleet which Russia might maintain in the Pacific.
10. The payment by Russia of an indemnity defraying all the expenses incurred by Japan in the prosecution of the war. The amount of this was placed at about £150,000,000, but the cession of the Manchurian Railway was to be taken in part payment.



ROUND THE CAMP FIRE.

These demands were probably put forward in this form as a basis for bargaining, yet they were not unreasonable in view of the fact that Russian officials had intimated on the outbreak of the war that Russia would require Japan to cede the Japanese islands of Hokkaido and Tsushima, to withdraw from Korea and recognise a Russian protectorate over that country, to surrender the entire Japanese fleet, and to submit to a limitation of the Japanese naval and military forces, besides paying a heavy indemnity. In fact, the Japanese terms were modelled upon the projected Russian demands which were to be put forward when



COUNT MATSUYATA,
Japanese Statesman.

peace should be dictated at Tokio. On the 1st, 4th, and 5th demands of Japan it was generally known that Russia was prepared to yield. But the Russian Government and its representatives proclaimed at every turn that Russia would pay no indemnity and under no circumstances surrender a single mile of Russian territory to Japan. Any limitation of the Russian fleet or disarmament of Vladivostock was scouted as ridiculous.

Unless one Power or other would recede somewhat from its attitude, peace

was obviously impossible. It is now

known that M. Witte was secretly of opinion that an indemnity must be paid, but that the Czar held the contrary view, believing that Japan would be ready to agree to a peace without any money payment. And, as a matter of fact, it was clear that Japan would have difficulty in securing an indemnity. With the exception of Sakhalin, she had as yet conquered no territory that was nominally Russian, for Manchuria by a polite fiction was called Chinese, and even Port Arthur had only been leased from China by Russia. The Japanese armies were still some hundreds of miles distant from the Siberian frontier; Vladivostock still awaited a siege and might well have held out for a year from the date when that siege was formed.

Thus there were practical obstacles in the way of obtaining an indemnity—obstacles which so clear-headed a people as the Japanese cannot have overlooked.

To injure Japan and weaken her position, M. Witte undertook a very ill-mannered campaign against her, attacking her and her representatives in every possible way in a series of interviews which he granted to the American Press. Such conduct was not what might have been expected from the plenipotentiary of a great Power, charged with a difficult duty, and it would have justified the Japanese in breaking off the negotiations. But Baron Komura and M. Takahira showed great tact and self-control, and with them lay the victory in the matter of manners. Yet M. Witte undoubtedly succeeded in arousing a certain feeling against Japan in the United States. The American people had witnessed with no little concern the rapid rise to greatness of a new State in the Pacific, a quarter of the world which they had hoped to have all to

themselves. And they betrayed an inclination to side with Russia against Japan. This was of importance in view of the fact that Japanese loans had been floated in equal part in London and New York, so that, if the sympathy of the United States was alienated, Japan might have difficulty in raising more money for the continuance of the war.



COUNT DE WITTE.

BARON ROSEN.

PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT.

BARON KOMURA.

M. TAKAHIRA.

THE PEACEMAKERS ON BOARD THE "MAYFLOWER."



TYPES OF RUSSIAN PRISONERS RELEASED AFTER THE WAR.

If the Japanese demands were to be obtained, a fresh defeat of the Russian army was imperative, but unfortunately for Japan, as we have already seen, the peculiar weather in Manchuria prevented Marshal Oyama from striking the great blow which would perhaps have secured for Japan the indemnity and the concession of other points on which her people had set their hearts. The

difficulties of the Japanese negotiations were thus enhanced, and the impossibility of forcing a decision in Manchuria was probably the reason which led the Japanese Government greatly to abate its terms.

Repeatedly there was danger of the break-up of the Conference. The Russians remained obstinate on the questions of paying an indemnity and ceding Sakhalin, even after the other points had been virtually settled. But if the refusal to pay an indemnity was not altogether unreasonable, it was ridiculous for Russia to refuse to cede Sakhalin when that island was already in the hands of the Japanese. President Roosevelt, in the hope of reconciling the divergent views of the two Powers, brought pressure to bear on either, and recommended Russia to accept a final Japanese proposal, which was that Russia should pay the cost of the war to recover the island of Sakhalin. This would have given Japan the indemnity, but not the conquered island. M. Witte, however, refused to yield on this point.

Danger of a Break-up.

It is possible that if Japan had promptly broken off the negotiations Russia would have shown a more conciliatory attitude, but this cannot be taken for certain; and the Japanese Government was clearly not convinced on that head. With it and with the Elder Statesmen rested the ultimate decision as to whether peace should or should not be made. They determined to yield on the indemnity, but to stand firm in requiring the cession of the southern portion of Sakhalin. On the other important points—Port Arthur, Korea, and the evacuation of Manchuria—Russia had yielded already. That they were wise in so acting will scarcely be questioned in the future, though their conduct produced bitter disappointment, and evoked severe criticism in Japan. They knew that Korea was safe, that Manchuria must be surrendered, and that before the Japanese army could reach Harbin another year of war and a colossal expenditure of money



PRISONERS CAPTURED AT LIAOYANG EMBARKING FOR HOME.

would have to be faced. Japan had attained all her main objects. She had everything to gain, taking a large view, and nothing to lose by ending the war. She had vindicated her national greatness; she had routed the Russian armies and sunk or captured the Russian fleets; she had retaken Port Arthur and



BACK FROM THE WAR. A GRATEFUL COUNTRY'S RECOMPENSE.

avenged the slight upon her national honour; she had saved China from piecemeal destruction; and arrested permanently the eastward expansion of Russia. She was now the great naval and military Power of the Far East, and at one bound had passed from the status of a third-rate Power to the very foremost rank.

No future danger was to be feared from Russia. Already a new and extended Alliance with England had been concluded; it had been drafted even before the overthrow of the Baltic Armada and it was formally signed on August 12. By this Japan was guaranteed the aid of her ally in case Russia nursed her revenge and renewed the war after rebuilding the Russian fleet. The Japanese Government, therefore, waived the demand for an indemnity, whereupon Russia consented to cede Southern Sakhalin. At 3.47 p.m. of September 5, 1905, the Treaty of Peace was signed.



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

TEXT OF TREATY.

The following is the full text of the Treaty of Portsmouth:

Article I.—There shall henceforth be peace and amity between their Majesties the Emperor of Japan and the Emperor of All the Russias and between their respective States and subjects.

Article II.—The Imperial Russian Government, acknowledging that Japan possesses in Korea paramount political, military, and economical interests, engages neither to obstruct nor interfere with the measures of guidance, protection, and control which the Imperial Government of Japan may find it necessary to take in Korea.

It is understood that Russian subjects in Korea shall be treated exactly in the same manner as the subjects or citizens of other foreign Powers—that is to say, they shall be placed on the same footing as the subjects or citizens of the most favoured nation.



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

COUNT DE WITTE, BARON ROSEN, AND MR. PIERCE, SECRETARY OF STATE, LANDING AT THE NEW YORK YACHT CLUB.

It is also agreed that, in order to avoid all causes of misunderstanding, the two High Contracting Parties will abstain on the Russo-Korean frontier from taking any military measures which may menace the security of Russian or Korean territory.

Article III.—Japan and Russia mutually engage:

- (1) To evacuate completely and simultaneously Manchuria, except the territory affected by the lease of the Liau-tung Peninsula, in conformity with the provisions of additional Article I. annexed to this Treaty, and
- (2) To restore entirely and completely to the exclusive administration of China all portions of Manchuria now in the occupation or under the control of the Japanese or Russian troops with the exception of the territory above-mentioned.

The Imperial Government of Russia declare that they have not in Manchuria any territorial advantages or preferential or exclusive concessions in impairment of Chinese sovereignty or inconsistent with the principle of equal opportunity.

Article IV.—Japan and Russia reciprocally engage not to obstruct any general measures common to all countries which China may take for the development of the commerce and industry of Manchuria.

Article V.—The Imperial Russian Government transfer and assign to the Imperial Government of Japan, with the consent of the Government of China, the lease of Port Arthur, Ta-lien, and adjacent territory and territorial waters, and all rights, privileges, and concessions connected with or forming part of such lease, and they also transfer and assign to the Imperial Government of Japan all public works and properties in the territory affected by the above-mentioned lease.

The Two Contracting Parties mutually engage to obtain the consent of the Chinese Government mentioned in the foregoing stipulation. The Imperial Government of Japan on their part undertake that the proprietary rights of Russian subjects in the territory above referred to shall be perfectly respected.

Article VI.—The Imperial Russian Government engage to transfer and assign to the Imperial Government of Japan, without compensation and without the consent of the Chinese Government, the railway between Chang-chun (Kwang-cheng-tsze) and Port Arthur and all its branches, together with all rights, privileges, and properties appertaining thereto in that region, as well as all coal mines in the said region, belonging to or worked for the benefit of the railway.

The Two High Contracting Parties mutually engage to obtain the consent of the Government of China mentioned in the foregoing stipulation.

Article VII.—Japan and Russia engage to exploit their respective railways in Manchuria

exclusively for commercial and industrial purposes, and in nowise for strategic purposes.

It is understood that this restriction does not apply to the railway in the territory affected by the lease of the Liau-tung Peninsula.

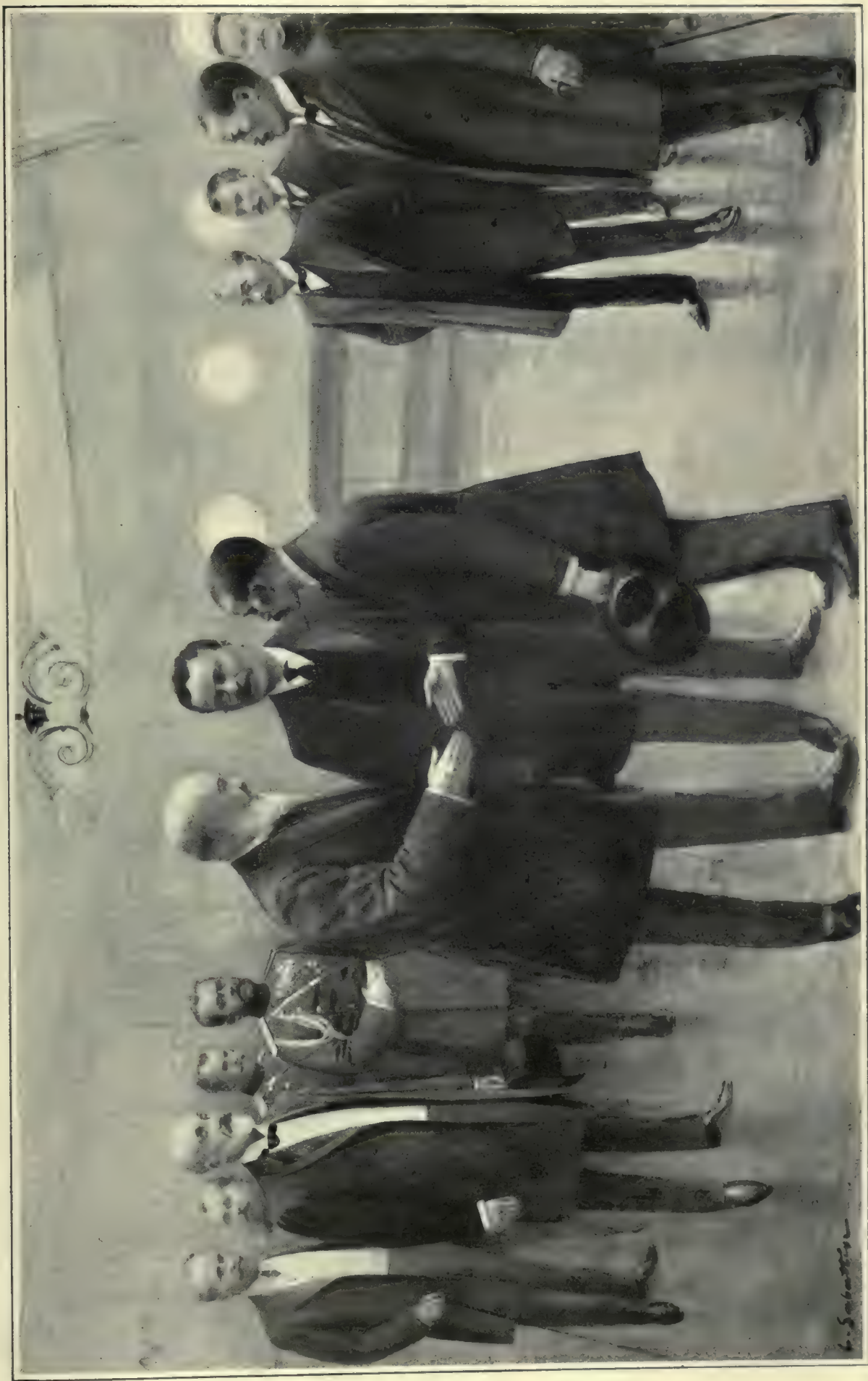
Article VIII.—The Imperial Governments of Japan and Russia, with a view to promote and facilitate intercourse and traffic, will, as soon as possible, conclude a separate Convention for the regulation of their connecting railway services in Manchuria.

Article IX.—The Imperial Russian Government cede to the Imperial Government of Japan in perpetuity and full sovereignty the southern portion of the Island of Sakhalin and all islands adjacent thereto and public works and properties thereon.

The 50th degree of North latitude is adopted as the northern boundary of the ceded territory. The exact alignment



MARQUIS ITO,
Japan's Greatest Statesman.



PRESIDENT ROOSEVELT INTRODUCING THE RUSSIAN AND JAPANESE PLENIPOTENTIARIES.

of such territory shall be determined in accordance with the provisions of additional Article II. annexed to this Treaty.

Japan and Russia mutually agree not to construct in their respective possessions on the Island of Sakhalin or the adjacent islands any fortifications or other similar military works. They also respectively engage not to take any military measures which may impede the free navigation of the Straits of La Perouse (Soya) and Tartary.

Article X.—It is reserved to the Russian subjects, inhabitants of the territory ceded to Japan, to sell their real property and retire to their country; but if they prefer to remain in the ceded territory, they will be maintained and protected in the full exercise of their industries and rights of property on condition of submitting to Japanese laws and jurisdiction.

Japan shall have full liberty to withdraw the right of residence or to deport from such territory any inhabitants who labour under political or administrative disability. She engages, however, that the proprietary rights of such inhabitants shall be fully respected.

Article XI.—Russia engages to arrange with Japan for granting to Japanese subjects rights of fishery along the coasts of the Russian possessions in the Japan, Okhotsk, and Behring Seas.

It is agreed that the foregoing engagement shall not affect rights already belonging to Russian or foreign subjects in those regions.

Article XII.—The treaty of commerce and navigation between Japan and Russia having been annulled by the war, the Imperial Governments of Japan and Russia engage to adopt as the basis of their commercial relations, pending the conclusion of a new treaty of commerce and navigation on the basis of the treaty which was in force before the present war, the system of reciprocal treatment on the footing of the most-favoured nation, in which are included import and export duties, Customs formalities, transit and tonnage dues, and the admission and treatment of the agents, subjects, and vessels of one country in the territories of the other.

Article XIII.—As soon as possible after the present Treaty comes into force, all prisoners of war shall be reciprocally restored.

The Imperial Governments of Japan and Russia shall each appoint a Special Commissioner to take charge of prisoners.

All prisoners in the hands of one Government shall be delivered to and received by the Commissioner of the other Government or by his duly authorised representative in such convenient numbers and at such convenient ports of the delivering State as such delivering State shall notify in advance to the Commissioner of the receiving State.

The Governments of Japan and Russia shall present to each other, as soon as possible after the delivery of prisoners has been completed, a statement of the direct expenditures respectively incurred by them for the care and maintenance of prisoners from the date of capture or surrender up to the time of death or delivery.

Russia engages to repay Japan, as soon as possible after the exchange of the statements as above provided, the difference between the actual amount so expended by Japan and the actual amount similarly disbursed by Russia.

Article XIV.—The present Treaty shall be ratified by their Majesties the Emperor of Japan and the Emperor of All the Russias.

In conformity with the provisions of Articles III. and IX. of the Treaty of Peace between Japan and Russia of this date, the Plenipotentiaries have concluded the following additional Articles:



FIELD-MARSHAL YAMAGATA,
A Great Japanese Statesman and Soldier.

I. TO ARTICLE III.

The Imperial Governments of Japan and Russia mutually engage to commence the withdrawal of their military forces from the territory of Manchuria simultaneously and immediately after the Treaty of Peace comes into operation: and within a period of 18 months from that date the armies of the two countries shall be completely withdrawn from Manchuria, except from the leased territory of the Liau-tung Peninsula. The forces of the two countries occupying the front positions shall be first withdrawn.

The High Contracting Parties reserve to themselves the right to maintain guards to protect their respective railway lines in Manchuria. The number of such guards shall not exceed 15 per kilometre, and within that *maximum* number the commanders of the Japanese and Russian armies shall, by common accord, fix the number of such guards to be employed as small as possible, having in view the actual requirements.

The commanders of the Japanese and Russian forces in Manchuria shall agree upon the details of the evacuation in



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
WHERE PEACE WAS SIGNED—PORTSMOUTH.

conformity with the above principles, and shall take by common accord the measures necessary to carry out the evacuation as soon as possible, and in any case not later than the period of 18 months.

II. TO ARTICLE IX.

As soon as possible after the present Treaty comes into force, a Commission of Delimitation, composed of an equal number of members to be appointed respectively by the Two High Contracting Parties, shall on the spot mark in a permanent manner the exact boundary between the Japanese and Russian possessions on the Island of Sakhalin. The Commission shall be bound, so far as topographical considerations permit, to follow the 50th parallel of North latitude as the boundary line, and in case any deflections from that line at any points are found to be necessary, compensation will be made by correlative deflections at other points. It shall also be the duty of the said Commission to prepare a list and description of the adjacent islands included in the cession, and finally the Commission shall prepare and sign maps showing the boundaries of the ceded territory. The work of the Commission shall be subject to the approval of the High Contracting Parties.

On comparing the Treaty with the original Japanese demands, it will be observed that Japan obtained the cession of Port Arthur, but, instead of obtaining all Sakhalin, had to be content with the southern half.

Notes on the Treaty. She secured the southern portion of the Manchurian Railway, instead of the whole line south of the Siberian frontier. She obtained the evacuation of Manchuria and the recognition of her rights in Korea. She secured the fishing rights which she coveted. Her last four

demands were waived. Three of these were of but slight consequence, since it was quite plain that Russia could not be dangerous from the naval standpoint for a generation, and, that being so, it was of little importance whether Vladivostock was fortified, whether the Russian fleet in the Pacific was large or small, or whether a number of Russian vessels, with the single exception of the *Tzarevitch*, of insignificant fighting power, were given back to the Russian Government. From the international point of view, however, it was desirable that a precedent should have been established in favour of the surrender of interned ships to the victor, and if the interned vessels had been of greater value and power the Japanese might have insisted upon this demand.

The abandonment of the indemnity was the most serious concession made by Japan, and it would be



(From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
THE JAPANESE ENVOYS AT PORTSMOUTH.

foolish to minimise the effect of it. Japan is a poor country and must feel for thirty or forty years the heavy debt which she has incurred in the prosecution of the war. On the other hand, as we shall presently show, there are valuable assets to be set on the credit side against this expenditure. But her people had stinted themselves or sold their possessions from a noble spirit of patriotism; many of them had literally starved, and they had looked forward to the peace to end their sufferings and bring wealth not to themselves but to their country. And now they were disappointed; their burdens must continue to be borne; the State would be handicapped for years to come. Moreover, there were well-marked precedents in favour of the payment of an indemnity by the beaten side. The most famous case was that of France, in 1871, who had to pay Germany the full cost of the Franco-German War. Again, in 1878, Russia extorted an indemnity from Turkey, and in 1895 Japan had required China to pay the cost of the Japan-China War.

The Indemnity Abandoned.

But the question of an indemnity could only be settled by considering what was practicable and not what was desirable from the Japanese standpoint. We have already pointed out that Japan had no means of compelling payment, and the continuance of the war with the object of obtaining such means would have greatly increased the Japanese debt and the suffering of the people, while it might have produced bankruptcy and disruption in Russia, so that the Japanese might well have found themselves with another hundred or hundred and fifty millions of debt and without a penny of indemnity from Russia. It is well known that Turkey never paid the indemnity which she promised to Russia, for the simple reason that she was unable to do so.

DE WITTE.

ROSEN.



Copyright, Brown Bros., New York.]

THE PEACE DELEGATES IN THE CONFERENCE ROOM

KOMURA. TAKAHIRA.

The net results of the Treaty were that Japan obtained in Korea 82,000 square miles of valuable territory with a population of about 10,000,000, with forests, mines, and numerous excellent harbours. She secured Port Arthur, Dalny, and 550 miles of the Siberian Railway, the cash value of which is certainly not less than £20,000,000, and perhaps much more, seeing that the possession of the line carries with it possession of the immensely rich coal and iron mines at Fushun and Yentai, and that at Dalny a great commercial port had been created by the Russian Government by a lavish outlay of Russian funds. In Sakhalin she obtains 12,000 square miles of territory, reported to be rich in minerals, and with magnificent forests. The stipulation by which Russia and Japan promise to erect no fortifications in Sakhalin is all to the advantage of Japan, whose naval power would always enable her to take possession of the remainder of the island should Russia hereafter violate the Treaty; while Russia, without naval power, cannot move a man to Sakhalin.

The stipulation forbidding the fortification of the two great straits to the south and east of Sakhalin is again all to the advantage of the superior navy and all to the disadvantage of the land Power. The fishing rights which Japan obtains in the Sea of Okhotsk have been ardently desired by her population, who live largely upon fish, and are of great value.

The evacuation of Northern Manchuria by Russia is secured, and in the event of Russia attempting once more, as she has so often done in the past, to evade her promises, Japan would be justified in retaining possession of Southern Manchuria. She is thus secured, from the military standpoint, against future



RUSSIAN TROOPS AT REST.

TEXT OF THE ANGLO-JAPANESE ALLIANCE.

The text of the new Treaty of Alliance between England and Japan, which was one of the results of the war, and which completes and extends the Alliance of 1901, was published in September. It was signed by Baron Hayashi for Japan and Lord Lansdowne for England on August 12, and its terms are as follows:

PREAMBLE.

The Governments of Great Britain and Japan, being desirous of replacing the Agreement concluded between them on the 30th of January, 1902, by fresh stipulations, have agreed upon the following articles, which have for their object:

- (a) The consolidation and maintenance of the general peace in the regions of Eastern Asia and of India;
- (b) The preservation of the common interests of all Powers in China by insuring the independence and integrity of the Chinese Empire and the principle of equal opportunities for the commerce and industry of all nations in China;
- (c) The maintenance of the territorial rights of the High Contracting Parties in the regions of Eastern Asia and of India, and the defence of their special interests in the said regions:

Article I.—It is agreed that whenever, in the opinion of either Great Britain or Japan, any of the rights and interests referred to in the preamble of this Agreement are in jeopardy, the two Governments will communicate with one another fully and frankly, and will consider in common the measures which should be taken to safeguard those menaced rights or interests.



RUSSIAN PRISONERS RETURNING TO RUSSIA FROM YOKOHAMA.

Russian aggression. The southern section of Manchuria is one of the richest countries in the world, with a magnificent soil, great mineral resources, fine forests, a bracing climate, and splendid scenery. If Russia fulfils the Treaty and Japan evacuates Southern Manchuria, the right of the "open door" must give Japanese trade immense advantages in this region. Japan is on the spot, while Europe is at a distance; her manufactures will have to pay no exorbitant freights, but can be carried by sea to the Manchurian ports and thence be moved inland on the railways, which she will control for a long term of years. In trade expansion she will receive the just and hard-earned reward for her incredible exertions, for her fortitude, for her magnanimity. Thus those who declare that Japan emerged from the war with indifferent gains are taking a short-sighted view.

Evacuation of Manchuria.

Article II.—If by any reason of unprovoked attack or aggressive action, wherever arising, on the part of any other Power or Powers either Contracting Party should be involved in war in defence of its territorial rights or special interests mentioned in the preamble of this Agreement, the other Contracting Party will at once come to the assistance of its ally, and will conduct the war in common, and make peace in mutual agreement with it.

Article III.—Japan possessing paramount political, military, and economic interests in Korea, Great Britain recognises the right of Japan to take such measures of guidance, control, and protection in Korea as she may deem proper and necessary to safeguard and advance those interests, provided always that such measures are not contrary to the principle of equal opportunities for the commerce and industry of all nations.

Article IV.—Great Britain having a special interest in all that concerns the security of the Indian frontier, Japan recognises her right to take such measures in the proximity of that frontier as she may find necessary for safeguarding her Indian possessions.



[Stereograph, copyright, Underwood and Underwood, London and New York.]
THE PEACEMAKERS MEET ON THE "MAYFLOWER."

The tall figure with his back to the reader is Count de Witte.

Article V.—The High Contracting Parties agree that neither of them will, without consulting the other, enter into separate arrangements with another Power to the prejudice of the objects described in the preamble of this Agreement.

Article VI.—As regards the present war between Japan and Russia, Great Britain will continue to maintain strict neutrality unless some other Power or Powers should join in hostilities against Japan, in which case Great Britain will come to the assistance of Japan, and will conduct the war in common, and make peace in mutual agreement with Japan.

Article VII.—The conditions under which armed assistance shall be afforded by either Power to the other in the circumstances mentioned in the present Agreement, and the means by which such assistance is to be made available, will be arranged by the naval and military authorities of the Contracting Parties, who will from time to time consult one another fully and freely upon all questions of mutual interest.

Article VIII.—The present Agreement shall, subject to the provisions of Article VI., come into effect immediately after the date of its signature, and remain in force for ten years from that date.

In case neither of the High Contracting Parties should have notified twelve months before the expiration of the said ten years the intention of terminating it, it shall remain binding until the expiration of one year from the day on which either of the High Contracting Parties shall have denounced it. But if, when the date fixed for its expiration arrives, either ally is actually engaged in war, the Alliance shall, *ipso facto*, continue until peace is concluded.

The Treaty marks a complete departure from the policy of "splendid isolation" which England pursued during the last 40 years of the 19th century, latterly with such untoward results. Isolation had become exceedingly perilous, and the possibility of a coalition of Germany, Russia, and France for the destruction of the British Empire had been constantly discussed between 1895 and 1902. The policy tentatively adopted in 1902 of joining hands with Japan, whose interests closely coincided with those of England, informed the world that England was ready to enter the alliance market, and to join combinations which had for their aim the maintenance of the *status quo*. It was followed almost immediately by the rapprochement between England and France. Such a rapprochement was impossible so long as the British people refused to think of alliances or to guarantee military assistance to their friends. As the friendship of England brought a certain danger from the enmity of Powers that coveted British possessions, without bringing any corresponding advantage, England up to the date of the first Alliance with Japan was looked at askance by Continental Powers. Her Government and people were not thought capable of courageous action and initiative. But when the Japanese Alliance was concluded, not only was the military strength of England in Asia increased, but also foreign Governments saw that it might be possible to "do business" with Britain.

Significance of the Treaty.

The tendency towards great combinations is well marked in modern political life. In Europe there is to-day the Triple Alliance of Germany, Austria, and Italy, and the Dual Alliance of France and Russia. An isolated State, outside either of these combinations, must be subject to pressure from both. The neutrality of the isolated State is in itself an offence, since neither of the combinations can calculate exactly upon the neutral's course of action. Hence the peril of isolation was a growing one. By the new Alliance with Japan, however, England secures herself against attack in Asia, if not in Europe. It is here that the chief weakness, from the British standpoint, of the new Alliance lies. For on consideration it will be seen that Japan is guaranteed the armed aid of Britain in any war in which she can possibly be engaged. England is not guaranteed the armed aid of Japan in wars arising out of European questions. A European enemy, therefore, desirous of attacking England would select some European or African question as the *casus belli*, in which case England would have to fight alone. The Alliance is thus only a restricted partnership, so far as Japan is concerned.

It is essentially conservative and defensive. It guarantees the *status quo* in Asia for all Powers alike. It is designed to meet attack in two directions. In the first place, it is the British reply to the Russian demonstrations against the Indian frontier and to the completion of the Tashkent Railway. In the second place, it is the reply to the attempt of certain European Powers to shut England out of the richest undeveloped markets in the Far East. It gives military security on the Indian frontier; it gives economic security in the markets of China. Its effect and influence can only be good if it is followed by military reforms in England, and by the organisation of an adequate and efficient army for the defence of the Indian frontier. For such reforms, for such organisation, it gives time, since the Alliance is irrevocably concluded for ten years. But if there are no reforms, if the British nation is content to depend on the self-sacrifice of Japan and the force of the Japanese army for the protection of British dependencies, then the greatness of

the British Empire has passed, and the Alliance sets the seal upon our national decay. It is a source of grave disquietude that England has as yet made no effort whatever to act upon the lessons of the South African War and the Manchurian struggle.

But for the Alliance it must be regarded as morally certain that Russia would have followed up her defeat in Manchuria by a movement against India and the Persian Gulf. An attack directed against England in this quarter of the world would have been thoroughly popular in Russia, while the war with Japan was never popular. Most Russians, even those of Liberal views, regard the conquest of India as Russia's destiny. A generation ago that talented soldier Skobelev dreamed of it; it was the aim expressed in the forged will of Peter the Great. When Russia's expansion eastward was barred by an insuperable obstacle, the armed strength of Japan, it became more than was probable that Russia would move in the line of least resistance, which would have been against Persia and India. The Alliance removes the danger. Persia is believed to be covered by the new Treaty with Japan, though the fact is not explicitly stated, doubtless from regard for Russian susceptibilities.



M. TAKAHIRA.

BARON KOMURA.

(Stereograph copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.

THE JAPANESE PEACE COMMISSIONERS ON BOARD THE "MAYFLOWER" (AUGUST 5, 1905).

CHAPTER LXVI.

LOSSES AND LESSONS OF THE WAR.

THE Japanese loss in life during the war was officially returned at the close of the struggle at 80,378, of whom 47,152 were killed in action, 11,424 died of wounds, and 21,802 died of sickness. Of a total British loss of 22,555 men in the South African War, 13,250 died of disease, this large proportion indicating the defective medical organisation of the British Army. Japan was careful of her soldiers' lives



and England was not. A calculation of the total Japanese casualties, including wounded and missing, based on the official reports, gives a figure of 195,319 for the Japanese losses in battle throughout the war, while only 646 Japanese were taken prisoners. This figure, of course, excludes death through disease, which numbered, as we have seen, 21,802, and it does not include 16,456 men who were injured by various accidents out of battle. During the war Japan lost one officer to each 37 rank and file.

The Russian losses have not been officially returned and can only be estimated. The closest calculation practicable gives a loss of 320,000 killed and wounded and 67,700 prisoners. In addition, deaths due to disease must be taken into account, and it is probably not in excess of the truth to put these at twice the Japanese figure, though even then the Russian loss from this cause would have been much smaller in proportion than the British loss from disease in South Africa. If, then, we estimate the deaths from disease in the Russian army at 30,000, the total Russian loss will amount to 417,700, of whom about 95,000 died or were killed.

The Japanese Navy emerged from the war stronger than it had entered it, while the Russian Navy was practically destroyed. Eighteen Russian battleships, or coast-defence ships, carrying heavy guns, took part in the war; 17 of them were sunk or captured, and only one escaped to be interned; seven armoured cruisers were engaged, of which five were captured or sunk and two remained intact at Vladivostock after the war. Thirteen protected cruisers were engaged, of which six were sunk or captured, five interned in neutral ports, and only two remained at Vladivostock. Of 21 various cruisers and converted cruisers, 16 were sunk or captured. Of 24 destroyers, 15 were sunk or captured, 11 were interned, and only two evaded the Japanese and survived the war at Vladivostock.

The Japanese added to their fleet the following Russian vessels which were taken in the battles or raised at Port Arthur, after the capture of the place: Battleships *Orel*, *Peresviet*, *Pobieda*, *Retvisan*, *Poltava*, and *Nicolai*; coast-defence ships *Apraxin* and *Seniavin*; armoured cruiser *Bayan*; protected cruisers *Pallada* and *Variag*; destroyers *Reshitelny*, *Biedovy*, and *Silny*. The Japanese Navy lost the battleships HATSUSE and YASHIMA, the latter of which may ultimately be recovered; the cruisers YOSHINO, TAKASAGO, MIYAKO, and OSHIMA; the old ironclads HIYEI, HEI YEN, and SAI YEN; the destroyers AKATSUKI and HAYATORI; and Torpedo-boats Nos. 34, 35, 69, and one other. In exchange for the Japanese torpedo-boats lost, a large number of Russian launches and small torpedo-boats were recovered at Port Arthur.

When it is remembered that Japan opened the war with only six battleships and eight armoured cruisers, the performance of her Navy is a stupendous one. Through the captures which she made, she emerged from the struggle with ten battleships and nine armoured cruisers. Of the 25 armoured Russian ships engaged in the war, all but two were sunk, taken, or driven into neutral ports, where they were disarmed and held captives with their crews till the close of the war. Forty-nine merchant vessels were captured by the Japanese Navy and condemned after trial, on the ground that they either belonged to Russia or were neutrals carrying contraband to Russian ports. In no instance was there any reason to impeach the fairness of the Japanese Courts. The Russian Navy captured or sunk 30 Japanese vessels, all of them small fishing craft or coasting traders of no value or importance, with the exception of the three transports KINSHIU, HITACHI, and IDZUMI. Over and above these vessels the Russian cruisers seized several British ships without any kind of justification, often sinking them without a pretence of trial. The proceedings of the Vladivostock Prize Court were a perfect travesty of justice. So far as we have been able to ascertain, only one British steamer seized, the *Cheltenham*, was justly condemned.

The cost of the war to Russia cannot be exactly stated, owing to the fact that many items are not included in the Russian official estimate. It was officially stated at £200,000,000. The war debt incurred by Japan amounted to £173,000,000, which is probably an over-estimate, as large balances remain in the hands of the Japanese Government, and £160,000,000 will be nearer the actual mark. Against this outlay Japan can set the Russian railways which she has acquired, the valuable coal-mines in Manchuria, the great works at Dalny and Port Arthur, the captured ships (worth at the very least £4,000,000), the suzerainty of Korea, the possession of Liaotung and Southern Sakhalin, and the fishery rights in the Sea of Okhotsk. All these are very substantial assets, while, in addition, the roads and railways made in Korea and Manchuria by the Japanese troops during the war have to be taken into account. The line from Fusan to the Yalu was completed during the war from the war expenditure, but now that the war is over it has a permanent value.

On the other hand, Russia has no such assets to show. Her great outlay at Dalny, Port Arthur, and on the southern section of the Manchurian Railway is irretrievably lost. The cost of the ships sunk or captured by Japan reached £22,000,000. In all, it would probably not be in excess of the truth to estimate

the indirect cost of the war to Russia at £100,000,000 over and above her appropriations from loans or revenue for war purposes. Adding or deducting these amounts on either side, a rough estimate of the net cost of the struggle to either Power will stand as follows: Japan, about £110,000,000; Russia, above £300,000,000. Defeat in modern war is a most expensive business.

Criticising the Japanese operations in no unfriendly spirit, it must be admitted that Japan lost great opportunities at the outset. After the torpedo attack of February 8, she had Port Arthur at her mercy.

Japan's Lost Opportunities.

No mines were in position at Dalny or at Port Arthur. There was nothing whatever to prevent her from landing an army corps at Dalny and then and there isolating the great Russian fortress. At that date Port Arthur had been denuded of men, and its garrison probably did not muster more than 15,000 men. Most of the troops had been sent away from it to the Yalu. There was little ammunition, the supplies of food were altogether inadequate, the forts were incomplete, the wire for the entanglements, which some months later caused the Japanese assaulting columns such enormous loss, was wanting. Yet, instead of striking boldly at Port Arthur, the Japanese authorities preferred to land a large force in Korea, and to march this force painfully north through that country.

Probably the real truth was that they altogether under-estimated the power of resistance of Port Arthur. Because Japanese troops had stormed the fortress in a single day in 1894, they argued that they would be able to repeat their achievement in 1904, though, perhaps, with heavier loss of life. Therefore for months they did not trouble themselves about Port Arthur. They allowed Russia to treble or quadruple the garrison, to pour into the town immense quantities of food and ammunition, to despatch to it heavy guns from Europe, and to complete the fortifications. In a word, at the very moment when Russia most needed time they granted it to her. Their delay cost them dear. The loss of the two battleships HATSUSE and YASHIMA was due to their hesitation at the most critical period of the war, and this loss so weakened their Navy that the despatch of the Baltic fleet to the Far East became possible. Even when they began operations against Port Arthur, which was not till May or the fourth month of the year, they did not strike at once at the fortress or employ their force to the best advantage. In view of the demoralised condition of the Russian Navy, there was nothing to prevent their landing troops, or at least threatening a landing, to the rear of Kinchau, which would have completely turned the Nanshan position and rendered its defence difficult if not impossible. But they never even threatened such a landing. Again, after Nanshan they did not follow up their success when, if some Russian authorities are to be credited, a vigorous advance might well have ensured the speedy capture of the fortress. On the contrary, they turned north against General Stackelberg, to defeat him at Teltse. But General Stackelberg could never have stormed the Kinchau isthmus in the teeth of even a small force backed by a fleet which commanded the sea. It was the Japanese gunboats that ultimately decided the success of General Oku's attack upon Nanshan, and naval force would have been wanting to General Stackelberg. Further, the longer the distance that General Stackelberg advanced from his real base at Liaoyang, the greater the chance of cutting him off, or of the other Japanese armies striking, during his absence, against General Kuropatkin's weak forces.

Thus the management of the land campaign was not altogether happy, either in the early months of the war, when Port Arthur was spared, or in May, when two great opportunities were missed, the first of a rapid advance upon Port Arthur, the second of crushing General Stackelberg, or dealing a deadly blow against General Kuropatkin in his absence. No doubt there are reasons unknown to us which extenuate these sins of omission, or commission, and in any case the Japanese Staff officer might reply that the blunders committed were as nothing compared with those of England in the South African War. Yet we are not here discussing the rival merits and demerits of two systems, but the question whether in the light of subsequent events Japan made the best use of her chances.

Port Arthur's Mistakes.

The fatal error as to Port Arthur went very near to bringing complete disaster upon Japan. When General Nogi began operations, he found that the Russians had recovered heart and strengthened the defences of the great fortress in an astonishing manner. He is believed to have reported to Tokio that it was practically impossible to storm the place. But because his army was needed for the operations against General Kuropatkin, he was ordered to attack at all cost. He met with a terrible and bloody repulse. The

first result of this was that Marshal Oyama was left with a force insufficient to accomplish the envelopment and complete defeat of the Russian army at Liaoyang. Because Japan had been unwilling to risk something at the opening of the war, she was now compelled to risk everything, and the issue of the Battle of Liaoyang hung in the balance for days. If the Japanese had been defeated, their whole campaign would have collapsed. The brilliant courage and magnificent devotion of the rank and file, the skill and daring



[From stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.
YOKOHAMA DECORATED IN HONOUR OF THE GREAT NAVAL VICTORY IN THE SEA OF JAPAN.

of the generals, saved them, but it was a narrow escape. Nothing in military history justified the idea that a superior army could be dislodged from a strongly fortified position by an inferior force attacking frontally.

Even after Liaoyang the Japanese position was a critical one. The Battle of the Shaho was indeed a far more terrible defeat for the Russians than even Liaoyang. But against this disaster to the Russian cause had to be set the Japanese losses in front of Port Arthur, and the increasing disquietude caused by the movements of the Baltic fleet. Moreover, the carrying power of the Siberian Railway had been as seriously under-estimated by the Japanese as had the resisting power of Port Arthur. The Russian army in the Far East was steadily growing, and unless the Port Arthur army could be added to the Japanese strength there was no probability of inflicting a decisive defeat on the Russians. The anxiety with which Japan watched the operations at Port Arthur is thus intelligible. That great fortress was the pivot of the war, and if General Stoessel had been made of sterner metal it might have proved the grave of Japanese aspirations and independence.

Japan's Critical Position.

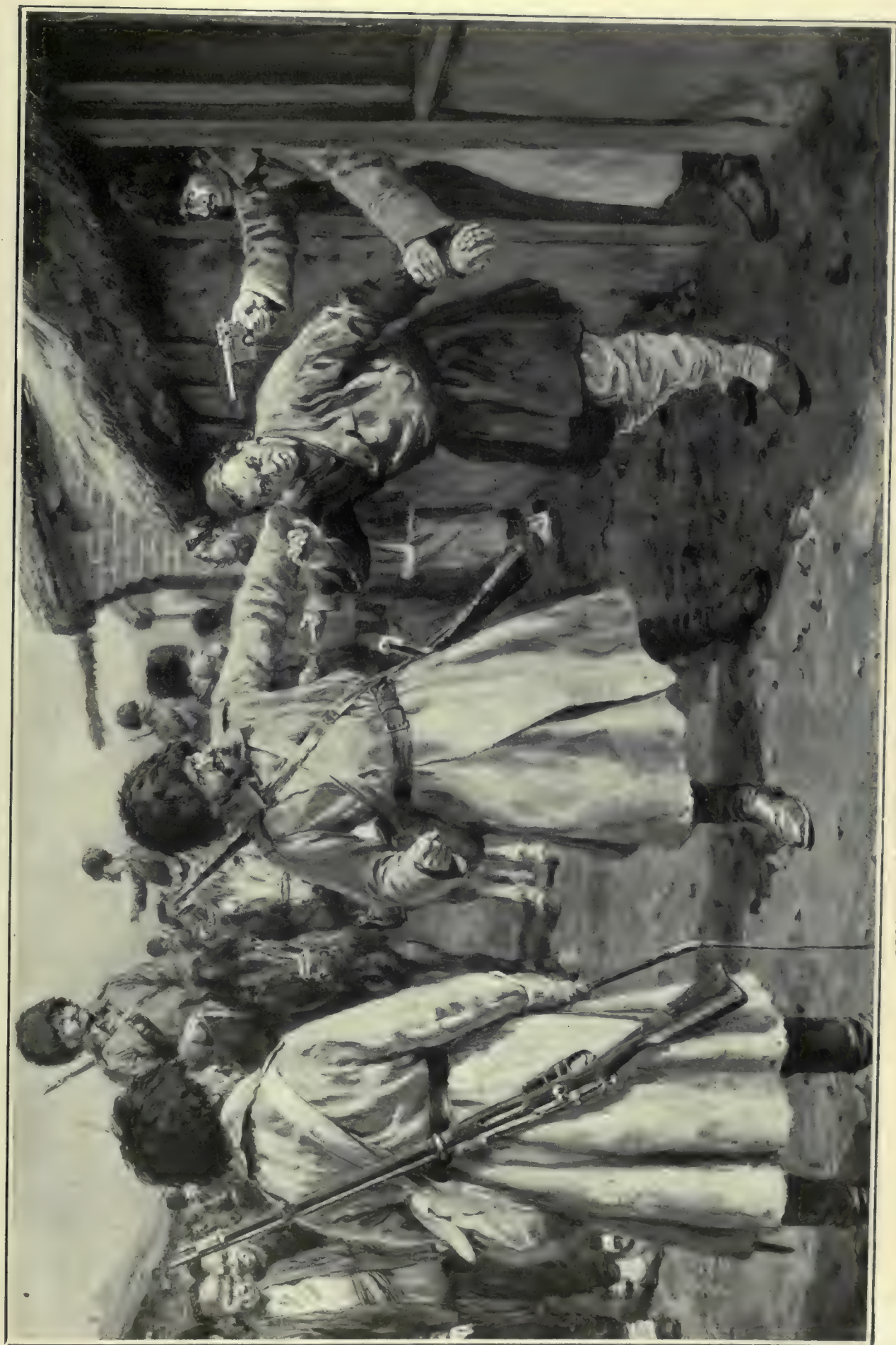
The fall of the fortress cleared the air. From that moment everything moved in favour of Japan, and there was no more waste of golden opportunities. Japan profited by her very blunders and mistakes, and was incomparably more formidable in January, 1905, than she had been in February, 1904. Her Staff had learnt the lesson and acted upon it. The brilliant moves which preceded Mukden embarrassed the Russian generalissimo and left him in complete uncertainty where the blow was going to fall. The Japanese army was superior in numbers and in spirit. It could at last fight with the feeling that the odds were all on its side. The failure to pursue which had marked the Yalu did not distinguish Japanese strategy after Mukden. The Japanese rapidly pushed on to Tiehling, and but for the thaw might have followed the Russians to the very gates of Harbin.

A vigorous prosecution of the war in the early months of 1904 might well have carried the Japanese to Harbin in the autumn of 1904. The chance once lost could never be regained. Japan was driven to fight a war of exhaustion, instead of conducting a brief and breathless campaign such as that which carried the Germans to Paris in 1870. She lost her chance of obtaining an indemnity and crushing Russia at the very outset. That Russia would have accepted defeat until she had exhausted her borrowing power and her strength is not probable. But with Japanese armies at Harbin able to use the river-ways and the railway, the plight of Russia would have been infinitely worse than it was in September, 1905, when she ended the war. Her credit would certainly have suffered as the result of a rapid Japanese advance, the loss of Mukden and Port Arthur, and the abandonment of the rich grain country of Northern Manchuria. Without that granary of the Far East, from which the Russian half-million of troops were fed during the last year of the war, the problem of obtaining supplies would have been almost insoluble. The initial errors committed by Japan were, then, grave in their consequences.

The future of the Far East is full of anxious problems. That Japan will long retain the position she has so honourably won may be taken as certain. Even now she is practically supreme in the Eastern Hemisphere. China is the danger point, and the question is whether China will reform her system and follow in the steps of Japan. If she does, peace may be long preserved, for a reformed China would be among the most formidable of great Powers. But the ablest observers doubt the sincerity of her professions and the reality of her reforms, though she has greatly improved her army of recent years. Other problems which must inevitably arise concern the relations of the White and Yellow races. At present the White races exclude the Yellow races by force from their dominions, while compelling the Yellow races to admit their trade. So one-sided and illogical a position cannot prove permanent. Yet the reason why the White man excludes the Yellow is that the Yellow man is a cheaper organism, can exist on less and work as well, and must therefore supplant the White if permitted freely to compete with him. The Far Eastern war has proved that in military capacity the Yellow race, or the best of the Yellow race, is fully a match for the White man, and force in the not distant future may be upon the Yellow side.

The Future of the Far East.

Up to 1904 the Russian army was held almost invincible by Western thinkers, and the might of Russia was regarded as irresistible. The excellence of the Russian soldier had been admitted by Napoleon and



COSSACKS SEARCHING FOR JAPANESE SPIES IN A VILLAGE.

by Gordon, and has now been proved afresh in the Manchurian war. The Russian troops stood up to terrific losses, seldom or never surrendered, and fought to the last. The Russian generalship, though not of the highest order, was respectable. The Russian railway administration was wonderful in its efficiency. Yet Japan, after careful calculation, threw down the gage of battle to her giant antagonist, and triumphed at every point. Good as the Russian troops were, the Japanese armies were better; if the Russian leading was only respectable, the Japanese was cautious and daring—cautious till the efficiency of the Japanese armies had been definitely proved in battle; then incredibly daring. If at the outset Japan must be reproached for failing instantly to attack Port Arthur, at a time when the fortress was indifferently prepared to stand a siege, the audacity of the frontal attacks upon such huge fortified positions as Liaoyang and Mukden, and of the flank movements of Kuroki and Nogi in the face of a great army of gallant soldiers, was Napoleonic.



MANCHURIA AS DETERMINED BY THE PEACE.

The greatness of the Japanese army and navy was the reflection of the greatness and spirit of self-sacrifice of the Japanese nation. As the people is so is the army. The training in duty, obedience, and honour which is given to every Japanese child in the Japanese schools bore its fruit upon the slopes of the Port Arthur hills, upon the vast snow-covered plain of Mukden. It is not by weak surrender before wrong that men and nations prove their greatness, but by that temper which is faithful to a great cause even when faith means the sacrifice of life. The Stoic spirit which stands firm at its post, "recking nothing of danger and death," answers to the highest aspirations of man. To the glory of Japan, it was abundantly displayed in these 18 months of war; not by some few chosen individuals, but by a whole people.

"The course of history is the judgment of God," it has been said. In the long run, history is profoundly moral—an argument in itself for the morality of the universe. We see some part of the great play and witness wrong victorious, righteousness trodden under foot, the just man or the just nation writhing on the rack. But when the play is complete, justice appears. Up to a point Russia's violations of treaties and employment of force where right was against her seem to succeed. In 1903 she had virtually annexed Manchuria; Port Arthur was hers in defiance of all right; she was laying hands upon Korea; she was preparing the slow annexation of China. Her fleets and armies terrified the world and cowed it into acceptance of wrong as right. This was the hour when Japan took action, and in two years all has changed. The Colossus no longer overshadows the East; Manchuria is once more Chinese; Korea is a Japanese province; Sakhalin has again changed hands, and this time has passed from the European Power to the Oriental State. The Treaty of Portsmouth ends the long period of European supremacy and marks the beginning of a new era in the world's history.

The Morality of History.

Those who live close to momentous events often fail to discern their importance. Yet the process by which this re-birth of Asia was ushered in should have deeply impressed the imagination. The 100-mile line

of battle about Mukden, that Armageddon in which some 50,000 human beings perished amidst the thundering of 3,000 guns, the fearful combats about Port Arthur, the last terrible encounter in the fogs of the Japan Sea, when battleships were sent to the bottom as though they had been paper boats, all were suggestive of the cataclysms of Nature. Never has war been waged upon such a scale or with such utter disregard of self-preservation. Until the close of 1904 there was no instance of any considerable number



[Stereograph, copyright, Underwood & Underwood, London and New York.]

ADMIRAL TOGO'S ARRIVAL AT SHINBASHI STATION ON OCTOBER 22 TO MEET THE MIKADO AND PRESENT HIS REPORT.

of Russians or Japanese surrendering. The combatants on either side fought to the death and never asked for quarter.

The triumph of Japan is memorable as the first triumph in recent history of a non-Christian over a Christian Power, and may ultimately have a deep and far-reaching effect upon thought throughout the world



ADMIRAL TOGO'S RECEPTION IN TOKIO AFTER DEFEATING THE RUSSIAN NAVY.

in virtue of that fact. Yet, if men and nations

are to be judged by their practice rather than their professions, Japan was the true Christian; Russia the Pagan. It may, perhaps, be said that Japan attained greatness in so far as she adopted certain results which Christianity has brought to the West, without formally accepting the religion which is the cause, or one of the chief causes, of those results. She recognised the equality of all her people before the law, the right of even the humblest to some opportunity of rising in the intellectual and social scale. She made noblemen of her peasants and did not depress their native capacity; whereas Russia was content to leave her population in besotted ignorance, without political rights or privileges.

In the history of great nations there come moments of trial and tribulation

such as fell to the lot of Japan during her twenty years' struggle for freedom and independence. Seldom or never in the annals of mankind has danger been faced with a more resolute and heroic spirit

An Example to England.

than it was by Japan. We have seen Japanese nobles surrendering their wealth, a whole people abandoning its primitive customs, every man, woman, and child making immense sacrifices for the Fatherland, thousands stinting themselves of every comfort that their country might have the funds to provide the army and the fleet required for the restoration of its independence, regiments of conscripts going forth to battle and death in unflinching obedience to the dictates of duty, and all parties co-operating for the national aims. *Finis coronat opus*, and let us pray that if for England there comes such a period of trial and travail, the honour of her people may pass through the furnace as bright, as unsullied, as that of Japan.

THE END.

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

DS
517
W55
v.3

Wilson, Herbert Wrigley
Japan's fight for freed

